

The Boss

Behind The Game

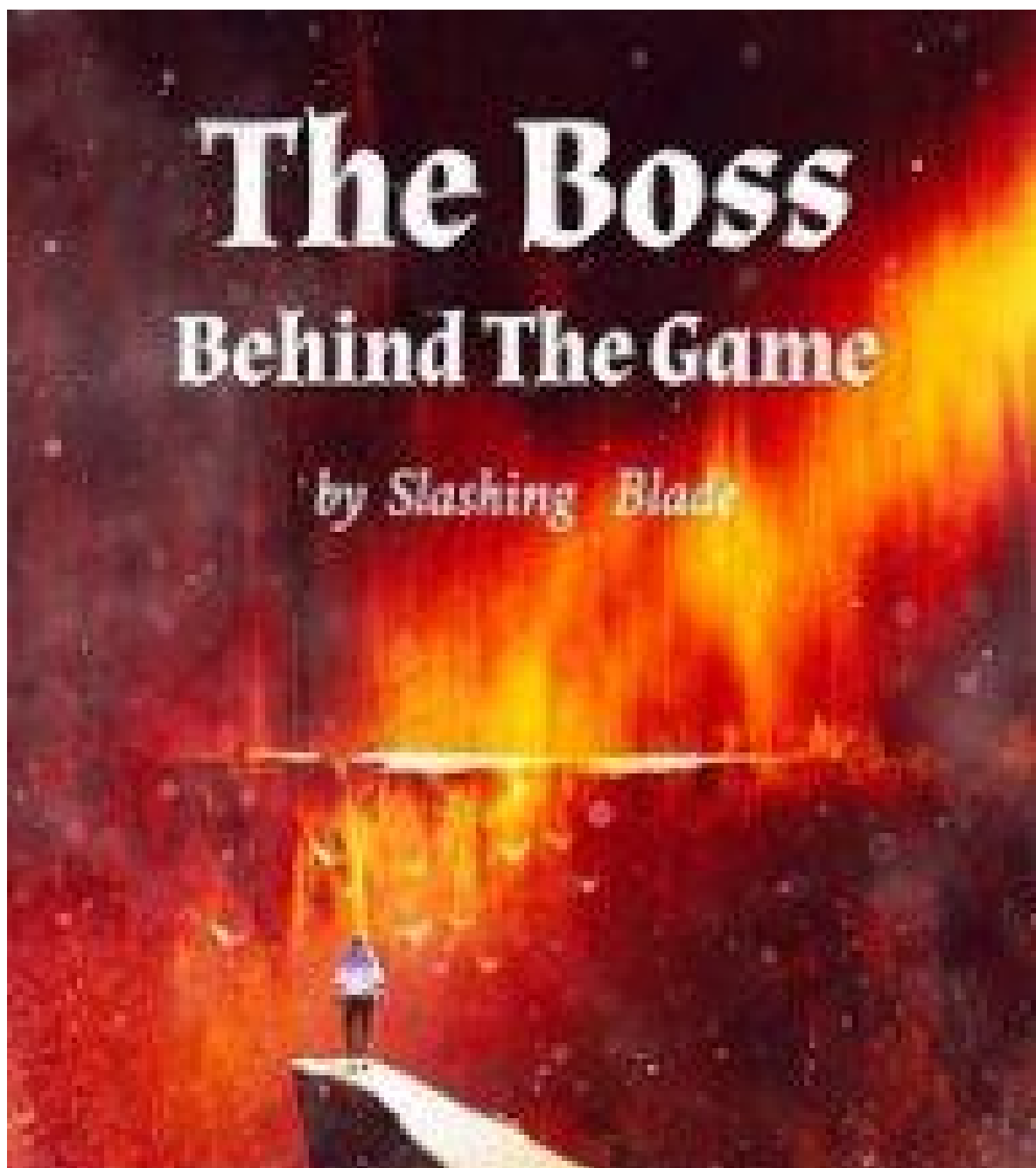
by Slashing Blade



WORLD ELECTRONIC DAILY

The Boss Behind The Game

Slashing Blade





Source: <https://boxnovel.com/novel/the-boss-behind-the-game>

Generated by [Lightnovel Crawler](#)

The Boss Behind The Game Chapter 301-400

1. [Volume 4](#)

1. [Chapter 301 - Uproar Of Naraka Players](#)
2. [Chapter 302 - My Master Is The Most Superior](#)
3. [Chapter 303 - Little Kun](#)
4. [Chapter 304 - This Is Destiny](#)
5. [Chapter 305 - Choosing His Own Future](#)
6. [Chapter 306 - Five Talents](#)
7. [Chapter 307 - For Passion](#)
8. [Chapter 308 - The Sea King'S Downfall?](#)
9. [Chapter 309 - The Overlord Declaring A War](#)
10. [Chapter 310 - Ocean Hegemony Contract](#)
11. [Chapter 311 - The Sea King'S Intelligence Was Mocked](#)
12. [Chapter 312 - A Divine Scripture Within The Body](#)
13. [Chapter 313 - Eric](#)
14. [Chapter 314 - Genius Versus Genius](#)
15. [Chapter 315 - The Secret In The Data Package](#)
16. [Chapter 316 - Blacksmithing](#)
17. [Chapter 317 - Lin Nuo And Lin Tie](#)
18. [Chapter 318 - Successor](#)
19. [Chapter 319 - Time Flow](#)
20. [Chapter 320 - Strings Puppet Show](#)
21. [Chapter 321 - -Time Flow](#)
22. [Chapter 322 - Creating A New Class: Puppeteer](#)
23. [Chapter 323 - Suppression From The Authority Dog](#)
24. [Chapter 324 - The Initial Setting Of The Asia Server](#)
25. [Chapter 325 - The Attack Of The Sunlight](#)
26. [Chapter 326 - Imitating The Ancestors](#)
27. [Chapter 327 - Underworld Exploded](#)
28. [Chapter 328 - Unlocking The Mission](#)
29. [Chapter 329 - No More Weaknesses](#)
30. [Chapter 330 - The Heretic King'S Experiment](#)
31. [Chapter 331 - Truth And Lies \(2 In 1\)](#)
32. [Chapter 332 - The Chess Player](#)
33. [Chapter 333 - Casting Body](#)

34. [Chapter 334 - Black Tiger](#)
35. [Chapter 335 - Foundation-Stealing Technique](#)
36. [Chapter 336 - A Change In Mentality](#)
37. [Chapter 337 - Lu Wu'S Discovery](#)
38. [Chapter 338 - I'M Back!](#)
39. [Chapter 339 - Otherworldly Demon](#)
40. [Chapter 340 - In-Depth Investigation](#)
41. [Chapter 341 - Starting Another Go Game](#)
42. [Chapter 342 - You Lost All Three Rounds But Didn'T Die!](#)
43. [Chapter 343: - -All-Rounded Little Beili](#)
44. [Chapter 344 - Beili'S Deification](#)
45. [Chapter 345 - May Day Event Notice](#)
46. [Chapter 346 - -A Husky That Was Out Of Control](#)
47. [Chapter 347 - Don'T Move, Kill Steal!](#)
48. [Chapter 348 - Chaotic Battle](#)
49. [Chapter 349 - -Giving Away The Topic](#)
50. [Chapter 350 - The Devouring Chaotic Battle](#)
51. [Chapter 351 - The Last Fight](#)
52. [Chapter 352 - May There Be No Sickness In Heaven](#)
53. [Chapter 353 - He Will Always Be Here](#)
54. [Chapter 354 - Han Yuanwu](#)
55. [Chapter 355 - -Cruel Truth](#)
56. [Chapter 356 - The Arrival Of The Evil King](#)
57. [Chapter 357 - I'LI Wait For You To Kneel And Beg For Mercy](#)
58. [Chapter 358 - Constructing A Resurrection Point](#)
59. [Chapter 359 - A Real Pk](#)
60. [Chapter 360 - -Offline Attack](#)
61. [Chapter 361 - Leaving Behind A Legend](#)
62. [Chapter 362 - Opening Of The Asia Server](#)
63. [Chapter 363 - Tricked By The Name](#)
64. [Chapter 364 - Don'T Be Greedy.](#)
65. [Chapter 365 - -Ai Crisis](#)
66. [Chapter 366 - Hp 3.0 \(2 In 1\)](#)
67. [Chapter 367 - The Hell Suit Player'S Mental State Crumbled](#)
68. [Chapter 368 - Beili'S Surrender](#)
69. [Chapter 369 - New Member \(2 In 1\)](#)
70. [Chapter 370 - All Of Them Are Treasures](#)

71. [Chapter 371 - Yuanxu'S Father](#)
72. [Chapter 372 - Syria Players](#)
73. [Chapter 373 - Young Man, The Organization Needs You!](#)
74. [Chapter 374 - The Great Demon King And The Explosive Man](#)
75. [Chapter 375 - Waiting For The Rabbit](#)
76. [Chapter 376 - Hahahaha \(Thanks To Brother Lin Hao For The Alliance Master Reward~\)](#)
77. [Chapter 377 - Corpses Falling From The Sky](#)
78. [Chapter 378 - Beichen'S Blade](#)
79. [Chapter 379 - The Cruel Truth](#)
80. [Chapter 380 - Chinese Bellflower](#)
81. [Chapter 381 - One Blade Stream, Taiyuan](#)
82. [Chapter 382 - Invitation To Battle](#)
83. [Chapter 383 - Sword](#)
84. [Chapter 384 - Using Emotions To Wield A Sword](#)
85. [Chapter 385 - The Arrival Of The Copper Pendant](#)
86. [Chapter 386 - The Legendary Bellflower](#)
87. [Chapter 387 - Encounter](#)
88. [Chapter 388 - Sword God](#)
89. [Chapter 389 - This Is From Falling](#)
90. [Chapter 390 - The Boundless Ocean Of Learning](#)
91. [Chapter 391 - Empress Kui Long](#)
92. [Chapter 392 - The Past Of The Netherworld Sea](#)
93. [Chapter 393 - You Might Not Believe Me \(2 In 1\)](#)
94. [Chapter 394 - The Difficulty Of The Hell Mode Raid](#)
95. [Chapter 395 - Super Evil?](#)
96. [Chapter 396 - Please Be A Good Person](#)
97. [Chapter 397 - Doctor Hai'S Karma Technique](#)
98. [Chapter 398 - The June 1St Special Event](#)
99. [Chapter 399 - Reviving The Great Empress?](#)
100. [Chapter 400 - Acting So Righteous](#)

Volume 4

Chapter 301 - Uproar Of Naraka Players

Chapter 301: Uproar Of Naraka Players

The mech turned into a battle fortress under the battle mode, going berserk and launching firepower all around him.

The area within fifty yards, centering upon the fortress, had turned into a forbidden place for the creatures, whereby every living creature would be torn to rags by the hail of bullets when they entered the zone.

Right at this moment, three rechargeable cannons were suddenly shot out from the fortress after being fully charged, hitting into the herds of creatures.

The surrounding area was covered in a vast expanse of whiteness in an instant. With the zone as the center, the huge shock of impact blew away all the creatures around.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The flames dyed the sky red. After a temporary pause, the fortress fully operated again.

The consumption of ammunition under the current state was exceptionally huge. Tesla had no choice but to continuously take out the caissons from his inventory, to be automatically removed and refilled by the mechanical arms around the body.

This was the Unlimited Firepower mode visualized by Tesla. With the assistance of inventory to store ammunition, automatic refill by the mechanical arms and the aid of the cooling system, the firepower of the fortress would never stop in battle mode.

[Mech Load 60%]

The voice notification inside the mech started reporting the current state of the mech.

“Increase firepower!”

Accompanied by Tesla’s yells, the power system in the recharging box operated at a high speed to recharge the ammunition stored in the interior part.

[Mech Load 100%]

The voice notification rang out again and all the cannons and guns slowly turned red as they were overloaded.

The firepower and firing rate was elevated at the same time.

Under such circumstances, the forbidden area with an initial radius of fifty yards was slowly expanding.

The players were dumbfounded as they watched the scene. Never had they thought that a mech modified by a player would be capable of attaining such a standard.

Heavens_Seer (USA): “I’m late, may I know how he managed to do this? Is this still a mech? (shocked emoji)”

Prince_Charming123 (USA): “Professional, he must definitely be a professional player. He merged all the 36 weapons of mass destruction into his mech. This is fucking genius!”

Purple_Gem (USA): “Fuck! That’s wild! From what I saw on the top right corner of the live stream, this player is only at Level 18... why do I feel like he’s Level 118!”

Crayon_Shinchan: “Tsk... tsk... tsk, another professional player in Naraka. I’m more and more excited about the Individual Skills Battle. I can’t get

into the game anyway, so I'll just look at how interesting it'll be when you deities fight. (laughing emoji)"

Roasting_Jade_Hare_While_Hugging_Chang'e: "Terrified when I was passing by. What an artifact for farming creatures! If it goes on like this, his soul coins will just go up, up, up! Jealous!"

Norse_God_of_Hammer (USA): "So it turns out that the modified mech could actually be this strong, no wonder there's so many design drafts selling in the shop. I'm jealous, could you provide the modifying proposal please, boss? I wish to remodel it as well. (jealous emoji)"

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Norse_God_of_Hammer: "You better just let it go... I watched the playback just now, he fucking remodeled it for a month without eating and drinking. Besides, this player is definitely a billionaire. He spent at least a few hundred thousand to do this, could you do that? (laughing emoji)"

...

The battle fortress modified by Tesla had completely shaken all the players in the live streaming channel. They finally realized the reason behind the existence of those design drafts in the shop. Apparently, if they had the capability to remodel the mech, it would definitely be so much stronger and tougher than the default mech.

The players were initially not interested at all in modifying, but now they were tempted to do so.

In other words, Tesla's action had stirred up the players' passion for remodeling.

There was even a tycoon who straight away made an offer, hoping that Tesla could help him build a battle fortress, too.

Nonetheless, Tesla was not paying attention to the live streaming room right now but kept his eyes on the parameters on the panel board of the mech instead. He recorded the numbers for the use of the next modification.

After all, this Fortress Mech was only the preliminary form of his idea. What he really wanted was a moving battle mech similar to a small base.

He was beset with all difficulties to attain the degree he desired. However, there were numerous design drafts that he had yet to purchase from the shop. He believed that as long as he kept going, he would definitely be able to make it happen.

However, Tesla perspired out of embarrassment as he looked at the huge consumption of ammunition. He's throwing away soul coins right now. He could feel a dull pain at the sight of the burning rate because there was no way the military would allocate another grant for him. Fortunately, his soul coins were increasing continuously as he killed the creatures and he was clearly earning more than what he had spent. This gave him a lot of comfort.

Under the crazy consumption, Tesla demonstrated the experience point farming before the eyes of the players in the live streaming channel.

He upgraded from Level 18 to Level 28 within half an hour. Meanwhile, his experience bar was leaping frantically. There was a continuous advance of mech performance, followed by the increasing violence of firepower.

The players were envious of this kind of farming.

The corpses of creatures were accumulating around him, yet there was a steady flow of creatures that were attracted by the boom, so much so that a living creature of the Ghost Commander Level appeared.

This creature of the Ghost Commander Level stubbornly made head against the endless firepower to enter the forbidden area.

Tesla was surprised by the scene before him and immediately directed all his weapons to this living creature.

Boom!

This living creature of the Ghost Commander Level was bombarded and blew away in an instant, his body nothing but blood pulp as he was flying on his back.

After knocking off the high-level living creature, Tesla changed the direction of the weapon output, forcing the creatures approaching him to retreat. Meanwhile, he went on recording the parameters of the mech during the battle, comparing the changes in the data so that he could make use of them in future modification.

The number of creatures was ineffective against such a defense that relied on extreme firepower. For that reason, Tesla himself was equal to an entire army. Since all the supplies in the fortress were under the control of mechanical arms, he had nothing to do but keep taking out the caissons from his inventory.

One and a half hours later, Tesla managed to break through to Level 40. The players were green with envy at his incredible upgrading speed.

Nonetheless, Tesla, who was in the middle of the fortress, had an opposite opinion, because the battle fortress consisting of about thirty weapons was nothing but a prototype to him. What he wanted to do next was to keep on increasing the strength of the mech and install more weapons.

After all, it seemed to him that the fortress was hardly an actual battle fortress if the number of weapons equipped did not even exceed a hundred. If conditions allowed, he might even want to install a thousand weapons in the fortress!

At that time, the fortress will occupy a land area of at least a thousand square yards when laying flat after being refined to battle mode.

Tesla put on an infatuated smile at the thought.

...

Emily was taking a nap while basking in the sunshine on the top of a tower 1,800 yards away from the battle fortress. She slowly sat up, rubbing her

hand through her messy hair.

Emily yawned as she listened to the sound of the boom from afar. Taking out a cigarette, she lit it up and took a long drag on it, her eyes drowsy with slumber.

Puff!

She stood up after blowing out a stream of smoke, her eyes landed on the zone haunted by thundering cannon shots. She immediately discovered the battle fortress that was resisting the streams of creatures.

After observing for a while in a daze, Emily was certainly stunned by this mechanical fortress as well.

Such violent firepower was the total opposite of her style, yet the battle mode of the fortress was clearly more astounding than hers.

But...

Right at this moment, Emily slowly raised her Black Lily's Kiss, her eyes aiming at the egg-shaped protective cover in the center zone of the battle fortress through the eyepiece.

After checking the magnitude of the wind and the degree of the deviation of the eye caused by the lighting, Emily curled her lips into a smile and instantly pulled the trigger.

Bang!

[You have killed Player Tesla! Critical hit!]

Black Lily gave another yawn after succeeding in the killing, muttering in her mouth, "It's so noisy!"

...

The scene gradually turned black, the notification of him being killed resounded in his mind.

Tesla appeared to be in utter confusion at this moment.

On the other hand, the players in the live streaming channel burst out in laughter, continuously sending him sarcastic comments.

Chapter 302 - My Master Is The Most Superior

Chapter 302: My Master Is The Most Superior

Tesla was totally dumbfounded by his sudden death.

Glancing at the notification on the screen, Tesla was even more confused when he realized that he was killed by a player.

It was for the sake of research and peaceful life that he had built the battle fortress to withstand the endless monsters in Naraka, but he never expected to be killed by a player this time.

Tesla was rendered speechless.

After a few moments of silence, Tesla was prepared to take revenge for himself.

Anyone who gets in my way of research dies!

...

Although Tesla was killed, his actions to develop a Battle Fortress had greatly impacted the American server, as most of the players had gained interest in modifying their mech.

Moreover, Tesla was not the only one with expertise in this area.

Soon enough, the forum established a Mech Remodeling Society. This society only recruited those talents with professional knowledge. Every day, their topic of discussion was about how to remodel their mechs to further improve performance.

Furthermore, this society had several times disclosed posts about mech remodeling suggestions and blueprints for other players to use. Thus, they had gained a good reputation in Naraka.

Besides, the National Defense of the United States encountered yet another troubling matter.

After Tesla's research grant application to play a game, the research staff, who were Tesla's colleagues, collectively requested the National Defense of the United States to provide a gaming pod to each of them as they wanted to play Battle Online, too.

The reason was simple. The research staff was moved after seeing Tesla's remodeled mech.

After all, they had poured in their whole life for scientific research, thus these products of surreal technology were full of temptation to them. How could they remain calm after seeing Tesla's remodeling process and learning about this type of technology in the game?

Therefore, the entire research team of the National Defense of America entered Battle Online and established a military research group there.

Compared to the Mech Society instituted by normal players, the overall ability of the military research group was definitely on a different level from the non-governmental organization except for their lesser number of people.

The mech remodeling plans provided by them directly served the military, helping the military soldiers to remodel their mech and improve the functions of the mechs.

Naraka had officially entered the early phase of technology development.

At the same time, with the National Defense of the United States taking the lead, the military soldiers had formed multiple armies with the players as an official counterattack to the forces to gain a better foothold there.

...

In comparison to the passive counterattack of the European server and American server players, the Beiqi players were always on their way of engaging in more and more trouble.

After war broke out between the Sea King and the Langya Island Military Alliance, the Beiqi players kept themselves busy as well. Although they no longer organized large-scale joint operations, small-scale attacks were still ongoing.

The forces of Langya Island could only ceaselessly reinforce their troops at their border of the Void Ocean when facing multiple invasions of the players. It could be said that the existence of the players had helped the Sea King to delay most of the troops of the military alliance so that the battle would be less tough for the Sea King Navy.

Concurrently, at the border of the Void Ocean and the Kuilong Ocean.

A player was squatting on the back of a sea creature. His right hand was continuously stroking the sea creature that was wailing, but his face was full of joy and was murmuring from time to time.

This player's name was Bai Ze who had completed the class advancement to a Rune Master. His strength was inconspicuous among the players.

However, he was recognized as a professional player, and his popularity in the forum's live streaming market was steadily placed within the top three.

It was because he was officially known as the Beast-taming Master among the players and was also nicknamed as the Pokemon Beast-taming Master. He was a player who had a large number of fans since the beginning of his live streaming channel and his existence had led a lot of players to embark on the path of beast-taming.

It could be said that he was the pioneer of the beast-taming craze in the game.

At that moment, his challenge was to tame a sea creature. According to Bai Ze, since the maritime forces could tame sea creatures, then as players, they should be able to do the same.

The players in his live streaming channel had no objections to his bold ambition because this man had used reality to make the impossible possible.

Besides, he really did it.

To tame this sea monster, Bai Ze could be said to have acted out *The Old Man and the Sea* in real life. After drifting on the ocean for several days, he finally tamed this young sea creature.

He succeeded after days and nights of hard work. At the moment, the live streaming channel was full of players cheering and tipping.

Witnessing the scene, many of the players who had watched the whole live stream, had their hearts filled with satisfaction as if it was them who had tamed the sea creature.

Bai Ze had once again proven himself and gave a large number of beast-taming fans a new goal.

According to Bai Ze, the players could build armies of sea creatures just like the maritime forces as naval battles were not only limited to using Specter Ships and Specter Warships.

Whereas his success in taming the sea creature had proved that his viewpoint was feasible. Many players were delighted as they seemed to visualize themselves controlling an army of sea creatures and exploring the ocean.

Countless tips instantly filled the screen and Bai Ze's live streaming channel once again rushed to the top of the forum's real-time popularity scoreboard.

Bai Ze's beast-taming skills were not only the reason that players had taken a liking to him, it was also because of his willpower.

Just like in the beginning when he tried to tame the zombie wolf, Bai Ze had died multiple times to achieve his goal. At that time, many players mocked and ridiculed him, but he never gave up and continued with determination. In the end, he succeeded in taming the first zombie wolf in the game.

To the players, his success was not an accident, but due to his efforts and determination.

It was also because of his spirit that had influenced many players to become his loyal fans.

Taking a glance at the young sea creature that had stopped struggling, Bai Ze stretched out to stroke its head again, constantly consoling it.

Bai Ze had tamed countless creatures for more than half a year, and he noticed the similarity of these tamable creatures in the game.

These creatures actually had spirituality. Although they did not understand what you were talking about, these creatures could feel the thoughts you were trying to express.

This is an emotional perception. For example, when you were angry or sad, these feelings that were exposed could be felt by these creatures with their sharp perception.

Although it would be hard to communicate with this method, Bai Ze still managed to gain a knack of it and gradually applied it practically which had achieved great results.

At Bai Ze's solace, the tensed body of the young sea creature gradually relaxed. A snoring sound could be heard during the vibration of its throat. Its tail was also beating the surface of the sea. It seemed to be enjoying Bai Ze's touches.

The moment when Bai Ze was solacing the young sea creature, deep under the sea, a hoarse long cry resounded. Huge sound waves radiated forward, causing the sea surface to become ferocious.

Bai Ze frowned upon hearing the long cry. When he was about to ask the young sea creature to leave this area, a huge ball-shaped shadow appeared on the sea surface.

The coverage of the shadow was huge. It was about a distance of a thousand yards which left Bai Ze flabbergasted.

In his vision, he saw dark green eyes enlarging constantly as the shadow approached.

At that moment, the young sea creature below Bai Ze also started to wail uneasily. Bai Ze hurriedly stretched out his hand to appease it.

Splash!

A round curtain of water was formed on the sea surface and a giant ferocious head slowly emerged from the water.

Bai Ze was immediately startled the moment he saw this huge creature.

[Tao Wu (Lord of the Void Ocean)]:

Creature Details: An elite Ocean King who reigned over the Void Ocean for tens of thousands of years. His strength is in the level of Ocean Spirit (mid-divine).

Creature Origin: Unknown

Creature State: Peak, Lazy (Nature)

Looking at the creature in front of him, Bai Ze was horrified.

“Run! Quickly run!”

Bai Ze hurriedly roared at the young sea creature below.

As a player, how could he not know how terrifying Tao Wu was. It would be fine even if he died but he definitely did not wish to see this young sea creature be consumed by Tao Wu.

Just then, Bai Ze remembered a post about Tao Wu in the forum.

Many players had complained about their spiritual fish being snatched away by Tao Wu at that post.

After many encounters, Tao Wu's vicious character of robbing others' prey was well known by all the players. Thus, the moment he saw Tao Wu, Bai Ze knew that his situation was unfavorable.

This creature must have taken a liking to the little sea creature that I just tamed!

Thinking about this, Bai Ze repeatedly urged the young sea creature to flee quickly, feeling extremely nervous.

The young sea creature did not care about Bai Ze's roar. Instead, it raised his head and let out a low cry at Tao Wu who was staring at them with cold eyes.

Ying!

"Get away quickly, stop calling out, you're going to be swallowed!" Bai Ze felt worried as he looked at the fearless little sea creature.

At this moment, Tao Wu suddenly glanced at the little sea creature with his dark green eyes and also let out a low cry.

Ying!

Tao Wu said to the little sea creature, "I told you not to run around but you didn't listen. See how you're caught now. Get back home quickly and let me swallow the person on your back!"

The little sea creature replied with a confident look, "No, he's my master. He told me to listen to him from now on. So father, whatever you said doesn't count, my master is the most superior."

His firm tone left Tao Wu at a loss for words.

Tao Wu suddenly felt mentally exhausted for having such a foolish son.

Chapter 303 - Little Kun

Chapter 303: Little Kun

Upon hearing the words of his foolish son, Tao Wu felt helpless.

This was a typical case of being sold and yet his son was still helping to count the money. Besides, where did that smugness of his come from?

After thinking for a while, Tao Wu opened his enormous mouth, “Son, you’ve been tricked. Let me swallow this man and then you come back with me!”

Seeing Tao Wu approaching him with his mouth wide open, Bai Ze thought that Tao Wu was going to swallow the little sea creature. Therefore, he hurriedly stepped forward, jumped up, and gave a powerful punch on Tao Wu’s head.

Nonetheless, his attack couldn’t even break the skin of Tao Wu and was knocked back to the back of the little sea creature.

However, the little sea creature stuck out his stomach and leaped from the water surface, flapping its tail at Tao Wu’s face.

Slap!

“Foolish thing, what are you doing!?” Tao Wu was enraged.

“My master’s enemy is my enemy!” the little sea creature said firmly. It was obvious that the brainwash these few days had worked well.

In fact, something had escaped Bai Ze’s knowledge. As a creature with Ocean Spirit-level potential, the little sea creature could understand everything Bai Ze said these few days on the sea but it just could not communicate with him.

Thus, upon seeing Bai Ze being bullied, the immature five-month-old little sea creature that had undergone Bai Ze's education, felt as if it was being bullied and started to fight back.

At that moment, Tao Wu's feelings were complicated.

If some other normal sea creature dared to provoke him like this, he would definitely have swallowed the creature, but this was his own son that was born not too long ago.

Whereas Bai Ze, who saw the little sea creature's counterattack as an aside, was so frightened to the point where his face had turned pale. Is this little sea creature a fool? This is the Lord of the Void Ocean! How could it just attack so rashly?

It's... it's too loyal.

“Don't you come closer!”

At the sight of Tao Wu widening his eyes, Bai Ze was anxious because he did not wish to see the little sea creature being swallowed like this.

Tao Wu totally ignored Bai Ze and was staring at the little sea creature.

“I'm your father! How dare you hit your father!”

“My master is the most superior!” the little sea creature continued with certainty.

The little sea creature's words left Tao Wu shuddering with fury. With a flap of its tail, huge waves of a few dozen meters arose.

“Then if I want to swallow him, what can you do?” while speaking, Tao Wu looked at Bai Ze.

“Then let's duel!” the little sea creature refused to yield.

What the...

Tao Wu opened and closed his mouth twice, feeling that it had never felt so aggrieved except fighting with that Demonic God lunatic.

His son actually wanted to duel with him. Tao Wu was fuming.

Therefore, Tao Wu didn't care to attend to the little sea creature. He opened his mouth around Bai Ze and sucked him into his mouth.

Just when he was about to swallow Bai Ze, he saw the little sea creature leaping into his mouth, too.

Spit!

Tao Wu quickly stopped his swallowing action and immediately spat them out.

His stomach digestion ability was extremely strong. If it were to swallow them, the little sea creature would definitely not be able to survive.

“Exactly what are you trying to do?” Tao Wu fiercely asked again.

“I will always be with my master. We shall die together!”

Ying!

Tao Wu let out a depressing long cry.

He wondered what sin he'd committed to have such a stupid son.

Currently, Bai Ze, who was spat out, was also depressed.

Was it because he didn't taste good?

Originally, he thought Tao Wu would leave after spitting him out, but he was approaching once again. This made Bai Ze really nervous.

After giving it some thought, Bai Ze swam to the little sea creature and climbed onto its back. He subsequently stood up and looked at Tao Wu, shouting at it.

“Tao Wu, do you understand me? Let the creature go, I will let you eat me!”

Tao Wu glanced at Bai Ze as if he was an idiot and continued to ignore him. Instead, he looked at the little sea creature and said, “Leave with me, I’m not going to eat him!”

“I refuse. I want to build an army of sea creatures with him. Our target is to conquer the Void Ocean!” the little sea creature replied proudly.

“I am the overlord of this ocean and your father! There’s no need for you to conquer anything. Leave with me!” Tao Wu was completely infuriated at the moment.

Roar!

“Then we will defeat you!” the little sea creature continued hooting.

Tao Wu was so agitated that he swung his tail and knocked the little sea creature and Bai Ze away.

Although restraining his force, Bai Ze and the little sea creature were flung dozens of yards away.

Bai Ze, who was thrown away again, had a shadow in his heart and he had a guess. This bastard Tao Wu wanted to toy with them before swallowing them.

Facing this situation, Bai Ze suddenly felt very furious, but there was nothing he could do as he didn’t have enough strength.

However, Tao Wu was even more indignant at this time. His son wanted to assist others to conquer the Void Ocean that he dominated. That was such a heartbreaking feeling.

Looking at Tao Wu who was approaching gradually, Bai Ze swam to the little sea creature and stroked its head. He couldn’t help but let out a shallow, pent-up breath, “I still don’t know your name.”

Bai Ze turned on the analyzing ability as he spoke.

Bai Ze didn't turn on his analyzing ability during his whole process of taming the little sea creature this time due to the coaxing of the live stream audience. Therefore he naturally didn't know the clan and the features of the little sea creature as it was to increase the difficulty in beast-taming.

However, this time, since the little sea creature was going to die, Bai Ze didn't care about his promise with the players in his live streaming channel and opened the Analysis Menu.

Bai Ze was astounded right after that.

[Little Kun (Sea Spirit Level Creature)]:

Creature Details: The son of Tao Wu, the Lord of the Void Ocean and Hai Meng, the Lord of the Yesha Ocean. He has noble blood and was born with ocean affinity. He also has Ocean Spirit-level potential. With the fusion of the blood of two ocean lords, he has chances to advance to God-level status!

Creature Status: Cub (Five months old)

Bai Ze was entirely lifeless at the sight of the little sea creature's information, and this caused an uproar in his live streaming channel.

Pokemon_Master: "LMAO, who asked you guys to not let the Master use analyzing ability in order to increase the difficulty. Now that he had accidentally tamed the son of Tao Wu... let me cover my face and laugh for a while."

Creature_Hunter: "Pff! After this matter, everyone should remember to use analyzing ability when taming a creature. The beast-taming this time is a classical case, everyone should take it as a warning. (laughing emoji)"

Crayon_Shinchan: "As expected of the Master, taming a Kyogre Pokemon on your first try. When are you going to tame a Groudon? (laughing emoji)"

Raiding_Hunter: "Fuck, this menu has given me a great shock. Master, you've fucking abducted someone's son. (covering face emoji)"

Super_Summoner: “This show is impressive! Tao Wu’s son was abducted by the Master. Now you should know why Tao Wu didn’t swallow you. (laughing emoji)”

Trainer_XiaoZhi: “Master, motherfucker, how dare you abduct my son? How do you want to die!?” (laughing emoji)”

...

Looking at Tao Wu who was glaring at him, Bai Ze felt extremely awkward.

“Big Boss Tao Wu, this... this was unintentional. I will return your son to you!”

Hearing this, Tao Wu turned around to look at Little Kun.

“Did you hear that? He wants you to leave with me!”

Little Kun flapped his tail twice and turned to glance at Bai Ze with a face full of reluctance.

“Go, our fate has ended!” Bai Ze patted Little Kun’s head and said embarrassingly.

Ying!

“Come back here!” Tao Wu widened his eyes again when he saw Little Kun mourning.

“Go... it’s my fault. Go back with your father,” Bai Ze persuaded again while stroking Little Kun.

Ying! Little Kun let out another long cry.

Losing his patience, Tao Wu pulled his tail out of the water and wrapped around the little sea creature. After that, he took a deep glance at Bai Ze and dragged the little sea creature along, swimming to a distant place.

Ying!

Seeing the figure of Little Kun tearing up and constantly turning around to look at him, Bai Ze felt distressed.

Chapter 304 - This Is Destiny

Chapter 304: This Is Destiny

Beiqi, Liuli Coast.

A Specter Ship with countless animal pendants was steadily sailing off the coast, heading toward the Void Ocean.

On the deck of the ship, Bai Ze was lying there, watching the blue sky while looking preoccupied.

As he thought of the accident that happened the last time he tamed a sea creature, Bai Ze couldn't help but sigh.

At first, when he thought Tao Wu had come to menacingly eat up the little sea creature, he was beyond madness. Only after that did he realize that he was the one who'd kidnapped Tao Wu's son.

In the end, it was the little sea creature that helped him get through the adversity. He felt embarrassed about all these events.

This time, he was sailing off again to keep his previous promise in taming a sea creature. However, with the lesson learned last time, Bai Ze had promised the players in the live streaming channel that he would use the analyzing ability this time before taming any creature to avoid any awkwardness from happening again.

As the Specter Ship entered the Void Ocean, the sea that was calm back then suddenly turned choppy and the wind was howling in rage. Apparently, Bai Ze was already used to the bad weather of the Void Ocean, so he showed no worry and continued to sail forward in the Specter Ship.

Upon reaching the center zone of the Void Ocean, Bai Ze took out his own fishing tools and placed a slice of meat onto the fish hook. Besides, he also

sprinkled some Sea Spirit Grass powder which was most of the sea creatures' favorite smell.

Bai Ze then threw the fish hook into the sea and waited patiently.

Before deciding to tame sea creatures, Bai Ze had purposely collected some creature illustration handbooks from the players in the forum. From there, he learned that sea creatures normally lived in the deeper zones of the sea. Without fishing tools, it was hard to lure the sea creatures to show themselves on the surface.

With the Sea Spirit Grass powder which he used on the bait, it was able to produce a smell that was most preferred by the sea creatures, hence increasing the chance of fishing one out.

The only thing he needed to do now was to wait.

Two hours later...

As he raised the fishing rod again, Bai Ze looked helpless as he saw a white fish struggling insanely by beating its tail non-stop.

He was here to fish for sea creatures, but two hours of fishing did not bring him any sea creatures but only big fish with no spirituality.

However, Bai Ze was not giving up yet. So he threw the hook into the sea once again and continued waiting while he started chatting with his fans in the live streaming channel.

At the moment, a creature that looked like a whale with two short claws around its fins was swimming toward the surface of the sea from ten thousand meters beneath the water.

When it was a few hundred yards from the surface, it suddenly stopped and changed its direction toward the south excitedly before it continued swimming in top speed.

It's this familiar taste again. So delicious!

Soon, it saw a big piece of meat with Sea Spirit Grass powder sprinkled all over. When it was going to swallow it in one go, it suddenly hesitated.

After swimming around the meat twice, this sea creature focused its sight on the near-transparent string.

Looking upward and then at the meat again, the sea creature suddenly opened its mouth and swallowed the meat.

Pain!

The pain when the fish hook pierced through its palate caused the sea creature to have bloodshot eyes instantly.

Meanwhile, Bai Ze who was above the sea was overjoyed when he saw the fishing rod shaking. He immediately spun the winch, trying to get his prey onto the shore.

While Bai Ze was spinning the winch, he could feel that the sea creature must be a big one. So he quickly crouched down, preparing for a protracted fight.

All the sea creatures were very strong. Therefore, it was impossible to drag them to the shore before their strength was used up and it was no surprise to drag them for a few days on the surface of the sea.

After fixing the fishing rod to the mast column on the deck and making sure it would not detach, Bai Ze started spinning the winch once again.

Nevertheless, Bai Ze was shocked as he couldn't feel the slightest tug from the rod.

Did the sea creature get away?

In order to figure that out, Bai Ze sped up his spinning motion but still, he felt nothing. This left Bai Ze puzzled as he thought the sea creature had escaped.

Bai Ze sighed. He was left with no other choice but to prepare for new bait.

However, the more he spun, the stranger he felt as a huge shadow was gradually showing on the water surface.

As Bai Ze was still in astonishment, the black shadow jumped out of the sea and spurted a water column toward Bai Ze, making him all wet.

Ying!

A familiar figure with a familiar sound. Bai Ze was stunned when he saw Little Kun.

Ying!

As it fell back into the water, Little Kun flapped its tail while swimming to the side of the Specter Ship. Then he raised his head and opened his mouth, letting the hook on its palate show.

Bai Ze was indeed speechless when he saw Little Kun looking so excited.

As a potential Divine Beast level creature, how could he still act like he had done things right when he was making the same mistake twice?

Bai Ze took a few steps forward and reached into Little Kun's mouth with his hands. As he was crying in pain, he removed the fish hook before he caressed Little Kun which was leaning against the ship's edge and said, "My bad, Little Kun!"

As soon as Bai Ze spoke, Little Kun uttered in excitement and flapped his tail, setting off waves on the sea surface.

Seeing Little Kun being affectionate, Bai Ze couldn't help showing a smile on his face as well. However, he suddenly thought of something, and his face clouded.

"Oh right, you have to go back now. Otherwise, your father will come looking for you again."

As if Little Kun could understand Bai Ze, he stopped moving his tail. With a sullen look, he made a mournful sound.

Bai Ze sighed helplessly as he took out some jerky from his channel and stuffed them into Little Kun's mouth.

“Go back. Our fate has ended. I haven't reached the level where I'm able to tame you yet.”

Looking at Little Kun who was in grief, Bai Ze decided to have no mercy and shouted, “Leave now! I'm not your master anymore!”

Little Kun's eyes were filled with tears instantly. He flapped his tail a few more times before he went back down into the water.

Looking at the shrinking shadow, Bai Ze was very helpless. Although he liked Little Kun very much as he was a spiritual creature, bringing him along would cause trouble as his father was Tao Wu. He would be in big trouble.

As a player, he was not afraid of trouble, but he was afraid to cause trouble to the other players as well. If he really did so, Tao Wu would treat all the players as his enemy, then it would be very hard for them to travel across the sea.

After a moment, when he confirmed that the shadow had completely disappeared, Bai Ze set another meat on the bait and sprinkled the Sea Spirit Grass powder onto it before he threw it into the water.

This time, the fish hook shook again within five minutes. Bai Ze was filled with happiness as he never expected anything to be baited so soon, he quickly spun the winch after he steadied himself.

As he spun, his expression turned gloomy. This just doesn't feel right. The force has disappeared again as if the creature is swimming upward.

As expected, when the black shadow jumped out of the water, the familiar sound was heard.

Looking at Little Kun who was flapping his tail excitedly as he raised his head, Bai Ze had run out of words.

Why is it so hard to fish for a sea creature!?

Players who saw this were in a great bustle, too.

In the live streaming channel:

Creature_Hunter: “Fate brought them together. Congratulations to the master for fishing the Son of Tao Wu twice continuously. He is just so lucky! (laughing emoji)”

Super_Summoner: “Hahaha. Are you surprised? Are you astounded? It’s me again! (laughing emoji)”

Pokemon_Master: “All these are destined to be. Master, why don’t you just keep him? Since he has already shown his sincerity, are you still a man if you’re going to reject him again? Jerk identification completed! (laughing emoji)”

Fascinated_Fan: “This little sea creature does have spirituality. Tame him, master! I want to see you leading him across the sea. (heart emoji)”

Raiding_Hunter: “Little Kun wants to fish sea creatures? Impossible! You are mine, don’t ever think of getting close to those bitches. You can only fish me, do you understand? (Tong Gua smashing face warning.jpg)”

Crayon_Shinchan: “Tao Wu is on his way there, reaching the battlefield in three minutes. Then I will live stream hitting my naive son, everyone please remember to give rewards. (laughing emoji)”

...

Watching the comments of the players in the live streaming channel, Bai Ze couldn’t help rolling his eyes.

Ying!

Then, Little Kun opened his mouth eagerly, signaling Bai Ze to remove the fish hook quickly.

Bai Ze was starting to get mad when he saw this. So now you're addicted to playing with this?

Chapter 305 - Choosing His Own Future

Chapter 305: Choosing His Own Future

Bai Ze was totally speechless as he removed the fish hook from Little Kun's mouth once again.

Obviously, Little Kun was really into him. There was no way to continue fishing sea creatures with him behaving like this.

Bai Ze caressed Little Kun's head, unsure of what to do next. When he was about to advise Little Kun to leave again, an enormous shadow was seen to be emerging from beneath the sea. Then, a huge head with a ferocious look appeared before him.

It was Tao Wu!

Bai Ze was left speechless.

Noticing Tao Wu's vicious gaze, Bai Ze felt like he should explain the situation, but he couldn't find any suitable words.

“Son, how dare you wander around when I fell asleep again!?”

“I want to follow where the master goes!” answered Little Kun as he flapped his tail twice.

Little Kun was an unmatured newborn. Everything was still new to him, so he lacked basic judgment in certain things.

Nonetheless, he felt comfortable being with Bai Ze.

Moreover, since the day he was born, Little Kun had never been bullied. Therefore, under Bai Ze's domestication, he was ready to be loyal to Bai Ze

and wanted to follow Bai Ze everywhere deep down in his heart.

Upon hearing that, Tao Wu widened his eyes in madness as he was exasperated at his son's behavior. As an overlord of the ocean, he really couldn't understand why he would have such a son.

"Follow me back home!" Tao Wu stared at his son.

"No!"

Looking at his stupid son, Tao Wu felt so helpless. Hence he had decided to send Little Kun to his mother, Hai Meng, after this as he couldn't raise the little one by himself anymore.

"I will swallow him if you're not coming with me!" threatened Tao Wu fiercely as he saw Little Kun starting to make waves on the sea as a sign of disobeying him.

Roar!

"Swallow me too then," Little Kun held onto the ship's edge with his little claw, looking stubborn.

Tao Wu was truly irritated. He didn't want to waste any more time. So he flicked his tail to wrap around Little Kun, planning to take him away like that.

However, Little Kun's small claws were holding tight onto the ship's edge. With the dragging movements of Tao Wu, Bai Ze's Specter Ship was being dragged along as well.

Tao Wu was so mad that he couldn't find any words to say.

"Let go!" roared Tao Wu as he loosened his tail which was seizing Little Kun earlier, worried that he might get hurt.

"I won't!"

“Do you really want to see me die in rage? You are the son of mine and Hai Meng, can you at least be a little useful? Why would you call him master? Is there not a hint of shame in you...”

Tao Wu was so furious. Although he knew Little Kun was behaving like this as he was immature, he still felt that Little Kun was embarrassing him because Little Kun was not acting like a creature with great potential of the overlord level at all.

“I like him!” Little Kun felt Tao Wu’s rage as well and lowered his head in frustration while his claws were pointing toward Bai Ze who was standing on the ship.

“He doesn’t deserve you!”

“I just like him,” Little Kun replied bitterly.

Tao Wu was stunned as he heard this.

Right, Little Kun is still young, he doesn’t realize how noble he is. So he would say anything due to his nature. Like means like, dislike means dislike, the concept of levels has not developed in his mind yet.

Tao Wu’s expression became complicated eventually. At the moment, he thought of his younger self. Was he not behaving like this as well back then?

However, living in this dangerous Void Ocean, he had no choice but to become stronger and more vicious than all the other ocean creatures so that they would be afraid of him. Only then he could survive.

He had gradually lost his nature while he was on his way to achieving this, becoming how he was today in restless devourings and killings.

To Tao Wu, Little Kun should grow up like this, too. After growing up, he should explore new oceans, starting from zero in the new area, gradually devouring and evolving, then finally defeating the old overlord of the area

and taking over the throne for himself. This was the right king's path for his son.

Nevertheless, listening to Little Kun's opinion, Tao Wu was completely stupefied. He was suddenly wondering why he would want Little Kun to repeat the same path full of killings after him. He did not have any choice back then but to become stronger, but now he could offer a choice to Little Kun.

Only then did the memories from a long time ago flashback in Tao Wu's mind.

Many blurry figures appeared in his mind once again.

His friends who were not strong enough but were able to bring him happiness were not around anymore. He was the one who abandoned them as the only thing in his mind back then was to become stronger so that he would not have to live in fear anymore!

Now, Tao Wu suddenly realized that he was only truly happy in the past.

Although the bygones made Tao Wu emotional, he did not regret walking this path as he had no other choices.

However, it was different for Little Kun.

Retaining the naive nature and continuing living according to his own preferences, or abandoning his nature and growing up devouring and killing, Little Kun actually had an option as Little Kun was his son, son of the overlord of this Void Ocean. He had the ability to let his son choose!

Looking at Little Kun in frustration, Tao Wu was moved.

“Son, are you sure of this? You are still young so you may not know the meaning of choosing yet. But I have to tell you now, you would've become the strongest overlord of an ocean. All the creatures would be afraid and terrified by your name then. This was once the path I hoped you would

choose, but now I'm letting you make your own choice. So it's the choice of being yourself or being a king!"

Although Little Kun didn't understand these sentences, Tao Wu told them to his son anyway so that he could make his own choice.

Little Kun suddenly looked so lost as if he was trying to understand those words. After a while, Little Kun raised his hand and pointed at Bai Ze.

"I want to follow him!"

Hearing this, Tao Wu nodded his head with a complex expression and turned to face Bai Ze. He said to him ferociously, "I'm entrusting my son to you now. Remember you are only his friend, not his master!"

Bai Ze was shocked when Tao Wu talked to him in human language. After all, he had always thought that Tao Wu couldn't speak.

By the way, Bai Ze was dumbfounded by Tao Wu's words as he couldn't understand why Tao Wu who was in great rage some moments ago had turned better now. He was even planning to entrust Little Kun to him?

"Do you understand!?" Tao Wu roared at Bai Ze, setting off huge waves around them when the winds were swirling insanely at the same time.

Bai Ze quickly nodded.

Then, Tao Wu looked toward Little Kun.

"Son, I'm now giving you the chance to choose your own path. But I've spared you another one as well. If you ever regret this path of your choice, you are going to take mine and you will be left with no choice then!"

Little Kun nodded in confusion after hearing this. Even though he didn't understand, his father seemed to have agreed to let him follow Bai Ze.

Gazing at Little Kun, Tao Wu could not help but let out a sigh and slowly submerged into the sea after shaking his head.

“Son, always remember that you are Tao Wu’s son, don’t embarrass me!”

As Tao Wu finished his sentence, he totally disappeared from the surface and was quickly diving into the deep sea.

Watching Tao Wu leave, Bai Ze and Little Kun looked at each other. They were both surprised and excited.

At the moment, the game notification suddenly appeared in Bai Ze’s head.

[Little Kun’s feeling toward you has reached the level of loyalty. You have unlocked a hidden feature. Do you wish to keep him as a pet?]

Bai Ze was astonished by the game notification.

To be honest, after realizing Little Kun’s identity, Bai Ze really didn’t plan to tame him as his father was too strong. He was afraid that he would cause trouble.

Moreover, this was also the first time Bai Ze received such a game notification during his creature-taming moments.

After taking a glance at the players who were already starting a commotion in the live streaming channel, Bai Ze went into a dilemma as he had just promised Tao Wu that he would only be his son’s friend, definitely not his master.

Chapter 306 - Five Talents

Chapter 306: Five Talents

After his struggle lasted for a while, Bai Ze finally gave up.

[Confirm to give up on keeping Little Kun as a pet?]

The game notification appeared once again.

Confirm!

As the game notification faded off, a smile was shown on Bai Ze's face. He strode to the ship's edge and caressed Little Kun who was looking pity.

“We are friends from now on. Follow me back to the Liuli Coast and I will introduce you to some new friends!”

Little Kun nodded instantly.

As Bai Ze was ready to go back to Beiqi with Little Kun, the game notification reappeared in his mind.

[Little Kun's feeling toward you has reached a new level of loyalty. You have unlocked a hidden feature. You are allowed to establish a friendship with Little Kun and he would become your personal NPC!]

When Bai Ze saw the second game notification, he was totally dumbfounded. He was still regretting missing a great opportunity then and was hoping for more of a friendship. To his surprise, the contract was provided immediately to him.

Right then, Lu Wu who was behind the scenes was speechless. He thought Bai Ze would choose to keep Little Kun as a pet, but surprisingly, he gave it up.

Lu Wu was very clear that it was indeed a luring offer. After all, no matter how bad Little Kun could be, it would be no lower than Tao Wu's level. He even had the potential of reaching the Divine Level! This was why Lu Wu had announced the mission to Bai Ze, because once he agreed on that, Little Kun would be digitized, hence leaving a soul mark in the artifact which would become Lu Wu's power indirectly.

However, Bai Ze's decision was out of Lu Wu's expectation. Although this was just a game, it was still able to create huge values, a Divine Beast with limitless potential could possibly be sold at a whopping price. So, Lu Wu truly admired Bai Ze as he chose to give up on all these.

Of course, Lu Wu didn't want to miss out on Little Kun, thus a contract which was considerably easier to be accepted was offered. Little Kun would still be digitized anyway, but with a difference of reduced control over him.

As Lu Wu kept an eye on Bai Ze, he quietly waited.

Lu Wu actually thought that it was better for Bai Ze to control Little Kun.

This was because Bai Ze was not strong enough on his own and Little Kun was currently just a creature of the Sea Spirit Level, if somehow they encountered a powerful enemy who killed Little Kun before it was digitized, Little Kun would be gone forever as he would not be able to revive like Bai Ze.

On the other hand, as long as he was digitized, Bei Li would be able to revive him even if he died. Since he had chosen to continue his journey with him, digitization was actually a better choice for both of them.

After a moment of pondering, Bai Ze seemed to have come to a conclusion. He then pressed on confirm and a Server Announcement popped up.

[Server Announcement: Congratulations to Player Bai Ze on signing a contract with Tao Wu's son, Little Kun! Little Kun is officially Bai Ze's personal NPC now!]

This announcement increased Bai Ze's popularity in the live streaming channel dramatically. A huge swamp of spectators approached him after getting the news, wanting to know how he was able to achieve that and what Tao Wu's son looked like.

Live streaming channel:

Go!Pikachu: "Congratulations to the Master on establishing a good relationship! Sprinkle flowers, when are you going to bear monkeys? Looking forward to that. (laughing emoji)"

Roasting_Jade_Hare_While_Hugging_Chang'e: "It has been a long time since I watched your live stream, Master. I can't believe you are so strong now that you could even tame Tao Wu's son, sprinkling flowers. (flexed biceps emoji)"

Trainer_XiaoZhi: "Rushing here as soon as I saw the Server Announcement. My mighty Master, you are indeed the online streamer that I prefer the most. When will you tame Tao Wu as well? (laughing emoji)"

Creature_Hunter: "Watched the whole process. Everyone, don't have to be worried that Tao Wu will take revenge because he was the one who handed his son over to the master. Although I do not understand why he did so, maybe he had had enough of his stupid son. (laughing emoji)"

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Creature_Hunter: "Maybe it's a wicked deal between the Master and Tao Wu. (laughing emoji)"

Crayon_Shinchan: "Belated blessing from me, I'll pass in complimenting a master who's the king of perseverance. (laughing emoji)"

A_Large_Wolfdog replied to Crayon_Shinchan: "Never thought that people like you will have an online streamer of preference, too. (Cha Na overlooking.jpg)"

Crayon_Shinchan replied to A_Large_Wolfdog: "Caressing the dog's head while laughing on the spot. Why do you always like my touch so much, I feel so helpless. (laughing emoji)"

Raiding_Hunter: “Master, please show us Little Kun’s actual attributes, quick. (hungry look emoji)”

...

Bai Ze was not able to pay attention to his live streaming channel yet as Little Kun had vanished.

In the Artifact Channel, Little Kun was floating amidst the air as the well-prepared Bei Li, who was already in her white coat with spectacles, activated the digitization process.

Due to the fact that Little Kun was still a newborn and his low capability, the digitization process ended within three minutes. After that, Bei Li deleted Little Kun’s memory of being in the artifact before sending it back to Bai Ze.

It was then Bai Ze received the game notification.

[Successfully bound. Little Kun is now officially your dedicated NPC!]

Staring at Little Kun who was confused, Bai Ze activated the analyzing ability.

[Little Kun (Sea Spirit Level)]:

Specific Details: The son of Tao Wu, the Lord of the Void Ocean and Hai Meng, the Lord of the Yesha Ocean. The noble bloodline that was born with an ocean affinity which has the potential of Ocean Spirit level. With the fusion of the overlords of two oceans, it has the possibility of evolving into a Divine level!

Condition: Infant

Bound person: Bai Ze (player)

Unlocked details: Talent, skill, attributes

[Talent: Kraken Swallow (Gold Level talent which can be grown)]:

Talent Details: A bloodline ability that comes with birth. Grows whenever flesh species are swallowed (the stronger the creature, the greater the gain after swallowing).

[Talent: Ocean Affinity (Hegemony)]:

Talent Details: A bloodline ability that comes with birth. Obtaining the recognition from the ocean as soon as he was born, there will be an increase of 30% attributes in the ocean (hegemony-type skill, all potential overlords of oceans beasts are qualified for this ability, will be upgraded after achieving the level of ocean overlord).

[Talent: Behemoth (Gold Level talent)]:

Talent Details: A bloodline ability that comes with birth. As a Behemoth descendant, its size will grow bigger in the process of growing up, obtaining an 800% increase in health, a 500% increase in endurance (defense).

[Talent: Body of Divine Beast]:

Talent Details: A bloodline ability that comes with birth. As a bloodline descendent of the Ancient Divine Beast, the Divine Beast's bloodline in his body will speed up body healing, resulting in blood restoration of 1% per second (consistent).

[Talent: Tao Wu and Hai Meng's Blessing]:

Talent Details: The moment he was born, Little Kun was blessed by both the overlords of the two oceans. Tao Wu and Hai Meng will be able to sense Little Kun's whereabouts when his life is threatened.

Skill: None (During the newborn period, he hasn't learned any skills except those natural talent abilities)

Attributes: ...

...

Reading the lengthy attributes introduction of Little Kun, all the players in the live streaming channel were astounded.

Although Little Kun didn't have any skills, the five talents were all extremely powerful and could be deemed stronger than the abilities of most players.

It was impossible to say that they were not jealous of him. However, to this online streamer who was the king of perseverance, the players also sent their blessings besides continuously teasing him.

Although he had no inheritance, what he obtained was nothing less than an inheritance.

As he saw Little Kun still looking at him dazedly, Bai Ze poked his head with a finger.

“Little buddy, let's take care of each other from now on!”

Hearing that, Little Kun was unsure of the meaning but could feel the happiness in Bai Ze's emotions. So he squinted his eyes and grinned, too, producing a joyful sound as he raised his head.

Ying!

Chapter 307 - For Passion

Bai Ze had set a trend for beast-taming after taming Little Kun successfully.

As a matter of fact, the hype of beast-taming when Battle Online just launched its server did not last long.

As the players got stronger, monsters like zombie wolves were not much of a use for them. On the other hand, the difficulty to tame an advanced beast exceeded monsters like zombie wolves tremendously. Taking into account the effort required, although it was still possible to tame advanced beasts, the gains would not make up for the losses.

Therefore, there were not many players who were into beast-taming aside from Bai Ze, the recognized master of beast tamers.

However, Little Kun's Attributes Menu had motivated many players this time.

Lu Wu activated the game update to insert a new gaming feature when the beast-taming trend was still going on.

[Server Announcement: The new Closeness System will be released in the new update]:

Update Notes: The Closeness System will be implemented after the update. The system applies to all monsters in the game, players excluded. Three different paths will be available which are Pets, Lovers, and Brothers.

Checkpoints for Pets: Hostile, Indifferent, Stranger, Friendly, Favorable, Loyal

Checkpoints for Lovers: Hostile, Indifferent, Stranger, Friendly, Favorable, Fondness

Checkpoints for Brothers: Hostile, Indifferent, Stranger, Meeting by chance, Acquaintance, Close

All players are welcomed to explore around as there will be some hidden paths in the Closeness System after the update. Players who complete every path will be rewarded with a mystery reward and the following special modes upon reaching the limits will be unlocked.

Pets with Closeness Level reaching 'Loyal' shall unlock Taming Mode and an Equivalent Contract.

Lovers with Closeness Level reaching 'Fondness' shall activate Wedding Mode (Yet to be released, time of release unknown!)

Brothers with Closeness Level reaching 'Close' shall activate Sworn Brothers Mode (Yet to be released, time of release unknown!)

Official Message: The area of the Closeness System is extremely wide so players are welcomed to explore other functions. The Closeness System between players will not be released for now. Stay tuned and happy gaming!

...

The players were having lively discussions in the forum upon reading the details of the new update.

Watermelon_Taro: "I can't believe that the Closeness System is only applicable to NPCs and not the players in the game. (wiping blood from nose emoji) I guess it's time to bond with the ladies from the Wood Spirit Clan."

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Watermelon_Taro: "Can't you see that the Wedding System isn't released yet? Based on my experience in lurking in the forum and my understanding of the officials, I'm guessing that the Wedding System is not going to be available in the foreseeable future. (laughing emoji)"

Xueli_The_Strongest: “Sigh, I thought I could find a boyfriend and get married in the game to obtain some bonus reward. Why aren’t they releasing the system for players? Are they forcing me to flirt with the cute guys from Wood Spirit Clan? (slightly embarrassed emoji)”

Crayon_Shinchan replied to Xueli_The_Strongest: “You’re still eyeing the reward? They’re considered lenient for not suspending your account. I’m guessing that the members of the Wicked Mob are all singles. (laughing emoji)”

Roasting_Chang’e_While_Hugging_Jade_Hare: “It’s a pretty good update, this is like activating a pet system. Although we have to go one step at a time to get close to the beasts, they’re going to be our pets after all. Those who capture beasts to subdue them and force them to participate in battles aren’t treating them as pets, those are just slaves without any emotional connection. Pets will not be pets without any emotional connection, this update is humanizing! (double thumbs up emoji)”

Invincible_Loneliness: “I went online to look around and realized that there is a special column in my Closeness List. I clicked in and saw that the Demonic God and I are on the Master-Apprentice path. (Tong Gua with arms akimbo.jpg)”

...

Reading through the players’ comments in the forum, Lu Wu smiled lightly.

The update this time was not a huge one, it was only an optimization of the game.

Yet, the players were very excited about the Closeness System as it would enrich their gaming experience.

A professional player even started a closeness summary post in the forum to collect information regarding the issues the players faced and the difficulty of increasing the Closeness Levels with each NPC to provide a complete guide for the players’ use.

His post received feedback from many players. Most of them shared their Closeness List and discussed the issues they faced while working on the Closeness Levels.

The player spent five days' time to sort out the Closeness Lists and comments by the others before making another analysis post to help them have a better understanding of the NPCs.

The post also attracted Lu Wu's attention. He was immensely amused especially when he saw the author's comments to each of the NPCs.

Tong Gua – Carefree attitude, materialistic, alcoholic, hates fake people. You need to throw money at him or have a similar attitude with him to get close to him. There's a condition though, you have to be good at drinking. (Difficulty: Five stars)

The Rock Ghost King – Lesser info, but he has been nice to players ever since he officially became a member of Beiqi, better than Tong Gua at least. Since he is a mature and reliable type, you should think twice before you try to get close to him to get the final reward. (Difficulty: Seven stars)

The Sea King – Exceptionally lots of info. However, he is hostile to all players, none of them even passed the indifferent checkpoint. Don't even think about this one. It's impossible to get close to him even though he's very popular. (Difficulty: 1,000,000 stars)

The Hydra King – A quiet one, pretty cold and indifferent toward players. Though there are still a small number of players who are friendly with him, difficulty to get close to him cannot be certain due to the lack of info. (Difficulty: Set temporarily at seven stars)

Ladies from Wood Spirit Clan – Very enthusiastic. Gone bad from interacting with us players for too long, they even learned how to complain. These ladies' enthusiasm and warmth seem to indicate their friendliness. Based on my statistics, it will be extremely difficult to advance into lovers with them. It can be said that it's almost impossible as a biracial marriage is not in the Wood Spirit Clan's tradition. (Difficulty to advance into lovers:

Nine stars) Nonetheless, you can choose to go with the Brothers' path regardless of gender. The difficulty is just two stars.

Demonic God – It seems like he only has a connection with Gu Yu. He's not having a Closeness Bar with any other players at all. (Difficulty: Infinite stars)

Xiao Tian: ...

Brothers of the Nine Luminaries: ...

Little Sha: ...

...

The post collected the information of more than 300 beings in the Underworld in total and conducted an initial statistic to their attitudes toward the players. There was also a scale of 1-10 stars to compare the difficulties to increase the Closeness Level with these NPCs.

The professional player's post provided a big helping hand to the players, so soon enough, some players with the same interest volunteered in helping to conduct the statistics which required a huge amount of effort and time.

Lu Wu was genuinely comforted while looking at the players helping each other.

There were numerous times when he had seen players asking one same question to those creators who willingly compiled statistics, guides, cartoons, and maps by themselves under their posts.

Why are you making this arduous but fruitless effort?

Yet, their answers were pretty similar. For passion, of course!

Chapter 308 - The Sea King's Downfall?

Kuilong Ocean, Kankun Island.

The Sea King hovered mid-air as he was surrounded by the members of the forces of the Military Alliance. The atmosphere tensed as they stared at the Sea King in the center intensely.

“Tian Kun, how dare you betray me!” the Sea King shouted and shifted his gaze to Tian Kun in the midst of the crowd with a solemn face.

“I had no other choice... I worry that the Tian Kun Nation's foundation for thousands of years will fall into ruins if I stayed with you. Since you're the one who started the war, it should end with your death!”

The Sea King appeared infuriated when he heard Tian Kun's words.

The reason he came to Kankun Island with Tian Kun this time was that Tian Kun told him there was a relic from the Ancient Nether Sea Nation hidden on the island.

The Sea King had been especially attentive to this particular topic and he had asked Tian Kun why he didn't go exploring for the ancient relic by himself. However, Tian Kun answered by saying that since he had not exceeded the Ghost Emperor Realm, he wasn't strong enough to enter.

The Sea King was eager and palpitating with excitement as an artifact from an ancient nation would definitely have a key role in the coming war. Despite that, instead of proceeding to the location immediately, he went to his trusted followers between the lords and his subordinate forces to first enquire about the relic.

According to them, there was indeed a relic from the Ancient Nether Sea Nation on Kankun Island but it would be extremely difficult to find. He'd

not only be required to exceed the Ghost Emperor Realm, but he'd also require a person with the bloodline of a descendant of that Ancient Nether Sea Nation as the key to unlocking the relic.

The Sea King finally decided to take action after gathering all the information. After giving orders to his subordinate lords to continue conducting the operation between the Sea King Navy and the Langya Island Military Alliance, he let Tian Kun lead him to the relic.

As a later generation of the Mu Te Sea Nation, the Sea King himself fulfilled the requirement of a valid descendant. Also, since his strength reached the Ghost Emperor Realm, he was perfectly qualified to unlock this relic.

However, unexpectedly, it was a trap. A Demon Captivating Formation was formed once he landed on Kankun Island. The leaders of the greater forces of the Kuilong Ocean were even waiting for him there. It was clear that they planned the siege in order to take him out.

The Sea King was already aware of Tian Kun's betrayal while facing the situation.

"Sea King, you shouldn't have come to the Kuilong Ocean. Your end today is already set from the day you built the new nation!" the island owner of Langya Island chortled heartily while looking at the trapped Sea King.

The Sea King remained silent as the deathly aura around him wreathed. The Death's Light Wheel emerged from his forehead and spiraled around his body before enlarging gradually.

It was an unavoidable confrontation. Although he was confident in his own strength, it was clear that his enemies were well-prepared. It would be extremely difficult to break through this siege, but his heart was as still as water without a hint of fear.

He had experienced death the moment he became the Lord of Death. He had nothing to fear this time.

“Sea King, I’m giving you a chance... if you discard your cultivation and go back to the Void Ocean, we’ll let you live!” the island owner spoke again.

Truthfully, he was still terrified of the Sea King’s strength. The Sea King was still an elite from the Ghost Emperor Realm. They could possibly win if they started a battle now, but their strength would be significantly impaired. That was the only reason why he gave the Sea King a choice.

The Sea King sneered upon hearing that.

“I’ve heard that the owner of Langya Island was a sly fox a long time ago... it’s indeed correct! What a true man to ladder up by conspiracy and trickery! You are brazenly shameless... a useless piece of trash!”

The owner of Langya Island’s expression changed drastically as he had been burying his history all this time. No one had brought up his past as he kept improving his own strength. Yet, the Sea King was digging up his dark past relentlessly, giving him absolutely no consideration.

“Does progress matter? As long as I can succeed, everything’s worth it!” screamed the owner of Langya Island, who saw right through the Sea King’s attitude.

“I agree with that. Progress doesn’t matter on the path of success!” the Sea King burst into laughter. He then pointed a finger at the owner of Langya Island and the Death’s Light Wheel swirling around him shot itself forward in an instant.

“Charge!” the owner of Langya Island raised the white tortoise-shell shield in his hand and charged forward.

A fierce battle erupted and lights flashed in the huge formation shrouding Kankun Island. Chains constructed from runes were formed in the air within the formation one after another and dashed toward the Sea King.

...

Xin Mo Island.

Hei Sui was checking an ocean map and making war preparations when his mind jolted all of a sudden. He turned his head around and looked at the direction of Kankun Island.

He then hurriedly took out a crystal condensed from death energy. Looking at the words emerging on the crystal, his expression changed instantly.

He then turned around and looked at Sha Shui and the others around him, “Bad news my lords... Tian Kun started a mutiny... His Majesty is surrounded!”

The other lords’ expressions also changed drastically upon hearing the news, “How do you know that?”

“His Majesty gave this to me before leaving and said that he will send messages to me. I didn’t understand what he meant then, but it’s showing a message from him right now,” Hei Sui pointed at the death energy crystal and the wordings on it.

“It seems like His Majesty already suspected that there would be danger lurking on his current trip!” Sha Shui squinted his eyes with suspicion.

“Yet, he had to go because the ancient relic might be the key to change the whole war situation,” Lan Hushan continued.

“Gather the troops and prepare for dispatch. His Majesty has the key role in determining whether we will win or not!” Hei Sui stood up as he talked and proceeded to prepare his army for dispatch.

Suddenly, Lan Hushan went forward and stopped Hei Sui.

“Lord Hei, how much percentage do you think we’ll gain if we are victorious in this war?”

Hei Sui frowned, “What do you mean by that?”

“It’s thirty percent at best! Our nations will all be doomed if we fail. Tian Kun has made his decision, it’s now our turn!”

The atmosphere tensed upon hearing Lan Hushan’s words.

The others had to admit that Lan Hushan’s words convinced them.

They never wanted to pledge their loyalty to the Sea King in the first place. They were all forced to do so. It was a perfect opportunity for them to detach from the Sea King. They would regain their freedom if the Sea King was taken out.

Their vision for the restoration of the nation was shaken.

The chance for the Sea King to survive would be very slim if they refused to dispatch their army now. The Mu Te Sea Nation would collapse once again and it would be the end.

Even if they did dispatch their army and make all efforts to rescue the Sea King, their percentage to win the war would only be around thirty percent. Lan Hushan and the others already had an answer in their minds.

Then, Hei Sui landed a strong punch on the table.

“I know what all of you are thinking! Remember one thing though, the reason we gained respect from others is because of the Sea King. Without him, we will never be able to squeeze ourselves into the ranking of the strongest forces in the Kuilong Ocean. I know the pros and cons of this, but I also know that, regardless of anything, we are from the same ancestral origin. The Sea King is still one of us even though he became the king!”

Finishing his speech, Hei Sui glanced at the ones present, flicked his sleeves, and left in anger.

Those who were present stood and looked at each other in dismay. Although Hei Sui was the last person to pledge loyalty to the Sea King, he became the only committed one in the end.

Of course, all of them understood morals and principles. However, after thousands of years of living, all they cared about was benefits. They found Hei Sui's speech about them having the same ancestral origin hilarious at first but they fell into silence after some further thinking.

Would they have subdued to the Sea King if he was not one of them?

If his military force was the sole reason, would they have subdued to any other greater force who came to them? The answer was a clear no. Therefore, they had to admit that the fact that the Sea King was one of their own was indeed a factor for them in pledging their loyalty to him.

“What do you think?” Lan Hushan looked at the others and asked.

“The Nether Sea Nation was the overlord of the Three Great Oceans but it's at its downfall now... I'm guessing that this will be the last round. If we lose, we lose. There might not be any chance to restore our nation in the future, so let's fight to our deaths!”

The words that came out from Sha Shui's mouth shocked the crowd and left a great impact as he was the most cowardly one among them.

“Glory or perish, what a tough choice! But I choose to perish! The war is on, no regrets!” Lan You who had been silent also voiced out from the side.

“Indeed... if we can't rise from this war, the desolation of our nation is inevitable even if we survive. I choose to battle!”

...

After declaring their statements, the lords stood up to prepare to rescue the Sea King.

Suddenly, a general rushed over and got down on one knee after entering the inner palace.

“My lords, the Langya Island Military Alliance has invaded our territory. They have assembled five nautical miles away. It seems like they intend to block off the ocean!”

The lords' expressions turned more serious upon hearing that.

“Of course... they are fully prepared and they predicted the possibility of us sending our troops over!” Lan Hushan's eyes rapidly became bloodshot.

“What should we do now? Although we have great strength and we can fend for ourselves for a time here, there's no way for us to get there!” Sha Shui was getting anxious.

“Don't panic, let me think... oh, the Player Clan!” Lan Hushan raised his head abruptly.

“That's right, the Player Clan! They can totally provide us aid!” Sha Shui continued hurriedly.

“Sha Shui... inform the Player Clan right now! We shall gather our military to confront the alliance army!”

“Noted!” Sha Shui answered hurriedly. He floated into the air and flew toward the Void Ocean without wasting another second.

Time was ticking. The other lords were all getting their hands busy.

Whether the Sea King could survive this battle was a crucial factor in the coming wars. Under the circumstances, they could only place their hope on the players as they had no other choice.

...

A post appeared in the forum an hour later.

[Bad news, Our Sea King Boss is going to die! Coordinates of Kankun Island in Kuilong Ocean provided. Please help!]

Author: Azure_Bead

Content: My party and I were going to mess around with the Langya Island Military Alliance near the borders of the Kuilong Ocean but we noticed that they had evacuated. We were confused as we didn't know why they left.

Then, we sailed forward and met Lord Sha Shui, one of the subordinates of the Sea King. He told us that the Sea King was ambushed and he is fending for his life now... he could be dead any minute. Their military forces are all tied up by the Langya Island Military Alliance so they cannot dispatch any force to help the Sea King. Guys, they need our help! Assemble!

Watermelon_Taro: “What the fuck, our crop is dying before we can harvest. We can’t let this slide, I’m on my way!”

Xueli_The_Strongest: “These parasites are plotting murder on our seedling, they are such bullies. Do they even take the Fourth Disaster seriously? It’s on, it’s on!”

Assasin_Creed: “Rescue plan activated! Calling all members of the Fourth Disaster in the Land of Beiqi, it’s time to bring disasters and panic to our enemy!”

Crayon_Shinchan: “The Sea King is ours to rescue... even Jesus can’t save him. (laughing emoji)”

Roasting_Chang’e_While_Hugging_Jade_Hare: “Hold on, Sea King boss... the Disaster Army is coming to war, calling all players to join!”

...

The forum was in a buzz. All the players received the news of the Sea King’s possible death after communicating with each other.

The players never held any hatred toward the Sea King. After all, it was just a game.

As the top famed villain, the Sea King even had many fans amongst the players.

That was the reason why the players couldn’t sit still knowing that the Sea King was ambushed and going down.

The Disaster Army had united once again.

Chapter 309 - The Overlord Declaring A War

Chapter 309: The Overlord Declaring A War

The Sea King's rescue mission was officially initiated.

Due to limited time, instead of assembling at the Liuli Coast, the players decided to gather when they met in the Kuilong Ocean. All of them summoned their ships and warships and proceeded straight to Kankun Island.

Many players who were wandering in the Void Ocean also set off straight there after they received the news.

The number of players who participated in the mission far exceeded their previous expeditions and reached a total of over 20 million.

After all, things were different this time. Every player and every second was crucial as the Sea King might fall at any moment. Even many of the players who only enjoyed farming were joining in.

They could only pray that the Sea King could hold on until they reached him.

...

Kankun Island, Kuilong Ocean.

The war went on for more than two hours. The valiance of the Sea King clearly exceeded the expectations of the leaders of the various forces.

They were unable to harm the Sea King the slightest bit even with the Demon Captivating Formation restraining him.

Yet, they were still confident that they could take the Sea King down in this battle.

The Sea King would exhaust all of his strength sooner or later as long as he couldn't break through the siege. And that moment would be his downfall.

However, they were still reluctant to confront the valiant Sea King directly. They could only set a formation to restrain him and humiliate him publicly as none of them were willing to be the sacrifice for the victory.

Countless energy ribbons were revolving within the huge formation and were shrouding the whole island. They were connected with the leaders of the various forces below to get the supply of energy from them to form countless jail chains in the air before dashing toward the Sea King.

Although the Sea King was currently not as powerful as Mu Zhiguang, he was still capable of the strength of an Intermediate Ghost Emperor after obtaining all the strength from the Lord of Death. He was still looking for chances to counterattack although he was besieged.

The Death's Light Wheel continued spiraling within the formation, launching attacks downward while breaking the Chains of Rune at the same time. Every strike caused waves of panic in the leaders of the alliance forces.

Looking at the countless chains that reformed around him, the Sea King's face darkened. With a raise of his arm, a blackhole linked to the Land of Western Death was formed.

Roars of creatures were heard from within the void as figures were gushing out of it and pouncing toward the leaders of the various forces underneath. The spherical Passage of Death was engulfing the space within the formation as it enlarged slowly.

“Cut off the link with the void!” Lang Ya roared furiously, noticing the Creatures of Death emerging from the void passage.

The leaders charged their strengths in unison and transmitted them into the formation upon hearing Lang Ya's order.

The formation revolved even faster as the lights outside shone and the space within it condensed. The Passage of Death distorted mid-air and the creatures emerging from it were torn apart and lost their combat ability from the strength in the space within the formation.

Looking at the situation, the Sea King charged the Power of Death wrapping his right arm which turned as dark as night. He then extended his arm and pressed on the twisted blackhole to insert his Death Strength to ward off the force from the Demon Captivating Formation.

Fending the crowd solely on his own, the Sea King was starting to feel strained.

The strain was obviously detrimental to him. When he was about to give up, he saw some lights a distance away from the formation and he could almost feel the whole formation quaking.

“Sea King Boss, we're almost there! Hold on!”

As a voice echoed, a gigantic warship emerged from the sea a ways away from the island and collided onto the formation hard. The formation quaked slightly as the warship collapsed with a loud boom.

“We're here! We're here! Leap, Black Pearl, knock them off!”

Another warship emerged from the sea and collided into the formation that was shrouding Kankun Island.

Warships were appearing one after another and colliding into the formation, indicating that the players finally rushed over. Their mode of attack was the Warship Leap technique, which was originally used to dodge warship attacks.

They were using this aggressive method to announce the Fourth Disaster's arrival to the Sea King and the leaders of the various forces in the

formation!

“Sea King Boss, hold on! Kill all of them!”

“Sea King Boss, I’m a fan of yours! I’m risking my life to rescue you, are you touched?”

“Kill them! Break the formation and wipe out all the parasites!”

...

Numerous energy missiles were launched as brilliant as fireworks toward the island and crashed onto the formation along with the players’ shouts.

Their arrival caused a massive headache to the internal leader of the island.

They assigned all of their military forces to Xin Mo Island to initiate a lockdown so that the Sea King Navy couldn’t provide assistance. They were expecting to take the Sea King down as fast as they could.

However, they clearly underestimated the difficulty to deal with the Sea King and they could not defeat him in just a short time. They didn’t expect that another alliance of the Sea King Navy would reach them beforehand.

Looking at the situation, Lang Ya was furious.

“Do not fear death, go all in to take the Sea King down. Do not fail from the lack of a final effort!” Lang Ya acted first by surging a larger amount of his strength into the energy ribbon connected to the formation and the runes within the formation began to reform faster.

The leaders of the forces around him became determined upon listening to his words and charged the strength within their bodies, ready to go for a fatal blow to the Sea King.

Although the Sea King was equally astonished that the players were providing him aid at this crucial moment, he couldn’t think further about it. In facing the never-ending runes, the Sea King was trying his best to struggle and survive.

It was the perfect moment for a counterattack. The leaders' defenses were at their weakest when they were charging the formation with their full ability. The Death's Light Wheel spun off speedily and killed two of them.

"Don't get distracted, don't get scared... this is our only chance!" Lang Ya roared as he was worried that the deaths would deter the crowd.

The Chains of Rune within the formation multiplied and grew to the extent that they would be impossible for the Sea King to break all of them.

The chains disappeared the moment they came into contact with the Sea King's body as they integrated into his body. They were causing a sting whenever the Sea King worked the Power of Death in his body.

The situation was extremely alarming. The Sea King was struggling to drive the Seal Strength out of his body. However, the seal was getting stronger as the Strength accumulated within his body.

Another three of the four leaders lost their lives from the Death Light's Wheel. However, the leaders of the forces couldn't afford to be bothered right now as they were occupied in giving everything they had in charging the formation to take the Sea King down.

At the same time, the number of players outside kept multiplying and they fenced in the whole island.

Every player was using their strongest attacking technique in an attempt to break the formation and aid the Sea King to fend off his enemies.

The crowd in the south of the formation was wild as all the players were doing their best in slashing the formation. Then, another Specter Ship came and crashed into the formation. A player's silhouette was seen jumping off the ship the moment it fell apart.

Right before he fell into the ocean, an enormous form emerged near the sea surface and leaped out of the sea with the player on its back.

Bai Ze gave a few pats on Little Kun under him and pointed a finger at the Demon Captivating Formation.

“Little Kun, attack with your full strength!”

Little Kun made a determined expression upon hearing his order. It took a deep breath before flapping its tails swiftly and crashed into the defense wall of the formation hard.

Little Kun was dazzled from the impact whilst Bai Ze fell into the sea from the collision.

Little Kun ducked into the water to support Bai Ze the moment he recovered from his daze. Once again, he steadied his gaze and flapped his tail to launch a second attack.

“Wait! Wait! Wait!”

Bai Ze called out to stop Little Kun from attacking as he suddenly remembered that he didn't have any other combat skills other than his five talent abilities.

However, Little Kun was already near and he couldn't stop in time.

Again, he knocked into the defensive wall hard. The impact knocked them out. Little Kun's belly was facing upward, his eyes rolling upward.

Bai Ze rushed over to Little Kun hurriedly and checked his attributes. Noticing that his health didn't even have 15% left, he was so mad that he laughed. He couldn't help but feel absolutely helpless.

At the same time, a hibernating beast opened his eyes abruptly in the deepest part of the Kuilong Ocean.

It could sense an aura, an overlord's aura.

Although the aura was weak, it was still an overlord's aura.

There was a Law of Survival in the vast Underworld Sea. The position as the overlord of the ocean was never inherited by a successor, a competition was required. Every creature with the potential to be an overlord was required to enter new oceans to get used to the Laws of Survival upon maturity. They had to seize the position as the overlord by growing there and take the previous overlord down.

Tao Wu intended to let Little Kun walk the path to be an overlord but finally allowed him to make his own decisions for his future.

However, things were different this time because Little Kun entered the Kuilong Ocean into another overlord's territory. His leaking overlord aura had alerted the Lord of Kuilong who was lying low in the deepest part of the Kuilong Ocean.

The Kuilong King was awakened at that moment and he intended to accept the declaration of war by the new overlord from outside!

Kuilong's blood-red eyes moved as he moved his gigantic body forward slowly. He raised his head and let out a loud roar before he swam toward the area where Little Kun was located.

Looking at Little Kun, who was recovering slowly, Bai Ze rubbed his head as he made a pitiful face. He was clearly distressed from the two collisions.

Ying!

Little Kun made a low whistle and threw a glance at the formation.

“No, no... you did great but you should stop. Be good!”

Looking at Little Kun who was refusing to give up, Bai Ze shook his head to stop him. He was genuinely terrified to lose Little Kun over any more collisions.

Chapter 310 - Ocean Hegemony Contract

Chapter 310: Ocean Hegemony Contract

Kuilong Ocean, Kankun Island.

The fight within the large formation was still continuing.

When they saw that the Sea King's struggle was becoming weaker, the players became more anxious. Thus, they tried their best and desperately attacked the defensive walls of the formation.

However, this Demon Imprisoning Formation was jointly created by dozens of Ghost Kings and hundreds of Ghost Commanders. Hence, the strength of the players was not sufficient to break through within such a short time.

The Sea King looked grim, as he felt that the Power of Death coursing through his veins was being gradually impeded as the sealing power continued to flow into his body. He knew that he would die if this scenario continued much longer.

He glanced at Lang Ya below, who was wearing a mocking grin, and briefly looked at Tian Kun. Suddenly, the Sea King let out a piercing scream. The Power of Death in his body was boiling furiously.

At this moment, the Sea King severed his consciousness that was controlling the Power of Death, allowing it to spread and operate on its own accord.

Under such a condition, his eyes instantly turned scarlet red, as his perception of his surroundings became blurred and the desire to kill endlessly lingered in his mind.

Roar!

In an instant, the Power of Death barely overcame the sealing power. Hence, the Sea King's will to fight was immediately restored.

The Death's Light Wheel, which had been still, shone brightly again. It began to swivel around in the large formation, reaping the lives of every being in it in the blink of an eye.

"He won't be able to hold it for long... he'll be struggling to death!" Lang Ya looked at the Sea King above and immediately let out a furious roar.

The leaders of the alliance also knew that all of their previous efforts would be wasted if they gave up halfway at this critical moment. Hence, they could only grit their teeth and persevere.

The Sea King seemed to have completely lost his ability to think, as his mind was completely poisoned by bloodthirst. Although he was trapped in the air by the sealing power, the Death's Light Wheel continued massacring under his manipulation.

Looking from outside, all of the players were immensely surprised when they saw that the Sea King had regained his power to resist. Thus, they hurriedly hastened their attack toward the formation.

The life and death of the Sea King entirely depended on them at this moment. Hence, the players began to attack with increasing ferocity.

There were even many players who didn't hesitate to purchase the Strengthening Potion from the shop to strengthen their attributes, so that they could help the Sea King escape from this formation as soon as possible.

Meanwhile, a large number of players were gathered at the south side of the Demon Imprisoning Formation to jointly attack the defensive wall.

Suddenly, they found that the surrounding water level drastically rose as a humongous dark shadow hovered under the surface.

“Be careful, everyone! Something is coming up!” a player realized that something was amiss and reminded his team immediately.

The shocking warning made them instantly look down.

When the figure was slowly approaching, the water temperature rose exponentially, too. Some players even had a red -1 above their heads, indicating health loss.

“Scatter! It’s coming!”

In the midst of the cacophony of screams, the figure in the sea suddenly burst out into the open with an explosive splash. Above the ebbing water, a huge body emerged from the ocean and stood in front of the players.

The creature had two horns on its head, like a Horned Dragon, with two green long beards on its mouth. The red scales on its body glimmered brightly under the sunlight, exuding a sense of overwhelming pressure.

Roar!

Kuilong cast his eyes up to the sky and roared.

The surrounding players were impacted by the shockwaves, causing their health to drop rapidly. The weaker players were even instantly killed by the thunderous roar.

The players were thunderstruck, thus they hastily activated their analyzing ability for the creature. They wanted to see its origin because it had just appeared out of nowhere.

[Kuilong King (Ocean Spirit)]:

Creature Details: The offspring of the Divine Beast that comes from the Infinite Ocean. He defeated the old overlord with his crushing strength in the bloody battle 40 million years ago. Then, he swallowed the old overlord and was successfully promoted as the new overlord of the ocean, subsequently renaming the ocean as the Kuilong Ocean. His strength is in the mid-divine state.

Creature Characteristics: Brutal and proud.

Creature Features: Beginner's mastery of Law of Water and Law of Fire.

Creature Status: Pre-Divine State. (Will attain the divine state soon, but the success rate is unknown.)

...

The players were dumbfounded when they saw the information about this creature. It turned out to be an Ocean Spirit-level creature.

The information of this overlord seemed to be more terrifying than Tao Wu, thus greatly terrifying the players.

Although the players often joked that they would catch an Ocean Spirit sooner or later to sell for a huge amount of money, they swiftly abandoned that thought. After all, the strength of the players was simply incomparable to this ancient creature. It would be impossible to overcome that vast difference in strength.

The Kuilong King glared at Little Kun near him with his crimson eyes, dangerously revealing the murderous gleam in his irises.

It had been 100,000 years since a new overlord had challenged him. Hence, the Kuilong King became curious. The descendants of which creatures had this reckless courage to actually challenge him?

When his eyes met the Kuilong King's menacing gaze, Little Kun hastily hid behind Bai Ze like a frightened rabbit that was flicking its tail. Little Kun even dove most of his body into the water, only revealing his eyes to secretly peer at the Kuilong King.

The Kuilong King thought he was mistaken when he saw the frightened Little Kun. Once again, he searched for the source of the overpowering aura, before landing his vision on Little Kun again.

“Not of age yet?” the lethal glint in Kuilong King's eyes suddenly faded, obviously a little stunned.

In the Underworld Sea, even if they were the descendants of the Divine Beast with unlimited potential, their parents would only allow them to enter a new ocean to fight for domination after they had become of age.

Otherwise, they would certainly perish. However, Little Kun, who was in front of him, was not even underaged and was at most a juvenile. Hence, the Kuilong King couldn't understand why such a young overlord would dare to challenge him.

“Who are your parents?” Kuilong's original murderous intent gradually evaporated when he looked at Little Kun.

After all, a juvenile Divine Beast like Little Kun posed no threat to him. If he wanted to kill Little Kun, it would simply be a walk in the park for him.

Little Kun's head slowly surfaced out of the water with a fearful expression, when he heard the Kuilong King asking him a question. He continued to hide behind Bai Ze but his huge physique couldn't really be hidden at all.

When the Kuilong King saw this, he widened his eyes as he opened his mouth to suck the air around him. In a flash, Little Kun's head was pulled by a strong force, as he propelled into the air and flew toward Kuilong.

Smack!

After grabbing him in his hand, Kuilong lowered his eyes and scrutinized Little Kun, the little Divine Beast. Clearly, his heart was filled with curiosity.

Little Kun seemed like a little tadpole, as he began to twist and struggle.

However, his struggle was completely in vain against the Kuilong King's forceful grip.

“The descendant of Tao Wu? And Hai Meng, too!”

The Kuilong King's eyes showed a hint of surprise as he measured Little Kun's aura.

He was familiar with those two sea overlords because their territories were near the Kuilong Ocean.

“Little guy, are you sure you want to challenge me?” Kuilong couldn’t help laughing when he looked at Little Kun.

Seeing that his struggles were futile, Little Kun immediately bore his two front teeth and bit the Kuilong King’s hand.

However, his teeth could not even penetrate the scales of the Kuilong King’s body, much less breaking its defense.

Bai Ze was extremely restless, as he was afraid that the Kuilong King would hurt Little Kun. He swiftly dashed toward the Kuilong King, wanting to save Little Kun. However, he was swept by a huge wave before he could even approach.

After wasting a lot of strength, Little Kun eventually realized that his attacks were simply meaningless. Thus, he curled up like a deflated ball in the Kuilong King’s hand.

“Little guy, let me ask you... are you sure you want to challenge me?” the Kuilong King asked as he seemingly had zero desire to fight when he stared at Little Kun’s timid appearance.

However, this was the ocean’s law of survival. Little Kun, a potential ocean overlord, had trespassed on Kuilong’s territory. Thus, he could be considered an enemy according to the law. The Kuilong King didn’t have to let him go free. He could simply swallow or kill him to quash another future opponent.

However, Little Kun was only a juvenile creature. The law may be applied to mature creatures, but this was the first time a juvenile had arrived in his territory. Therefore, the Kuilong King didn’t know how to deal with this situation.

If he was an adult, Kuilong would do it without hesitation, regardless of whether he was Tao Wu’s or anyone else’s descendant. After all, this was

the law of ocean hegemony. However, it was a difficult decision to make if the other party was a juvenile. Firstly, the arrogance in his heart did not allow him to do it. Secondly, it was obviously unsuitable to use the law of hegemony on juveniles. If he killed Little Kun, Tao Wu and Hai Meng would come to seek revenge since he broke the law.

The Kuilong King felt that the situation was very tricky, as he stared at Little Kun in his hand.

“Let me go... I’m going to duel with you!” the timid Little Kun suddenly became angry when he saw Bai Ze was swept by a huge wave. Fueled by his wrath, his body began to swell again.

“Are you sure?” the Kuilong King was amazed when he heard Little Kun’s words, despite his petite figure.

Such threatening remarks must not be simply uttered. In the Kuilong King’s eyes, this was a declaration of war. Hence, it would be a contractual war that was witnessed by the Underworld Sea God.

“Argh! I’ll bite you to death!” Little Kun shook his head angrily and bit ferociously again.

Suddenly, an unknown shadowy fang appeared above the Kuilong King and Little Kun’s heads, looking sharp and menacing.

In the blink of an eye, the two fangs strongly collided with each other. Then, they dissipated and turned into streams of energy, before entering into both the Kuilong King and Little Kun’s bodies.

Bai Ze, peering his head from the surface of the turbulent water far away, also received a game notification.

[Game Notification: The NPC Little Kun bound to you has activated the Ocean Hegemony Contract]:

[Ocean Hegemony Contract]:

Contract Details: Under the witness of the Underworld Sea God, Little Kun has officially declared war on the Kuilong King, the overlord of the Kuilong Ocean. The winner will be blessed by the Underworld Sea God and become the overlord of the Kuilong Ocean!

Contract Reminder: Since the contract was established while challenger Little Kun was still underaged, it will not take effect right away. This challenge will proceed only after Little Kun becomes an adult.

Contract Reminder 2: This challenge was initiated by Little Kun, a descendant of the Divine Beast. If Little Kun doesn't fulfill the challenge according to the contract after adulthood as specified, the Underworld Sea God could remove the natural ability Ocean Affinity and the bloodline of the Divine Beast from him.

Contract Reminder 3: The challenges would be witnessed by the Underworld Sea God. The natural ability of Ocean Affinity of the new overlord would be increased after achieving victory.

Contract Reminder 4: While Little Kun is still underaged, the party being challenged must not injure the challenger.

...

“Hahaha, little fellow. You really dared to challenge me. The contract has been established under the witness of the Underworld Sea God. Since it's set in stone, we must not violate the Sea God's power. I won't hurt you when you are underaged. Quickly grow up into an adult, don't let me down!” the Kuilong King laughed out loud when he looked at Little Kun, who was still in a daze from astonishment.

Truly, this challenge had never been just child's play. As long as the new overlord admitted, the Underworld Sea God would naturally feel it and sign a hegemony contract for them.

Although Little Kun was still very young, he was undoubtedly an enemy of the Kuilong King. He was an enemy who was qualified to compete with him for the ocean's territory.

Although he didn't understand what was going on, the Kuilong King's laughter scared Little Kun senseless, causing him to spit out a bubble unconsciously.

“Little guy, perhaps your challenge is my golden opportunity to advance to the Divine state. So, grow up fast!”

After that, the Kuilong King put Little Kun into the water with a hint of relief in his eyes.

After entering the water, Little Kun quickly swam toward Bai Ze. Then, he raised his head and continued to look at the Kuilong King with hostility as he began to wail loudly.

Eek!

The Kuilong King faintly smiled, as he lowered his eyes to gaze at the players who were struggling to attack the Demon Imprisoning Formation, before glancing at Little Kun again. After that, he suddenly jumped into the water, setting off a huge wave.

As the Kuilong King was diving in, a crimson tail emerged from the water and slapped fiercely on the defensive wall of Demon Imprisoning Formation.

Crack!

Chapter 311 - The Sea King's Intelligence Was Mocked

Chapter 311: The Sea King's Intelligence Was Mocked

The direct impact from Kuilong's tail strike caused a huge crack to appear on the Demon Imprisoning Formation. Before the formation could dissipate the force of the attack, the entire formation instantly shattered.

The lords' expressions immediately turned ashen pale when they witnessed the Demon Imprisoning Formation being destroyed, as they were internally connected to the formation.

The force of the attack was transmitted to their bodies, shaking every cell within them. Some of the weaker ones could not withstand the attack and ended up vomiting fresh blood from their mouth, being wounded internally by the aftershock.

"Fuck, how could the formation break so easily?"

"Quick! Save the Sea King!"

"Kill them all!"

Apart from the players on the southern corner, the remaining players were absolutely baffled, wondering how such a strong formation would suddenly break into pieces.

However, the current priority was the Sea King's life, thus they had no time to spare. One by one, the players made a mad rush for Kankun Island and charged inward, killing the enemies along the way.

When he saw the players begin to swarm around him, Langya started to fear for his safety. He had never thought that he would lose this battle.

“Retreat!”

Langya’s roar of fury pierced through the air. He knew that if they continued the battle now, it would be disadvantageous for them.

The remaining lords were already wounded, having long lost the desire to continue fighting this battle. They followed Langya’s lead and levitated into the air, as they flew far away to safety.

“Don’t run! Come back down here!”

The players would never let them escape like that. When they caught one of the lords, they flocked toward him to attack him as a group, preventing him from escaping.

Since they were already here, the players were unwilling to leave just like that. These Ghost Kings and Ghost Generals were valuable and they were even heavily wounded. Thus, this was a great farming opportunity.

Faced with the frenzied Player Army, the Lords of the Military Alliance looked especially pathetic. Apart from a few who had enough strength to escape with ease, a great many lords of the Ghost Commander Level were dragged back down by the horde of players, unable to flee.

It was at this moment that something happened, which astonished the players.

The Sea King who was already entering the Lord of Death state in mid-air suddenly began to utilize Death’s Light Wheel to massacre the players.

The Sea King had completely fallen deep into a killing frenzy and was no longer aware of his actions. In his current state, any living thing that entered his field of vision would be his prey.

The Death’s Light Wheel spun rapidly as it weaved in and out of the masses of players, taking a large number of the players’ lives with it.

“Fuck, Sea King... you’re too much!”

“Are you kidding me right now? Is this how you treat someone who saved you?”

“Fuck, the Sea King has gone mad... focus on restraining him first!”

...

Faced with the Sea King in his killing frenzy, the players naturally would not sit idly and accept their fate. In an instant, countless skills were aimed toward the sky as they tried to knock the Sea King out of the air.

However, the strength of the Sea King far exceeded the players' capabilities at their current levels. Even though their attacks were great in number, their damage was simply negligible. As time trickled by, more players died and entered the pre-respawn cooldown state.

At this moment, all the players were visibly filled with boiling anger.

After all, this expedition's aim was to help the Sea King, but his current actions were a disappointing betrayal.

As the battle continued, the Sea King's body suddenly trembled mid-air and the darkness in his pupils gradually faded. After some time, his body fell from the sky and hit the ground with a loud thud.

Having absorbed the Power of Death into his body, the Sea King had now regained full control over his body.

The Sea King, who had just regained consciousness, suddenly spat out a mouthful of blood. He struggled to rise to his feet but could barely do so, as his body was heavily injured and he was overly exhausted.

Ahem!

Again, the Sea King spewed a mouthful of fresh blood. Then, he scanned his surroundings, as the vision of him killing the players played through his mind. The horrible image caused his expression to become distorted.

Naturally, he had witnessed the players' actions just now, but his own actions were undeniably over the line.

However, the Sea King didn't utter a word as he coldly glared at the players around him, waiting to be sentenced for his unforgivable crimes.

When he went berserk just now, he must have killed at least hundreds of thousands of them. With so many of their race dead, deep in his heart he knew what end was awaiting him.

Noticing that the Sea King had regained consciousness, the players were evidently shocked. They slowly surrounded the Sea King, but were unsure of how to proceed.

“Brothers, the Sea King is back, what should we do?”

“Don't kill the Sea King! He is a mature boss. If he dies now, it will be our loss! Don't forget, he still has the Death Clan at his mercy!”

“Then, what should we do? It's too awkward like this now!”

“We have to let him go. We've been rearing him for so long, we can't mess it up now.”

“Alright, let him go, but how should we do it?”

...

Looking at the Sea King who was now back to normal, the players began discussing among themselves, wondering how they should deal with the severely injured Sea King.

After coming to a standstill for about ten minutes, the players finally managed to reach a conclusion in the live chat channel.

Then, the Sea King watched in disbelief as a curious scene began to unfold. A player standing near to him suddenly dropped to the ground with a pale countenance, while clutching his left chest. After a thud, he fell down face-forward and became motionless.

“Fuck, there’s a mysterious energy that’s sucking my consciousness away! Ahhh! It’s so painful!” yelled another player who fell to the ground with a pained expression. The player even twitched a little before turning limp.

“My god, it’s such terrifying energy! Is it God?”

“My heart, my heart, it feels like it’s about to explode!”

“Who set me up to this, damn it, I can’t last much longer!”

“I can feel an odd energy slowly entering my body, I’m losing control over my body!”

“What a terrifying energy, I don’t want to die now. Why can’t I see anything...”

“I can feel my life slipping away from me, the grasp of death is a fast bastard, I don’t want to die... aahh!”

...

The Sea King watched with a dumbfounded expression as the players fell, one by one, to the ground with a frightened look.

This, in turn, made the Sea King nervous as he assumed that there was really something evil lurking in the shadows.

When all the players had collapsed, the Sea King’s wariness was at an all-time high. He furtively glanced around, searching for any hidden assassins.

As he continued to look around, the Sea King very quickly noticed something was amiss. Apart from some who had better acting skills, some of the death performances from the players really puzzled the Sea King.

For example, after one player had finished shouting out his lines and fallen head-first into a dune of sand, it was the turn for another player to fall down. However, when the player’s long sword accidentally poked the first player’s bottom, the Sea King could clearly see the supposedly dead player twitch a little.

Some players were even more dramatic, shouting exaggeratedly before they pretended to die. After that, they awkwardly fell to the ground.

When he heard the drawn-out shrieks, the Sea King felt as though his intelligence was being mocked.

In no time at all, all the players on Kankun Island had died. However, the Sea King remained speechless, he had never seen such terrible acting skills before.

Just now, he even saw a player, who said he was being swallowed by the Demonic God, scratch his bottom after being bitten by one of the poisonous mosquitoes of Kankun Island.

Although he couldn't understand why the players were acting this way, the Sea King undoubtedly did not wish to die. After his body regained its strength, he grit his teeth and rose to his feet, limping his way to the seaside and finally leaping into the sea.

Then, a streak of white waves appeared on the water surface, which slowly drifted into a distance away.

After the Sea King had left, the players quickly flipped over and sat up.

In an instant, the live chat channel broke into a noisy furor. Everyone was criticizing each other about their subpar acting that was way too embarrassing.

Soon, the scolding transitioned from the chat over into the game. They pulled out their weapons and thus the alliance that was already fraught with friction, descended into utter chaos. The guilds could no longer contain their fury and began to tear into each other.

Sitting behind the scenes, Lu Wu controlled his urge to cover his face as he watched this unfold in embarrassment.

Chapter 312 - A Divine Scripture Within The Body

Chapter 312: A Divine Scripture Within The Body

After the Kankun Island battle, the Sea King finally escaped from danger with the players' assistance.

Needless to say, the players played a significant role in this battle. Without their help, the Sea King would've surely remained trapped in that dangerous situation and eventually would have perished.

After the battle, the Sea King returned to Xinmo Island with complicated emotions.

The previous hatred between them and the gratefulness for their countless kind assistance intertwined confusingly with one another in his mind.

Slowly but surely, his contempt toward the players had begun to dampen, but it had not completely disappeared, yet.

After all, he had sworn to himself that he must seek his revenge.

...

After the battle had ended, other players began returning to Beiqi as well. Only the guild members, who unleashed a massacre on Kankun Island due to long-standing conflicts, remained there.

As hordes of people from the Player Army sailed across the Kuilong Ocean into the Void Ocean, Tao Wu, who was originally fast asleep, suddenly opened his eyes wide.

He could sense a powerful overlord's aura wafting into his territory.

Assuming it was the doing of a challenger, Tao Wu raised his head with a murderous glare in his eyes.

Tao Wu knew very well that an overlord challenge would only end with one party's demise, thus he fully prepared himself mentally for the upcoming battle.

However, he felt that something was out of place.

This aura was very familiar, yet it seemed to be contaminated by something foreign.

When he finally sensed it, Tao Wu's eyes immediately widened in surprise.

“Little Kun! Ocean Hegemony Contract!”

Tao Wu was momentarily dumbfounded when he finally realized the reason why Little Kun's aura had altered. It turned out that his aura was tainted with the Underworld Sea God's aura.

Surely, this meant that Little Kun had challenged another ocean overlord under the witness of the Underworld Sea God.

When he had the epiphany, Tao Wu's entire body shook with excitement.

He's finally making me proud!

Little Kun, who was still in a juvenile state, actually had the guts to challenge another ocean overlord.

Even though the news was quite unbelievable, the aura of the Underworld Sea God was definitely unmistakable. Tao Wu clenched his teeth fiercely, trying to suppress the gripping panic in his heart.

A ripple of nervousness ebbed in his heart when he thought about his foolish son.

However, since Little Kun was his son, no matter what, he must not ignore the situation at hand. Hence, he instantly rose to his feet and swam at

lightning speed toward the zone Little Kun was in.

...

That day, Lu Wu was scrolling through the posts in the official web forum.

Suddenly, a black hole materialized next to him, from which a little hand peered out and dragged him into the abyss.

Lu Wu remained calm, despite the abrupt surprise, as it was clearly the power of the artifact. Other than him, only Bei Li could manipulate the power of the artifact.

When his body reappeared in the Artifact Channel, Lu Wu's attention was stolen by an isolated page floating in mid-air.

The piece of paper was burning fiercely, as the flames crackled madly and singed its edges. Rows of the golden letters were etched upon it, barely visible through the fierce flames. Its golden glimmer was bright and shimmering, seeming unusually dazzling.

The soul power orbs hovering around endlessly rushed into the flames, as though they were fuel to the fire.

“What is this for?”

When Lu Wu saw the soul coin amount dropping rapidly in his depot, he hastily turned his head around toward Bei Li, who was clad in an oversized lab coat.

“This is none other than a genuine torn page from The Emperor's Note!” Bei Li replied with a smile, as she continued staring at the blazing paper.

“Is there any use for it?”

After a brief glance at the glistening golden letters that were gradually becoming clearer on the burning page, Lu Wu hastily shifted his gaze onto the number of his soul coins that were decreasing at a meteoric speed.

When she heard his question, she narrowed her eyes and said, “Do you still want to cultivate the Dark Emperor Code?”

Lu Wu shook his head furiously in reply. Is she joking? The Dark Emperor Code was an ability that allowed one to strengthen divine consciousness and body through countless transformations. Lu Wu had steered clear of such a risky concept, as he hated transforming the most overall.

He was especially traumatized from that few months when he transformed into a cat, almost leaving him convinced that he was truly feline and no longer human.

Even though the cultivating technique was extremely potent, the process was too convoluted. Lu Wu sincerely felt that his fragile heart would not be able to endure the emotional burden.

“Actually, the Dark Emperor Code is pretty decent. This cultivating technique combined the benefits of various Divine Beasts, hence you can attain all their bloodline strengths if you master the art. This code will allow you to reach the Divine state. But now, I think you have another better option!”

Lu Wu shuddered when he heard her, before looking up at The Emperor’s Note torn page that was set ablaze in the air.

“This?”

“Yes, this is the path that was used by the emperors. Since the emperors were once the strongest existence in the three worlds, this cultivation path is much more powerful than the Dark Emperor’s Code. It’s perfect for you!” Bei Li nodded with a solemn expression.

“How many soul coins are needed to recover its true, original state?” Lu Wu asked with a pained expression, as he eyed the soul coins amount that had dropped by ten million. In fact, it was still declining speedily with every passing second.

“At this rate, I’m guessing it’ll be about thirty million soul coins,” Bei Li stuck her tongue out naughtily as she replied.

“So expensive!” Lu Wu gaped at the shocking revelation in utter disbelief.

Even though they earn a lot more soul coins now, it was overly exorbitant. If recovering a page required thirty million soul coins, the price for an entire Emperor’s Note would simply be unimaginable.

“Hey, that’s not expensive.. this is an item from the emperor! Resurrecting Cangxu needed fifty million soul coins, but a Ghost Emperor is nothing more than a measly ant compared to the human emperor, perhaps even less! The emperor’s existence is simply incomparable. The Emperor’s Code is a core piece for the Emperor’s cultivation. Thus, even if it’s just a page, its value surely far exceeds thirty million soul coins. We are paying such a cheap price for it, isn’t it a huge bargain?”

Lu Wu’s face twitched a little when he heard her reply. Suddenly, he realized that he was still an impoverished person.

However, Lu Wu didn’t stop it as he stared at the blazing page. After all, the cultivation was for him, so he would still pay the price.

Whatever, I’ll just nab them back from the players in the future!

After some time had passed, the seal imprint on the torn page of The Emperor’s Note had completely incinerated, leaving behind a shining piece of golden paper.

When Bei Li saw it, she extended her hand and beckoned it. Instantly, the torn page came to life and flew toward her hand.

Lu Wu immediately activated his analyzing ability and looked at The Emperor’s Note, wanting to read its data.

[The Emperor’s Note (torn page)]:

Item Details: By using the Law of the Heavens and Earth, it imbues a Hidden God into one’s body.

Item Attributes: Unknown.

...

When he saw the information from the analysis, Lu Wu was a little flustered as he had never expected such power.

However, Bei Li wore a serious expression on her face.

“The law will enter your body and create a Divine Scripture within you? I finally understood why human emperors were the strongest of all three realms!”

Lu Wu merely remained silent.

Bei Li suddenly turned around to look at Lu Wu.

“Wu, this torn page is not for cultivation, it’s a Divine Scripture. We won the lottery!”

Lu Wu was still in a state of utter confusion, unable to speak.

At this moment, he felt that he was truly ignorant. He did not know how to invent anything or understand anything complex, increasingly feeling like he was an amateur.

Bei Li suddenly let out a sigh when she saw Lu Wu’s perplexed face. Thus, she waved her hands at him, evidently exasperated.

“Forget it, I’ll just imbue it into your body. You’ll understand it then...”

Bei Li walked over and stood behind Lu Wu, then placing the golden page into his palm and taking a step backward.

Suddenly, the artifact’s power was activated. To Lu Wu’s surprise, he found that the golden torn page in his hand actually started to melt gradually, and circled around him like a stream of liquid. After that, it seeped into his skin, drop by drop.

Pain... a wave of excruciating pain suddenly attacked him.

Lu Wu's body quivered violently in response. He clenched his teeth with all his might, trying to endure the crushing pressure of the artifact's power weighing down on every inch of his skin.

Even though he could stop the pressure anytime since he was the highest-ranked manipulator of the artifact, he had complete trust in Bei Li. If she truly wanted to harm him, he would have never lived until this day.

After some time had gone by, the stinging pain gradually weakened. When all the golden liquid had diffused into his body, Lu Wu's eyes turned golden in color.

Lu Wu could feel an enormous power surging within him. His organs seemed to be pushed and pulled about by this overwhelming power, causing him great discomfort.

Soon, one hour... two hours... three hours had passed.

After an unknown amount of time, the crushing pressure of the artifact slowly dissipated. When the wave of power surging within him faded away, Lu Wu gradually opened his eyes.

A ray of golden light abruptly shone from his eyes, giving him a huge shock.

"Look at the state of your body, we truly hit the jackpot!" Bei Li's celebratory voice echoed from beside.

Lu Wu nodded and used his analyzing ability on himself.

[Lu Wu (Battle Online's Owner)]:

Gender: Male.

Realm of Ability: Level One Divine Scripture; Intermediate Ghost Commander.

Abilities: Juvenile Suan Ni (Completely mastered), Physical Divine Scripture.

[Juvenile Suan Ni]: With the help of the Dark Emperor's Code, the player has obtained the ancient beast Suan Ni's beginner's level inherited ability and physical strength during its juvenile stage.

[Physical Divine Scripture]: The Emperor's Note

Cultivating Technique Information: One of the missing pages from the 365 pages of The Emperor's Note. Every Divine Scripture corresponds to one acupuncture point on the human body. After receiving a Divine Scripture, the player can imbue it to its corresponding acupuncture point to attain an Immortal Sacred Body!

Cultivating Technique Warning: With each addition of Divine Scripture to its acupuncture point, the cultivating technique's power would multiple successively. After completing all 365 additions, the player can attain a Divine Body!

Activated Acupuncture Point: Divine Scripture Point

Power Imbued: Invincible body and immortal soul. With the enhancement of the Divine Scripture acupuncture point, the flesh and the soul would exist in symbiosis. When the body is damaged, the soul can help heal it. When the soul is extinguished, the body can help recover it.

[Unconceived Acupuncture Point (364 points left)]: Bai Hui, Shen Ting, Qi Hai, Qu Gu, Qi Men, Tai Yuan...

...

When Lu Wu saw his own attributes, a look of astonishment appeared on his face.

A mere broken page actually increased his power from Fledgling Ghost Commander to Intermediate Ghost Commander. He even mastered a Divine Level ability.

The power of The Emperor's Note far exceeded Lu Wu's expectations.

"How powerful!" Lu Wu couldn't help but gasp in surprise.

"The thirty million soul coins were worth it, right? I told you we hit the jackpot!" Bei Li stood nearby, with her hands on her waist. She was clearly pleased, wearing a proud expression.

Lu Wu nodded furiously when he heard it, obviously on cloud nine.

Lu Wu was completely overwhelmed when he realized the gargantuan enhancement brought by the torn page from The Emperor's Note.

When he suddenly recalled that the Jie De Corporation had countless other pages in their many underground laboratories, a sinister grin crept onto his face.

Chapter 313 - Eric

In the United States, at the jiede technology underground human experimental headquarters.

Eric, the director of jiede technology, was looking at the data on the screen with a serious expression. He was very surprised.

At this moment, the main control console's screen displayed a report that was a combination of text and design.

<Initial design of kinetic mech> creator: Tesla

This report was secretly given to him by the senior US military officials they had bribed.

Eric didn't think much of the report when he first received it.

After all, in his opinion, it was too difficult to build a kinetic mech with the current level of technology. He thought that it was just a concept and did not take it to heart at all.

After all, there were too many such blueprints in the US military. He would receive several copies every year, and there were even bold and imaginative ideas for the manufacturing of UFO spacecraft and space elevator architecture.

He would store such ideas in the database of Jide Technology, but he would not put them into practice. After all, they had no practical value.

However, after reading the report, Eric, who was a scientific researcher, was completely shocked.

This was because Tesla's initial design plan was too complete. The combination of the systems and the assembly of the parts was incredible.

He knew about the research fanatic Tesla. Although Tesla was talented and capable in the field of research, Eric's evaluation of Tesla was raised by a few times.

In order to prove the feasibility of this plan, Eric studied Tesla's report overnight and tested it on the simulation program in the laboratory the next day.

In the end, other than a few key points that were not smooth, the construction and operation of the mecha model were very successful.

At this moment, a crazy thought appeared in Eric's mind.

Tesla also pointed out a critical point in the report: the core power source of the mech was impossible to build with current technology. It was even a question whether such a small core power source that could release a huge amount of kinetic energy existed on earth.

Unfortunately, Tesla wrote at the bottom of the report, "Perhaps only when we can perfectly control nuclear fusion technology will mechas become a reality!"

This key problem might be an insurmountable problem to the US military, but it was not the case for Eric.

It was because they had mastered spiritual power!

After decades of trying, they had become more and more mature in the use of spirit energy. They even spent several years to create a "spirit core" that was condensed from spirit energy.

After reading Tesla's report about the small and powerful core, Eric already had the idea of building a mech.

This was because what was impossible for the US military could become possible for him.

However, there was still a big problem before building the mecha.

Tesla's report wasn't complete. Although the simulator worked, there were still many problems. Tesla was the key to building a mech.

So Eric had a crazy idea: kidnap Tesla!

If they failed to kidnap an important researcher from the hands of the US military and the US military found out that they were the ones behind it, then they would definitely have to bear a destructive blow.

However, Eric also knew that if it succeeded, the future of jiede technology would not just be a global technology business company. By then, they would be strong enough to compete with the most powerful countries in the world.

Just like the "umbrella" in the movie, he controlled a power that everyone feared.

From the moment he discovered the Reiki, Eric believed that he would change the world, so he did not want to miss this opportunity. As long as he had the combat mecha, he believed that he would have a future.

Although this idea was too crazy, it was also too tempting. After some internal struggle, Eric finally decided to carry out this kidnapping plan.

This was his ambition. He, who had control of spiritual power, had already grasped the initial method to prolong his life, so it was matched with the Supreme power.

With the two combined, he felt that he would become the master of the New World.

.....

American military, X Research military base.

Outside the 234-hectare military base, a circle of barbed wire surrounded the entire base. Every 20 meters, there would be a fully armed soldier wandering around. Inside the base, there was a 3000-meter long runway

that led to the cliff at the end. The entire base was heavily guarded, and outsiders could not enter at all.

In front of the main entrance of the base stood a red warning sign that read “military restricted zone, no entry allowed”.

This military base was different from the other military bases in the US. Its main purpose was to research and manufacture new weapons.

In addition to protecting the safety of the internal researchers, the existence of these soldiers was also to prevent reporters, spies, and other people from approaching.

After all, the information inside the base was of great value. If it was leaked, it would be a huge loss to the US military.

At this time, dozens of heavy trucks with military license plates drove over from the distance, raising clouds of dust.

After the captain of the soldiers guarding the gate observed the military heavy truck in the distance through the telescope, his expression became very serious. He took out his walkie-talkie and first told the soldiers to be on guard, then began to report to his superiors inside the base.

In this military base, members of other units would usually inform their superiors a day in advance when they arrived, and their superiors would also inform them in advance.

Therefore, the sudden appearance of dozens of military trucks had raised their vigilance.

The soldiers stationed there were also carefully selected and extremely excellent soldiers. They were very alert and quickly gathered at the main gate before their superiors replied.

At this time, the walkie-talkie rang. “I’ve asked. No unit has applied to enter X Research base!”

The patrol Leader immediately pressed the alarm button.

The megaphone on the Watchtower immediately sounded a series of alarms.

“You have entered a military base. Please leave immediately. Otherwise, we will take coercive measures!”

“You have entered a military base. Please leave immediately. Otherwise, we will take coercive measures!”

In the face of the warning from the direction of the military base, the row of black heavy trucks not only did not slow down, but instead accelerated.

The soldiers who saw this scene did not hesitate at all. They decisively opened the safety of their guns and pressed the alarm button inside the base.

Then, the soldiers quickly gathered in front of the gate, lined up in a row, and began to shoot.

However, these heavy trucks were all bulletproof. Ordinary bullets could not penetrate them at all.

“The lifting pillar!”

Seeing the heavy truck getting closer and closer, the captain quickly shouted at the soldiers on the Watchtower.

After the soldier pressed the switch of the lifting column, rows of earth spikes rose from the ground.

Suddenly, a few black trucks in front were sent flying by the sudden rise of the earth spike. They rolled a few meters after landing.

At the same time, the alarm inside the base sounded, causing all the soldiers stationed inside to become nervous. They began to gather quickly, then walked out of the base and gathered outside.

At the same time, the screens in the control room inside the base were all switched to the main entrance.

“Intrusion detected. Requesting permission to use missiles!” After seeing that there was indeed an invasion, the correspondent who was observing the image immediately sent a request to the highest-ranking officer in the base.

“I agree!”

After being authorized to use the missile, the missile cabin in the base automatically opened. After it was loaded, the gun barrel turned and locked onto the invading vehicle.

“Fire!”

Flames soared into the sky, and several small missiles rose into the air.

“BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!”

The black heavy trucks were all destroyed before they could even get close to the base.

“The target has been annihilated. Do you want to check the situation over!” The captain of the soldiers at the gate reported after seeing that all the heavy trucks had been destroyed.

“Wait for five minutes and observe the situation. Check again after you’re sure there’s no danger!”

.....

Just as everyone’s eyes were focused on the outside world, a figure quietly sneaked into the base.

“I’ve successfully infiltrated the base. Where’s the target?” The figure hid in a corner of the base and asked in a low voice.

“Haha, it’s so convenient to be invisible. Number 10, go to the 14th floor underground. That’s where Tesla is!” At this moment, a man’s reply came from his headset.

The invisible number ten nodded and went into stealth mode again.

It had to be said that even though the soldiers stationed inside the military base had gone out, it was still not easy to sneak in.

Even the elevator required fingerprints and Iris verification.

Fortunately, before the invasion, their spies in the military had already transmitted all the information of the entire base to the Jide underground experimental headquarters. They had a complete grasp of the internal situation, including the identification tools.

It could be said that the invasion from the outside world was just a feint. The key was his invisibility.

After all, the strength of the US military was there for all to see. Although they had the ability to crush the US military in terms of individual ability, there was still a huge gap in a direct confrontation.

.....

In the laboratory on the 14th floor underground.

The world's top scientific research equipment was placed in this personal laboratory that belonged to Tesla. The floor was covered with messy manuscripts, and the whole laboratory looked messy.

Meanwhile, Tesla was playing a game in his gaming pod.

Tesla was completely addicted to the game after trying it out.

Not only was he fascinated by the many high-tech products in the game, but the biological habits, racial relationships, and other complicated settings in the game also surprised him. It could be said that the more he played, the more surprised he was.

What Tesla wanted most was to meet the game's behind-the-scenes team and clarify its doubts.

Tesla believed that talking to them would help him solve his problems.

Not only were the masterminds of the expedition monsters in the eyes of the players, but Tesla was also impressed by them.

Meanwhile, Tesla was slowly approaching a tall building in the northern corner of Gulan ruins.

When he saw that the distance displayed on the data panel was within the attack range, he directly activated the “battle fortress mode” and aimed all the barrels at the top of the building.

“Fire the cannons!”

Suddenly, artillery fire roared, and countless missiles shot toward the top of the building with long tails of flames.

“BOOM!”

The roof of the building was blown up, and Tesla received a game notification.

[Player Emily has been killed by you!]

Hearing the game prompt, teslaa smiled.

During this period of time, the unconvinced Teslar had sought revenge from Emily several times, but he was killed by long-range sniping without exception.

However, Tesla had also discovered her weakness. Her defense was extremely weak, and she couldn't withstand a single round of his bombardment.

In the end, he had sneaked around in a big circle and killed Emily with just a round of normal fire.

Teslar, who thought that he had found Emily's weakness, smiled happily.

[The game has been cut off. Quitting the game!]

At this moment, Tesla's game screen suddenly went dark.

After he switched back to reality, he saw that The Game Capsule was slowly opening.

At this moment, number ten, who was wearing a tight-fitting outfit, smiled and patted him on the shoulder.”

“Follow me!”

“Where to?” Tesla was stunned.

“To build mechas!”

Chapter 314 - Genius Versus Genius

In the United States, at the jiede technology experimental headquarters.

18 floors underground, in a small room of 20 square meters.

Tesla scanned his surroundings with a cup of coffee in his hand.

He had been kidnapped!

And it was taken from the heavily guarded military base X. Everything seemed unbelievable but it really happened.

What was even more unbelievable was that he saw a superpower.

The man who called himself “No. 10” could not only make himself invisible, but he could also make him invisible. He just took him out of X military base openly.

After being brought into the underground base, Tesla discovered many nutrition chambers used to store his experiment subjects. This led him to the conclusion that he was in an underground human lab.

Combined with the power that ten had displayed, Tesla suspected that Ten’s power was created here.

However, in addition to fear, Tesla was also a little excited.

He had already guessed why they wanted to abduct him. As one of the most powerful researchers in the US, this was the only value he had.

At this time, the door suddenly opened, and a man in a black coat came in. He was holding a document in his hand and had a pair of gold-rimmed glasses on the bridge of his nose, looking very gentlemanly.

After closing the door, Eric sat down in front of Tesla and smiled.”

“I thought we’d meet, but I didn’t expect it to be this way. It’s an honor to meet you, Mr. Tesla. I’m Eric!” As he spoke, Eric reached out his hand.

Tesla was slightly reserved. He reached out and shook Eric’s hand, then asked,”

“What’s your purpose in kidnapping me?”

“Mr. Tesla, I know you very well, and I know what you want,” said Tesla with a smile.”The reason you joined the US military is because they can provide a huge amount of financial assistance, so that you won’t have to worry about a lack of resources in scientific research.”

Hearing this, Tesla was stunned. He had to admit that this was indeed the reason why he accepted the US military’s invitation. However, he had never told anyone about this idea, so he didn’t know how this man who called himself Eric knew about it.

“We’re the same kind of people, I’m the same as you!”

“The same kind of people?” Tesla was stunned.

Eric nodded.”I think you’ve already met No. 10. He’s one of my outstanding works.”

Tesla was shocked.”

“You’re saying that you created this Esper?”

Eric smiled and nodded.”He’s just one of them. I have better works. I think you’ll see them all in the future.”

“Then what’s your purpose in finding me? I’m not familiar with the study of the human body, so I might not be able to help you. ”

At this moment, Tesla’s heart was filled with questions. Although he wasn’t involved in the study of the human body, he was still full of curiosity about

superpowers. However, what he was most concerned about now was the purpose of kidnapping him.

“I’ve studied your ‘mecha initial design Report’ very carefully. In the past, I always thought that I was the most talented person, but now I don’t think so anymore. This is because I think that you’re as outstanding as I am. You’re really a rare genius!” Arek’s eyes glowed with passion as he looked at Tesla.

“You’ve planted people in the military!” Tesla suddenly realized something. After all, he had just submitted the report, but this non-military officer had received his report. There must be something fishy going on.

“That’s not important, is it? Mr. Tesla, I can provide you with all the research and development expenses here. I want to complete this mech building honor with you and start a new era of technology with you!” Eric said fanatically.

Tesla fell silent upon hearing this.

Tesla was convinced by Eric’s words, and he realized that Eric really knew him.

However, he still shook his head and refused.”

“Since you’ve read my report, you should know that with our current technology, it’s impossible to develop an energy core that can drive a mech. A mech without an energy core is like a human without a heart. No matter how strong your body is, you’re just an empty shell!”

“Hahaha, Mr. Tesla, how could I not think of this when I invited you here? would you believe me if I told you that I’ve already created this energy core?”

Hearing this, Tesla was instantly shocked. He suddenly stood up.”Are you telling the truth?”

“It’s better to see it with your own eyes than to say more. Come with me. ” Eric placed the “initial mech manufacturing design” report on the table and walked to the door. He then turned around to look at Tesla, who was still in shock.

Tesla quickly followed after him, his heart filled with excitement.

If someone told him that the energy core had been invented, he would’ve scoffed, but now that he had seen superpowers and Eric’s confidence, he was more than half convinced.

He followed Eric to the elevator, and the two of them took the elevator to the 32nd floor.

As soon as he stepped out of the elevator, a row of armed security guards looked over. However, when they saw Eric, they were very respectful and decisively made way for him.

After passing through a few security check rooms, Tesla and Eric arrived at a metal room.

After a series of identity checks, the door opened, and a rich aroma wafted into his nose. He felt lighter after taking a deep breath.

Tesla followed Eric into the room out of curiosity and was immediately attracted by the “stones” that were stored in a glass cover.

“This ... This is the energy core?” Tesla’s voice was shaking.

The energy that leaked through the glass was so shocking that Tesla completely believed Eric’s words.

Eric walked up to a spirit stone, picked up a data report, and handed it to Tesla.

Tesla took the report with trembling hands. He read the title “Reiki core” and began to read.

The more Tesla looked at it, the more surprised he became. He had just learned that there was an element called “Reiki” on earth. This energy source was extremely powerful, and according to the data report, the energy generated by a single Reiki Stone core was enough to supply the entire NYC for a day.

“How did you do it?” After he finished reading, teslaa suddenly raised his head and asked with red eyes.

At this moment, his heart was filled with excitement and confusion. He knew very well how the discovery of this new element would affect the development of the times.

“Someone found a broken ancient book from an unknown era during archeology. After testing, we found that the ancient book was at least three million years old, which is what we think of as the old stone Age.”

“Obviously, history is not as simple as we think. In order to find out the reason, I bought this ancient book and translated it myself. Although the result was not ideal, I learned the existence of Reiki from it. It is a magical element that can help creatures evolve and even make us young forever.”

“Of course I didn’t believe it at the time. I thought it was a religious book, but I still did many experiments. After countless failures, I actually managed to capture a weak trace of spiritual power. From that moment on, I knew I would change the world!”

An expression of admiration appeared on teslaa’s face when he heard this. At this moment, he didn’t think that Eric was arrogant. After understanding this, he felt that spirit Qi was indeed an element that could change the world.

“How about it, Mr. Tesla? are you willing to work with me? I can give you what the US military can ‘t, and I know you better than the US military. We can be friends. ”

Tesla was completely touched.

Tesla knew that this was a path of no return, but he still wanted to follow Arek and accomplish a feat that could change the world.

This might be the greatest creation of his life.

“Mr. Eric, I’m willing to join you!”

A smile appeared on Eric’s face when he heard this. He knew that Teslar would agree because he knew what Teslar wanted.

After that, Eric showed Tesla around the lab and showed him the many products that were created using Reiki.

In the end, Eric brought Tesla into his office.

The two began to discuss Tesla’s initial mech design plan.

Both of them were top scholars in the field of technology, and the more they talked, the more they hit it off. Tesla had already regarded Eric as his confidant and even felt that Eric was better than him in some aspects.

As they chatted, the topic changed to the origin of the mech building concept. Tesla didn’t hide anything and told Eric about war online.

Eric’s expression froze when he heard the words ‘war online’.

War online wasn’t a game that Eric was familiar with, but he wasn’t a stranger to either.

Recently, one of the main products of jiede technology, the “gaming chamber,” had taken a huge hit in sales because of this game.

However, Eric didn’t really understand war online. After all, it was just a game to him. Although he was the behind-the-scenes master of jiede technology, he didn’t care about business matters. He only cared about achievements in the technology field.

However, it was a different story when he heard about the game from Teslar. Punitive expedition online had already piqued his curiosity.

“You found inspiration in the game?” Eric asked curiously.

“It’s not inspiration. There’s already a complete design in the game. It’s so fine that it can even create a perfect mech. My design is based on the design in the game and the materials in real life!”

“Oh? A game company can actually have this kind of power?” Eric was very surprised.

“You can go and experience it. You definitely won’t be disappointed. I even suspect that the team behind this game is a very powerful underground organization, just like you!”

“A mysterious underground organization?” Eric frowned.

After a moment of contemplation, Eric stood up.”

“Let’s go. I can’t wait to see it. ”

Tesla immediately nodded. He believed that Eric would be as obsessed with the game as he was after learning about Eric’s capabilities. With Eric’s help, his in-game development would be much smoother.

Then, the two of them took the elevator to the leisure area on the second floor of the base. With the help of the staff, they lay down in the game cabin and opened the online battle.

At this moment, a notification suddenly appeared.

[Game is incompatible, unable to run!]

Chapter 315 - The Secret In The Data Package

The notification left both Arek and teslaa dumbfounded, and they both chose to exit the gaming chamber.

Tesla had been using the Black Sea company's gaming capsule provided by the military, so it didn't know that the jiede technology's gaming capsule wasn't compatible with the game.

However, Eric suddenly remembered that war online was not compatible with their gaming chamber.

He also remembered that the CEO of jiede technology had come to him to complain about the incompatibility problem, hoping for his help. However, Eric didn't take it seriously at that time and even impatiently sent the CEO away because he never cared about it. After all, the game chamber of jiede technology was just something he developed in his spare time after studying the use of Reiki.

However, the Conqueror company's actions were a slap to Eric's face. After all, he was the one who had personally developed the gaming chamber.

After a moment of silence, Eric asked the staff to take care of Tesla and rushed to his studio on the 48th floor.

After entering the studio, Eric changed into a work uniform. After all, he was very serious about scientific research and would change into a work uniform every time he worked.

When everything was ready, he came to the main control console, entered a string of code, and the base mainframe started up.

Then, he opened the search software and typed in the words "conquest online". Then, he clicked on the first link to the official website and

downloaded the game into the mainframe.

Eric's next step was to crack the game.

Relying on the analysis of the mainframe, punitive expedition online's data packets were constantly extracted.

Half an hour had passed, but the 800 MB data package was still being peeled off layer by layer, as if there was no end to it.

This made Eric dumbfounded.

Logically speaking, an 800 MB data package could be cracked in a few seconds. After all, the mainframe's computing power was extremely powerful. However, it had been so long and the data package had not been cracked.

Eric realized that something was wrong. Just as he was about to change his method of cracking the code, a successful cracking prompt suddenly popped up on the screen.

Seeing that it was a success, a smile appeared on Eric's face. He reached out and opened the cracked internal file.

However, at this time, an image popped up on the main control screen.

Then, a piece of music played, and seven Calabash Brothers jumped out of the screen.

“Woof! Monster, return my grandfather!”

Looking at the seven Calabash Brothers who were fighting the monster on the screen, Eric was stunned.

Eric, who had realized that he had been played, immediately cut off the screen on the main control console and decisively erased the game from the screen.

At this moment, Eric felt that his self-esteem had been challenged again.

After a long silence, he turned on the communication device on the console and called the CEO of Jiede Technology.

After the call was connected, Eric said coldly,

“Help me buy ten gaming capsules from the Black Sea company and send them over as soon as possible!”

Then, Eric hung up the phone without waiting for a reply.

On the other hand, Jiede’s CEO was also confused. He couldn’t understand why the behind-the-scenes boss specifically said that he wanted the Black Sea company’s gaming chamber.

.....

On Lu Wu’s side, he was making dinner in the kitchen, while Bei Li was knocking on his bowl with chopsticks to remind Lu Wu to speed up because he was hungry.

It was like a reader urging for updates.

A moment later, seeing that knocking on the bowl to get food was ineffective, Bei Li rested his chin on one hand and leaned weakly on the table, looking like he was going to starve to death if he didn’t eat.

After that, he leaned back against the chair and slid down limply. Just like that, he changed into several weak positions. When he saw that dinner hadn’t been served yet, Bei Li’s mouth gradually pouted, and he looked very angry.

At this moment, the warning of the divine artifact appeared.

[The game is being cracked!]

When he saw the divine weapon’s notification, Bei Li immediately perked up.

However, she didn't panic at all. After all, the current level of technology couldn't crack the game installation package that was bound to the divine artifact.

Bei Li couldn't help but chuckle when he thought of the last time when the US military cracked the game's installation package and Lu Wu uploaded the animation of "antenna baby".

After thinking for a while, she went to Lu Wu's computer, downloaded a video of the "Calabash Brothers", and sent it over through the artifact. Then, she returned to the table in a serious manner and continued to knock on the bowl to urge him to eat.

.....

Beiqi, at the border of the wangxu sea.

A huge beast came from the West, crossing the sea boundary and entering the sea of vanity.

"Ang!"

After entering the sea of vanity, the beast roared at the sky.

Soon, a Suan NI's figure appeared not far away, and it was approaching the beast at an extremely fast speed.

When the two beasts approached each other, the expected battle didn't happen. Instead, they both raised their bodies and stared at each other.

"Yingluo, what's wrong with Xiao Ling!"

Looking at the giant sea Meng beast in front of him, Jian Jia sighed. She did not hide anything and told him everything that happened to flamy.

"Ang!" After listening to Xi Jue's explanation, Haimon jumped up from the sea and slammed his tail on Xi Jue's body, throwing him into the water.

“What kind of father are you? Little Jun has just been born, but he already signed the sea realm contest contract. He’ll die!” Haimon was very angry.

“The time for the contract isn’t up yet. Xiao mo still has a chance!” Jian Jia quickly explained.

“Chance? He has to challenge kuilong within a year after he becomes an adult. This chance is practically non-existent. Even you and I will find it difficult to fight against kuilong, let alone Xiao mo!” Haimon’s eyes were red, and his tail was constantly whipping the water surface. He was extremely irritable.

“Don’t get too excited. We have to talk to quilung!” Yingying knew that she was in the wrong. After all, the child had a problem under her management.

“The sea realm conquest contract was signed under the witness of the yellow Springs sea god. We have no right to interfere. Even if we find kui long, it’s useless. He can’t lift it.” Haimon looked at Jian Jia coldly and said while gritting his teeth.

“There’s another way,” As he said that, an ominous glint flashed in Yingying’s eyes.

Haimon was stunned, but he immediately knew what Jian Jia wanted to do.

“It’s said that the kui Dragon is about to break through to the godly state. It’s too powerful!”

“So what? as long as he hasn’t broken through, we can definitely kill him together!”

Although he knew that it was dangerous, Xiao Ling was his child after all. At this moment, Yingying could not care so much.

Looking at the determined Yingying, the anger in Haimon’s heart gradually faded. After a long silence, he said,”

“I also have a way!”

“What?”

“Help kui long break through to godhood. As long as he becomes a God, his position as the Overlord of the sea realm will naturally cease to exist, and the contract for the hegemony of the sea realm will also be terminated!”

“It’s too difficult to become a God. It’s even more difficult than killing him!” Yingying’s eyes revealed a puzzled look.

“We don’t have any enmity with kui long. It’s all because of Xiao mo. However, we need to go and ask kui long first and see how confident he is in breaking through to godhood. We can’t take that step unless it’s absolutely necessary. Otherwise, our actions will indirectly violate the laws of the sea realm and bring us great trouble!”

Qianqian sighed and nodded. Then, two figures sped toward the kui Dragon Sea area.

Chapter 316 - Blacksmithing

Northern divergent, underworld.

In the past few days, the peaceful lives of the northern divergent's players had been disturbed.

The reason was the nine Yao great domain.

After many negotiations and waiting, the nine radiance official finally could not sit still and sent an envoy to deliver an ultimatum to the players.

Either submit! Either we start a war!

Naturally, the players would not give in again. The tactic of killing moonlight was feasible the first time, but the nine radiance brothers would definitely discover the players' problems the second time. Therefore, there was no suspense in the beginning of this battle.

Today, the messenger had come again, giving the players three days to consider. If they still did not surrender, they could only go to war.

After more than half a year, the players had already treated the northern divergent land as their home. Of course, they were not willing to hand it over.

Although this was bad news, it also gave the players of Beiqi, who had been stable for a long time, a sense of urgency. The improvement of their strength had once again become the focus.

The players' growth was undoubtedly rapid, but compared to the forces that had been entrenched in the netherworld for tens of thousands of years, they had nothing to offer except for the two advantages of numbers and resurrection.

It could be said that the odds of winning against the nine Yao great domain were very low.

However, the players did not give up. While discussing how to fight, they also began to think of ways to improve their own strength.

At the current stage, the ten thousand alchemists in Beiqi could already successfully refine medicine. Although the success rate wasn't very high, the many special medicines and permanent attribute-increasing pills they produced could indeed increase the strength of the players.

However, due to the small production, it was only a drop in the bucket for the huge number of players in Beiqi. It was unrealistic to rely on the alchemists to improve the overall strength of the players.

Right now, the entire Northern divergent was already under the players' control. The areas that could be used to level up could be counted with one's fingers, especially for beginner monster-farming areas like the ghost Mountain range. They were no longer able to satisfy the development of the players of Northern divergent.

As for the yellow spring Sea area, due to the tense situation in the Sea King's battle, all the newly born warriors of the death clan were transferred to the kui long sea area. The place where the players originally leveled up and farmed soul coins in the sea of vanity also disappeared.

Now, if the players wanted to speed up their development and break through the bottleneck of their growth, the only way was to expand their territory. Even if the nine glory mansion Lord didn't declare war, the players would take the initiative to declare war on him, just that the pace would be faster.

Lu Wu had naturally realized the problem of the development of Beiqi's players. After thinking about it again and again, he decided to start a life profession that was very helpful to the war,"forger."

The starting point of being a blacksmith wasn't high, but it wasn't any easier to master than being an Alchemist.

When the war against the nine Yao great domain was about to break out, allowing the players to figure out how to build war equipment that would be of great help to the war would also help the players grow as blacksmiths.

Compared to The Alchemist profession, which required a mature and stable mentality and skilled skills, what a blacksmith needed more was creativity.

For example, the number one forger in Beiqi who had invented the runic mech had combined his imagination and creativity to create the growth model of the runic mech system.

There were also siege weapons, special effect equipment, mechanical traps, new rune creation, and so on. It was easy to get started as a blacksmith, but extremely difficult to master. The things one had to learn were very complicated, and they could not be formed in a short time.

Lu Wu didn't consider opening this class before because he was afraid that the players' growth would be reduced because of the complicated casting growth system. After all, Lu Wu was very short of soul coins at that time, and the players' energy was still focused on killing monsters to level up.

However, Lu Wu felt that it was time to release this profession.

After the war with the nine Yao great domain officially began, Lu Wu believed that the growth of players would only speed up and would not slow down because of the number of lifestyle classes.

After Lu Wu confirmed the implementation of this plan, the game's prompt sounded in the minds of the Beiqi players.

[Server-wide announcement: the lifestyle class 'blacksmith' has been officially opened. All players can learn more about the new function 'lifestyle class' and accept class-change quests. There is no limit to the number of players who can become blacksmiths this time. The top 10000 players who perform well will be qualified to study in the forging course opened by bronze greaper for one month.]

The appearance of new life professions was always a pleasant surprise.

After the intense Alchemist competition had ended, the players had been looking forward to the second opening of life professions.

Even though the apothecary was not released, the players were still excited to have an unlimited number of New Life Classes.

Many players immediately opened the system interface and chose the new function, life profession.

Immediately, a long list of lifestyle classes appeared.

[Profession]:

[Alchemist (closed): a talented lifestyle-class profession that uses skilled techniques to mix the medicinal properties of various mystical materials and condense them into potions or pills, increasing the effects by multiple times.]

[Blacksmith (unlocked): a creative lifestyle class that uses imagination as a hammer to forge various auxiliary equipment.]

[Decomposer (locked): an observation-type life profession that can separate the different elements from equipment and elixirs and turn waste into treasure.]

[Demon chef (locked): skilled in using various materials (meat, plants, spirit ingredients, etc.) To cook. It is a skill-based life profession that can provide buffs to food.]

The winemaker ...

An enchanter ...

.....

The 28 lifestyle classes dazzled the players and made them extremely excited.

However, this time, other than blacksmiths, the other lifestyle classes could not be clicked on the interface, which made the players feel a little regretful.

However, the existence of these life professions also gave the players a great sense of anticipation. As they watched the construction in war improve step by step, they also felt a sense of joy in their hearts as the construction of their homes became better and better.

After the players opened the blacksmith's panel, a game notification appeared.

[Do you want to start the blacksmith class change mission? [This mission will be ranked by points. The top 10000 in the region will receive a month's training qualification for the forging instructor 'bronze pendant']

[Blacksmith class advancement quest first round: Wrought iron (72 hours)]:

[Mission description: after activating this mission, the player will receive beginner-level forging weapons "hundred tempering hammer", "casting furnace", and "blacksmith's introduction manual". The player can use the method recorded in the manual to hammer the spirit ore and forge it into spirit iron. (The higher the level of the spirit ore, the more difficult it is to forge it into iron. The quality of the iron will be higher after successful forging.)]

[Mission evaluation method: the first part of the mission will be completed after the player has forged five pieces of spiritual iron. The evaluation will be based on the quality of the spiritual iron. (Players who are not satisfied with the spiritual iron can choose to continue forging before the mission time ends. The evaluation will only be based on the five pieces of spiritual iron of the highest quality.)]

[Blacksmith class advancement quest, second round: Iron melting (48 hours):

[Mission description: after starting this mission, the player can follow the instructions in the "beginner's guide for blacksmiths" to fuse the spiritual

iron obtained in the first round of the mission, remove the impurities, and improve the quality of the spiritual iron.]

[Mission evaluation method: score based on the final quality of the combined spirit iron.]

[Blacksmith class advancement quest level three: Casting (48 hours):

[Mission description: use the spiritual iron obtained from the first two rounds to forge an item. It can be a weapon, equipment, auxiliary equipment, etc. (Beginner equipment template is provided in the forger's manual. You can also choose to create your own new item.)]

[Task evaluation method: score the final forged item based on its quality. In the case of forging multiple items, only the item with the highest analytical evaluation will be chosen (innovation bonus points)]

.....

Although it was an open profession with no limit on the number of players, it was obviously not as easy as the players thought. Looking at the description of the mission, the players all had an expression of 'I knew it'.

Suika Tairo: 'I'm really F * cking convinced by the conquest online. In the past, there were also games that had life professions like blacksmiths, but in that game, you just had to gather the materials and click on it to forge equipment. Then, you would be able to get the equipment by luck. Usually, the higher the proficiency, the higher the chance of a good equipment. But the conquest online actually made us swing a hammer to forge. This means that the proficiency here is completely determined by our own forging skills. It's too real. ' I really want to kill someone (covers face)

Strongest Xue Li: "I just took a look at the forger's manual in the realm. I'm scared. It's three times thicker than a dictionary (facepalm). I want to ask you, is it really good for you to treat the players this way? aren't you afraid that we'll find your home address (bloody knife)?" .jpg)

Assassin's Creed: do the monsters want us to be all-rounded? It's even higher than my parents' expectations of me. Thank you (gritting teeth)

[Crayon Shinchan: monster raid group: you guys don't know anything. How are you fit to be our expedition online players? go and learn!]

[Pay-to-win player: a certain blacksmith shop: young man, are you here for a job interview?] Player (haughty face): "this is my blacksmith certification from Conqueror online. Name your price."

[Dancing war flag: hahaha, as long as you play war well, you don't have to worry about not having a job.]

[Invincible loneliness: I feel like a retard when I'm forging and making potions in the game, but my heart tells me to get into the top 10000.]

Peppa the wild boar: "excellent. The monster Corps is indeed playing a big game of chess to forcibly raise the overall quality of the players. No one else can do it. However, since you have spent so much time and effort to write the" forging introduction manual,"I will reluctantly change my class. Also, let me remind you that this class seems to be very tiring. Please don't change your class, let me do it (funny)."

Roasting Chang 'e while holding the Jade Rabbit: "blacksmithing is a tough and rough job. Don't force yourself, everyone. Let me do it. I'm going to study!"

.....

Just as Lu Wuwu had expected, the forum was filled with complaints.

However, despite their complaints, there was no other way to change their class. Thus, the players of Beiqi once again threw themselves into learning.

With the apothecary as an example, the players had no doubt that lifestyle classes would be of great help to their growth.

On this day, Beiqi was filled with players carrying hammers and studying hard with books in their arms.

Chapter 317 - Lin Nuo And Lin Tie

Studying is hard and tiring.

Although the forging Guide, which was thicker than a dictionary, was easier to understand than the alchemy Guide, the volume was not small, and it gave the players a headache.

At this moment, the northern divergent's underworld's Square was filled with players holding books and reading them.

This time, the class-change to a blacksmith was different from that of an Alchemist. There was no restriction of not being able to read the book in the quest. However, players knew that if they did not read the entire book, they might not even be able to find the corresponding content when they started the quest.

The gamers knew that the contents of the book would be helpful for forging.

Even though it was a headache, the players did not give up.

However, there were exceptions among the players. These professional books seemed very interesting in the eyes of some players. The various images and building concepts in the books made them feel very creative, so they were completely addicted.

At this moment, beside the fountain in the center of Hell's Square, a burly man was staring at the [Forging Guide] in his hand with a serious expression.

The reason why he studied it so seriously, other than wanting to get into the top 10000, was because he felt that some of the contents in the book were very familiar, as if he had read it somewhere before.

Lin nuo was actually very experienced in the field of forging, because his main job in the real world was a blacksmith.

Naturally, he did not do this on a whim. It was a skill passed down from his ancestors.

Originally, Lin nuo did not want to be a blacksmith anymore, because he felt that this profession was too boring and useless.

However, his father gave him two tight slaps to shut him up after he said that. A thought could only be a thought because his father didn't want the skills passed down from his ancestors to be lost.

It was already the year 2319, so he was no longer in this line of work to provide weapons and equipment for the Army, or to make farming tools to sell for money to make a living. His main source of income now was to make armor, weapons, and other props for cosplayers.

Moreover, their family's craft had been certified by the state as a Intangible Cultural Heritage. They also received some subsidies from the state every year. Although they were not particularly rich, they could still live well.

Hence, when the class change to become a blacksmith appeared, Lin nuo felt that his chance had come. With his forging skills over the past ten years, he felt that he had a high chance of entering the top ten thousand.

Thus, with an excited mood, he began to flip through the <blacksmith's introduction manual>.

However, the more he looked at it, the more familiar it felt. Lin nuo felt that he had seen many of the contents of the beginner's manual somewhere before.

With that in mind, Lin nuo put the manual into the medium and chose to go offline.

As the gaming chamber slowly opened, Lin nuo returned to reality.

After stepping out of the gaming chamber, Lin nuo glanced out the window and saw his father sitting on a rocking chair outside, leisurely basking in the sun. He quickly turned around and ran downstairs to his father.

Lin nuo ran all the way to his father's side and shouted,

“Father!”

Lin Tie was obviously used to his son's growling. He did not even open his eyes. “What for?”

“Father, do you know that there's a forging technique called” refined iron melting essence “? I feel like I've seen this thing before!”

Hearing Lin nuo's words, Lin Tie suddenly opened his eyes.

“Why are you so interested in forging? have you come back from the wrong path?”

“Father, don't interrupt. I'm asking if you know about this forging technique. I keep feeling like I've seen it somewhere before!”

It was rare to see his son so interested in this craft. Lin Tie, who was originally listless, was relieved. After a moment of silence, he said,

“I remember now, it seems that this was recorded in a book passed down from my ancestors. It's called” iron melting essence,”it's a skill that helps the metal to remove impurities during forging. However, it's recorded that this skill needs to be matched with a great amount of strength. This is simply impossible in my opinion. This ancient hammer forging method is simply impossible to achieve unless it is matched with modern instruments.”

“Where's the book?” Lin nuo's eyes lit up.

“I don't know, your mom probably threw it away!” Lin Tie shook his head in regret.

Hearing this, Lin nuo's face instantly turned dejected. He almost thought that he had found some kind of forging cheat or something.

However, Lin nuo could not help but admire the members of the genius gang after hearing his father admit that he had such a skill. Just as many players had guessed, most of the contents of those books could be combined with reality and not made up.

“By the way, why are you asking this?” Looking at the dejected Lin nuo, Lin Tie seemed very pleased. He thought that his son had finally fallen in love with this line of work.

“I'm playing games!”

“What?” Lin Tie was stunned.

“I'm playing games. I need it in the game.” Lin nuo said again.

“You're a blacksmith in the game?” Lin Tie asked in disbelief.

“Yes, I've decided to become one of the best blacksmiths in the region. I can't miss this opportunity!” Lin nuo said with confidence.

However, Lin Tie's face turned increasingly red.

He had advised Lin nuo to work hard as a blacksmith for so many years, but his son had always been uninterested. He had even run away from home several times when he was young. If it wasn't for his constant pressure, he believed that his son would have changed his career long ago. Now that his son wanted to be a blacksmith in the game, Lin Tie was greatly provoked.

Immediately, Lin Tie stood up and twisted Lin nuo's ear.

“Are you xxxxx? you're so stupid that you're going to xxxxx in the game. Stupid thing, F * ck your mother!”

Seeing his furious father, Lin nuo repeatedly begged for mercy. He kept pulling at his father's arm, but he couldn't break free.

His father had been a blacksmith for his entire life. Although he was old, his body was still very strong and full of strength. This twist caused Lin nuo to cry out in pain,”

“Dad, dad, listen to me. Learning this skill in the game will be helpful in reality.”

“Do you think I’m a fool? when I was young, I bought a virtual reality helmet and played games. This thing is too much of a waste of time. What’s all the forging inside? it’s all fake!”

“Dad, games these days are different. If you don’t believe me, you can try it. I’m not lying to you. Don’t twist it anymore. This skill has only been passed down in our family, so you have to rely on me to pass it down!”

Hearing this, Lin Tie snorted and put down his hand.”

“Take me there. If you dare to lie to me, I’ll smash all the gaming equipment you bought!”

Lin nuo hurriedly nodded and brought Lin Tie back into the house. They went upstairs and went to their own room.

With Lin nuo’s help, Lin Tie lay down in the gaming chamber while Lin nuo put on the virtual helmet.

Seeing that his father had entered the game, Lin nuo chuckled.

In reality, bringing his father into the game was exactly what he wanted. After all, his father was different from him. His father had immersed himself in the forging industry for many years, and his skills were definitely unrivaled. With his father’s guidance, he would be even more confident of getting into the top 10000.

.....

Ten minutes later, the father and son met at the resurrection point in hell.

Looking at his father, who was still shocked by what he saw, Lin nuo chuckled.”

“Father, how is it? the realism is good, right? I told you, forging in this place will definitely improve your skills in the real world!”

Seeing his father’s stoic face, Lin nuo took out the “blacksmith’s introduction manual “from the medium and passed it to Lin Tie.

“Father, take a look and see if some of the contents are the same as the ancient books.”

Lin Tie took the book and started flipping through it with curiosity.

Lin Tie was completely engrossed in the book, so he found a place near the resurrection point to sit down and began reading.

Lin Tie was very familiar with many of the contents in the book, as he had read about them in his ancestral books. However, the explanation in this book was much more detailed and easy to understand than the ancient books. The illustrations and text annotations made Lin Tie nod his head as he read.

Lin nuo was speechless at Lin Tie’s infatuation and could only stand by his side.

Time passed quickly, and the afternoon was over. As he was using the virtual reality helmet, Lin nuo was famished.

Glancing at his father who was still studying, Lin nuo couldn’t help but say,”

“Father, it’s almost time. We should go offline to eat!”

“Get lost, don’t disturb my reading!” Lin Tie waved his hand and did not even raise his head.

Lin nuo was speechless.

Lin nuo sighed as he faced his demonic father. He could only go offline to eat by himself. After all, his father had nutrient fluids to support him, while he could not.

Two hours later, Lin nuo, who had just finished his meal and gone online, noticed that the streets of hell were already lit up. His father, like many other players, was still holding a book and reading it with full concentration.

Lin nuo was completely speechless. He felt that it was a mistake to bring his father into the game. When he thought about what his father had said before, "playing games is to lose one's will." Looking at his father's current state, Lin nuo felt that his father was right!

He spent the whole night reading.

On the second day, Lin Tie finally finished reading the entire book when the sky was just beginning to darken.

Seeing this, Lin nuo was about to speak, but he saw his father flip to the first page again, as if he was going to read it all over again. This scared Lin nuo, and he quickly snatched the forging manual from his father's hands.

"Father, you're losing your mind by playing with toys!"

"F * ck, little brat, are you itching for a beating?" Seeing the book being snatched away, Lin Tie, who was still immersed in his thoughts, was instantly enraged.

"Father, let's talk this out. This is a safe zone, don't be impulsive. Also, if you really want to read, you can change your profession to a blacksmith. This book is just the beginning. There are many more books after that. I think you might not even be able to finish reading them in a year!"

Lin Tie, who was just about to beat someone up, heard this and his expression froze."

"Blacksmith? The one you mentioned before?"

“That’s right. Do You Believe Me Now? the monsters in this game are extremely terrifying. Many of the contents of the books can be used in real life. So, as long as you become a forger, you’ll be able to unlock the subsequent growth of your profession. You’ll be able to obtain more books and even receive guidance from a bronze gatherer!”

Lin nuo was depressed as he said this. He had wanted his father to give him some pointers, but it was clear that his father had become addicted.

“What should I do?” Lin Tie asked, his eyes gleaming.

“Simple. Open the system function panel and choose the life profession ...”

Under Lin nuo’s guidance, Lin Tie opened the life profession panel and clicked on the blacksmith option. After confirming the start of the mission, a game prompt suddenly appeared.

[Game prompt: you have not reached level 25. You are unable to activate the class change of a blacksmith!]

The game prompt made Lin Tie’s eyes widen.

He had played games when he was young, so he naturally knew what it meant. Then, he turned to look at Lin nuo.

“Son, what’s your level?”

“Level 108. What’s wrong?” Lin nuo asked curiously.

“Let’s go, I’ll take your father to level up. I’m definitely going to become a blacksmith!”

Chapter 318 - Successor

“This skill can not be lost in our hands.” These were the words that Lin Tie often said to Lin nuo.

As a father, how could he not know what his child was thinking? in fact, he was the same when he was young. He felt that since this craft had been eliminated by the times, what was the point of insisting on it?

At that time, Lin Tie had also felt that his father was too pedantic. In this new era, he had insisted on the old things and would never choose to make progress.

However, as he grew up and came into contact with this line of work more often, Lin Tie’s thoughts gradually changed. He also understood why his father was so insistent.

The traditional craftsmanship that carried the essence of the dragon Kingdom’s traditional culture had been passed down for thousands of years, but it was new, which was why it existed.

This was because behind every piece of work was the condensation of the vicissitudes of time and life.

On the bigger hand, this was a kind of persistence and persistence towards tradition. On the smaller hand, this was the spirit passed down from generation to generation.

A hundred years ago, a thousand years ago, his ancestors also swung their iron hammers like he did now, sweating in the sparks, forging the throbbing and brilliance of life in the occasional flash of inspiration.

It was like a story that was written from the moment it was passed down, passed down from generation to generation, and constantly perfected.

From that moment on, Lin Tie took the initiative to learn forging.

Love developed over time could be used between people, and it was also applicable to Lin Tie and his own skills.

The more he understood, the more he loved it. When the inheritance was no longer a burden, Lin Tie took over the baton from his father and began to write his own story.

This was Lin Tie, an old-fashioned person in Lin nuo's eyes, but a successor with the most sincere persistence and dreams.

In the past, Lin Tie had also thought of developing this skill and had made a lot of efforts to do so. He had been on Weibo, live streaming, and other platforms.

Unfortunately, in this impetuous era, the appreciation of traditional craftsmanship had long since faded. The results of his relentless efforts made Lin Tie very disappointed and depressed.

However, his love for this craft had never diminished.

However, after coming into contact with the punitive expedition online, Lin Tie's calm heart was once again reignited with the flame that he once had.

Tens of millions of players were learning forging skills here. This was something that Lin Tie had never dared to imagine.

Although this was a game, after reading the <<Introduction to Forging>>, Lin Tie knew that these techniques really existed. Just as Lin nuo had said, they could be used in reality.

To Lin Tie, this was an opportunity to bring honor to his ancestors and let the people understand the Lin clan's smelting and forging techniques.

After learning from Lin nuo that there were 10000 slots for this job-changing trial, Lin Tie only had one thought in his mind-he wanted to be number one!

However, before that, he had to level up first.

Lin nuo was on the verge of tears after 11 consecutive hours of leveling up in the ghost Mountain range. Looking at his father, who was still full of energy, Lin nuo really wanted to go to sleep, but his father would not allow it.

“Father! I can’t take it anymore, I’ll be forced to go offline in an hour, should I rest first?” Seeing that his father was still looking for trouble, Lin nuo said with an aggrieved expression.

To Lin nuo, the beginner monsters in the ghost Mountain range gave too little experience and were unable to satisfy his growth. His only purpose here was to help Lin nuo level up.

Originally, he had wanted his father to guide him through the job-changing mission, but he had not expected that his father would strip him of all the time he had to memorize. If it had been anyone else, Lin nuo would have flown into a rage. However, this was his father, so Lin nuo did not even dare to have the thought of resisting. He could only “serve” him.

“I’ll be forced to go offline in an hour?” When Lin Tie heard this, he turned back to look at Lin nuo and frowned.

“Yeah, I’m using a virtual reality helmet now. There’s a mandatory game time limit.” Lin nuo said expectantly, waiting for his father’s permission.

“Wait a moment!”

After saying this, Lin Tie went offline under Lin nuo’s shocked expression.

Five minutes later, Lin Tie came online again and waved the sword in his hand, ””Let’s go, let’s continue killing the monsters!”

“Dad, I only have half an hour left in the game!”

“It’s fine, dad just went offline and ordered another gaming pod. It’s going to be sent directly from the nearby Black Sea cargo hold. The AI delivery car will probably arrive in about an hour. ”

Lin nuo was speechless.

Lin nuo really wanted to shout at his father, 'this is too much!' But he didn't dare to.

An hour later, the gaming chamber was delivered to Lin Tie's house. The father and son went offline to move the new gaming chamber into Lin Tie's room.

Lin Tie used his own gaming capsule when he came online again.

Lin nuo felt bitter and aggrieved when he thought of his father's angry face when he bought the gaming capsule. He wanted to scold his father, but he didn't dare to.

With the gaming chamber, the 12-hour gaming limit was naturally no longer in place. Lin nuo then led his father to sweep through the ghost mountains, the beginner training area.

With Lin nuo, a Rune Warrior above level 100, guiding him, Lin Tie's level rose rapidly.

After two days of non-stop farming, Lin Tie had finally reached level 25, and it was finally time for him to accept the class-change mission.

Lin nuo finally heaved a sigh of relief, feeling that he was free.

Lin Tie, who was standing at the side, was also very happy.

In the past two days of leveling up, Lin Tie had also discovered a surprise in the game. He could feel his physical fitness improving as he leveled up in the game.

He could not help but think of the 'smelting iron essence' tempering technique recorded in the books.

Falin had tried this method of forging when he was young, but he found that it was not very useful in actual forging. Just as he had explained to Lin nuo at the time, this forging technique required one to have great strength. It was difficult to do it without the help of modern equipment, and if one tried it forcefully, it would hurt the body.

Lin Tie, who was now level 25, clenched his fists and felt the power surging in his body. He felt that with his current strength, he could definitely try out this forging method.

Soon after, Lin Tie and his son returned to the underworld and prepared to attempt forging.

[Are you sure you want to activate the life profession blacksmith class change quest?]

“Yes!”

After confirming the class advancement mission, the three entry level items-forging book, hundred smelting hammer, and smelting furnace-were sent to Lin Tie’s backpack.

After reading the mission description, Lin Tie extended his hand to Lin nuo.

“Father, what are you doing?” Lin nuo asked, puzzled.

“A spirit mine!”

Lin nuo’s teeth hurt when he heard that.

At this moment, the game notification appeared in his mind.

[Game prompt: the first part of your blacksmith profession change mission has run out of time. The number of forged iron has not reached five pieces. You have failed!]

“F * ck!”

For the past three days, he had been training with his father and had even forgotten to do missions. At this moment, Lin nuo’s heart ached.

Fortunately, this mission could be repeated after a day of cooldown. Otherwise, Lin nuo felt that he would really go crazy.

Looking at his father, Lin nuo sighed in his heart. He took out all the spirit ores from his backpack and handed them to his father.

“Father, you can have them all. If it’s not enough, I’ll buy more.”

Lin Tie nodded and summoned his forging furnace excitedly. He then began his first forging process in the game.

Looking at his father’s busy figure, Lin nuo’s heart was filled with both helplessness and joy. He had forgotten how long it had been since he had seen his father so focused on something.

At this moment, Lin Tie seemed to have lost his old age and was full of vitality. Lin nuo could not help but be stunned.

“Ding! Ding! Ding! Ding!” The sound was very pleasant and warm. At that moment, Lin nuo couldn’t help but think of the burly figure who was shirtless and sweating by the fire.

Lin nuo, a thirty-year-old man, could not help but tear up as he watched from the side.

He was once very familiar with this attitude. At this moment, Lin Tie was like a sword that had been sealed for a long time and had its dust wiped away. He once again displayed his sharp edge. Although many years had passed, he was still as dazzling as ever.

Lin Tie was very familiar with smelting techniques. He pounded on the red-hot spirit ore rhythmically, and the sparks that burst out burned his skin red.

However, Lin Tie did not feel any discomfort at all. There was only excitement and nostalgia in his eyes.

After half an hour of non-stop hammering, the impurities were gradually removed, and the shape of the spirit ore kept shrinking.

Ding! Ding! After another round of hammering, a game notification suddenly appeared.

[Game prompt: congratulations on forging 100 skills iron!]

After picking up the red-hot 100 skills iron with a pair of tongs, Lin Tie revealed a smile.

This time, he tried to use the ‘smelting iron to refine essence’ forging method in the introductory forging book to try smelting the spirit ore. He did not expect to really succeed.

Seeing this, Lin nuo curiously analyzed the attributes of the spiritual iron.

[100 skills iron (Level 1)]:

[Metal information: Level 1 spirit ore, hundred-smelting stone. A level 1 metal material formed after tempering.]

[Material quality: 89]

(Spirit ores are divided into 1×13 levels, and spiritual metal materials after tempering are divided into 1×18 levels. Each level has a total of 1×100 quality evaluation. The metal smelted from a level 13 spirit ore is equivalent to a level 13 metal. In the later stages, the metal’s level and quality will be improved by smelting the metal)

At this moment, a panel appeared in front of Lin Tie.

[Blacksmith profession change leaderboard (remaining time: 5 days, 13 hours, 46 minutes)]:

[1st place: Tian beiyou (852 points, completed the third round of the mission)]

[2nd place: Tao Lin (753 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[3rd place: Zhong Fengyi (732 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

.....

[9742nd place: Lin Tie (89 points, first round of the mission)]

.....

Since he was in a party, Lin nuo also noticed the ranking that appeared on his father's panel. Other than being surprised, he was also filled with pride.

He was very confident in his father and knew that with his father's strength, he would definitely be able to enter the top 10000. However, he had never expected that his father would successfully jump into the top 10000 list just by forging the first piece of spirit iron.

The evaluation of the first round of the task was based on five pieces, and his father had only forged one piece. If the points from the other four pieces were counted, he felt that his father's points could definitely break into the top 1000, or even higher.

Lin nuo's heart was filled with anticipation. He felt as if he was witnessing his father's rise.

However, Lin Tie was extremely dissatisfied with the ranking. He immediately picked up his hammer and began to hammer the second spirit mine while his body was still warm.

As time passed, the spirit ores were refined into spirit iron one by one. Lin Tie's ranking on the list shot up. When the fifth spirit ore was refined, Lin Tie's ranking was already at 587.

In contrast to the excited Lin nuo, Lin Tie was extremely calm. He only had one thought in his mind, and that was to get first place!

Chapter 319 - Time Flow

Northern divergent, underworld.

After the class change for blacksmiths began, players enthusiastically participated in the event, and it could be said that the event was very successful.

Although the nine-Yao region had officially declared war on Beiqi, the players had something more important to do before the Army arrived.

As today was the final day of the blacksmith's trial, the competition for the top 10000 positions would also be decided today. The competition had become extremely intense, and the sound of iron hammers striking spirit ores could be heard everywhere inside and outside of hell.

At this moment, a large number of players had gathered by a moat outside underworld.

The father and son of the Lin family were also busy here.

After taking a look at his ranking, Lin Tie once again focused his attention on the two pieces of spirit iron in his hands. He immediately swung the hundred smelting hammer down, causing sparks to fly in all directions along with the sound of metal clashing.

Under the burning of the furnace and the hammering of the hundred tempering hammer, the spirit iron gradually softened and met the requirements for fusion.

Lin nuo, on the other hand, was watching attentively from the side, learning his father's forging techniques.

“Swish!”

As a cloud of steam appeared, Lin Tie used his pincers to scoop up the fused spirit iron from the water.

[Green Frost iron (Grade 2)]:

[Metal information: a level 2 metal forged from three pieces of Level 1 spirit ore 'cold iron'. It has a slight cold attribute and is suitable for forging Yin attribute equipment.]

[Spirit iron quality: 93]

“Rank two! Father, you’ve forged a piece of level two quality spiritual iron, and it’s of high quality.” Lin nuo was clearly very excited.

Then, he quickly opened the blacksmith ranking panel and began to look for his father’s current ranking.

[Blacksmith profession change leaderboard (remaining time: 23 hours 46 minutes):

[1st place: ye shaoqiu (1052 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[2nd place: ou Tian (955 points, second round of the mission)]

[3rd place: Wu Muyu (953 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[4th place: Lin Tie (943 points, second part of the mission)]

.....

Lin nuo was overjoyed when he saw that his father had reached the fourth place. However, when he turned to look at Lin Tie, he realized that Lin Tie was frowning.

“Ou Tian?” Lin Tie muttered.

Lin Tie did not have the time to continue forging after the piece of spirit iron was completed. Otherwise, he might not be able to complete the third

round due to the lack of time. Therefore, ou Tian, who was also in the second round but had more points than him, attracted Lin Tie's attention.

Even though he was surprised, Lin Tie did not take it too seriously. He opened the mission panel and chose to submit the mission. After all, the third round was the key to this trial.

The third round of the forger's class-change quest could be said to be the most difficult one. The player had to forge an item by themselves.

Although there were many casting templates to refer to, whether or not it could be cast was a completely different matter.

With the start of the third part of the mission, Lin Tie took out a book on the basics of forging and began to read. After a while, he fell into deep thought.

There were actually many forging options.

Weapons, equipment, large machinery, small tools, tools, and so on could all be chosen. However, after seeing the points of the player named ou Tian on the leaderboard, Lin Tie felt a sense of crisis.

It was obvious that the player named ou Tian had superb forging skills. Lin Tie thought that he had done well in the first two rounds of the task, but he did not expect that he would still be behind in terms of points.

Therefore, Lin Tie felt that he might not be able to win if he only followed the template.

Time was of the essence. After hesitating for a while, Lin Tie suddenly thought of something and chose to log off. He then rushed to the storage room downstairs.

As the storage room had not been opened for a long time, a cloud of dust blew into his face the moment he pushed the door open. Lin Tie could not care less about that as he strode in and began to rummage through the room.

About half an hour later, Lin Tie's face lit up with joy as he pulled out a blue-covered booklet from the pile of books.

He took a look at the title, "Lin clan's forging manual Volume 2." This was what he was looking for.

Since he had decided to fight for first place, and with a strong opponent like you Tian, Lin Tie naturally did not want to follow the template. Innovation might be the key to victory.

Lin Tie then took the book out of the storage room. Just as he was about to close the door, his eyes suddenly stopped on the dusty weapons and armors. His expression became complicated.

After closing the door, Lin Tie stood still for a while, then turned around and walked back to his room.

With every step he took, his expression became more determined. After all, the past was the past.

When he returned to his room, Lin Tie took out his phone and took a picture of the entire book before uploading it to the official website. He then logged into the game and opened the photo album to read.

If the inheritance of a skill was a spiritual story written by generations, then this "smithing manual" was a physical record of this skill in the historical changes.

The smithing manual had been revised many times since it was first written on the bamboo slip. The most recent one was his father's copy. It could be said that the essence of the Lin clan's smithing history was recorded in it.

In fact, Lin Tie had read this ancient book countless times when he was young. However, his memory of many places had become blurry, so he had to flip through it again.

A moment later, Lin Tie's eyes focused on a device with a picture and a happy expression appeared on his face.

[The flow of time of the mechanical man]

After checking it a few times, Lin Tie stood up and started the third part of his task.

After taking out all the spirit iron he had forged in the previous task, Lin Tie started to get busy again.

Fortunately, he was well-prepared this time and had forged enough spirit iron for the first two loops. Otherwise, Lin Tie would not have dared to challenge such a difficult weapon that required 32 parts and was almost like a piece of art.

The subsequent forging was physical work, but it was even more technical work.

The first step was to fold the iron to increase the toughness of the spirit iron.

The second step was to cover the metal with the mixed soil and then heat the metal to a specific temperature. When the red-hot metal entered the water, the naked part would cool down quickly, and the temperature change would not be obvious for the parts covered with soil, which would cause the hardness to be different from the naked part, thus achieving the effect of coupling hardness with softness.

The third part, tempering ...

The fourth film, gilt ...

.....

As time passed, Lin Tie was fully focused on forging. All of his enthusiasm was condensed into strength as the hammer fell and smashed into the gradually forming metal.

Three hours before the end of the trial, there were already more than 20 weapons that Lin Tie needed, and he was still working hard on them.

At this moment, a game prompt suddenly appeared.

[Global announcement: congratulations to player orsky for successfully forging a new purple quality weapon with an innovative method. The weapon will be named [moonblade]!]

[Moon sky blade (level 50 purple weapon)]:

[Weapon information: purple quality weapon forged from cold iron, green cold iron, and black Obsidian]

[Weapon Durability: 2000/2000]

[Weapon special effects: moon slash (weapon's own skill), moon flare (weapon's own skill)]

[Blacksmith: ou Tian]

[Equipment attributes: ...]

“Whoosh!” At this moment, all the players in the region were in an uproar.

Especially after seeing the attributes of the weapon, the players howled in shock.

Even though equipment with skills could be found in the merchant shop or in bronze pendants, their prices were extremely high. It was not something that ordinary players could afford. Therefore, when a player forged such a weapon, most of the players would be excited.

At this moment, the players were discussing in the forums and the regional chat channel. Other than celebrating the appearance of another expert player, they were also guessing who exactly was orsky and why they had never heard of him before.

At this moment, the ranking board for blacksmiths had changed greatly.

[Blacksmith profession change leaderboard (remaining time: 2 hours 54 minutes):

[1st place: ou Tian (10864 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[2nd place: Hu Long (2542 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[3rd place: mu ye (2088 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

.....

Many players 'spirit ores exploded at the last moment. As the finished products of forging appeared one after another, the ranking kept changing, and the competition was particularly intense.

After taking a look at the ranking, Lin Tie focused his attention back on the forging at hand.

There wasn't much time left, so he had to go all out.

The iron hammer moved again. Sweat flowed down his forehead and back, occasionally dripping on the Red Hot iron with a sizzling sound.

Immersed in forging, Lin Tie had forgotten about the passage of time. Lin nuo, on the other hand, was anxious but dared not disturb him. He only glanced at the remaining time from time to time while observing his father's forging.

Two hours passed by quickly. Lin Tie suddenly stopped hammering and took a deep breath. He then used a pair of pliers to place the last part into the water.

After taking out the cooled parts, Lin Tie busied himself again and began to assemble the parts.

Lin nuo finally heaved a sigh of relief. Seeing that there were less than 50 minutes left, he was glad that he had made it in time.

However, he was dumbfounded as he saw Lin Tie open the mall page, purchase a carving knife, and begin a new round of processing.

Seeing that time was running out, Lin nuo was extremely impatient, like an ant on a hot pan.

.....

At the north gate of hell, holding the “Moonsky blade” in his hand, ou Tian looked at the artistic weapon with an infatuated expression.

For the last round of forging, ou Tian arrogantly chose to create and forge instead of choosing the template provided in the blacksmith’s manual. As it turned out, he had made the right choice. He had successfully forged a weapon with special effects that was different from the template. He had also obtained more than 10000 points, firmly occupying the first place.

Ou Tian was not surprised at all to obtain first place.

Because he had the qualifications!

The name “ou Tian” might be unfamiliar to many people, but there was no one who didn’t know of his ancestor. He was the founder of the sword forgers, ou Zhizi, who had forged famous swords such as the clear Sable, pure Jun, evil-slaying, Yuchang, and great Ravager.

Although none of the younger generations had ou Zhizi’s strength and reputation, they had inherited his good swordsmithing skills. Even in the chaotic world where human lives were as worthless as grass, he could rely on his excellent skills to make a name for himself.

Therefore, in ou Tian’s opinion, he should have been the first in this blacksmith’s trial. Since ancient times, he had the skill and the qualifications!

Moreover, the “Moonsky blade”, which was made from the spirit ore and forging tools in the game, was a peak-grade weapon that he had never had before. He did not believe that anyone could do it better than him.

Just as ou Tian was still immersed in the weapon he had forged, a game notification suddenly appeared.

[Server announcement, congratulations to player Lin Tie for creating a purple quality special effect item named “time flow”.]

[Flow of time (level 58 purple special effect item)]:

[Item Introduction: a humanoid battle puppet assembled from 32 individual items. Its body can be flexibly changed and reassembled in battle. It has extremely high killing power. In the hands of players with the corresponding puppetry skill, it can kill people and monsters above its level. It is a fine-grade puppet weapon!]

[Item durability: 1000 (can be repaired)]

[Item strength: Level 2]

[Item flaws: the spirit ore's level and quality are too poor, resulting in the time flow's durability and strength being too low.]

[Blacksmith: Lin Tie]

Chapter 320 - Strings Puppet Show

In the last five minutes of the blacksmith's trial, just when ou Tian thought that no one could shake his first place, a game notification suddenly appeared, shocking all the players, including him.

All the players subconsciously looked at the leaderboard.

[Blacksmith profession change leaderboard (remaining time: 4 minutes 23 seconds)]:

[1st place: Lin Tie (31872 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[2nd place: ou Tian (10864 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[3rd place: Hu Long (2542 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

[4th place: mu ye (2088 points, completed three rounds of the mission)]

.....

All the players were shocked when they saw the points of the first place.

Taking first place with a score three times higher than second place, this kind of surpassing could be described as crushing.

Even Tong Hang, who was fighting the landlord with Boulder and Hydra in the smithing room, widened his eyes in disbelief when he saw the ranking.

At this moment, the game prompt appeared again.

“Server-wide announcement: the blacksmith's trial has officially ended. The first player in the trial, Lin Tie, will receive a purple quality forging hammer, The Glass Hammer, and a purple quality crafting furnace, the flying Star cauldron.”

After the announcement, the “flow of time” style that Lin Tie had created appeared before all the players.

[Suika Tairo: it’s so exquisite. I want to ... Um, I mean, can you make one for me too?]

Roasting Chang ‘e while holding a Jade Rabbit: “this weapon looks more like a work of art. I like it very much (love~).”

[The strongest Xue Li: amazing! 30000 points! That means it’s twice as good as the “heavenly moon blade” with two skills. So this is what it means to be a strong Esper (admiring gaze)]

Crayon Shin-chan said,”although I admire this Lin Tie for being able to create such an exquisite weapon, allow me to ask, other than being a wife ... Cough cough ... What other use does this” flow of time “have?” How could he use it? it wasn’t like he was a robot that couldn’t fight on his own!

A big wolfdog replied Crayon Shinchan: This is art, art, do you understand? art is for appreciation (instant bird ‘s-eye view).

Lin family’s heir: “father, you’re awesome. I knew you’d be first.”(Happy)

.....

The moment the final result was revealed, Lin Tie’s “flow of time” instantly became the focus of discussion among the players. It was even more popular than the “Moonsky blade” forged by ou Tian.

Even ou Tian himself was stunned on the spot. He looked at the delicate puppet in the form of a petite woman with a complicated expression. However, he had to admit that he had lost, and he had lost completely.

“Lin Tie, I will surpass you!” At this moment, ou Tian’s heart was filled with unwillingness, but his fighting spirit had also been ignited.

Although this was a game, ou Tian had sworn in his heart that he would become the best blacksmith because he was the descendant of Ou Yezi!

Ou Tian had already declared war on Lin Tie in his heart.

.....

At this time, on a cliff on the colored glass Coast, there was a white-haired old man sitting. He held a fishing rod in his hand and seemed to be fishing, but his eyes were staring at the other side of the sea, as if he had something on his mind.

A gust of sea wind blew, and his body could not help but sway like a candle in the wind. There was only the air of old age on his body, without the slightest vitality of a living person. He sat there like a statue.

At this moment, the trial rankings appeared.

Out of habit, the old man stretched out his hand to close the notification, but when he saw the appearance of the human-shaped puppet, he was suddenly stunned.

His turbid eyes suddenly lit up, and his lips trembled slightly.

“Year ... Moon ... Flow!”

“Year ... Moon ... Flow!”

As the old man stared at the puppet on the display panel, his emotions gradually became agitated.

“Time flow, hahaha!”

At this moment, Tang MU’s tears flowed down uncontrollably. He reached out to touch the “time flow” on the panel, but his hands went through it.

His memory also returned to that Day 57 years ago.

.....

In November of that year, it was snowing heavily.

According to the local customs, Tang mu, led by his parents, went to the temple on the nearby mountain to burn incense.

As there was a large flow of people on the mountain that day, the path up the mountain was filled with people. The path up the mountain was like a queue, and it took a while before they could go up a few steps.

At that time, Tang mu was only 13 years old. He really couldn't stand this kind of environment and wanted to go back.

However, his parents were more devout and were not affected by Tang mu. They only comforted him but did not leave.

It was already evening when Tang mu and his parents reached the top of the mountain.

While his parents went to the temple Hall to burn incense, the curious Tang mu walked out of the temple through the side door and began to stroll around the mountain.

As a result, he lost his way as he walked. The noise of the tourists around him also faded. At this time, Tang mu was already frightened.

At that time, he panicked and began to run around the back mountain like a headless fly.

It was getting late at night, and heavy snow was still falling from the sky. Tang MU's face was blue from the cold.

Tang mu, who thought he was going to die, was so scared that he cried and ran forward, stumbling.

At this moment, he discovered a small, dilapidated temple. There was a faint flickering flame inside.

At that time, Tang mu had been frozen to death. After standing outside the dilapidated temple for a moment, he boldly walked in.

This step was fate.

Tang mu saw an old man in ragged clothes in the dilapidated temple.

The old man's body was curled up into a ball, sitting in front of a bonfire made of wood. He was holding a woman in his arms, or more accurately, a doll.

The puppet had the appearance of a beautiful woman, so vivid that it seemed to have just been painted. Its expression was lifelike, and its eyes and eyelashes seemed to be hanging with tears, making people feel tender and loving. If one did not look carefully, one would not realize that it was just a puppet.

The old man was very surprised to see Tang mu. When he found that Tang mu was still trembling, he waved his hand and motioned for Tang mu to sit over.

In the beginning, Tang mu seemed very scared. He would only answer when the old man asked him a question.

Seeing Tang MU's fear, the old man smiled and said,"

"Have you seen the strings puppet show?"

Tang mu shook his head in confusion.

When the old man heard this, he picked up the puppet and stood up.

Then, he carried the puppet and started performing in front of the bonfire. The puppet danced under his control. Although it was painted with sad makeup, it was beautiful beyond compare. It was as if there was really such a woman beside the old man, dancing with him, as light as a feather, like a fairy.

The old man's opera was filled with joy, sorrow, tears, and laughter. Tang mu, who was staying with the old man, seemed to have become a bystander. He watched as the puppet followed the rhythm of the old man's hand. Sometimes, it was as if it was flying, sometimes, it was advancing and

retreating. It was like he was in the scene. The illusions around the old man seemed to be cheering for the old man's dance.

What made Tang mu feel even more incredulous was that every time the beautiful puppet's eyes glanced at the old man, it seemed to reveal deep affection and love.

It was Tang MU's first time seeing strings puppet play. He couldn't help but be mesmerized.

That night, Tang mu had a dream. He dreamed that he was also dancing in the snow with a beautiful puppet. Everything was so beautiful.

The next day, at the crack of dawn, the old man woke Tang mu up from his deep sleep and told him how to get to the temple in front of the mountain.

After last night's dream, Tang mu had blurted out that he wanted to learn the strings puppet play.

The old man looked very surprised. He stared at Tang mu for a moment and seemed to see the determination in Tang MU's eyes. The old man sighed, turned around, and went to the foot of the wall. He picked up a big wooden box and handed it to Tang mu.

Tang mu took it and curiously opened the wooden box. He found a lifelike puppet lying inside.

Then, the old man stuffed a book into Tang MU's hands and told him that he was a dying man and could not teach him. If he had the talent, he could just teach him by himself.

Before he left, Tang mu asked the old man what the name of the puppet was.

"The flow of time!" The old man replied with a smile.

.....

After that, Tang mu seemed to have become a different person. He was completely immersed in the strings puppet play.

Tang MU's change made his parents furious. His teacher even tried to talk to him several times, but Tang mu didn't listen to his advice at all.

They had already beaten him, scolded him, and exhausted all their means. In everyone's eyes, Tang mu had become a hopeless person.

When she became an adult, she was even chased out of the house by her parents.

At that time, Tang mu only had a puppet to accompany him.

Even in the future, it would still be the same. He relied on performing strings puppet shows for others for a living, sometimes full and sometimes hungry, living like a homeless man.

This string puppet show would last for a lifetime.

When he was 53 years old, he received news that his father had passed away.

Although he had been driven out of the house, Tang mu still rushed home.

Seeing the arrival of Tang mu in ragged clothes, his relatives all treated him as a beggar and drove him out.

Tang mu ran in again, shouting his name and telling his relatives his identity.

However, the touched feeling she had imagined did not appear. Everyone still looked at him as if he was a stranger, even her mother.

Tang MU's heart ached. He endured the gazes of his relatives and kowtowed in front of his father before he turned and ran out.

The dejected Tang mu thought of the old man at this moment. Then, he went up the mountain with the flow of time and found the broken temple.

At this moment, the ruined temple was filled with cobwebs, and the old man had long disappeared.

That night, it snowed again, just like that night 40 years ago.

The snow was very heavy and Tang mu shivered from the cold. He then found some dry wood and started a fire to keep warm.

In the dancing bonfire, Tang mu looked at the “flow of time” in his arms.

A moment later, he suddenly became angry.””I’ve been down and out for decades, and it’s all because of you. It’s so cold that I can’t even afford to buy clothes, and now I don’t even want to acknowledge my family. Tonight, it’s snowing heavily, and I’m freezing and starving. It’s better to burn it, it can warm up your body!”

How many 40 years could a person have? he had been obsessed for 40 years, and had also been down and out for 40 years. At this time, Tang mu felt that his entire life had been destroyed in the hands of this puppet.

Thinking of this, Tang mu suddenly pushed the “flow of time” into the bonfire.

The fire swept past the puppet’s gorgeous dance sleeve song robe and set the delicate bones carved out of lindelions on fire, making a sizzling sound.

At that moment, the puppet slowly stood up on its own and bowed to Tang mu sorrowfully, as if thanking Tang mu for his 40 years of company. Two lines of tears could be seen falling from the puppet’s eyes. At this moment, it kowtowed to bid farewell.

Looking at the blazing bonfire, Tang mu suddenly burst into tears.

“I have nothing without you ...”

That night, the bonfire did not go out for a long time. It warmed the entire temple and protected Tang mu until the moment when the snow stopped at dawn.

Tang mu also sat in a daze for the whole night. His mind was filled with the images of him dancing with the puppets for the past 40 years. However, at this time, the “flow of time” had long turned into ashes under the burning of the flame.

Her orchid fingers twirled the dust like water, and ten thousand songs blew on the three-foot red platform.

After a long time of sadness, the red part turned to ash.

(Actually, when writing about Lin Tie, Tang MU’s appearance had already been set. This part of Tang MU’s plot was adapted from the plot of “strings play.” Everyone can go and listen to it. It’s a very good ancient song. I strongly recommend it~)

Chapter 321 - -Time Flow

Looking at the “flow of time” on the display panel, Tang mu, who was already past his Prime, was dazed for a moment.

Tang MU’s fingers trembled subconsciously as he recalled the past.

At this moment, a beautiful figure seemed to appear in front of his eyes. She was dancing to the rhythm of his fingers, dancing gently.

Her tears could not help but fall again.

After that night, he had been alone. Because of his old age, there was no job that needed him. In the end, he was arranged to spend the rest of his life in a nursing home by the government.

He had also thought of the flow of time for countless days and nights and regretted his impulsiveness at that time. However, there was no turning back. That burning feeling was loneliness.

Since then, Tang mu had tried countless times to build a new “time flow”, but he could not do it with his ability.

Although Tang mu gave up on this idea in the end, he still insisted on his craftsmanship. He made some small toys and sold them in exchange for some change. Then, he donated all the money to the “craftsmanship heritage funding Association.”

It seemed that doing so could give him a little comfort, because Tang mu felt that perhaps there was a person who was as down and out as he was in need of help somewhere.

Although this amount of money was insignificant, at least he could feel comforted.

Two months ago, Tang mu accidentally found out that he could make money in this game. After a detailed understanding, he spent money to rent a virtual helmet. Since then, he would choose to fish on the colored glass Coast every day, and then put up soul coins for sale, and then donate all the money he got.

At this age, he had long given up on his dreams. After all, he might die one day.

However, at this moment, he saw the “flow of time” that he had been thinking about day and night. He would always cry in his dreams. Tang MU’s mood was undoubtedly excited.

After the dance of the strings in his fantasy ended, Tang mu turned to look at the underworld, then threw the fishing rod and ran away.

After waiting for more than ten years, he really hoped to see the flow of time again.

.....

Northern divergent, underworld.

Lin Tie, who was chatting with Lin nuo, received a friend request.

Lin Tie clicked “confirm” subconsciously, and a dialog box popped up.

“Hello, may I know where you are now?”

“I’m at the fountain in the center of hell? What’s the matter?”

“I’ll be there immediately!”

Lin Tie was a little confused, not knowing what was going on.

“Father, who is it?” Lin nuo asked.

“I’m not sure, he said he’ll be here soon.” Lin Tie shook his head.

“I’m guessing it’s a player who wants to buy the time stream from you. Hehe, dad, how much are you going to sell it for?” Lin nuo’s thoughts started to run wild.

Lin Tie’s eyes widened when he heard this.

“Can’t you be a little more promising? I’ll keep this equipment. After all, it’s the first item I’ve made here, so it’s very memorable.”

As the two of them were chatting, a figure rushed over from a distance and stopped in front of Lin Tie and his son. He started panting.

“Hello, may I know who is Lin Tie?” Tang mu immediately asked.

“It’s me. What’s the matter, Sir?” Lin Tie was a little stunned. He did not expect a white-haired old man to come looking for him.

“Can you let me see the flow of time?” Tang MU’s expression was pleading.

Lin Tie frowned slightly, but he still took out the time flow.

Seeing this, Tang mu hurriedly stepped forward and reached out to touch the time stream. However, he seemed to have thought of something and immediately retracted his hand. However, his expression was full of nostalgia and sadness.

Seeing Tang MU’s expression, Lin Tie was a little surprised. He could not help but ask,”

“My Lord, what’s wrong with you?”

“I ... I had a puppet like this back then. Haha, it’s all in the past, let’s not talk about it.” Tang mu reached out to wipe the tears from the corners of his eyes and laughed.

However, Lin Tie’s expression froze when he heard this.””Sir system, you said you once had one too?”

Tang mu nodded, but his eyes were still fixed on the flow of time.

“My Lord, can you tell me how you obtained the time flow?” Lin Tie asked in a low voice.

Tang mu turned to look at Lin Tie and shook his head.

“It’s all in the past, let’s not talk about it. I’ll just take a look. Thank you!”

After taking another deep look at the flow of time, Tang MU’s eyes were still filled with reluctance. However, he did not have the money to buy expensive purple equipment. He resisted the urge to beg Lin Tie to give him the flow of time and turned around to leave.

Lin Tie quickly stepped forward and stopped Tang mu.”

“My Lord, I’d like to ask, are you a descendant of the Ji Qiao lineage?”

Tang MU’s leaving footsteps suddenly stopped.”You know about trickery?”

How could Tang mu not be familiar with the word “ingenious”? it was because the book that the old man had given him in the old temple was “the profound mysteries of ingenuity.”

When Lin Tie heard this, he already knew that Tang mu was the descendant of the Ji Qiao clan. He quickly opened the photo album and began to search. Then, he showed Tang mu the picture of the [Ji Qiao’s flow of time].

While Tang mu was still in shock, Lin Tie pointed at the bottom line of the page.

[The jiqiao branch has been a benefactor to our Lin clan. If future generations meet them, they will do their best to repay the favor!]

“My Lord, I think I know what you want. This is the rule of our ancestors, so I’ll give you the flow of time!”

“This ... Why is this so?”

Lin Tie laughed. "Back then, our Lin clan's ancestors were in a great crisis. It was all thanks to your jiqiao branch that we were able to survive. Therefore, your jiqiao branch is our Lin clan's benefactor. This is the rule of our ancestors. Furthermore, the smithing manual for the flow of time was given to us by your jiqiao branch. Our Lin clan has only made slight improvements to it. Therefore, no matter what, you deserve the flow of time!"

Tang mu was stunned when he heard that.

At this moment, Lin Tie opened the trading panel with Tang mu and sent time into the trading box."

"Kindness is kindness, and it has to be returned. Although it's an ancestor, it should be passed down to the younger generation. Just like the craftsmanship in my hands, it's also an inheritance. I can't lose it!"

Tang mu was touched. He opened his mouth as if he wanted to refuse, but he couldn't say it.

"Take it, you need her more than I do!" Lin Tie said firmly.

In the end, Tang mu still clicked to confirm the deal.

Looking at the time stream in his inventory, Tang MU's eyes were wet. He had thought of reuniting with her countless times, but he never thought it would be in this form.

After thanking him, Tang mu left, but Lin Tie's eyes were filled with relief.

Seeing this, Lin nuo said gloomily,"

"Father, this is a special purple equipment. It can be sold for a lot of money."

"Money money money money, all you know is money. What's the use of money!" When Lin Tie heard this, he could not help but glare.

“You can buy spirit ores ...” Seeing that his father was about to make a move, Lin nuo’s neck shrank back and he gave up.

“Their bloodline has shown kindness to our ancestor, and we descendants naturally have to return the favor.” Lin Tie spoke again when he saw the gloominess in Lin nuo’s eyes.

“It’s been many years since we were ancestors,” Lin nuo explained in a low voice.

Looking at his son, Lin Tie could not help but sigh,

“Some were born in rich families, while some were born in poor families, so there are often people who say that the world is unfair. But think about it carefully, why do those born in rich families have a higher starting line than others? “It’s like a long-distance relay that’s taken over from generation to generation. The wealth enjoyed by the later generations is the hard work of the ancestors. As craftsmen, since we’ve taken over the relay baton, we have to inherit everything. We can’t forget the roots, or we’ll be letting down our ancestors!”

Lin nuo felt touched when he heard this and immediately nodded his head.

Chapter 322 - Creating A New Class: Puppeteer

Northern divergent.

Next to a cliff on the lapis lazuli Coast, under the bright moonlight, Tang mu held the pigments he bought from The Alchemist players and used a brush to gently draw on his face, embellishing it.

The attire and appearance of the time-flow in his memory were still so clear in his mind.

Under Tang MU's hard work for the past few days, the time flow had changed greatly. Compared to when Lin tiesou had first created it, it had a trace of spirit and became more lifelike.

She had long black hair and a Silver Phoenix crown on her head. She was dressed in a beautiful red dress that swayed gently in the sea breeze. Her posture was beautiful and moving.

After helping time flow fix his brows, Tang mu looked at the "peerless beauty" in front of him, a trace of nostalgia and joy in his eyes.

After staring at her for a moment, Tang mu stepped behind time flow, lifted her long hair, pulled out ten nearly transparent ropes from her back, and tied them to his fingers.

A few days of makeup was all for this moment, to let the flow of time in his memory dance with him.

As Tang MU's fingers trembled, time flow lifted his right hand and his sleeve fell down, revealing his white jade arm. He danced with light steps.

Her black hair was dyed in ink, and her red sleeves fluttered in the wind, making her look like a fairy or a spirit. The spring Moon in the sky opened

a mirror, and the woman under the moon sometimes raised her wrists and lowered her eyebrows, and sometimes gently moved her hands. Her long sleeves fluttered like a dragon painting, and her Jade sleeves blew in the wind, elegant and vigorous.

At this time, Tang mu opened his mouth. His old voice sang a melodious tune.

In Tang MU's tune, the flow of time kept changing, turning, throwing, opening, closing, twisting, turning, and turning. The water flowed like dragons flying and clouds dancing like phoenixes.

While Tang mu was dancing with the flow of time, a heroic spirit in the hall of heroic spirits began to tremble violently.

This immediately caught the attention of Lu Wu and Bei Li.

“Someone is resonating with the spirit. It seems like the inheritance is about to be activated.” Looking at the trembling spirit, Lu Wu asked with some anticipation.

When Bei Li heard this, he squinted his eyes and smiled. Then, he began to analyze.

[Passing of time (early stage ghost Governor)]:

[Information of the spirit: a special spirit born from a doll. It has excellent cultivation talent. It met the Beiqi King while wandering in the Beiqi land. Its memory was awakened. It became loyal to the Beiqi King and claims to have passed away.] I'll never see you again. I hope you take care of yourself and hope that I'll have the honor to dance with you again in the next life.

The hero's spirit trembled more and more violently. Then, it broke free from the restraints of the Hall of Heroes and quickly flew in Liu Li's direction.

.....

The dance under the moon continued. At this time, Tang MU's face was full of smiles.

The greatest regret in his life was the flow of time, his greatest dream was also the flow of time, and his greatest regret was also the flow of time. He had thought that he would die with regrets in this life, but he did not expect that there would be a day when they would meet again and dance together.

As time passed, Tang mu was already panting, but he did not seem to feel tired. It was as if he was making up for his many years of regret.

At this moment, a red ray of light quickly flew over from the direction of the underworld. It then suddenly collided with the time stream, causing it to stop in its tracks. The red ray of light then slowly seeped into the time stream.

At this moment, the game prompt appeared.

[Game prompt: you have obtained the legacy of the heroic spirit, passing of time. The legacy is in progress ...]

Under Tang MU's surprised gaze, time flow's beautiful eyes blinked and turned to look at him. There was a trace of love in her eyes.

At this time, the game prompt sounded in Tang MU's ears again:

[Game prompt: the inheritance has changed and a hidden function has been triggered. Do you want to create a new profession? Puppeteer]

[Puppeteer]:

[Job description: the puppeteers 'best friends and family are the puppets in their hands. They are good at controlling puppets, skill beasts, and other tools to fight with their enemies. They have extremely destructive power. Their only weakness is themselves!]

[Profession advancement: no fixed template, self-exploration required]

[Class characteristics: advanced puppeteers can give spiritual intelligence to their puppets, allowing them to develop basic intelligence]

Looking at the game prompt, Tang mu was stunned for a moment.

In fact, he was not interested in upgrading at all. However, when he saw that the introduction said that high-level puppeteers could give puppets intelligence, Tang mu did not hesitate and clicked “yes.”

[System announcement, congratulations to player Tang mu for creating a new class: [Puppeteer, obtained 500 bound soul coins as a reward!]

After nuclear Hu, another player had created a new class. All the players who were preparing for nine glory were shocked.

The forum was in an uproar. Just as everyone was asking who the God was, a player opened a post and posted a video.

[It should be this old man. The one dancing with him seems to be Lin Tie’s flow of time. I accidentally found it at the beach and thought it was beautiful, so I took a picture.] Get lost! This rabbit does not eat carrots

(Video attached)

This video undoubtedly shocked countless players again.

The dance under the moon was beautiful, especially with the flow of time. Her dancing figure was like a fairy under the bright moonlight, delicate and moving.

Suikua Taro: “Oh my God, we were just discussing how to use the flow of time. I didn’t expect a Big Shot to come out and put it into practice. I’m worshipping you.”

Crayon Shinchan: “what did I say? I said that the flow of time is used to be a wife (arrogant face).”

[The strongest Xue Li: wow, this ancient costume is so beautiful. I want it too (small eyes full of spirit)]

Roasting Chang 'e while holding a Jade Rabbit: "this is really a good wife. I suddenly want one too. Unfortunately, I'm not good enough with my hands."(Funny)

Cat lover: "it's so beautiful. At that time, I thought that the flow of time probably needed to be controlled by puppets. As expected, this player is really good. The dance of the flow of time is very smooth, without a trace of awkwardness (like)"

.....

While the players on the forum were talking about it, Tang mu, who was on the colored glass Coast, was surprised to find that the flow of time seemed to come to life. When he looked at him, his eyes were filled with tears.

Tang mu subconsciously opened the analysis.

[Time flow (level 59)]:

[Item Introduction: a humanoid battle puppet assembled from 32 individual items. Its body can be flexibly changed and reassembled in battle. It has extremely powerful destructive power.] Now that it has been injected with a matching heroic spirit, a huge change has occurred inside. A weak consciousness has been born, and it can be repaired as it grows!

[Item durability: 30000 (can be repaired)]

[Item strength: level 9 (can devour spirit ores to level up)]

[Item characteristic: Soul Devourer (this puppet can level up and grow with the player)]

(Note: in the state of soul devouring, the more experience absorbed by the time stream after killing the monster, the less experience the player will gain. The player can adjust the amount. The maximum experience absorbed by the time stream is 50%, and the same goes for the player who kills the monster.)

[Inheritance skills: [thousand-contraption rope],[half-human, half-shadow], [Starfall flying flower],[thousand soul-splitting]

[Thousand utility chain (special passive)]:

[Skill description: a thin rope with an almost transparent color and extremely high tenacity. Mainly used for puppeteers to control puppets, but also for unexpected attacks. Sharpness Level 6.]

[Half shadow (active)]:

[Skill introduction: use the thousand utility chain to control the puppet and instantly switch positions with the user. Can be used to escape during a battle.]

[Thousand soul rend (special active)]: After activating this skill, the puppet's body will be scattered. It can be used to Dodge skills or attack.

[Starfall petals (Silver Active)]:

[Skill description: temporarily awakens the consciousness of the flow of time. During this period, the puppet will automatically attack and defend, and display its hidden abilities.]

At this time, the time stream looked very lifelike, as if it had come to life. It could be said that the changes were huge, especially when the introduction said that the time stream had gained consciousness. This completely shocked Tang mu.

Looking at the tears at the corner of her eyes, Tang mu suddenly felt that he had seen this look somewhere before.

Suddenly, he thought of that snowy night, the teardrop that time had left in the fire.

At this moment, tears streaked across her cheeks and were about to fall.

This time, Tang mu reached out and took the tear. Then, he raised his hand and wiped the tears from the corner of his eyes.

“We won’t do it again. We won’t be separated in this life!”

Chapter 323 - Suppression From The Authority Dog

After the blacksmith's trial came to an end, the players of Beiqi were faced with a tough challenge.

That was the confrontation with the nine Yao great domain.

The opponent for this battle was too powerful, but the players were prepared to fight to the death.

After that, the players went to the nine Yao great domain a few times to investigate the situation. They discovered that several troops of the nine Yao Army had finished preparing and were now advancing toward Beiqi.

In such a situation, the players discussed most on the forum every day about how to defeat the strong.

Many high-level players had even set up several discussion groups on the forum to study the upcoming war with the nine Yao great domain.

In the end, they came to a conclusion that they should not take the initiative to attack the nine radiance Army at the barren plains. Instead, they should set the battle Point at the Boneyard Southwest of hell.

There were two advantages to doing so. One was that they could extend the battle line of the nine glory Army, which would delay the arrival of their reinforcement troops and supplies.

The second benefit was that Boneyard was very close to underworld, which made it easy for players to return to the battlefield after resurrecting. It could be said that this increased the players' advantage of resurrecting.

Of course, these two advantages were based on the fact that the war was a protracted war. The players were most worried that the nine brilliance

Prefecture Lord would take action directly.

Starlight's other brothers weren't afraid, but the nine radiance official sovereign was a big problem for the players. After all, he was too powerful. Among the northern divergent's player forces, no one could fight him except for bronze guy, whose strength was completely unstable.

The players had also analyzed this point and felt that the chances of the nine radiance official sovereign making a move directly were not high.

Because the main purpose of this war was still to subdue the forces of Beiqi, although the nine radiance official would send out troops, the final subduing would still require the next "Beiqi official," which was one of his brothers.

After all, if it was the nine radiance official who subdued Beiqi and gave his territory to his brother, then his brother would never be able to sit on the throne of Beiqi, because the great emperor of the netherworld would definitely not approve of such an act.

However, even the rest of the brothers felt the same sense of danger, and they knew that this battle would be a long one.

However, all the players were ready!

.....

The great domain of hell, the blue Valley ruins.

Just as the war between Beiqi and Jiuyao was about to break out, the hell server's players in the blue Valley ruins also had many wars.

Other than the battle with the monster forces in the blue Valley ruins, the battle between players had also officially begun.

The reason for the start of this war was not complicated. It was similar to reality, and that was the fight for resources.

On the east side of the blue Valley ruins, the players had discovered a small spirit mine. It could be said that it was rich in Level 1 spirit ores. Although they were not sure how much there was, this news had undoubtedly caused a commotion among the hell server's players.

Spirit ores were of great use to them. It could be said that they were the most important resources besides their ranks and soul coins.

Therefore, the US military immediately gathered a large number of troops and even recruited many players. They killed a Monster Force that resided in the forest mine cave at all costs and occupied the spirit mine.

The US military also expressed that they would take out a portion of spirit ores to thank the players who had helped in the battle.

Originally, all of this was over. After all, the US military was powerful and many civilian organizations were unable to fight against it. They could only leave it as it was.

However, at this time, another civil organization appeared, and they strongly requested the US military to share the spirit mine with all players.

The US military had naturally overbearingly rejected this point.

As a result, this civilian force, which was vulnerable in the eyes of the US military, declared war on them.

What the US military did not expect was that this force was extremely powerful. Although there were not many people, every player in this organization had modified mecha. In terms of individual ability, it could be said that they completely surpassed the US military.

What gave the US military a bigger headache was that this organization was gradually growing in strength. It had recruited a large number of individual players, and its strength could be said to be growing day by day, becoming a threat.

.....

At the square in the ruins North of the blue Valley ruins, the players had piled up scrapped cars around the field like a fence. Although this kind of defense was useless against the powerful monster forces, it at least gave the players some comfort.

The center of the field was filled with all sorts of mechanical parts. The modification pods were all open, and electric sparks flickered inside. Many players were busy modifying their mecha.

Among them, the most eye-catching ones were a giant mecha that was nearly ten meters tall and a close-combat mecha that was shimmering with a blue luster.

“Tesla, how is it?” At this time, Arek, who was standing below, shouted at teslaa, who was busy climbing up the fortress,”

Tesla jumped down from his mech and landed on the ground.

“No, we’re too short on resources. Further strengthening and transformation will require a large number of soul coins to buy the blueprints in the mall. Moreover, we’re too short on spirit ore resources right now.” Tesla looked helpless.

Eric smiled.”We can buy soul coins from the players. Although there aren’t many of them, it’s more than enough to support our transformation. However, we’ll have to get the spirit ores from the military!”

Eric saw the hesitation in Tesla’s eyes, so he smiled and said,”

“This is just a game. The resources here belong to everyone. There’s nothing to feel guilty about being their enemy. If this were real life, I wouldn’t dare to do it either.”

After a moment of silence, teslaa nodded his head vigorously.

At this stage, the only small spirit mine that had been discovered was occupied by the US military. It seemed that there was no other way than to fight for it.

“Don’t worry. It doesn’t matter if we lose. Besides, we might not necessarily lose. Although their military is strong, we have an advantage here that they don’t have!” As he spoke, Eric pointed at his head.

Just as Eric had said, he obviously wouldn’t dare to go against the US military in reality. However, it was different here because this was just a game.

After playing the game, Eric understood why Tesla was so impressed by it. It was because the game contained a lot of hidden technology that didn’t exist in the real world.

That was why Eric and Tesla were both addicted to the game.

As a research fanatic, Eric had encountered a headache while doing research in the game, which was the lack of resources.

Therefore, after the US military occupied the small spirit mine, he was also tempted. Hence, he also set up an organization here, “black light,” with the purpose of fighting against the US military and obtaining more resource points.

Relying on the large number of modification techniques in his hands, Arek quickly attracted a large number of players. He even pulled many combatants in the real world into the game to help him expand his power.

Coupled with the participation of many players who were dissatisfied with the US military’s overbearing methods, the blacklight organization grew and expanded at an extremely fast speed. Although it was not enough to compete with the US military now, it had a certain right to speak.

During this period, they had already broken out in several battles with the US military. Although they had lost miserably in all the large-scale battles, they had basically won all the small-scale battles. They had even plundered many spirit ores from the US military’s transportation of spirit ores.

At this time, the blacklight organization had become a thorn in the eyes of the US military.

However, Eric didn't care about this. After all, this was just a game, and the US military couldn't threaten him. The other players had the same thoughts. They felt that this was just a game, and robbing the military made them feel very excited instead. They didn't feel uneasy at all.

Eric looked around at the researchers who were helping the players modify their mechas and nodded subconsciously. He was very satisfied with the rapid growth of this kind of power.

.....

Late at night.

Lu Wu, who was sleeping soundly, was awakened by the sound of Bei Li knocking on the bowl.

Lu Wu, who had just woken up, was a little confused. He turned around and looked at Bei Li, who was sitting at the head of his bed and still knocking on the bowl.

“It's so late and you're hungry again?”

“No, I just wanted to wake you up and show you something!” Bei Li said mysteriously.

However, Lu Wu looked helpless.”

“What's that? did something happen in the game?”

At this time, Bei Li put down his bowl and chopsticks. Then, he chuckled and swiped his hand. Suddenly, a panel appeared in front of Lu Wu.

Eric (player):

[Gender: Male]

Age: 29

[Player information: the person behind the Jide Technology company, the owner of the highest authority in Jide's underground human experiment. He has shown many extraordinary things since young and has won many science and technology innovation Awards. After graduation, he was recruited by the US military to intern at the military's X experimental base. After a short internship, he resigned from his job and went into seclusion. In fact, he has built his own scientific research laboratory and began to expand in the fields of technology and biology.]

[Player characteristics: extremely high IQ, strong R & D and innovation ability, a rare top talent]

[Player personality: ambitious, stubborn, proud and conceited]

[Player Status: Normal]

.....

Lu Wu, who was originally listless, suddenly perked up after reading Eric's message.

After all, Lu Wu had been unhappy with this Eric for a long time.

“Wu, this is a talent. If a divine weapon is rated as a genius, then he must be a true genius and a useful person. I didn't expect him to become a player. Is this considered walking into a trap?” Bei Li said with a smile.

When Lu Wu heard this, he couldn't help but pout.”

“The divine artifact also said that this guy is very ambitious. Although his soul has been branded, people like him will not be content with their lot.”

Bei Li nodded,”

“But he's already a player. What should we do? Should I obliterate them?”

Hearing Bei Li's words, Lu Wu was also stunned for a moment. After all, he had never killed a player before, so Bei Li's suggestion made Lu Wu hesitate.

After thinking for a moment, Lu Wu suddenly smiled.”

“He’s a genius, after all. It’s fine to suppress him a little!”

.....

At the same time, Arek and Tesla were discussing how to strengthen their technological advantage and defeat the US military on the field.

As he learned more about the game, Eric found that his specialty could be perfectly displayed here. At this time, he was full of confidence and felt that he could definitely be stronger than the US military with his own efforts.

Tesla nodded in agreement with Eric’s opinion.

At this moment, Eric suddenly disappeared from his sight.

Meanwhile, Eric heard the game’s notification.

[Game notification: your account has been banned for three days. You are now forced to go offline!]

Eric was speechless.

Chapter 324 - The Initial Setting Of The Asia Server

This wave of titles caught Eric off guard and he was completely stunned.

In disbelief, he tried to log into the game again, only to find that the notification that his account had been banned for three days still appeared.

This made Eric very angry.

Although his account would only be banned for three days, he didn't even know why his account was banned. Naturally, he was angry and immediately logged into the official forum, wanting to find customer service to argue with him.

The war online's customer service line could be said to be almost decorations. Basically, no players would contact customer service, so it was set in a small corner at the bottom of the official website for Eric to look for it.

After clicking on the customer service button, a dialogue box popped up.

Customer service number N: "Hello, how may I help you?"

Eric: "my account was blocked for no reason. I want to know the reason. Did you guys make a mistake?"

[Customer service number N: checking your account number ...]

[Customer service number N: inquiry completed. No reason for the account to be banned found.]

Eric was even angrier when he heard that the customer service staff couldn't find a reason to close the account.

Eric, "then unseal me?"

Customer service number n, [I'm sorry, I can't.]

Eric asked, "why?"

Customer service number N, [everything is destined. Can't say it. Can't say it (funny)]

Eric was speechless.

Eric, [angry] I'm going to file a complaint against you. What's with your attitude!

Customer service number N: "okay. Thank you for your feedback. I wish you a happy life."

[The chat has been cut off ...]

.....

This was Eric's first time seeing such an arrogant game customer service. He was so angry that he immediately began to look for complaints and account appeal channels on the official campaign website.

However, after a careful search, Eric realized that there was no channel for an account to appeal and unseal the official website. There was not even a channel for complaints, which made Eric completely dumbfounded.

Was the war company so willful? Eric was stunned.

However, Eric was definitely not willing to give up just like that. Now that his subordinate, blacklight, was in the midst of a confrontation with the US military, he was a crucial existence. Although it was only three days, many things could be done in these three days. He had to come online as soon as possible.

As such, Eric placed his last hope on the official forum, hoping that the players' public opinion would help him unseal the game.

He first logged into the game and took a screenshot of the notification of the game's ban. Then, he opened a post in the forum, and it was in the most popular Chinese server forum.

[My account has been blocked for no reason. The official website will not give any explanation. Does anyone know the reason for the block? I hope everyone can help me!]

(Picture attached)

Eric's post immediately caused a sensation on the forum. After all, for more than half a year, there had never been a situation where a player's account was banned. A large wave of onlookers came from various forums, wanting to see what was going on.

Crayon Shinchon: "tsk, tsk, tsk. You're amazing. Op, you've become the first person in the region to have your account sealed. However, I'm curious about what you did to make the monster raid group seal your account."(Funny)

The strongest Xue Li: "op, tell us how you did it so we can avoid it in advance. Thank you (funny)."

[Invincible loneliness: op, did you use external hacks in the game and was detected by the demon Corps? I don't believe you'll be banned for no reason.]

[Roasting Chang 'e while holding a Jade Rabbit: op: it's fun to cheat, it's fun to keep cheating (funny)]

[Scourge flag: op is still asking us why?] Don't you know what's going on? I don't believe that the demon Corps would ban your account for no reason (face-smacking image)

Universe and stars (Europe):"although your account has been banned, this has proven your strength. You can't even enter the game with the help of the script plug-in, but at least you've entered it. Very strong (funny)"

Iron hammer: “if you’re not cheating, it means that you’re spreading that kind of thing in the game ... Well, op, lend me some resources. Then I’ll admit that you’re righteous (funny).”

.....

Eric was so angry that his liver hurt when he saw the players ‘comments.

It could be said that the players were all onlookers and had no intention of helping.

What was even more unbelievable was that his forum mailbox was full after a short while. After playing, he found that it was full of players asking where he could buy hacks, or what he had done to get his account banned. They wanted him to be careful to avoid getting his account banned. There were even a few ZZ players who came to ask for resources.

Eric was so angry that he almost exploded. He immediately cleared all the emails in his mailbox.

Eric suddenly felt a sense of powerlessness when he saw the help requests that were still being pushed up.

After all, the war company was too mysterious. Eric felt that he had no way to start since he couldn’t find anything.

Otherwise, if they dared to treat him like this, Arek would definitely send out his own modified Warriors to let the team behind the scenes know what power was.

Eric opened The Game Capsule and walked out with a gloomy face. He then walked toward his office.

In fact, Eric had checked the situation of The Combat Company before, but all the information about The Combat Company could only come to one conclusion. That was, the person behind The Combat Company was completely blank except for Wu Guoyi, the president of 173, who had

contact with it. Even Wu Guoyi did not know the address of The Combat Company.

Eric wasn't surprised when he first came into contact with the game. After all, the technology in the game was far beyond that of the real world. He had also regarded the conquest company as an underground organization like himself.

However, Eric was still unwilling to give up and decided to investigate the recruitment company thoroughly. He did not believe that he would not be able to find anything. As long as he could find any useful information, he would have a way to take down this underground organization.

This was because he had full confidence in the power he had mastered. This was an extraordinary power that exceeded the understanding of ordinary people.

.....

At this time, Lu Wu naturally saw Eric's complaint post, but he didn't take it seriously.

Although Eric was a rare genius, he was also an unpardonable man.

It was also because of his selfish desires that he built Jed's underground organization and used living people as experimental subjects. Lu Wu, who had a very positive outlook on life, had long been unhappy with him. If he wasn't really a useful person, Lu Wu would have banned him permanently.

Lu Wuqing's permanent ban wasn't as simple as not being able to play games. After all, the souls of all the players were actually controlled by Lu Wu. Even if the players died, their souls still belonged to Lu Wu.

In other words, if he was really permanently banned, his soul would be imprisoned in the divine artifact forever, and he would not even have the chance to be reincarnated. Unless Lu Wu took the initiative to kill him, he would never be able to rise again.

Lu Wu even felt that Eric should thank him. After all, he was too kind.

After closing the forum, Lu Wu turned his attention to Bei Li.

At this time, Bei Li was holding his chin with both hands and thinking about something with a serious expression. However, the slight crystal at the corner of his mouth made Lu Wu seriously suspect that Bei Li might be fantasizing about eating.

“How is it? how’s the new setting of the Asia server coming along?”

When Bei Li heard this, he immediately came back to his senses. He wiped the tears from the corner of his mouth and said seriously,”

“The general direction is almost considered, but the specific implementation will still take some time.”

Lu Wu nodded when he heard that. In fact, Wu Guoyi had already urged him several times to open the Asian server.

The popularity of Conqueror online could be said to be global. A large number of in-game videos were being circulated on various video websites, attracting the attention of many players. Many players in the Asia server could not wait.

However, there was still no news about the opening of the Asian server, causing a large number of players from Japan, South Korea, and other countries to come to the official forum to give feedback, hoping to speed up the opening of the Asian server. They even suggested that since everyone was in Asia, they should just change the central server to the Asian server.

Of course, Lu Wu didn’t have much to think about. Although he didn’t reply, he had already rejected it in his heart.

However, the opening of the Asia and non-servers was inevitable.

Recently, another main reason why Wu Guoyi had been constantly urging Lu Wu to open the server was that a large number of agents had come to find him.

Ever since Bei Li reset Lu Wu's cell phone signal, it could be said that except for a few people, no one else could contact Lu Wu.

Therefore, those game agents who felt that they could gain a lot of benefits from this game could only find Wu Guoyi, hoping to get the agency rights from Lu Wu through Wu Guoyi.

During this period of time, Wu Guoyi and his assistant's phones were exploding with calls. Wu Guoyi had even changed his phone number several times, but he was still harassed by the game agents who had obtained his number through various channels.

Lu Wu felt helpless about Wu Guoyi's complaints. Perhaps in Wu Guoyi's opinion, Lu Wu was not short of money and was only focused on making games, so he had never taken the issue of opening a new server to heart.

However, how could Lu Wu not take it to heart? after all, the more players there were, the stronger the players were, and the more soul coins he could get.

Especially now that he had started to cultivate the "divine treasures of the human body", Lu Wu felt that he was still too short of soul coins. Of course, he hoped that the game could be further developed.

However, the settings of the Asia server had not been perfected, and it was impossible to meet the conditions to activate it. The only problem was the setting of the new growth mode.

What Lu Wu wanted was for each district to have its own growth characteristics.

The central server followed the cultivation growth model of body and spirit as one.

The European server followed the growth model of the main body and the sub-element.

The hell suit's growth model was based on technology.

The three different growth models would naturally create three completely different armies. They could play different roles in the war that might start in the future. Even if they were relatively weak in technology, their future potential was limitless.

As for the growth mode of the Asia server, Bei Li had given two suggestions at this stage.

The first was the “genetic lock” growth mode, which walked the evolutionary path. The experience (soul power) obtained would be used to modify the genes, unlocking the genetic lock step by step and obtaining powerful strength from the genetic feedback.

This path could even allow players to transform into all sorts of non-human forms in the later stages. After all, this was a change in the genetic sequence. Furthermore, Bei Li’s ability could allow players to evolve in this aspect without causing their genes to collapse.

The second plan was to develop the technical flow in the direction of Shikigami and Ninjutsu. This growth model was mainly based on the Japan mythological system as a blueprint.

As for his choice, after some consideration, Lu Wu finally decided to choose the former, which was to walk the path of genetic lock evolution.

After all, the potential of this path was huge. In the later stages, one could still obtain the power to fight against gods, or even kill them. This was something that Bei Li was sure of.

The difference was that the Three Realms (heaven, man, and Yin) that they lived in mainly followed the growth model of body and spirit as one, so this model was more perfect than other models.

The other growth models were not without potential, but the Three Realms where Lu Wu came from had not developed these growth models on a deeper level.

Also, Bei Li had said that she had once seen a battle between a technology-oriented alien civilization and a God, and the final result was the defeat of the God.

Although Lu Wu was very curious about where Bei Li met him.

However, every time Lu Wu asked these questions, Bei Li would always play dumb with a silly look on his face, as if he didn't understand what Lu Wu was saying.

Chapter 325 - The Attack Of The Sunlight

Beiqi, desolate grassland.

The Army led by riyao came from the West and slowly stepped into the northern divergent's territory.

In fact, the nine radiance brothers were also very helpless when they announced that they would start a war with Beiqi.

They had thought that the Beiqi forces would cherish the opportunity given to them, but they didn't expect that Beiqi's hostility toward them had not weakened at all. They were still unwilling to submit.

Hence, the impatient nine radiance brothers finally decided to use force.

At the same time, the jiuyao brothers had decided to let the third-in-line, RI Yao, take over Yue Yao's position as the official sovereign of Beiqi.

Each of the brothers had also sent a group of subordinate troops to join the sunlight Army led by riyao. The purpose was to help riyao successfully become the Beiqi Prefecture Lord.

Before the war started, riyao had also learned about the current scale of Beiqi's forces from the messenger.

According to the Messenger's description, Beiqi's current strength was not strong. The most difficult to deal with were the Warriors of the moonshine's original subordinates, the moonshine Army.

Sunlight could not understand why the moon illumination Army was not willing to return. After all, the moon illumination Army members were very clear about the strength of the nine Yao great domain. There was no chance of winning if they resisted.

Although he believed that this was a sign of the moon glory Army's loyalty to the moon, he did not believe that every general would hold the determination to defend Beiqi with their lives.

While they were thinking about the problem, the Army led by sunlight slowly advanced toward the Boneyard.

.....

At this moment, the players in underworld were making their pre-battle preparations.

All the players placed great importance on this battle. Even many lifestyle players were actively preparing for the battle, and they even provided all kinds of consumable pills and potions at cost price.

After all, the underworld was their home. Naturally, they would not allow their home to be trampled upon by foreign enemies. They wanted to do their part as well.

Among them, the most popular was the explosive pill refined by Alchemist nie Feng.

Countless "failed" attempts at refining potions had allowed nie Feng to accumulate a large number of explosive pills. Originally, players were not interested in these kinds of items. Although they were powerful, they were only one-time consumable items and were expensive. Instead, they felt that the explosive pills produced by nie Feng were of little value.

However, it was different now. The crisis in Beiqi had arrived, and the result of failure was unacceptable to most players. Moreover, nie Feng had only charged the cost price for the pills he sold this time. Therefore, a large number of players came to buy them, and soon, all the explosive pills he had produced during this period of time were purchased.

Even nie Feng was very surprised. He didn't expect that these failed pills could recover the cost.

At the same time, after the opening of the blacksmith profession, the players of Beiqi had already realized the importance of spirit ore.

Now, most of the players had already changed their profession to forger, which caused the price of spirit ores to rise rapidly in Beiqi. In just a few days, it could be said to have doubled.

This made many players regret selling all the spirit ores they had plundered in the auction house, leaving them with no spirit ores that they could use.

This was because spirit ores were simply too useful.

Now, other than helping many players who had just changed their class to become blacksmiths to practice, it had also become an important strategic resource.

Compared to being an Alchemist, which was a life profession that started from scratch, being a blacksmith was completely different. This was because there was a very small number of players who had forging experience in the real world.

This was similar to Lin Tie, ou Tian, and the others.

Although they had yet to fully mature, they could still play a significant role in this battle.

With the many war machine blueprints that they had bought from the merchant shop, they had already started to build war machines.

It wasn't that they couldn't buy war equipment in the merchant shop, but that the large equipment in the merchant shop was extremely expensive, and most players couldn't afford it.

However, if he were to build it himself, it might not be as good as the ones in the market, but the price would only be one-fifth of the market price.

At this moment, the value of a blacksmith had already been reflected.

.....

As the nine radiance Army approached, the news quickly spread among the players.

The players who had been scattered throughout Beiqi's various regions had also returned to underworld, preparing to face the nine radiance Army's attack.

The players had chosen the Boneyard as the final battleground for this battle. This was because fighting in this area would not damage Hell's ecosystem. At the same time, they could also quickly join the battle after they were resurrected. In the players' opinion, this was the most suitable location to fight.

Very quickly, the Army of players had gathered at the entrance of underworld city. They headed towards Boneyard in groups of guilds and parties.

With the war imminent, the players did not feel any pressure at all towards death. The only thing they were worried about was the loss of hell, their home in the 2nd World.

After all, many players already had feelings for this place, and such a situation would never happen.

The two armies faced each other, and after about two hours of marching, they finally met at the Boneyard.

When he saw the arrival of the northern divergent's forces, RI Yao was a little surprised. He had thought that the northern divergent's forces would hole up in underworld city, but he did not expect them to have the courage to take the initiative to attack.

However, a smile appeared on RI Yao's face because this was exactly what he wanted. As long as they were willing to leave the city, he was 100% confident that he would be able to quickly take over underworld.

At this moment, the northern divergent's players had determined expressions on their faces as they walked forward with determined steps.

The dense nine radiance Army in the distance did not make them feel any fear.

When he saw the players approaching him, he sneered and rose into the air.

“Roar!” Ten thousand beasts roared. All the nine glory Army soldiers raised their weapons, trying to overwhelm the players with their aura.

However, the players were still pushing forward without any change in expression.

There was no need for too many words in this battle. When the distance was closed, the rune Warriors in the front row began to glint with red light, and then they began to run.

“Roar! Kill!”

The players used their actions to fight back against the provocation of the nine radiance Army.

“Can’t even withstand a single blow!” Seeing that the players had started to attack, nine radiance sneered and pressed his hand down. Instantly, the roars of wild beasts spread from the front to the back, reverberating through the entire Boneyard.

The nine radiance Army also began to charge at this moment, and the bloody collision between the two armies began.

The players were no longer the young newbies they were before. They were now familiar with the battlefield, more mature, and braver than before.

“Brothers, the underworld is our home. We have too many beautiful memories here. Regardless of whether we win or lose today’s battle, we must not leave behind any regrets in the future!”

“Roar!”

The rune Warriors in the front row collided with the beast cavalry, and the collision spread out like dominoes for dozens of meters.

The runic mech, with its strength gem activated, could not even withstand the impact of the collision. Even the stronger wild beasts were unable to withstand it. They fell to the ground in droves, and the Warriors on their backs were even thrown out.

In the first confrontation, even the powerful nine glory Army did not have the slightest advantage.

However, this was only the beginning. The battle had officially begun.

At this time, the floating sunlight coldly looked down at the Beiqi players.

Although he was surprised that they dared to resist him, he had no doubts about the victory of this war, because he was confident of winning.

He took out a purple necklace from his neck and pulled out a gem from the groove.

Then, his figure flashed and he appeared behind the nine glory Army. He crushed the rhombus-shaped gem in his hand.

The gem immediately began to glow with a dazzling light. The spatial dimension's laws began to take shape, enveloping the nine glory Army and the sunlit Army below. The two of them then disappeared from their original positions and reappeared outside of underworld city.

This was the reason why sunlight was so confident in taking down underworld.

In the players' opinion, choosing Boneyard as the battle Point was very advantageous for them, but this was exactly what sunlight wanted to see.

Because the last time the messenger came to Beiqi to persuade them to surrender, he had already made a teleportation mark outside the city.

Knowing that a war might break out, it was not just the players who planned for this. Sunlight had also made preparations.

This crystal of space law that he had obtained by chance was very precious, but it was insignificant compared to the position of official sovereign. He did not feel any heartache.

Currently, aside from the players on standby for emergencies, there were no other forces stationed in underworld city. Moreover, the majority of the city's players were lifestyle players. In total, there were only 50000 players in the city.

The players who were watching at the city gate were shocked when they saw the sudden arrival of hundreds of thousands of moonshine soldiers. They immediately sounded the alarm at the city gate to warn the players in the city.

Even Lu Wu was caught off guard by the arrival of jiuyao.

“Let's enter the city!”

Looking down at the empty underworld, the joy of victory appeared on his face.

The nine radiance Army roared as they charged into Hades city after receiving sunlight's order. They began to smash the city gates in an attempt to break in.

At this moment, the players who were stationed in the city all gathered at the city gate.

No one had expected nine radiance to suddenly arrive with hundreds of thousands of soldiers. At that moment, their hearts were filled with fear. They were not afraid of death but of the fall of the underworld.

“BOOM!”

At this moment, the city gate was smashed open, and countless nine glory Warriors swarmed in, brandishing their blades.

After taking a quick look at the buildings in underworld city, sunlight nodded in satisfaction. From his perspective, this would be his future

territory, and he was very satisfied with the environment in underworld.

When he saw the players approaching from afar, he stretched out his hand and pressed it forward. At that moment, the space seemed to freeze. The players running in the front were all pressed to the ground by the huge pressure, and they were all thrown off their feet.

“I’ve already won. All I get in return for my dying struggle is death. But I’m very kind, and I can give you a way out.” Looking at the players in front of him, sunlight smiled.

“I’ll give you a way out too. Kneel down and admit your mistake. ”

“Underworld will never be handed over to you!”

“If you have the ability to fight face to face, what’s there to be proud of by playing tricks!”

.....

The players replied stubbornly, but after hearing the players ‘comments, sunlight couldn’t help but laugh.

“I have to say that you’re really naive. I’m now very suspicious of how your power grew and rose. The law of the netherworld is survival of the fittest, don’t you understand? Or are you guys joking with me right now?”

Hearing this, the players were silent.

They were already familiar with the rules of survival in this world, and they knew that what RI Yao said was right.

Looking at the players who could not move in front of him, sunlight suddenly opened his eyes wide. A red light spilled out of his eyes and streaked forward. Instantly, a portion of the players were turned into ashes by the red light.

“I believe that fear will make you yield.” As he spoke, he snapped his fingers, and some players were instantly swept by the red light that was still

circling in the air and turned into ashes.

Chapter 326 - Imitating The Ancestors

(I heard that you guys want to recommend songs. Well, here we go, Rags To Rings)

At this moment, RI Yao did not say anything about surrendering, as if he was enjoying the players 'struggle before their death.

At this moment, countless figures appeared in the underworld once again. They had determined expressions on their faces as they walked toward the sunlight with determined steps.

Upon seeing these figures, riyao was a little surprised. Then, he revealed a teasing expression and snapped his fingers.

“Kill him!”

“Roar!” The beast cavalry roared towards the sky and began to charge towards the NPCs.

Hell was the home of the players, but it was also their home. It was the responsibility of the players to protect their home, and it was also their responsibility.

At this moment, as NPCs, they raised their weapons and charged towards the nine glory Army.

Among them, there were many lifestyle NPCs who were not strong, but they were able to take the lead.

NPCs were different from players. They didn't have a growth mode by killing monsters. Except for a few NPCs who had been enhanced by Lu Wu's soul power, there were very few people who had combat power, but they still chose to resist.

The battle was a one-sided massacre, and a large number of NPCs fell in pools of blood.

When the tens of thousands of players who were pinned to the ground saw this, their eyes turned red. At this moment, they thought of their friends who had passed away.

“F * ck you! I’m angry!”

A figure suddenly shot out from the crowd and slammed into riyao’s body. He was pushed back and plowed a deep ditch in the ground.

At the same time, the pressure on the tens of thousands of players instantly disappeared.

All the players stood up at once and glared at the hundreds of thousands of jiuyao Warriors who were killing the NPCs.

“Today, we will follow the example of ancestor Jiang Yin and fight with the enemy. We swear to defend the city with our lives and fight to the death!” A player’s angry roar sounded in the voice channel.

(Author’s note: back then, the Qing army marched all the way to the South. The eight Banners Army was unstoppable. When they arrived at Jiang Yin County, they announced their surrender and the order to shave their hair. However, the people in the city firmly believed that their bodies and skin belonged to their parents. They were even more unwilling to be slaves and vowed to die not to obey. This infuriated the general of the Qing army, and he led his troops to attack Jiang Yin. However, in the face of the menacing Qing army and the inevitable defeat, none of the people of Jiangyin surrendered. On the first day, there were more than ten thousand casualties, but they defended Jiangyin for 81 days. On the last day, the men in the city continued to fight to the death with the enemy, while the women in the city chose to hang themselves, jump into the river, or the well to commit suicide. Until the end, no one surrendered. It could be said that the people of Jiangyin were ready to die with the enemy from the beginning. The Qing army finally got an empty city. In this battle, they killed three princes and

18 generals of the Qing army even though they were weak. Such a tragic act showed the unyielding spirit of the Han people!

“Kill!” The players charged at the sunlight Army.

Because the enemy was slaughtering their friends and family, the players were completely enraged.

Although the enemy was outnumbered and they were weak, so what!

It wasn't just the players; even the NPCs' eyes were bloodshot. They used their blood and lives to protect hell and defend this land that they called home.

One figure after another fell under the cavalymen of the nine glory soldiers.

NPCs also had their own thoughts and emotions. They also feared death, but at this moment, they still raised their weapons and killed the intruders.

In the sky, copper pendant and sunlight were fighting to the death.

Even though his strength was no match for sunlight, the timid and weak brass pendant still chose to be brave for once.

Although he knew that the NPCs below could be resurrected by Lu Wu.

However, watching them die made Tong Yan feel very uncomfortable. This was because he had long been familiar with these neighbors, and many of them were also very good friends.

The feeling of helplessly watching them fall and not being able to protect them was unbearable for Tong Yan.

Therefore, he made his move. However, luck was always unreliable, and he still did not manage to find a ghost emperor level combat power that could rival riyao.

He was sent flying again and again, and he flapped his wings and clamored to come forward again and again. At this time, Tong Yan was still that scoundrel and ruffian, but there was an additional sense of decisiveness and madness that made him respect him.

This was because the pain of the friends who were dying in battle below was far more intense than the physical pain.

“You’re really annoying!” As he spoke, he reached out and grabbed the neck of the copper pendant that was flying toward him. Then, he suddenly descended and smashed the copper pendant on the ground.

“You are very powerful, how about pledging your allegiance to me?” Looking at the weak copper pendant, RI Yao said with a smile.

“Please don’t use your excretory organ to talk to me. It’s very impolite, thank you ... Cough cough ...” Tong gua said with a weak smile.

“Hmph!” An ominous glint flashed in riyao’s eyes as he picked up the pendant from the ground and punched it in the chest.

The copper pendant was instantly sent flying, but the terrifying power still reverberated within his body. His body gradually cracked in the air, and in the end, it turned into dust.

Seeing bronze greaper’s figure fly past the sky and gradually disappear, the players below were all stunned.

The players both loved and hated bronze pendants. He was one of the NPCs that the players were most familiar with. Although this was a game, the feeling that bronze pendants gave them was not as simple as that of an NPC, but a living life.

At this moment, it was dissipating with the wind ...

The players below did not want to believe that this was true.

“Come back quickly, I’m begging you. Come back quickly!”

“I’m going back to the underworld. The underworld has been lost. Many of my friends have left, and so has the bronze pendant ...”

.....

Their shouts reverberated in the voice channel, completely stunning the players who were fighting the nine radiance Army in Boneyard.

At that moment, all the players ‘eyes turned red.

This was especially true for ye chen, Liu Chan, and the others who were fighting a bloody battle with the enemy.

They were Tong Yan’s best friends. Although they often teased and teased each other, they also treated each other as true friends.

When they heard this news, their hearts twitched, and then endless anger surged in their chests.

They were players and could be resurrected after death.

However, in their eyes, bronze gatherer and the others were different. They were NPCs, and they could not be resurrected after they died.

Just like Lu mo and the fat Chef, after that battle, only the hero’s tomb was left.

When they thought about how they would have to erect the bronze steles for their fallen friends after this battle, they couldn’t accept it for a moment.

“Return to the underworld!” Liu Chan’s eyes were red as he roared in the voice channel.

Although they wanted to tear the enemies in front of them to pieces, they had no other choice now that the underworld had been lost.

However, the nine-radiance Army would not let the player Army leave so easily. They were tightly holding on to the player Army, making it extremely difficult for the players to retreat.

All the players were extremely aggrieved.

This was the greatest crisis they had ever faced. The only time hell had been completely lost was when they were unable to return to protect their home. They had never felt so helpless before.

In the end, Liu Chan gave the order to fight to the death. At the same time, nearly half of the players behind him went back to support and block the advance of nine glory's Army.

However, the journey back would take more than an hour. The players could only pray that their family and friends in hell would survive as they fought with all their might.

Even if they were afraid of battle, even if they ran away, they would not blame them.

Underworld could be rebuilt if it was gone, but if they were gone, they were really gone. The players did not want to build a hero's tomb for them like they had done in the past, crying and setting up monuments for them.

They hated this kind of separation and only hoped that they would live well

...

.....

The underworld.

After killing bronze greaper, sunlight looked at the players who were still struggling with a mocking expression, admiring the helplessness and anger on their faces.

After a while, it seemed that riyao was tired of it and the red light in his eyes started to move again.

At this moment, two figures appeared in the crowd again. They were the nine-headed snake and Boulder.

“It's not over yet, sunlight!”

“We, the soldiers of Beiqi, are not cowards!”

The death of tonggua also gave them a huge shock. It made them think back to the time when they had followed Beiqi King to conquer cities. Back then, it was also like this. One by one, their old friends had died in battle.

However, riyao was a ghost emperor, while Panshi and the nine-headed snake were only ghost kings. They hadn't even reached the peak of the ghost king realm. The difference in strength between them and riyao was too great, so they were still crushed without a doubt.

When rock and the nine-headed snake finally turned into dust and scattered, the players below only had endless hatred in their eyes.

“It's over. Since you don't want to submit, then all of you can die!”

Although riyao had killed rock and the nine-headed snake, his clothes were in tatters and he was in a sorry state.

As the red glow in his eyes swept across the ground, the players were turned into ashes one by one.

However, the players' frightened faces that he wanted to see did not appear. All he saw were eyes filled with hatred and determined faces.

“Sunlight! I won't stop until I get my revenge. If I can't do it in a day, I'll do it in a month. If I can't do it in a month, I'll do it in a year. If I can't, I'll do it for the rest of my life. I'll waste my time with you for the rest of my life. If you don't die, I won't die!”

“Just you wait, just you wait for our revenge. Today, you killed my friends and family, but one day, I'll slaughter your entire clan!”

“Nine-Yao great domain, we will come. We will make you afraid. Today's revenge will come one day!”

.....

As he listened to the words of the players before they died, sunlight's expression was indifferent. He only revealed a happy smile when the last player turned into ashes.

At this moment, there were no longer any hostile forces within or outside of the underworld. He had already taken complete control of the underworld.

In the eyes of Riyao, the forces of Beiqi in the Boneyard were vulnerable. If they didn't submit, they would be destroyed. With the reinforcements of his brothers, there was no doubt that he would become the official sovereign.

After taking a deep breath, RI Yao's body floated in the air and he slowly opened his arms, as if he was feeling something, his face was intoxicated.

How could he not have any thoughts about power? however, with his big brother's suppression, he would never have the possibility of rising to power.

But now, it was different. He was about to become the prefecture Lord. After receiving the great Emperor's blessing, he would obtain great strength and even a bit of authority in the netherworld.

Everything was so beautiful, and at this moment, sunlight seemed to be enjoying it very much.

At this moment, the air suddenly solidified and an evil and destructive aura came from not far away, causing RI Yao's nerves to instantly tighten.

He immediately turned to look in the direction of the destruction aura.

In the area where the Panshi Alchemist Association was located, a black light soared into the sky. Then, the black light spread in all directions at an extremely fast speed, devouring the surrounding buildings and even enveloping all the subordinates he had brought.

“This! Dark-type laws of nature?”

The black light was so fast that even sunlight could not Dodge it.

“BOOM!”

With a deafening sound, the earth trembled as it could not bear the heavy load. The entire sky was instantly shrouded in black light.

Chapter 327 - Underworld Exploded

An hour ago.

The alarm of an enemy invasion rang out in the underworld.

While the players stationed in the city were shocked, they also began to swarm toward the city gate.

At this time, nie Feng was still refining the explosive pill in the Panshi Alchemist Association.

Due to war needs, nie Feng's explosive pills became a very popular strategic item. However, he was only one person, after all, and his energy was limited. At the same time, his strength was not strong, so he could not be of any use in the battle. Therefore, he was entrusted by many guilds to stay here and continuously make explosive pills for the soldiers who participated in the battle.

However, the sudden arrival of the nine glory Army led by sunlight had truly shocked nie Feng, who was still in the midst of refining the pills. However, he was already at the final stage of the furnace of pills, so he still decided to finish refining the pills before going out to check on the situation.

About 20 minutes later, an explosion was heard, and the refining process was completed.

Nie Feng hurriedly kept the three completed explosive pills into his spatial space, then strode out.

The next scene left nie Feng dumbfounded.

It was a one-sided massacre, and a large number of players and NPCs fell under the sharp blades of the nine glory iron cavalry.

Even his professional mentor, rock, had turned into dust under the powerful strength of sunlight.

All of this gave nie Feng too great of a shock.

As he watched the familiar figures fall one by one, nie Feng had the same thought as the players who had died. He only had one thought in his mind, and that was revenge. He wanted to take revenge.

Under such circumstances, nie Feng understood that even if the players who were fighting in Boneyard rushed back, it would be of no use because the situation had already been set.

However, how could he be willing to hand over the underworld just like that?

He gradually clenched his fists. Then, he turned around and returned to the Panshi Alchemist Association. He found the alchemy furnace used by Panshi and poured all the medicinal herbs stored in the space into the furnace.

During this period of time, nie Feng had comprehended a principle in alchemy. The higher the grade of the medicinal ingredients, the stronger the medicinal effects. And the stronger the medicinal effects, the stronger the explosive power.

With his strength, he was no match for sunlight at all. He could only rely on these medicinal herbs.

There was a total of more than 40000 medicinal herbs. These medicinal herbs were stored in his place by many guilds to make the explosive pills. However, nie Feng could not care about that. Right now, he only wanted to die together with the sun glory Army.

After all the NPCs died, Nie Feng no longer had any concerns. He didn't have to worry about the explosion hurting the innocent. He was completely focused on refining the potion.

At this moment, the anger in Nie Feng's heart was burning like the fire in the medicine furnace.

What Nie Feng didn't notice was that while his emotions were fluctuating violently, the traces of the laws of darkness in his body gradually became clear. It continuously absorbed the power of darkness into the furnace, corroding the medicinal herbs that were liquifying in the flames.

After more than 20 minutes of refining, the medicine furnace couldn't bear the burden and cracks appeared. All kinds of medicinal effects were in conflict.

Nie Feng's eyes were bloodshot as he controlled the fusion of the medicinal liquid. However, with his ability, he simply couldn't find the balance point of the fusion of 40,000 medicinal herbs.

The conflict between the medicinal liquids became more and more intense, and more and more law of darkness poured in. When everything went out of control, even Nie Feng thought that he had failed.

The medicine stove exploded.

With the support of the laws of darkness, the power produced by the conflict between the medicinal herbs continued to rise, and it was filled with a destructive aura.

The scorching energy instantly vaporized everything in the surroundings, including Nie Feng, who was standing in front of the medicine stove. He couldn't resist the erosion of this destructive force and was instantly turned into fine powder.

As this power was dissipating, it was also constantly absorbing the power of the laws of darkness in the surroundings, and the power accumulated inside was getting larger and larger.

This gave Lu Wu a big shock.

After the underworld was destroyed, although Lu Wu felt that it was a pity, he didn't have any worries.

At the very least, players wouldn't die, and neither would bronze pendant and the others. The loss of underworld would only be temporary. It would return to the hands of players sooner or later.

However, the destructive force in the Panshi Alchemist Association had frightened him because the force was still expanding. It had already caused a crack in the space inside the Panshi Alchemist Association and it could explode at any time.

Lu Wu didn't even have time to check the reason. He quickly put several important buildings built with soul coins into the divine artifact.

It was also at this moment that the expanding destructive force tore the space inside the Panshi Alchemist Association. The terrifying energy instantly exploded.

The power of the laws of darkness was too great. In the blink of an eye, all the buildings in hell were devoured by the black light. They disappeared in an instant. Even the Warriors under the sunbeams were not able to escape this disaster. They did not even know what had happened before they were wiped out by the black light.

When the dazzling black light slowly dissipated, a black mushroom cloud rose above hell, and the earth trembled violently.

However, the shock wave of the explosion once again spread out in all directions, extending the scope of the destruction.

This was the power of the laws of darkness, the power of heaven and earth that only gods could master.

Even nie Feng did not know that the law of darkness in his body would undergo such a magical change when he was in despair and anger.

However, this power had completely lost control.

BOOM!

With the area of the explosion as the center, the ground began to collapse, and the pothole in the central area continued to expand.

The entire underworld was like a divine Kingdom that had fallen into the abyss, slowly disintegrating.

The aftermath of the explosion lasted for more than 10 minutes. By the time the dark energy dissipated, hell had already disappeared.

All that was left was a circular crater. It could be said that the entire underworld had been completely wiped out by the explosion of the laws of darkness.

Lu Wu was completely dumbfounded by this scene. Bei Li, who was standing beside him, also had his eyes wide open. He even forgot to lick the ice cream in his hand as he fell into a state of shock.

At this moment, Lu Wu's mood was extremely complicated. He didn't know what to say, and he didn't even want to talk at all.

Even if hell had fallen into the hands of sunlight, it would definitely be taken back by the players who grew rapidly, but now it had been blown up into nothing ... Gone ... Not even a speck of dust was left ...

“Are you angry?” Bei Li seemed to have recovered from his shock. He stuck out his tongue and licked the ice cream.

Lu Wu was speechless.

Lu Wu was so angry that he couldn't speak, because he knew that he had lost a large number of soul coins, a large number of soul coins for construction.

Even though the main buildings such as the skills Pavilion and Hall of Heroes had been stored in the medium, he had still lost more than ten

million soul coins in the explosion.

Lu Wuxin was bleeding. He even wanted to punch nie Feng's head.

He didn't expect this gentle-looking player to be so ruthless, creating a nuclear weapon to take the enemy down with him.

Lu Wu really wanted to give nie Feng a permanent title for his courage.

Looking at the silent Lu Wu, Bei Li "si Yi" licked his ice cream and said,"

"Calm down, calm down!"

When Lu Wu heard this, he couldn't calm down even more. This kind of pain couldn't be shared and he could only bear it alone. It was too painful.

So, he reached out and snatched the ice cream from Bei Li's hands. He took a big bite, then looked at the dumbfounded Bei Li and calmly said,"

"Calm down, calm down!"

"Sharing pain can really reduce pain," Lu Wuxin thought to himself, so he took another bite.

Bei Li's little face gradually turned red, then he jumped up and hit Lu Wu's chest hard with his head."

"I'm going to kill you!"

Chapter 328 - Unlocking The Mission

At this time, Lu Wu and Bei Li both felt very heartbroken.

Lu Wu's heart ached because underworld had exploded. Although he had enough money to rebuild it, he still felt heartache.

Bei Li's heart ached because the ice cream had been taken away. He couldn't eat it anymore.

But the underworld had already exploded, what else could he do? Lu Wu's liver hurt ...

But the ice cream was already eaten. What else could they do? Bei Li's stomach hurt ...

In the game, all the players who had rushed back from Boneyard saw a black mushroom cloud rising and spreading in the air from a distance, and their hearts tightened.

Thinking that sunlight was destroying underworld, the players immediately sped up their return.

However, when the players arrived in hell, they were all dumbfounded. There was no hell at all. There was only a huge crater in the ground, and not even a speck of hell was left.

All the players were speechless.

The players who saw this had extremely complicated feelings.

“There's someone here!”

At this moment, a sharp-eyed person noticed a figure curled up on the ground in the crater, and his body was still trembling.

Seeing this, the players all jumped into the crater and approached the figure.

When the players came to the figure, they couldn't recognize who the bloodied figure was, so they all activated their analysis ability.

[Sunlight (early stage ghost emperor)]:

[Character information: ranked third among the nine brothers of the nine Yao great domain. In charge of the West of the nine Yao great domain's qiusai Ridge, subordinate to the sun glory Army.]

[Character characteristics: cautious, intelligent]

[Character status: near death (deteriorating), dark energy corrosion (deteriorating), 80% of body destroyed, irreparable!]

.....

At this time, the body of RI Yao, who was lying on the ground, was trembling uncontrollably. Countless black mist could be seen spreading and spreading on the surface of his body, constantly eroding it.

The players' arrival had alarmed him. He turned his head weakly to look at the players who had gathered around him. His lips trembled as if he wanted to say something, but he could not make a sound. Black blood flowed out of the corner of his mouth.

Sunlight had never thought that this Northern divergent would be so ruthless. They had actually hidden such a terrifying law of darkness trap to ambush him and even destroyed the entire city for this.

Riyao felt that he had miscalculated.

This raid on underworld had been carefully planned by him. Even if the players did not leave the city, he would pretend that he was no match for

them, or use other methods to lure the players out of the city to fight. Then, he would use the space crystal to raid the city and take over underworld.

So when the players went out of the city to fight, he was very happy because he felt that he had won.

However, the outcome was completely out of his expectations. From what he could see, he had also fallen for the same trick. Perhaps the players had been waiting for him to enter the city, or perhaps they had already planned to use the entire underworld in exchange for his life.

How ruthless!

RI Yao stared at the players around him and wanted to say something, but he couldn't help but vomit blood again.

The black blood dripped on the ground, making a sizzling sound of corrosion.

“Riyao, you're so ruthless!” After seeing the message from sunlight, the players were all furious. Although they did not know why he was so heavily injured, they believed that he was the main culprit behind the destruction of hell.

Hence, the angry players began to attack sunlight.

With sunlight as the center, the players formed a large circle and madly threw skills at him to vent their anger.

Under the players' frenzied attacks, sunlight was getting weaker and weaker.

If he was at his peak, he wouldn't be afraid of these players. However, the law of darkness was constantly eroding his body, and he couldn't resist at all.

The power that was originally used to repair the body was also thrown into disorder by the players' attacks, increasing the damage of the dark power.

As he coughed out more and more black blood, the state of the sunlit room became weaker and weaker. The red light in his pupils slowly dissipated until it was extinguished.

How ruthless!

This was the last thought in riyao's mind before he died.

He was originally very confident in this battle at Beiqi, but he didn't expect it to end in this way ...

The moment he died, a white light appeared around the players around him.

Everyone level up!

However, this wasn't what the players wanted. Underworld had already disappeared, and their homes were gone.

Even the death of sunlight was not enough to ease the anger in their hearts. Hence, they changed their direction and charged towards the burial land, wanting to continue fighting with the nine glory Army to vent their anger.

This battle lasted for more than half a day. Although it ended with the players being completely annihilated, the nine glory Army also paid a heavy price and lost nearly one-fifth of their forces.

In particular, the death of sunlight had caused the morale of the nine glory Army to fall. In the end, they did not station any troops in Beiqi but chose to return to nine glory.

After all, the purpose of this battle was to ensure that sunlight could successfully become the official sovereign. However, now that sunlight was dead, there was no point in them staying here. After a discussion among the ghost kings of the nine radiance Army, they finally decided to return to the nine radiance great domain to report the situation.

.....

After the battle ended, a post on the forum was suddenly pushed to the top.

[Please let your lost friends return. We don't want this kind of separation!]
[Op: lonely and invincible]

There were countless players who followed this post. The most heartbreaking part of this battle was not the disappearance of underworld, but the death of their NPC friends.

The reason why underworld was called home by players was inextricably linked to the existence of their NPC friends. Underworld could be rebuilt if it was gone, but they did not want their friends to leave just like that.

Perhaps new NPCs would pick them up after they died, but the players couldn't accept that because it meant that they were really dead and would never appear again.

This post was pushed to the main page of the official website by the players. Many players even used a pleading tone, hoping that the battle behind the scenes team could revive these friends.

After seeing this post, Lu Wu couldn't help but be moved. He also understood what the players were thinking because bronze pendants really existed.

Although only a few people knew this, the NPCs 'personalities and actions made the players feel that they were alive, not rigid artificial intelligence virtual humans.

However, although Lu Wu could easily resurrect bronze pendant and the others, Lu Wu wouldn't do it because he wouldn't cherish things that were too easy to get.

However, he would create an opportunity for the players to work hard.

So, when the players came online again, Lu Wu's mission appeared.

[Unlocked mission: returning friends (all servers)]:

[Mission description: enemies are invading. Underworld's NPCs fight back with all their might and engage in a battle with the enemy.] However, the

enemy was too powerful. In the end, they were unable to resist the merciless trampling of the enemy cavalry and died defending the city. Under the call of all the players, the “returning friends” mission was activated at this moment, and their path of resurrection was unlocked by unlocking the mission.

[Mission objective: kill the enemy to obtain resurrection points. Each nine glory Army soldier is worth 1 point. Ghost Governor (1000 – 3000 points), ghost king (5000 – 32000 points), Starlight (100000 points). Resurrect one NPC randomly for every 10000 points.]

[Resurrected NPCs: none (3789 in total)]

This was the first time that a region-wide unlocking mission had appeared in the game.

Although it was difficult, the players were very happy. The dark clouds in their hearts had also dispersed with the appearance of this mission.

In the players’ eyes, as long as they could revive, it was better than anything else.

Forum:

The strongest Xue Li: “I’m so happy~in the future, let’s work together to kill the enemy and let our friends resurrect as soon as possible. All the best!”

[Roasting Chang ‘e while holding a Jade Rabbit: it’s better to have hope than anything else. I’ll focus on grinding in the nine Yao great domain in the future. I’m going to kill to my heart’s content (happy!)]

[Suika Tairo: sigh, I don’t have a home anymore. I’m going online again to the nine-Yao great domain to vent my anger. I’m going to save more points to revive my friends.]

.....

The players on the forum encouraged each other and were full of confidence. They stared fiercely at the nine Yao great domain, preparing for their counterattack.

However, someone on the forum raised a question.

[Crayon Shinchan: haven't you guys realized a problem?] How did the underworld disappear? if it was destroyed by the sunlight, why was the sunlight so severely injured? "But if it wasn't for sunlight, the players 'strongest forces are rock and Hydra. Many players saw them killed by sunlight. Right now, I'm still very confused as to why hell exploded and why sunlight was heavily injured!

[Disorder splitting wind hammer: I was in hell at that time. I personally witnessed the death of brass hook, Boulder, and the Hydra. However, sunlight wasn't injured at all. Even at the moment of my death, I didn't see any powerful individuals appear to help. I'm also very confused. Can someone explain?]

[Winter Assault: I was one of the last few to die, and I didn't see any other forces appear at the time (confused)]

[Death ray: I'm dumbfounded by what you've said. I've always thought that the destruction of hell was related to the sunlit Empire. But now that I think about it, something doesn't seem right either (dumbfounded face).]

While the players were discussing, nie Feng, who was reading the post, was so scared that he broke out in a cold sweat.

After knowing that the NPCs could be resurrected, the anger in nie Feng's heart had already subsided. What was left was only fear.

He didn't know if he would become The Public Enemy of the players like Hu He did if he were to say that he was the one who blew up underworld. At this moment, his face was pale with fear.

After all, nie Feng himself did not expect the power of that explosion to be so terrifying.

However, if he didn't come clean, nie Feng felt that he would be done for. Because those 40000 herbs were given to him by other guilds to make explosive pills. They didn't belong to him at all.

However, nie Feng felt that even if he sold himself, he wouldn't be able to pay back the small change.

For a moment, nie Feng was caught in a mental struggle.

Confess! Concealment!

Two thoughts swirled in his mind.

At this moment, a message popped up in his friend list. Nie Feng subconsciously opened the message list and several chat boxes appeared.

Chen Ziyu: "wind, how many explosive pills do you have now? I'm about to lead a group to sweep the nine Yao great domain."(Smile)

[Lu Zhan: boss Shao, restocking!] Restocking! I have to say, your explosive balls are really good, how many more do you have (funny)

[Ye Xue 'er: boss Shao, give me all the goods you have. I need them urgently. The other guilds can wait for a while. (Smile)]

Li Xiao: "wind, why don't you just join our guild? I can buy all of your goods by myself, and I can also provide you with a large number of medicinal herbs. Oh right, how many more goods do you have? don't sell them all, leave some for me (funny)."

.....

Looking at the inquiries of the Guild leaders in the chat box, nie Feng's forehead was covered in cold sweat.

Now that all 40000 medicinal herbs were gone, even if he had the energy to continue refining, he did not have the money to buy so many medicinal herbs.

At this moment, nie Feng was so aggrieved that he was on the verge of tears

...

Chapter 329 - No More Weaknesses

After the explosion of underworld, Lu Wu did not start the restoration work of underworld directly.

Lu Wu had also carefully considered this.

After all, the crisis of the nine Yao great domain's invasion had yet to be resolved. The difference in strength was obvious. It would be easy to rebuild underworld, but it would be far too difficult to defend it. It was very likely that the nine Yao great domain would invade the underworld again the next time it attacked.

Therefore, Lu Wu simply activated the random resurrection mode of the hell server for the players. Although this would not unite the strength of the players, it would make the players invulnerable.

Moreover, Lu Wu also gave the players hope by opening an ultimate mission, which was that after the players took over the nine Yao great domain, underworld would officially begin its restoration.

The quest to repair hell and the quest to revive the NPCs excited the players. If they won the war against the nine Yao great domain, they would get back everything they had lost. Therefore, the players were very serious about taking over the nine Yao great domain.

Moreover, other than taking back everything they had lost, they could also reap great benefits from this war.

In addition to the soul coins, the spirit ores in the nine Yao great domain were also coveted by the Beiqi players.

At this stage, the class-change for blacksmiths had been fully activated, and spirit ores had become a consumable item that was even rarer than spirit materials. Therefore, taking over the nine Yao great domain would be of great help to the development of the players.

Hatred and profit were the driving forces for players to fight against the nine-Yao great domain.

In order to encourage the players, Lu Wu also opened the team resurrection point leaderboard and explained that after the end of this mission, the top 10000 teams would be rewarded with a special title.

The destruction of underworld and the death of the NPCs had given the players no more worries.

At this moment, the fourth scourge Army's crazy side was once again revealed. In small teams, they began to launch crazy attacks on the nine-Yao great domain 24 hours a day.

In the southern region of the nine Yao great domain, Gu Yu was leading the myth Guild to launch a sneak attack on a frontline stronghold of the nine Yao Army.

Although they did not have any advantage in numbers, the members of the myth were well-coordinated and their professions complemented each other. They also put a lot of pressure on the nine glory Army soldiers stationed in this stronghold. Even if they could retreat for a while, the 1000-man team would arrive again in a few hours, making them suffer unspeakable pain. As more and more soldiers died, the stronghold was slowly being devoured ...

At the base of the seething Valley in the West of the nine Yao great domain, two figures were wandering around the base like ghosts. Every time they found an opportunity to attack, inky and youzi would jump out from the shadows and give the enemy a fatal blow.

Although the deaths of the soldiers had alarmed the garrison in the encampment, even the few ghost Governor commanders in the encampment had no countermeasures against youzi and inky's flawless assassinations. They couldn't find any trace of the assassins at all, and could only hide in the encampment's defensive circle ...

At the Western border of the nine Yao great domain, ao Jian wielded Nine Swords by himself. With him as the center, the sharp sword Qi created a storm of blades. With such a violent attack method, he continued to reap the lives of his enemies, killing all the members of the observation team who were stationed at the Western border.

In the hills to the East of the nine Yao great domain, Tang mu was dancing with the flow of time under the siege of the soldiers of the material escort team, constantly reaping the lives of the enemies in such a gorgeous way.

Although it was a massacre, there was no sense of blood. The blood of the enemy was like beautiful flowers blooming at this moment, giving their dance their own blessing.

The ten-man supply escort team did not last long before they were all killed by the gorgeous attack.

Looking at the box of Spirit ores, Tang MU's face revealed a smile. This was because his time flow also required the support of spirit ores to level up. This was what he needed the most besides experience.

The other seven, ye Xue 'er, Chen Ziyu, Liu Chan, and many other players were all swearing to the nine Yao great domain that their fourth calamity was coming!

.....

Nine Yao great domain, xuantian Pavilion.

It was still the same familiar scene, but two of the seats had lost their owners.

The remaining seven brothers were all very silent.

The death of riyao was a huge blow to them.

Originally, in their opinion, with the strength of the early stage of the ghost emperor riyao, coupled with the reinforcements they had sent, it could be said that it was more than enough to take down Beiqi. However, the

outcome was beyond their expectations. Although they won, the price they paid was too heavy.

They had endured for tens of thousands of years, but in the past few months, two of their brothers had actually left. They were clearly unable to accept this fact.

“I really want to know how third brother died. With his strength, even if he encountered an enemy he couldn’t fight against, he should have no problem escaping!” Starshine asked with a gloomy face as his gaze swept across the few brothers present.

“I’ve asked the Vice commander leading the troops. No other forces appeared in the battle with Beiqi this time. Moreover, if a strong enemy really did appear, why are the soldiers fine and only third brother dead?” Flame’s eyes flickered with anger as he spoke in a deep voice.

“Only lie Shan, and only he has the strength to kill third brother!” Jin Yao gritted his teeth and said.

.....

Listening to his brothers ‘analysis, Starshine suddenly snorted.”

“It can’t be lie Shan. Based on my understanding of lie Shan, if it was really him, how could he have only killed riyao? with his character, he would definitely have killed all of our nine radiance’s troops. There must be other reasons!”

“The Vice commander of this expedition mentioned that the entire underworld had been reduced to ruins in this battle. At that time, third brother had led a portion of the soldiers to launch a surprise attack on underworld. Everything had logically gone smoothly. Along the way, Beiqi’s forces had also chosen to retreat because of the problem of underworld’s defeat. However, this is where the problem lies. Why was underworld, which was supposed to be taken down by third brother, suddenly destroyed? because all of the soldiers who went to underworld with third brother were killed, we have no way of knowing what happened

in underworld!” Shui Yao, who had been silent all this time, began to analyze.

“Could it be that other than the cracked mountain, there are also powerful guardians hidden in Beiqi?”

“It’s impossible for it to be a Guardian. You have to understand that even if a Guardian like lie Shan were to attack, it’s impossible for him to destroy the entire underworld. It should be someone else.”

Starshine’s words made the brothers fall into silence again.

That’s right. If it was a Guardian who helped Beiqi’s forces resist the foreign enemies, then why did it destroy underworld? but if it wasn’t an existence who helped Beiqi resist the foreign enemies, then why did it kill sunlight?

Sunlight’s strength had already reached the ghost emperor realm. An enemy who could kill him must be extremely powerful. The jiuyao brothers felt that they had never offended such a terrifying existence.

Even when lie Shan was still around, they had chosen to be on good terms with him instead of being his enemy.

In the netherworld, they had reached the peak of power step by step, and they knew very well how to seek benefits and avoid risks.

All the problems seemed extremely contradictory. Like the players, the nine radiance brothers felt that something was wrong the more they thought about it, but they could not figure out the reason.

In the end, the star brilliance Prefecture Lord couldn’t sit still anymore and decided to personally go and investigate. At the same time, he asked his brothers to prepare the Army and set off for Beiqi after he returned.

At the current stage, the North divergent’s forces were constantly harassing them, and they couldn’t bear it anymore. Since this battle had already been

fought, they had to be more thorough. The Starlight Prefecture Lord had already made preparations to personally lead the Army to attack.

After giving his orders, the Starlight Palace Lord flew out of the xuantian Pavilion and headed straight for Beiqi.

Riyao's death was too strange. Before attacking Beiqi, Starshine felt that it was better for him to figure out the situation to avoid any unexpected situations that he couldn't deal with.

After a few hours of flight, Starshine's figure appeared in the sky above Hades.

Looking at the huge crater below, Starshine's falling body froze because he felt a law aura.

This was the law of darkness!

Although it was already very thin, Starshine could still detect it in an instant. Moreover, the aura of the dark Law was coming from the crater below.

After looking at the crater in silence for a long time, Starshine's figure flashed, and he turned around and flew towards the nine Yao great domain.

At this moment, Starshine had a guess that the death of Dayao might be related to the gods of the netherworld.

The nomological power of darkness was clearly not something that could be fully mastered by ghost emperors like them. However, the place where he died still had the faint aura of the dark energy after the explosion. All of this made Starshine suspicious.

However, Starshine was sure that he had never offended a God-level powerhouse before. There was no need to doubt this. After all, how could he still be alive after offending a God?

Thus, Starshine's guess was that his death had something to do with a Yin God who had accidentally passed by hell. For some reason, Starshine had

angered this God who had mastered the law of darkness, so he had wiped out the entire hell.

There was one more thing that could prove this conclusion, and that was that moonlight had successfully become the Beiqi Prefecture Lord.

If Beiqi really had such a powerful Guardian in the dark, why didn't he take action when yueyao became the official sovereign?

After having this guess, Starshine's mood became extremely complicated, and the strong desire to avenge riyao's death gradually faded.

Even though riyao was his brother, they had no chance of winning against the yin God even if the entire nine Yao great domain joined forces. This was not revenge, but death.

While he was thinking, the Starlight's flying speed became faster and faster.

After returning to xuantian Pavilion, Starshine told his brothers about his guess.

The brothers' reaction was the same as Starshine's. They fell into silence because they all clearly understood that it was too unrealistic to seek revenge on the gods of the netherworld. They simply couldn't do it.

"Big brother, what about Beiqi?" Huo Yao could not help but ask.

"The yin God might just be passing by, but he definitely can't be Beiqi's Guardian. Otherwise, yueyao wouldn't have been able to become the official sovereign so easily. So, everything went on as usual, and we sent our troops to take Beiqi!"

Hearing Starshine's words, the remaining six brothers nodded their heads hard. They only had one thought now, and that was to take over Beiqi and use the blood of the people of Beiqi to comfort their two brothers who had passed away.

Although all of this might not have anything to do with the forces of Beiqi, the moonlight and the sunlight had both died to become the Beiqi

Prefecture Lord. At this moment, Beiqi had already become a thorn in the nine radiance brothers' side.

After that, the brothers each left and began to mobilize their own troops, preparing to send troops to Beiqi.

The news that the nine Yao great domain was preparing for another invasion soon spread among the players, but they didn't respond to the possible invasion.

Now that underworld had been lost, the players did not care if the nine radiance Army would come or not. What they needed to do was to use their advantage to slowly whittle down the nine radiance Army's strength and slowly build up their advantage until they were strong enough to devour the nine radiance Army in one go.

Therefore, when the nine radiance Army once again arrived at Beiqi, they discovered that no force in the entire Beiqi had come to stop them.

Meanwhile, the players took advantage of the fact that the nine Yao great domain's defenses were weak to launch a frenzied offensive.

Chapter 330 - The Heretic King'S Experiment

While the players of Beiqi and the nine Yao great domain were engaged in a fierce battle, the blue Void great domain in the North was also in an intense battle.

At this time, in the demon area at the center of the blue Void region, the battle between the yuanxu Army and the evil king Army had just come to an end. Both armies had begun to retreat.

However, the heretic King, who was leading the Army in the battle this time, did not return to the ruins where he had been stationed. Instead, he followed the players straight to the hidden Dragon Village.

During this period, they had fought many battles with the yuanxu Army. At this time, evil king was more and more satisfied with the players. He was proud to have such a fearless Army.

It was also because of the players that the yuanxu Army failed time and time again. It could be said that the player clans were already famous in the blue Void region, and their fearless fighting style made many of the yuanxu Army's soldiers shiver.

Even though he was very satisfied with the player clans that were loyal to him, the more he came into contact with the players, the more he realized that there was something unusual about the player clans.

He clearly remembered that Li Xing had told him before that the innate characteristic of the players 'clans was the ability to resurrect three times at the altar.

Although evil king was surprised by such a strange ability, he did not doubt it. Furthermore, he had studied the players 'resurrection altars before, but he

could not find anything special about them.

However, after a few months, Xie Wang realized that there was something strange about the player clans.

Even though he did not count the numbers, evil king felt that there were more and more clan members ...

He had thought it was an illusion, until one day he really used his divine sense to count it ...

On the first day, there were 30000 more players in the player clans ...

The next day, there were 50000 more players in the player clans ...

On the third day, there were 30000 more players in the player clans ...

What was even more outrageous was that after a huge battle with the yuanxu Army, not only did none of the players in the player clans lose their members the next day, but there were nearly 500000 more players. (That day, there was an increase in the number of new players due to 173 company's publicity.)

Evil king was completely dumbfounded. Why were there more and more players? what was going on?

If it was because of the players 'clans' fast reproduction rate, evil king could understand it. However, it could not be that fast. There were less than 9 million players, but there were 500000 more in one night!

As a result, Xie Wang, who had realized that something was amiss, was prepared to go to Hidden Dragon Village to take a look at the situation after the battle was over. He wanted to find out what was going on in this Strange Matter.

From Li Xing's words, evil king learned that the players 'resurrection time after death was three hours. Hence, he hid in the dark and began to observe the situation of the players in Hidden Dragon Village.

In fact, heretic King trusted the player clans very much. The player clans had proven themselves in countless battles with the yuanxu Army and won his respect.

He was the evil king, the embodiment of the evil thoughts of an evil god. He did not have complicated emotions, and his understanding of many things was actually very simple and direct. However, the players' hot-blooded and fearless way of fighting had earned heretic King's attention, and they had gradually developed feelings for each other through their interactions.

This time, he was only investigating the player clans because of heretic King's curiosity.

He had a portion of the evil God's memory fragments in his mind. Although they were not complete, it allowed evil king to understand the formation and operating laws of the netherworld more than many people.

That was why evil king felt that it was unbelievable that such a mystical player clan existed. He even felt that it was against some of the laws of the netherworld.

For example, his soul power would not dissipate after death, or he would be reborn in another place after death.

In order to find out the reason, Xie Wang had hidden himself in Hidden Dragon Village for a day and a night. After doing some calculations, he discovered that ...

There were more players now!

After all, they had just experienced a great battle with the yuanxu Army in the Moyu yesterday!

Although the players had three chances to revive, they had been through so many wars that they should have been dead by now. How could there still be so many of them?

Xie Wang was completely dumbfounded.

Driven by his curiosity, Xie Wang was ready to conduct an experiment.

.....

On this day, McRae, who had just come online, was about to call his friends to go to the draconic swamp to catch the Earth Dragon as usual.

Due to the increasing number of new players in the European server and the influence of the number one knight, Reinhardt, there were more and more players playing Knight. As a result, mounts became the best selling product in the European server.

High-level players catching mounts and selling them to new players had become an effective way to earn soul coins, and McRae was doing the same.

At this moment, McRae was really glad that he had played this game with Reinhardt.

Although he wasn't as strong as Lionheart, he had many years of experience in the game and was one of the first players, so he was doing pretty well in the game.

In addition to selling some soul coins to maintain his living expenses, McRae had also ignited the passion for the game that he once had, and put all the rest of his soul coins into the game in exchange for his growth.

Since the current environment in the blue Void great domain basically had a small battle every day and a big battle every three days, consumable items were very popular.

On the other hand, the mounts tamed by Knights could be resurrected.

However, many low-level Knights did not have the ability to resurrect their mounts before they mastered taming skills. Therefore, capturing mounts and selling them had become a part of the industry chain in the game. In addition to the constant influx of new players, this method of making

money was still very popular among the high-level players at the current stage, except for the rich players of course.

After making an appointment with his in-game friends at the hidden Dragon Swamp area, McRae bought some potions from the mall, and then walked out of the hidden Dragon Village.

However, as soon as McRae walked out of Hidden Dragon Village, he saw a black fiendish wind blowing in his face, which instantly rolled him into the air.

McRae was shocked and struggled to get away, but the raging black wind became more and more violent, and soon red words began to appear above his head.

-293

-383

-476

.....

In a short while, McRae was killed by the black fiendish wind.

Looking at the gradually dimming picture, McRae was completely dumbfounded.

He subconsciously looked at the kill notification.

[You have been killed by the evil king!]

After seeing the cause of his death, McRae was even more dumbfounded. He could not understand why the evil king wanted to kill him. After all, the players were now “on the same side” as the evil king.

After a moment’s contemplation, McRae came to a conclusion. Perhaps the old heretic King had accidentally hurt him while experimenting with some ability.

At this time, McRae felt that this was the only reason that could explain it. After all, he had never offended the evil king.

Although he was depressed, McRae could only accept it. After all, he was just an insignificant player, and it was unrealistic to seek revenge on the heretic King.

Three hours later ...

McRae, who was online again, walked out of Hidden Dragon Village and headed toward Hidden Dragon Swamp.

At this time, McRae still believed that his previous death was just an accident. If the evil king had massacred at the village entrance, the forum would have been in an uproar. How could there be no news?

However, before McRae could run far away from the village entrance, a gust of black wind came again and lifted him up into the sky.

McRae was frightened, and he couldn't help but start howling,"

"Evil king! Lord evil king, stop!"

"Eh? You knew it was me?" The evil king, who was hiding in the dark, was surprised, and his figure slowly appeared in front of McRae.

"Lord heretic King, I hope I have not offended you."

Looking at McRae's frightened face, Xie Wang felt a headache. He didn't know where he had given himself away, that such an obscure assassination had been exposed.

However, the players were his subordinates, after all. Since they had already been discovered, it would be a little unreasonable for him to attack them.

But right now, the heretic King's curiosity had yet to be satisfied...And it was very difficult to bear!

“Lord heretic King, you must have made a mistake. Let me go!” McRae shouted with an aggrieved expression.

“Oh, right, I made a mistake. I’ll let you go now!” The evil king nodded in realization and followed the excuse given by McRae. Then, with a wave of his hand, the black fiendish wind dispersed, and McRae fell straight from a height of several hundred meters.

McRae was speechless.

This death made McRae feel very aggrieved. He had only shouted to let go, but he did not expect that evil king would really let go.

F * ck, that’s a few hundred meters up in the air! Don’t you know how to be gentle? Also, don’t you know how to apologize for getting the wrong person? *****(omitted)

After logging out of the game, McRae couldn’t help but curse.

Although it was the second time that the heretic King had killed him, McRae still did not think that the heretic King was deliberately targeting him, because he had no enmity with the heretic King, much less any interactions with him. McRae was certain of this.

McRae, who felt insecure, began to check the official forum during the cooldown period of his resurrection.

After browsing through the posts on the official website, McRae found that the other players did not have such a situation.

This made him even more certain that Xie Wang had made a mistake.

Thus, three hours later, he entered the game again.

This time, McRae hid in the village for a long time, but in the end, he still bravely walked out of Hidden Dragon Village.

After all, it was not a good idea to stay in the village.

After walking for hundreds of meters, McRae, who was still not swept away by the black wind, finally felt relieved.

But right at this time, Blackwind appeared again.

Looking at the black fiend wind, McRae wailed,”

“Xie Wang, why are you targeting me!”

“Because you stepped out of the village with your left foot first!”

Xie Wang, who could no longer find an excuse to kill, could only answer in this way.

Chapter 331 - Truth And Lies (2 In 1)

Recently, something had happened in the European server forum, and it had caused a heated discussion among many players.

The cause was a post by a player on the forum.

[Help!] I've been killed by the heretic King four times, a whole four times! Did you all have such an encounter? and it's just me alone! I'm about to faint from crying! [Building head: it's already noon, McRae.]

(Attached is a screenshot of him being killed)

Content: ...

After being killed by heretic King four times in a row, McRae's mental state almost collapsed.

He felt that he was still quite well-behaved in the game and had never offended anyone. On the battlefield, he had even killed enemies without fear of death for the sake of soul coins, but why was he being targeted by evil king now?

McRae, who couldn't figure it out, could only turn to the players on the forum for help. After all, evil king was their boss now, and he had no way to deal with it.

The players on the forum were also very surprised to see McRae's encounter. They began to ask what had happened to McRae, and even wondered if he had done something to offend the evil king.

In the face of the players' doubts, McRae repeatedly assured them that he had not done anything out of line, and even specifically told them his daily schedule.

McRae's solemn promise made many players start to believe what he said.

However, the players had come into contact with evil king before. Even though they did not know him very well, they knew his personality very well.

Right now, the player clans could be said to be heretic King's most valued subordinate force. Therefore, the players felt that evil King's act of killing McRae was a little abnormal. For a while, the players had all kinds of speculations, and some players even suggested that evil king was plotting something. In short, the European server forum was in an uproar.

This matter naturally attracted Li Xing's attention.

At this moment, Li Xing's friend list was filled with a lot of messages. They were basically all asking him what was going on.

Since Li Xing was the "player clan's clan leader" who had a direct connection with heretic King, he was the only one who could handle this matter.

After a moment of thought, Li Xing decided to head to the ancient ruins to ask Xie Wang about it.

Three hours later, Li Xing's figure appeared in the ruins.

His arrival attracted the attention of the guards, who immediately stepped forward to stop Li Xing. However, after seeing Li Xing's appearance through the bonfire, the guards consciously retreated, and even bowed respectfully to Li Xing.

The player clans had also won their respect after several battles with the yuanxu Army. As the clan leader of the player clan and the most important subordinate of the evil king, they naturally did not dare to slight Li Xing.

Li Xing nodded slightly and walked past the four guards, heading toward the center of the ruins where Xie Wang was.

No one knew when the ruins in the central area were built, but stone pillars stood tall and surrounded a Palace. As these stone pillars had been weathered, it looked like the entire stone pillar Palace would collapse at any time.

Li Xing strode into the ruins 'Palace, his eyes sweeping around before he said,"

"Boss Xie Wang, I'm here!" Li Xing waited after he finished speaking.

A moment later, a black gust of wind rose around them, and Xie Wang's figure slowly materialized in the stone Hall. It gradually became clear, and he appeared before Li Xing.

"Why are you looking for me, Li Xing?" Xie Wang asked Li Xing with a smile that was not a smile.

Li Xing felt his head throb when he saw Xie Wang, but it was better to get to the bottom of this. He said,

"Boss, what's going on recently? Did my clansmen offend you in any way?"

Although Li Xing said this, the meaning behind his words was actually very clear. He was asking why the heretic King wanted to kill McRae.

Xie Wang was silent for a moment before he slowly said,

"To be honest, ever since you pledged your loyalty to me, I've never doubted your loyalty. In fact, you've also proven your loyalty, but there are a few things I don't understand!"

Li Xing frowned slightly."

"Boss, do you have any questions related to this?"

"Yes." Xie Wang nodded."I remember clearly that you once told me that the innate ability of your player clan is to have three chances of resurrection at the altar, right?"

Li Xing's heart clenched when he heard this. He now understood why Xie Wang had done this.

“I never doubted this before, but the increase in the number of clan members is indeed a little abnormal. I didn't pay attention to it before, but after paying attention, I realized that the number of clan members has never decreased after each battle with void abyss. Instead, it has been increasing!”

“That's the first point, the problem with the number of your clansmen. Perhaps you can tell me that your player clans have particularly strong reproductive abilities, and I can accept this point. Then I'll talk about the second point, the strength of your family! Because of the number of races, I noticed something when I secretly investigated your player clans. I found that your clan's strength seemed to have been increasing, and it was an all-round increase. This could be discovered from the few battles with the yuanxu Army!”

“In addition to strength, I also noticed that although you players weren't afraid of death in the beginning, your adaptability to war wasn't strong. I even saw some of your clansmen vomit after the war because they couldn't adapt. This kind of behavior was more like a novice on the battlefield, not a race that was used to war.”

“I didn't think too much about it back then. However, the number of times you're not used to it has gradually decreased as the number of Wars increased. It seems like you player clans have gotten used to the wars. This is a little strange. Logically speaking, you player clans have existed in this region for so long, so you should have experienced countless battles. Why are you only getting used to the wars now?”

“This is the second point. The improvement of your clansmen's strength and their adaptive performance in battle ...”

Xie Wang smiled and stared at Li Xing,”

“Is there anything you want to explain about these two points?”

Li Xing didn't reply, but his heart was thumping. He'd expected Xie Wang to find out, but he hadn't expected it to be so fast. He could already guess what was going to happen next.

Seeing Li Xing's silence, Xie Wang laughed again.

“This third point was what you personally admitted to me at that time. Every player clan member has three chances to revive!”

“There were too many suspicious points that made me doubt whether the so-called three revivals were real or fake, so I found a player to do an experiment. This is also the answer you wanted, why did I kill your people!”

Li Xing was suddenly enlightened. He now understood why evil king had attacked McRae for no reason. It was obvious that McRae had been unlucky enough to become the evil King's experimental target.

At this moment, evil king continued, “I still remember the first battle between you and the yuanxu Army. At that time, you were all wiped out. Logically speaking, every member of your player clan had lost one chance to revive, so when I killed him a second time and saw him revive, I was already suspicious. However, I believed you, and I believed you very much, so I continued this experiment. So I killed him four times ...”

After he finished speaking, Xie Wang looked at Li Xing and smirked.

“Li Xing, you've let me down. In order to nurture you, I've given you the many treasures left behind by the evil god and taught you many combat skills. Although you're my subordinates, I, evil king, have never let you down!”

“Yes! I, Xie Wang, am just a wisp of an evil thought, and I don't have a real body. I'm different from you, but I'm very happy to be with you because I've found that my feelings have become richer and richer, so I'm filled with gratitude towards you player clans!” “Especially you, Li Xing!” Compared to being my subordinate, I think that the word “friend” is more

suitable for our relationship. But why did you lie to me? can you give me an explanation?"

"You know, when I came to this conclusion, I didn't go to you, and I didn't do anything extreme. I was waiting for the day when you truly acknowledge me as the evil king, then you'll come to me and tell me the truth! But now that you've come, I'll tell you the answer!"

Li Xing's emotions were complicated as he looked at Xie Wang, who had a murderous look in his eyes.

Just as heretic King had said, he had never let the player clans down, but they had been using him all this time. This made Li Xing feel a little guilty.

He still clearly remembered that the evil king had once said to him in a casual chat that he never cared about some bullsh * t official sovereign, much less the life and death of others. The reason he wanted to defeat Yuan Xu and become an official sovereign was just to find something exciting to do.

Just as Xie Wang had said, he was a wisp of an evil thought. He did not have any complicated emotions, so what he liked to do the most was to let himself experience emotional fluctuations, just like those living creatures.

Fighting for the position of official sovereign with Yuan Xu was just something the evil king did in pursuit of excitement.

The heretic King had also said that he admired the player clans because the battle to the death with the yuanxu Army in the infernal domain had ignited a passion he had never felt before.

Xie Wang had even promised him that even if he, Li Xing, died one day, he would still protect the player clan.

Evil king had even said that if he really obtained the position of official sovereign one day, he might let the descendants of the player clans inherit the position.

Li Xing had always seen evil King's sincerity towards the player clans, so Li Xing did not know how to explain evil King's words. He did not even know how to face evil king.

Xie Wang looked at the silent Li Xing, waiting for his reply. Li Xing stood where he was with a complicated expression, not saying anything for a long time.

“Go back. It won't be too late to tell me after you've thought it through. I've said it before, I, Xie Wang, have always believed in you!”

Li Xing's body trembled as he stared at Xie Wang in disbelief.

“Come up with a better reason next time. At least you can fool me!” Xie Wang asked again.

“You ... You've forgiven me?” Li Xing stuttered.

“I've told you that I've always believed in you, and you've always called me boss. I, evil king, acknowledge this title. Although you've lied to me, your player family has never betrayed me, so there's no need to forgive ...”

Although evil king had lived for millions of years, he was not as emotional as an ordinary person. However, after interacting with the player clans, evil king realized that he had become more and more emotional. Thus, in his eyes, the player clans were completely different from the other subordinate forces.

Although Xie Wang's eyes shone with a vicious light when he said this, Li Xing could still see a sliver of disappointment and dissatisfaction in his eyes.

At this moment, Xie Wang was like a child who had just made a good friend. As he interacted with his good friend, he gradually realized that only he was sincere, while his so-called good friend had been hiding things from him.

Even though the truth made him angry and sad, he still didn't want to lose his friend Li Xing and his family.

Li Xing's expression was complicated as he looked at Xie Wang. He opened his mouth to say something, but he held back.

It was not up to him to decide whether to tell heretic King about the player clan's Secret. Even though he was the "player clan's clan leader," he could not represent the players.

"If you haven't thought about it, then go back first and think about how to make up this flawless story!" Xie Wang said rather impatiently.

However, Li Xing discovered that Xie Wang's eyes were filled with anticipation when he spoke. In the end, however, it turned into disappointment.

"Boss, I'll tell you when the time is right. You said that you've never let us players down, and I, Li Xing, promise you that I've always treated you as my boss. I'll never let you down!"

After saying this, Li Xing turned around and left.

As he watched Li Xing's back, the fierceness in Xie Wang's eyes faded, replaced by relief.

In truth, he did not want to hear any explanation or lie. Although Li Xing had not said anything, Xie Wang was still very pleased. At the very least, Li Xing had not lied to him.

Xie Wang could sense the sincerity in Li Xing's emotional fluctuations, especially when he heard his last words before he left. In Xie Wang's eyes, those words and his heart were the best guarantee he could have.

Although his curiosity had not been satisfied, in the netherworld, the races that could survive had their own secrets. Although the secrets of the players' families made him curious, he didn't want to know anymore.

Not long after Li Xing left, Xie Wang's figure also disappeared from the spot.

At this time, a ghostly figure came from the outside world under the moonlight. He silently dodged the guards and entered the stone pillar Palace.

Naturally, his appearance could not be hidden from Xie Wang. At this moment, Xie Wang's figure slowly condensed with the appearance of the black fiendish wind. He appeared behind the ghostly figure, then raised his hand and slammed it down.

Ripples appeared on the surface of the ghostly figure's body after being hit by Xie Wang's palm, completely nullifying the force. His body floated forward like a feather, and then slowly landed on the ground.

"Who's there!" Xie Wang said coldly as he stared at the figure.

"Xie Wang, shall we have a chat?" The ghostly figure said with a smile.

"You're so sneaky. I think I'll just kill you and extract your soul. I'll talk to your soul!" The corners of Xie Wang's mouth curled up. His body flickered and he appeared in front of the ghostly figure. He suddenly slammed down with his right palm, and a violent fiendish wind suddenly formed, sweeping forward.

In the face of Xie Wang's baleful wind, the ghostly figure clearly could no longer withstand it and suddenly collapsed.

At this moment, Xie Wang stretched out his hand toward the area where the ghostly figure had collapsed. He wanted to grab the person's soul, but to his surprise, no soul was captured.

"Xie Wang, this is the first time we've met. I don't think this is a good idea!" At some point, the ghostly figure had appeared behind Xie Wang.

"You have some ability!"

Xie Wang snorted coldly and turned to attack again, but he saw the ghostly figure suddenly take a step back. The shadow on the surface of his body dissipated, revealing his true body.

Xie Wang could not help but be stunned as he looked at the child with long, soft white hair. However, he did not let down his guard.

“Little wimp, Who are you?”

Cang Xu, who was originally smiling and had an unfathomable attitude, instantly pulled a long face when he heard this.

Chapter 332 - The Chess Player

When he heard Xie Wang call him a wimp, Cang Xu's expression instantly froze.

Xie Wang was also extremely curious. He realized that Cang Xu did not seem to have a physical body, and he could not sense the changes in his emotions.

As the incarnation of evil thoughts, the evil king was extremely sensitive to this. This was the first time he had encountered such a situation.

“State your purpose for coming, little wimp!” Xie Wang asked again.

If it wasn't for the fact that he couldn't see through Cang Xu's strength, the evil king would have killed him long ago. However, he was now very curious about Cang Xu's purpose in looking for him.

Although Cang Xu was very unhappy that the evil king had called him a brat, he did not want to get entangled with the evil king in this aspect. Moreover, his age could not be compared to the evil king, who had existed for millions of years.

“Xie Wang, didn't you want to know the secret of the player clan? I can tell you!”

However, when Xie Wang heard this, killing intent suddenly appeared in his eyes. Although he was very curious about the secret of the player clan, the player clan was still his subordinate. Cang Xu's words had crossed his bottom line.

“I don't want to know, and I don't want you to know either!”

As he spoke, the heretic King's apparition turned into a stone statue. His figure rapidly grew taller, and he put his palms together in front of his chest.

The evil spirit true seal appeared on evil King's forehead, and illusory tentacles began to appear around the stone pillar Palace, smashing down towards the sky.

“BOOM!”

The entire stone pillar Palace was completely torn apart by the illusory tentacles. The palace began to collapse, and Cang Xu's figure was once again scattered on the spot.

This time, Xie Wang did not stop. He rose into the air, and the evil demon Seal on his forehead flickered with a purple light. The illusory tentacles around him under his control grew thicker and thicker.

“Exterminate!”

All of the illusory tentacles rose to the sky with the evil king as the center, forming a great true demon formation. It firmly locked down the area, and then smashed down together again.

The earth trembled, and the collapsed stone pillar Palace was completely reduced to ruins by Xie Wang's violent attacks.

This violent attack lasted for a full five minutes, and the ground under the ruins was smashed down several meters. Xie Wang also stopped his attack at this moment, and his body slowly descended.

However, at this moment, a figure slowly condensed beside him.”

“Xie Wang, you can't kill me!”

Seeing Cang Xu appear once again, Xie Wang was shocked.

“What are you?”

At this moment, the evil king was truly frightened. His true demon formation had already sealed off the entire space. Even if Cang Xu had the ability to conceal himself, he had nowhere to hide from this all-

encompassing attack. However, Cang Xu had once again appeared unscathed.

Even if he was the evil thought's incarnation and had an immortal body, he would still be injured at the very least. Thus, the void's almost "non-existent" form was too strange for the evil king, as if it did not exist at all.

Looking at the horrified evil king, Cang Xu smiled indifferently. As Lu Wu's agent in the blue Void big domain, he had obtained part of the authority of the divine weapon. At this time, he was not his real body at all, but an incarnation condensed by the yin Qi that filled the netherworld. Although he had no combat ability, he could recover in an instant after being destroyed.

"Heretic King, I have no ill intentions, and I won't harm the player clans. I've only come to discuss a condition with you!"

Faced with Cang Xu, who seemed to be completely unkillable, Xie Wang stared at him viciously for a moment before saying,

"Tell me, what are your conditions? Oh right, I don't like to negotiate with others. I don't think I will accept your conditions!"

"I can tell you the secrets of my family and even help you reforge a complete body, but the price is to be loyal to me!"

Cang Xu, who was well aware of the evil King's personality, did not keep him in suspense and directly stated his conditions.

"You want me to be loyal to you? could it be that ... You can help me reforge my body?" Xie Wang's heart trembled when he heard the last part of the sentence.

The temptation of the last sentence was just too great for Xie Wang.

The evil King's original body was just a wisp of evil God's evil thought. After living for millions of years, his biggest obsession was that his body

was incomplete, so living like a creature of the netherworld was his greatest pursuit.

“With your evil thoughts as your soul and my abilities, I can create a body that can perfectly merge with you!” Cang Xu laughed as he spoke.

“Who the hell are you? I don’t believe that you can help me forge a body that can perfectly integrate with my evil thoughts. This is something that can only be done by the power of the law of the yin God, and it must be a deity who has mastered the law of reversing life and death. Your strength must not have reached the deity realm!” Although Cang Xu’s words were extremely alluring, Xie Wang did not believe them at all.

“Me? My name has too many implications. If you don’t agree to my conditions, it’s better not to know my name. Otherwise, even if you don’t die, you’ll be sealed again!”

“Swish!” “I, Xie Wang, am undying and immortal. Why would I be afraid? speak!” Xie Wang said disdainfully.

Cang Xu shook his head helplessly. “Your so-called immortality doesn’t exist in the eyes of godly state experts. They can still kill you easily. So, I’m sorry. It’s for your own good and for my own good. If we’re not on the same side, I’m sorry I can’t tell you.”

Cang Xu’s words caused Xie Wang to frown.

“Then forget it, even if you’re a godly state expert, you don’t have the right to make me pledge my loyalty!”

Xie Wang’s stubbornness made Cang Xu feel very helpless. He also knew that Xie Wang did not believe him yet, so he asked Lu Wu for permission to use the divine artifact.

After getting Lu Wu’s approval, the soul coin in the divine artifact began to burn violently, and a human-like body slowly emerged in front of Cang Xu.

Under Xie Wang's astonished gaze, the body gradually solidified as it burned. What was even more unbelievable was that the energy fluctuations emanating from this body actually resonated with his own evil thoughts.

After burning almost two million soul coins, Cang Xu suddenly stopped.

Although his physical body had not been completely forged, Cang Xu was suddenly reluctant to part with it. After all, his "Xiaoke" had not been resurrected, and it was really painful to burn her like this. If not for the fact that the heretic King's value was so great that subduing him would bring him even greater benefits, the stingy Cang Xu would definitely not have done this.

"This ... How did you do it!"

At this moment, Xie Wang had already been frightened by Cang Xu's mysterious and unfathomable methods.

This was because he did not sense any energy fluctuations in his surroundings, nor did he sense any traces of law circulation. However, the body in front of him was born out of thin air, and it quickly solidified without any energy intake.

All of this violated the laws of the netherworld. The law of energy conservation also applied to the netherworld. This kind of creation from nothing and materializing a body without any external forces pouring in was too inconceivable in Xie Wang's eyes.

"What do you think, evil king? do you want to pledge your loyalty to me? as long as you agree, this body is yours. I will help you perfect it and make you a real living being, not a wisp of evil thought!"

Looking at the body made of soul power, Xie Wang fell into a mental struggle.

This was his greatest pursuit for millions of years. However, he did not want to become someone else's subordinate at all, so he had the idea of snatching it by force in his mind.

Just as Xie Wang was about to make his move, he saw Cang Xu wave his hand, and the flawless body disappeared into thin air.

“Xie Wang, I know what you’re thinking. Before I came to find you, I must have done some research on you!” Cang Xu still had a victorious look on his face.

“I want to know why you want me to submit to you. Also, how do you know the secret of my family?” Xie Wang asked with an unwilling expression after his thoughts were seen through.

“Don’t worry, I’m not your enemy, neither Am I The Enemy of the player clan. As for how I know the secret of the player clan, I can’t tell you because you’re not on the same side as me!”

“If you can’t say this or that, then tell me what you think you can say!” Xie Wang almost cursed.

At this time, people began to move around. The other forces that were stationed here loyal to the evil king heard the movements here and thought that there was an invasion, so they began to quickly gather.

“Lord heretic King!” A ghost king walked out from the crowd. He glanced at the stone pillar Palace that had been reduced to ruins, and then looked warily at Cang Xu.

“Get lost! All of you, get lost!” Xie Wang turned around and shouted angrily.

Faced with Xie Wang’s furious roar, the ghost king’s expression froze, and then he hurriedly began to retreat with his subordinates.

After ordering his subordinates to retreat, Xie Wang turned to glare at Cang Xu and said,

“Change your condition. I can agree to any other condition. A godlike cultivation technique? I have both!”

Cang Xu shook his head indifferently. "I've said it before. I only want you to submit to me. If you agree, you can obtain the body that you've been dreaming of. You can even know the secrets of the player clan and even integrate into it!"

"What? Integrate into the player family?" Xie Wang suddenly felt that something was wrong.

"That's right. I think you've discovered the secret of the player clan's immortality. That's the true immortality, and you can become that kind of existence!"

"What's your relationship with the player's family?"

"We could be said to be closely related, but they never knew of my existence." Cang Xu replied honestly.

"A chess player?" Xie Wang was stunned.

When Cang Xu heard the words "chess player," he was also dumbfounded. "What chess player?"

"A chess player who uses living beings as chess pieces and the world as a game. He creates a race and secretly controls their future. He is a chess player or a player!" Xie Wang continued.

"Is there such a chess player?" Cang Xu was stunned. He realized that Xie Wang had misunderstood something.

"Yes, the evil god used to be a chess player, but he lost in a game with a certain God!" Xie Wang immediately replied.

Cang Xu waved his hand helplessly. "I'm really not a chess player. To be honest, you don't have to be loyal to me. You have to be loyal to the person behind me. However, his existence is much more powerful than the chess player. In any case, whether you want to do it or not is up to you. However, I can promise you that after you perfectly fuse with this body, you will no longer be just a strand of evil thought. The cultivation level that you've

been stuck at for a million years will no longer be your shackles. In other words, you can still cultivate and even become a God!”

“How ... How is this possible? unless the person behind you ... Is the great emperor?”

But what Xie Wang couldn't understand was that if it was really the great emperor, why would he take a fancy to him? after all, he was just a wisp of evil thought. Even an ancient God like the evil god was just an ant in the eyes of the great emperor, because the great emperor was the master of the netherworld.

If Cang Xu had said these words before, Xie Wang would have definitely dismissed them. However, after seeing Cang Xu's methods, he truly believed him now.

The temptation was too great, so great that even the heretic King was unable to refuse.

Chapter 333 - Casting Body

“How about it? do you want some time to consider?” Cang Xu asked as he looked at the struggling Xie Wang.

Cang Xu understood just how tempting this condition was to the evil king.

Although the evil king had an undying and indestructible body, his actual body was just a strand of evil thought that had been stripped out of the evil God’s body. His emotions were thin, and he did not have a real entity. He did not even feel pain, and was ultimately incomplete.

Even the heretic King had once doubted the meaning of his existence.

However, now that Cang Xu was telling him that he could become a living being, the evil King’s originally firm heart began to waver.

“Can you tell me why you’re looking for me?” Xie Wang couldn’t help but ask after a moment of silence.

“Although you are just a wisp of evil thought, you are much more reliable than those old cunning guys in some aspects. I have high hopes for you!”

“Tell me the truth!” Xie Wang couldn’t help but roll his eyes.

“Because I need a spokesperson, a spokesperson who will walk outside for me. This way, I can better hide behind the scenes!”

“Haha, I understand now. You want to be a chess player behind the scenes, and I’m your chess player!”

Cang Xu was a little helpless. “I’m not a chess player. The person behind me is not a chess player either. However, if you must interpret it this way, just take it that way.”

“Alright, I agree. I’ll join your game!” Xie Wang growled.

In fact, when Cang Xu had raised his hand to create the flawless body that matched his evil thought, Xie Wang had already had the thought of submitting.

Later on, when he found out that the players might just be pawns in the hands of the “chess player,” heretic King’s desire to submit grew even stronger.

With heaven and earth as the game and all living beings as the children, even the chess pieces in the game between the ancient gods had the opportunity to transcend.

In fact, the main reason was that heretic King did not want to leave the player clans. After all, it would be better to join this game with no future than to wander around the netherworld without any feelings. He could fight for a future with the player clans!

Cang Xu realized that Xie Wang seemed to have misunderstood something, but he was too lazy to explain. Before Xie Wang became one of his own, he would not say anything.

Otherwise, he would definitely be beaten up. That cat’s scratch was very painful!

“Evil king, recite a soul oath with me. Once you’re done, you’ll be one of us!”

“A soul oath? I don’t have a soul!” Xie Wang was stunned.

“No need, you can just follow!” Cang Xu said in an unpleasant tone.

Thus, as Cang Xu chanted, evil king followed and the divine artifact began to engrave evil king’s evil thoughts.

When he finished reciting the soul oath, Cang Xu smiled and said,

“Welcome to the team, evil king!”

Just as Xie Wang was about to answer, he noticed a black hole appear beside him. A powerful suction force came from within.

Before he was sucked into the black hole, Xie Wang turned to Cang Xu and asked,”

“Now you can tell me who you are!”

When Cang Xu heard this, he smiled slightly.”

“This King, Cang Xu!”

.....

After being sucked into the black hole, Xie Wang still had a dazed expression on his face.

He had never heard of Cang Xu’s name in the millions of years that he had been sealed. However, after breaking the seal, he was all too familiar with this name.

The word “grey void” represented the uncrowned king of the grey void region, a man who started from nothing but walked step by step to the throne of the official sovereign. Even now, Yuan Xu had lost to Cang Xu. If Cang Xu had not been gone, Yuan Xu would not even have had the chance to rise.

However, this was only a part of Cang Xu’s story.

What shocked Xie Wang the most was Cang Xu’s plan that he had endured for tens of thousands of years. He was a person who dared to go against the heavens for the sake of a beauty. This was something that even the yin gods would not dare to do, but he had really done it. This could no longer be described as audacious. He was a complete lunatic.

From the evil King’s Point of view, Cang Xu was not a chess player, but he was crazier than one. He used the future of the entire netherworld and the human world as a bargaining chip to play against the heavens, just to help Hong Yan continue her life.

Thus, when he heard the white-haired young man say that he was Cang Xu, Xie Wang was completely shocked.

From what he understood, Cang Xu's soul should have been destroyed. After all, he was a sinner of the netherworld and the hated enemy of the heaven realm. Only with his death could the two realms return to peace.

In Xie Wang's opinion, even the great emperor would not be able to protect Cang Xu in a battle between the two worlds. How did he survive?

At this moment, Xie Wang was filled with curiosity towards the person behind the scenes.

At that moment, in the space of the divine artifact, Bei Li was wearing a white coat. He was holding a piece of biscuit in each of his hands. He was munching on it from left to right. He was having a great time.

And Lu Wu, who was standing on the side, had a relieved smile on his face.

Ever since he had raised this glutton, Bei Li, he had always felt that watching Bei Li eat was a form of enjoyment. This was a kind of happiness that only a caretaker would understand!

At this moment, a spatial tunnel appeared in the divine artifact, and then Xie Wang's figure appeared.

“Stop eating and get to work!” Lu Wu patted Bei Li's head and said.

Bei Li heard this and nodded. Then, he stuffed all the biscuits into his mouth and waved at Xie Wang with his mouth full. Suddenly, Xie Wang's body floated up and was locked in mid-air.

At this moment, Xie Wang was surprised because he found that he could not use his abilities here. He could not even control his body.

“Where is this place?” Xie Wang looked at Lu Wu who was standing below and asked.

“My world!” Lu Wu replied with a smile.

“You’re that chess player?” Xie Wang looked at the plain-looking Lu Wu and felt a little incredulous.

“I’m the person behind all this, not the chess player you’re talking about. Also, I don’t know how to play chess!” Lu Wu spread his hands and said helplessly.

Just as Xie Wang was about to ask more questions, he saw Bei Li floating to his side. Then, a wave of power suddenly surged into his body, causing Xie Wang’s eyes to widen.

“Soul power!”

“That’s right. If I want to turn your evil thoughts into a soul, I naturally need soul power. And isn’t the soul formed from the initial soul power?” Bei Li replied as he chewed.

Although Bei Li’s answer was light, Xie Wang couldn’t remain calm. He knew that soul power was an uncontrollable energy. He had never heard of an existence that could control soul power, not even a God.

“Calm down! We’ll start the modification now, don’t move!” As he spoke, Bei Li pulled down the mask on his forehead like a pair of sunglasses and began to transform the evil king.

On the other hand, Lu Wu, who was watching from below, seemed to want to learn Bei Li’s skills.

However, after 10 seconds, Lu Wu gave up because he couldn’t understand it at all ...

As expected, it was better to be a salted fish!

.....

Half an hour later, Xie Wang’s body gradually became thin as he was filled with soul power. He was barely visible, but this was the appearance of a soul.

Bei Li waved his hand again and summoned the half-finished body.

“Xie Wang, do you have any requirements for appearance? Free face-molding at the start!”

Xie Wang was speechless.

“No requirements!” Xie Wang was speechless.

Bei Li accepted the evil King’s suggestion and roughly modified the body’s parameters, using the human image as the template.

After another half an hour of hard work, a new body appeared. Bei Li then grabbed the soul-like Xie Wang and stuffed him into the new body.

The next step was to merge the soul and the body. Bei Li did not need to do this personally. Xie Wang could do it himself.

This was the same as possession. The only difference was that the evil king had possessed a flawless body that was perfectly compatible with his own soul and had no soul Fragments left behind.

Since there was no interference, the fusion of flesh and spirit ended very quickly.

When Xie Wang opened his eyes again, he found that everything before him seemed different. It was a very wondrous feeling. He even found that he did not need to simulate the fluctuations in his emotions. They had actually been generated automatically.

“It’s amazing!” Xie Wang pinched his arm subconsciously and felt a slight pain in his arm. He was overjoyed.

“Of course, I made this myself!” Bei Li said proudly.

“Can you tell me what you want me to do?” Xie Wang turned to look at Lu Wu and asked.

“Everything is in your mind, take a look.” Lu Wu pointed to his temple and said.

When heretic King heard this, he closed his eyes and sank his thoughts into his sea of consciousness. Instantly, countless pieces of information regarding players and divine artifacts appeared in his mind.

Ten minutes later, Xie Wang slowly opened his eyes after digesting the information.

“How is it? Do you still think I’m a chess player?” Lu Wu smiled faintly.

Xie Wang shook his head.

“You’re on a higher level than the chess player. I have some memory fragments of the evil god in my mind. I think even the Emperor might not be able to master the abilities you have now!”

After digesting the information in his mind, Xie Wang finally realized that his guess had been wrong. The two people in front of him were not chess players at all. Instead, they were even more terrifying existences than chess players. He also understood why Cang Xu was able to survive the chess game between the two realms. He had clearly been subdued by this person just like he had been.

However, what Xie Wang was curious about was what kind of existences these two people were. Were they creatures from the endless outer realms or hidden in the Three Realms, but their strength had surpassed the gods and was comparable to the Emperor.

“Can I start cultivating now?” Xie Wang asked, clenching his fists.

“You can. You’re already a life form from the netherworld. Realm is no longer your shackles. As long as you work hard, it’s possible for you to become a God!” Bei Li took out a bag of potato chips and answered while eating.

Hearing Bei Li’s explanation, Xie Wang’s heart filled with excitement.

From the moment he was born, his strength and realm had never changed. Although he was still very powerful, the path of cultivation had long been sealed. Therefore, he had never had the achievement and satisfaction of watching his strength gradually increase bit by bit.

“I, heretic King, am willing to pledge my loyalty to you and bestow upon me a new master!” At this moment, Xie Wang was completely convinced.

Lu Wu nodded in satisfaction.”

“Go back. You’re still the leader of the gamers. You should understand what the gamers are like now. Do you have any other questions?”

“There’s no more doubt. I will lead the player clans to rise!” Xie Wang knelt down on one knee and promised Lu Wu.

Lu Wu nodded and waved his hand. A Space Channel was formed and evil king was sucked in.

A moment later, Xie Wang’s figure appeared on the ruins of the stone pillar Palace.

“Xie Wang, how is it? Do you see that little kitten behind the scenes?” Cang Xu asked curiously as he looked at Xie Wang’s new form.

“A little kitty?” Xie Wang was dumbfounded.

“How is it? how does it feel to have a new body?” Cang Xu continued to ask.

“Not bad!” Xie Wang’s eyes flashed with excitement as he answered truthfully.

“En, then let’s calculate how many soul coins you owe me.” As he spoke, Cang Xu took out his computer and pressed a few buttons. Then, he said,

“The total is 5.782421 soul coins!”

Xie Wang finally understood what soul coins were. Although they were a type of currency, they were actually materialized soul power. Other than being able to help with cultivation, they had countless other uses.

“When did I owe you soul coins?” Xie Wang asked as he looked at Cang Xu warily.

“I spent my money on your body, and I took it from the vault that I used to revive Xiaoke!” Cang Xu was instantly unhappy.

“I don’t know, I’m not returning it!” Xie Wang said boldly.

Looking at the righteous evil king, Cang Xu decided to be an authority dog for once.

Chapter 334 - Black Tiger

Dragon Kingdom, emperor's tomb mountain range.

The Emperor's Tomb mountain range, located on the Western border of the Dragon Kingdom, was a well-known no-man's land in the country. It was said that an emperor's tomb was buried here, which had once attracted many tourists.

However, the environment here was not friendly to tourists. Not only was the terrain extremely steep, but there were also often wild beasts. Many tourists were injured here and could not get timely help. After the media reported the frequent disappearance and death of tourists, the area gradually became deserted.

At this moment, a dark-skinned young man was carrying two wooden buckets filled with water and walking towards the foot of the main peak of the mausoleum mountains.

As the sun set in the West, thousands of rays of light shone through the gaps between the mountains. The young man seemed to be covered in a layer of golden coat, looking particularly sacred.

Soon, the young man carrying the water arrived at the back of the mountains.

Behind the mountains, the main peak of the Emperor's Tomb mountain range rose up from the ground, like a huge sword that pierced into the sky.

At the foot of the main peak, there was a village shrouded in thick fog. It was a strange village hidden behind the Emperor tomb mountain range, completely isolated from the world.

Living in such a place could be said to be completely disconnected from the outside world. Even if one wanted to leave, they would have to walk for half a month on the mountain road.

Such a situation was extremely strange in modern times. As early as 200 years ago, the country had completed a poverty relief program. It was reasonable to say that all mountain people living in such an environment would be given corresponding support programs, basically spending money to build new houses for them and let them move out of the mountains to live in the outside world.

Unless the hill-folk were determined not to move out, they would definitely be properly settled by the country.

The young man carrying the water slowed down as he approached the village at the foot of the main peak, a hint of fear on his face.

His figure passed through the layers of thick fog, and he finally mustered up the courage to continue walking forward.

When he arrived at the village entrance, the young man looked left and right to make sure that no one was around before he suddenly quickened his pace.

At this time, a leather whip full of tiny barbs suddenly whipped from the side and hit the back of the young man carrying the water.

“Pa!”

The back of his clothes had been cut open by the whip, and a bloody wound had appeared on his back.

His body trembled slightly from the pain, but the young man gritted his teeth and didn't make a sound. His hands held the bucket tightly, as if he was afraid that the water inside would spill out.

“Black Tiger, do you know what time it is?”

The man who spoke had a burly figure. His shoulders were big and his waist was round. He had the aura of a Bandit on his body. He held the black leather whip that he had just used to whip someone. As he spoke, his eyes were wide and round, and he looked very fierce.

“Manager, I encountered a wild boar on the water and was delayed!” Although it was angry in its heart, the black Tiger put on a scared look.

“Do you have any complaints about this whip?” Although the black Tiger had explained, the steward was still arrogant and did not feel that he had done anything wrong.

“You should be punished for your mistakes. Thank you for the lesson, steward!” The black Tiger quickly said.

When the man in charge heard this, he nodded his head in satisfaction. The hand holding the whip pointed towards the village, indicating that they could enter.

The black Tiger quickly thanked him and walked in.

Although the village was hidden in the mountains, it was not small, with more than 3000 people.

Black Tiger was not a native of the village. He had lived in the bustling city and had only been here for three years.

It all started three years ago. At that time, Black Tiger was attracted by many legends about the emperor’s mausoleum and came to explore and play.

At that time, Black Tiger was young and frivolous. He was bold enough to walk deep into the mountain range, but he accidentally fell into a ravine. At that time, the black Tiger had tried several ways to save itself, but the ravine was very deep and there was no way to escape.

Black Tiger had no choice but to call the outside world for help. However, because he was deep in the mountains, the rescue team could not arrive in time.

(Note: in the year 2319, signals and WIFI covered the entire world, so you could make calls in the mountains.)

In the midst of the wait, Black Tiger was not waiting for rescue personnel, but a disciple of the black dungeon sect. He was brought into the black Dungeon Village to be ordered around as a servant.

The black Tiger once believed in science and atheism. The so-called cultivation to become an immortal was something that the black Tiger disdained. However, it was only here that the black Tiger realized that there were really cultivators.

These cultivators were also completely different from ordinary people. Although they couldn't ride on clouds and mist, they could ride on magic tools to fly. Their bodies were as hard as iron, and they were impervious to fire and water.

However, the black Tiger had no fate with the cultivation that they dreamed of. The black prison sect's cultivation technique would not be passed on to them.

Their existence was like that of servants, carrying water, cooking, watching over the spiritual fields, raising spiritual insects, and so on. In short, they did all the chores, and if they did not do it well, they would be beaten up.

The lives of slaves like them were not even considered lives here, but rather grass Gu.

In the past three years, Black Tiger had seen many slaves die from beatings because they made mistakes or didn't make any mistakes.

If one wanted to survive here, one had to correct their identity, live a humble life, and live carefully.

It wasn't that Black Tiger didn't think about escaping in the past three years, but he couldn't.

This was a place that did not treat people as humans, and resistance would only lead to death. When he was first captured and brought to this black prison village, Black Tiger had also thought of escaping. However, this area was surrounded by mountains, so it was extremely difficult to escape.

Moreover, his body had already been implanted with the black prison seal, so as long as he ran out of a certain range, he would definitely be sensed by the black prison sect disciples.

The consequences of being caught were undoubtedly miserable. After experiencing it twice, the black Tiger had completely given up on the idea of escaping.

As he thought about this, the black Tiger carried the bucket to the fourth spirit field in the village, which he was in charge of. He watered the spirit field with all the water in the bucket, then put down the wooden bucket and walked into the wooden house next to the spirit field.

After closing the door, Black Tiger took out a handful of herbs from under the bed. He crushed it and carefully covered the wound on his back.

The burning wound was immediately covered by a cool feeling.

To live here, one had to have something to protect themselves, and this herb was one of them.

However, this herb was not a spiritual herb because the disciples of the black prison sect would not use such a good thing on their servants. It was extremely difficult for even the disciples of the black prison sect to obtain this herb. The spiritual herbs planted in the spiritual fields in the village were basically owned by the elders of the black prison sect.

When the burning sensation on the wound had completely subsided, the black Tiger took the blood-stained herb and threw it into the wooden box under the bed.

Then, he took out a book from the wooden box,[iron cloak].

After flipping through a few pages, the black Tiger threw the book into the wooden box with a complicated expression.

This book could not be considered a cultivation technique at all. It could only be considered an external technique, and every servant in the black

prison sect had one.

With the black prison sect's style, they would naturally not be so kind as to give them a cultivation technique. Letting these odd-job workers cultivate this external technique was only in the hope that they would be able to do better work and be able to withstand more torment.

The black Tiger had been practicing this technique for three years, but his progress was very poor. Other than his body becoming a lot stronger, his cultivation progress was like a turtle crawling. He had only made progress on the first level after three years.

Sighing, the black Tiger climbed into bed and felt that it could only sleep on its stomach today.

At this moment, the ground shook, and a loud voice came from the outside world.”

“All service disciples, gather in front of the sect!”

The black Tiger, who had just climbed onto the bed, quickly jumped up, put on its cloth shoes, and broke out of the door, running in the direction of the main peak.

Along the way, the wooden houses were pushed open, and the handymen and the black Tiger also ran towards the main peak.

The black prison sect's gathering of servants was usually for no good reason, but they had to run fast because the five servants who arrived the latest would be beaten up. It was a small matter if their skin was torn or their flesh torn, but they might even lose their lives. They had to run fast.

Soon, a large group of service disciples gathered in front of the black prison sect at the foot of the mountain.

Seeing that the odd-job disciples had arrived, a white-haired old man in a black robe stood up from his chair. He stood on the steps in front of the mountain Gate and looked down at the odd-job disciples in ragged clothes.

“Today, I’m going to make an announcement. Next, I’ll give each of you an item. This item is called a virtual helmet, and its function is ...”

As the black-robed elder spoke, he took out a virtual helmet from the box at the side and began to explain non-stop.

“And your role is to earn soul coins inside and then hand them in. The amount of soul coins handed in every day will be counted by a special disciple. If you don’t meet the requirements, you know what the consequences will be. However, those who exceed the requirements will naturally be rewarded, and the amount of work can be reduced ...”

Looking at the virtual helmet in the black-robed elder’s hand, Black Tiger and all the handymen were stunned.

How could Black Tiger not know about this? the virtual helmet was a tool that he had used a lot before he came here.

What made Black Tiger surprised was why the black prison sect elder would bring this thing in. After all, the virtual helmet was an item for entertainment. The black prison sect would not be so kind.

As if afraid that the handymen could not understand, the black-robed elder explained a few more times. This time, the black Tiger also understood.

Collect soul coins in the game and then hand them over?

Although it understood, Black Tiger was still confused. It could not understand why the black prison sect, who was focused on cultivation, would want in-game currency.

“That’s enough. Each of you can take one item and leave. From now on, work as usual in the morning, and enter the game to earn soul coins at night. Remember, the amount of soul coins you earn will determine the amount of work you have to do the next day!” As he spoke, the black-robed elder glared and his long robe fluttered in the wind. His appearance was frightening.

After all the handymen had left, the personal disciple standing beside the black-robed elder could not help but ask,”

“Master, why do we need to purchase this equipment from the outside world for these handymen to use?”

The black-robed elder shook his head.”

“I’m not too sure either. This is the sect leader’s order. According to him, there are great mysteries and great opportunities in this game, and soul coins are the currency in this game, so they are indispensable. That’s why the sect leader needs these three thousand odd-job workers to continuously create soul coins for him!”

“A game?” That disciple obviously still didn’t understand the relationship between the mysteries and opportunities in the game and the real world.

“Stop guessing. The sect leader naturally has his own reasons for doing this. The sect leader has been running around for the past few months for this batch of virtual projects. He spent a lot of effort to bring back these equipment. For this, the sect leader even bought a solar charging device and placed it on the top of the mountain!” The black-robed elder pointed to the main peak behind him.

“Right, you should also take one back and have a look in the game. Perhaps you can also obtain the opportunity that the sect leader spoke of!”

Chapter 335 - Foundation-Stealing Technique

The main peak of the monarch tomb mountain range.

Xuan Tianji, who was dressed in a luxurious black Daoist robe, stood at the peak of the main peak. He looked down at the clouds that were rolling in the wind. At this moment, his Daoist robe fluttered in the wind, and he exuded an otherworldly temperament, but his face was full of smiles.

In this Dharma ending age where spiritual Qi was scarce, although the path of cultivation was feasible, it had become extremely difficult and had long lost its former glory. However, even in such an era, there were still cultivators, and he, Xuan Tianji, was one of them. His identity was even more extraordinary as he was the sect master of the black prison sect.

The reason why the black prison sect could survive in the Dharma ending age was not because of their Foundation, but because they were ruthless enough. They were ruthless enough to do anything for their own benefits.

In order to continue living in the Dharma ending age, Xuan Tianji had set two rules in the black prison sect.

One of the reasons was that they brought their disciples away from the secular world, because they could not compete with a powerful country, and what they were doing was not allowed by the country.

The second reason was because in Xuan Tianji's eyes, these servants were not just livestock. At times, they were also food for the disciples of the sect.

The 'blood food' did not mean that these odd-job workers were treated as food. Instead, they were refined together with spiritual herbs into a blood pill that could improve cultivation.

In Xuan Tianji's eyes, human blood was much better than that of wild beasts. Hence, this was his main purpose in rearing these servants.

However, he naturally would not let the handymen know about this. Every time he needed blood food, he would ask the disciples of the sect to beat the handymen to death for various reasons, and then take their bodies away to be used as materials for refining blood pills.

It was not wrong for the black prison sect to be called a demonic sect, and Xuan Tianji had never avoided this.

In Xuan Tianji's eyes, he should be proud of himself for being able to continue cultivating in this Dharma ending age. The life and death of mortals were not important at all.

Xuan Tianji had always thought that he was the top cultivator in this Dharma ending age. He could not even be one of the top cultivators, but the strongest!

This thought continued for decades.

However, a few months ago, because he was unable to break through, Xuan Tianji chose to leave the mountains and train. He came to a big city in the outside world.

Even though he was living in seclusion, Xuan Tianji was no stranger to the technology of the outside world. He easily integrated into city life.

During his training in the world of mortals, Xuan Tianji coincidentally met a cultivator one day when he was strolling in the park.

Xuan Tianji, who had once prided himself as the strongest cultivator, had suffered the greatest setback of his life from that cultivator.

At that time, when Xuan Tianji sensed the fluctuation of spiritual energy in that cultivator's body, he had the intention to kill him. He wanted to capture him and bring him back to the black prison sect to be refined into blood food to help him break through.

After all, the blood of cultivators was naturally not something that ordinary handymen could compare to.

However, it was clear that Xuan Tianji had overestimated himself. The friendly-looking cultivator who claimed to be “seven” was not on the same level as him at all.

At that time, Xuan Tianji had launched a sneak attack. However, just as his attack was about to hit the seven of them, a huge evil spirit suddenly appeared in his mind. The shrill roar of the evil spirit scared Xuan Tianji to the point where he stood rooted to the ground.

Although Xuan Tianji was shocked, he gritted his teeth and attacked again.

This time, the seven of them did not Dodge. They continued to smile affably as they took this palm strike head-on. Not only did they not move at all, the black light that suddenly appeared on the surface of their bodies sent Xuan Tianji flying.

The rebound of this strike caused Xuan Tianji’s internal organs to convulse, and he could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood.

At that time, Xuan Tianji already knew that he had met someone he could not afford to offend. Without any hesitation, he chose to kneel and beg for mercy.

However, the seven of them did not have any killing intent towards him, only curiously asking him why he had attacked them.

Xuan Tianji naturally didn’t dare to speak the truth. He hurriedly said that he had made a mistake and mistook him for the enemy who had killed his wife.

Seeing that the seven of them did not want to pursue the matter, Xuan Tianji continued to kneel and kowtow, hoping that he could learn from the seven of them and find his enemies to avenge his wife.

Towards the crying Xuan Tianji, the seven of them still chose to reject him. However, they pointed out a clear path for Xuan Tianji, and that was the <war online>.

After understanding that this profound cultivator's skills came from a game called war online, Xuan Tianji didn't hesitate at all and started to try out the game.

Only after coming into contact with Xuan Tianji did he realize how promising the path of the seven fingers was.

The trajectory of skills in the game could be simulated in reality. Leveling up in the game allowed one to experience the feeling of advancing in strength in advance. In the game, there was also the knowledge of elixir blueprints and weapon refining.

Xuan Tianji was completely immersed in the game, fantasizing about his own cultivation opportunity one day.

But before that, there was a big problem, and that was the lack of soul coins.

In the game, Xuan Tianji was just an ordinary player. The channels to obtain soul coins were too rare, and there was simply not enough for his own use. This became his greatest distress.

At this moment, Xuan Tianji thought of the 3000 odd-job workers he had reared.

In Xuan Tianji's opinion, these odd-job workers could help him earn soul coins and become the stepping stones on his path to obtaining opportunities.

Although he was training in the world of mortals, Xuan Tianji did not have that much money to buy virtual reality equipment. He spent a month swindling, robbing, and using all sorts of underhanded methods to save enough money to buy a virtual reality helmet.

After that, Xuan Tianji didn't stop. He sent the virtual helmets back to the black Dungeon Village in the Emperor tomb mountain range.

From now on, with three thousand domestic servants to earn soul coins for him, Xuan Tianji felt that he might never have to worry about not having enough soul coins.

It had been more than half a month, and he was able to receive a large amount of soul coins from the handymen every day. He was no longer short of money in the game, and he had the ability to buy many high-level items in the mall.

However, there was a problem during this period. It was unknown which handyman had called for help from the outside world through the internet.

At that time, several patrol planes entered the Emperor tomb mountain range to search.

Fortunately, Xuan Tianji reacted quickly and activated the black prison sect's cloud array, completely hiding the sect and the village, thus avoiding the crisis.

This incident had truly infuriated him. Although he did not know which handyman did it, Xuan Tianji still killed 50 handymen on the spot, using cruel means to establish his authority. He also told all the handymen that if there was a next time, no matter who did it, he would kill 500 people randomly. If there were more, he would kill 1000 people.

The bloody suppression was very effective. After that, these handymen became very obedient and no longer made any secret moves.

However, to be on the safe side, the disciples of the mysterious heavenly fate sect recorded the IDs of all the handymen on the official forum of the conquests. In the future, if they found any problems on the forum, they could directly find the handyman who dared to play tricks in the dark.

With these three thousand odd-job workers providing him with a steady stream of soul coins, Xuan Tianji felt that he could finally rest easy on his

cultivation journey.

.....

At this moment, in the wooden house next to the fourth spiritual field in the black Dungeon Village, the black Tiger lay on the bed, exhausted after a day's work.

After resting for a while, he took out the virtual helmet device from under his bed.

Compared to their previous lives, ever since they had the virtual helmet and war online, their lives as servants had become much more enriching.

Even so, not being able to obtain the required amount of soul coins every day would result in an extremely miserable outcome.

There were already a few odd-job workers who were beaten to death by the black prison sect disciples as a warning to others because they couldn't complete the amount of soul coins they had to hand over every day.

Therefore, Black Tiger didn't dare to delay. He put on the virtual reality helmet, lay on the bed, and entered the game, preparing to earn the soul coins he had to pay for the next day.

In the game, Black Tiger chose to be a mage because compared to Berserkers, a mage who was a Summoner in the early stages would undoubtedly make it easier for him.

The black Tiger was currently in the ghost Mountain range.

For the past half a month, Black Tiger had been training here every day to earn soul coins. He kept going deeper and deeper, and unknowingly, he had reached the end of the ghost Mountain range.

After continuing to walk for a while, a stone tablet appeared in front of him.

[Domain suppression monument]:

[Item information: boundary of the great domain, dividing the blue Void great domain and the Beiqi great domain.]

The black Tiger was stunned when he saw the information on the stele. He didn't expect that he would be so close to the blue Void domain.

Black Tiger was no stranger to the blue Void region after playing it for half a month. He knew that it was an area where players from the European server were active.

After thinking for a while, the black Tiger continued to move forward while searching for prey. It wanted to see if there were more monsters there. If it couldn't find them, it would immediately return.

After walking forward for another half an hour or so, the black Tiger was about to return in disappointment after not finding any monsters. However, it suddenly saw a figure jumping out of the bushes not far away.

“Roar!” A gust of foul wind blew over, and the figure quickly approached.

[Fanged Tiger (level 59 elite)]

After seeing the monster's information, the black Tiger's pupils suddenly shrank. Without any hesitation, it turned around and ran.

Currently, the black Tiger was only level 31. It had no chance against a level 59 elite monster.

The price of death was a three-hour cooldown for resurrection. To other players, it was just a three-hour wait, but to Black Tiger, it could cost him his life because time was too precious.

As they ran, the fanged Tiger got closer and closer. Black Tiger waved his staff and summoned several skeleton soldiers to block it, while he continued to run with a red face.

“Kacha!”

The skeleton soldiers only managed to stop the fanged Tiger for a moment before they were torn apart. The fanged Tiger once again turned its eyes to him.

“Roar!”

A wave of heat accompanied by a foul wind hit the black Tiger, causing it to shiver and almost fall to the ground.

From the black Tiger’s point of view, if the fanged Tiger caught up to him, he would really die, and not just a simple 3-hour resurrection cooldown. How could he not panic?

The distance between the two sides was getting closer and closer. Just as it was about to be caught, the black Tiger stepped on air and its body suddenly fell into the black cave covered by withered yellow leaves.

“Roar!”

Seeing the black Tiger Fall into the pit, the fanged Tiger did not give up. Instead, it wanted to jump in as well. However, because its body was too large, it could not get in.

The black Tiger in the pit curled up and looked at the fanged Tiger with a pale face. He was crying bitterly in his heart.

After more than ten minutes of stalemate, the fanged Tiger, who was unable to open up the hole, roared again and turned to leave.

This made the black Tiger heave a sigh of relief. He felt that he was saved.

However, he was afraid that the fanged Tiger was still waiting for him up there, so he did not plan to leave immediately. Instead, he decided to stay for a while.

Thus, he began to scan the pothole.

The hole was not big, only about three meters deep, and it was filled with yellow leaves. Through the light from the outside, the black Tiger found a

black stone tablet stuck in the ground at the corner of the hole.

The curious Black Tiger took two steps forward and began to check the stone tablet.

The black monument was made of an unknown material, and it was covered with blood stains. After a careful look, the black Tiger's face suddenly turned pale because he felt as if there were countless voices roaring in his ears.

Kill, kill, kill!

“Since this monument is my tombstone, I will kill more people until I kill the Emperor!”

These voices were roaring hysterically. The black Tiger couldn't help but cover its head and step back.

After they were far away, the hysterical roars suddenly disappeared, and the black Tiger finally heaved a sigh of relief.

When it looked at the stone tablet again, the black Tiger became more alert.

At this moment, the words on the stone tablet began to distort under the analysis ability, turning into words that the black Tiger could read.

[Heaven and earth are the chess pieces, and all living beings are the children. I, the evil god, have lost this chess game. I will keep my promise. This cultivation method is my life's work. Today, I lost to the God of Beiqi, Bei Li!]

At the bottom of the stone tablet, there was a line of text that was clearly written by different people.

[I, Beili, have read it, but I despise this cultivation technique. I'll abandon it!]

Looking at the translated words, the black Tiger was stunned, because he found that he could not understand them at all.

At this moment, a game notification appeared.

[Game prompt: you have obtained an opportunity. Do you want to start comprehending the cultivation technique recorded on the stone tablet?]

The sudden game notification stunned Black Tiger for a few seconds. How could Black Tiger not know what an opportunity meant? then, he clicked 'confirm' with a face of ecstasy.

[Game prompt: comprehending the cultivation technique "Foundation stealing technique (Volume 1)"...]

[Foundation stealing technique (God-level cultivation technique Volume 1)]:

[Cultivation technique information: this cultivation technique was created by the ancient evil demon God in the blue Void big domain. It contains the essence of the evil demon God's lifetime cultivation. It can seize other people's cultivation Foundation and turn it into its own use.]

[Effect of the cultivation method: it can be used on the cultivators in the game. There is a chance of snatching the target's cultivation spiritual root (Foundation) and transforming it into the cultivator's own body. The higher the level of the spiritual root, the faster the cultivation.]

[Cultivation method progress: Level 1 0%(cultivation increases. The higher the cultivation method's level, the stronger the ability given)]

[Attribute blessing: 1 layer 0%, 20 points to all attributes]

[Game prompt: as you have obtained a special cultivation method, cultivation growth mode has been activated.]

[Introduction to cultivation Foundation: a cultivator's innate talent is divided into nine grades, from low to high:

Inferior spiritual roots, basic spiritual roots, excellent spiritual roots, superior spiritual roots, Supreme-grade spiritual roots, Supreme-grade

spiritual roots, Supreme-grade spiritual roots, destiny spiritual roots, law spiritual roots

Black Tiger (player)

[Level: 31]

[Spiritual root (special): poor quality (23/100)]

(Has comprehended the foundation stealing technique, able to steal other people's spirit roots to feed on one's own spirit root)

Looking at his stats window, Black Tiger was ecstatic. He did not expect to obtain an opportunity.

This was something he didn't even dare to think about.

Then, the black Tiger sat down and pressed the 'cultivate' button next to the technique.

At this moment, the black Tiger was surprised to find that Starlight, which could be seen by the naked eye, appeared in the surroundings. It drew a wonderful trajectory in the air and slowly seeped into its body.

[Game prompt: cultivation in progress (due to inferior spiritual roots, only 2% of the spiritual energy absorbed can be absorbed)]

Half an hour later, seeing that the progress of the first level was still 0%, the black Tiger gave up on cultivating in frustration.

He had never thought that his inferior spiritual roots would be so wasteful during cultivation. He had lost 98% of the spiritual energy he had absorbed. It was the same as when he had cultivated [iron cloak] in reality, without any talent.

However, Black Tiger immediately thought of the special effect of his God-level technique: "Foundation snatching!"

.....

The next day, at dawn.

All the odd-job workers were gathered in front of the mountain Gate. A few sect disciples began to count the odd-job workers who had not handed in enough soul coins last night with ferocious expressions. Soon after, they began to whip them with their black leather whips.

Naturally, among them was the black Tiger who had been excited for a night after obtaining a God-grade cultivation technique.

It could be said that the black Tiger had been studying the “great Foundation-stealing technique” the entire night and had completely forgotten to cultivate. By the time dawn broke, the black Tiger already knew that it would not be able to escape this physical pain.

He only hoped that he could live. As long as he was alive, that was all that mattered.

“Pa! Pa!” The sound of the whip was accompanied by a shrill scream, which made the handymen below shiver. The black Tiger suppressed its anger in its heart and also screamed in pain.

The beating lasted for more than 10 minutes. Every handyman who was punished was beaten until his skin was torn and his flesh was torn. He lay on the ground, dying.

As for the sect disciples, they laughed and left, not caring about their lives at all.

The servants also left, leaving Black Tiger and the others lying on the ground.

At this moment, the black Tiger’s eyes were tightly shut. He had had enough of this kind of life. How he wished that he had the strength to fight back.

However, the reality was cruel. He was just an ordinary person. How could he fight against a cultivator?

It would be great if I could cultivate!

The black Tiger gritted its teeth and roared in its heart.

At this time, Black Tiger suddenly thought of the God-level cultivation method he learned last night, but then he sighed in his heart. After all, this was just a game, and even if it was a God-level cultivation method, it was fake and did not exist.

Wait a minute!

Black Tiger suddenly remembered why the black prison sect placed so much importance on this game. This was completely different from the black prison sect's style of doing things, unless there was something strange about this game.

Thinking of this, the black Tiger was excited and began to relax.

The black Tiger clearly remembered the trajectory of the first level of the foundation stealing technique. He began to fantasize about the process of the spiritual energy entering his body.

Half an hour later, the black Tiger opened its eyes again. It was disappointed to find that the scene of the spiritual energy of heaven and earth drifting in the surroundings did not appear.

It was all fake!

The disappointed Black Tiger was about to get up, but it suddenly realized that there seemed to be a tiny spiritual energy dot that was almost invisible to the naked eye at the corner of its eye, floating randomly in the air.

“Hiss!”

Could it really be cultivated? The black Tiger's eyes widened.

At this moment, Black Tiger was extremely excited. What did it mean to be able to cultivate? it meant that he had the chance to resist the black prison sect.

However, what surprised the black Tiger was that there were only such tiny points of spiritual energy in the air, unlike the game, which was full of spiritual energy everywhere.

Thinking of this, Black Tiger frowned slightly, because the abundant Reiki in the game couldn't improve his cultivation method. In reality, with such a small amount of Reiki, he felt that he might not be able to reach 100% of the first level even if he practiced for a lifetime.

Black Tiger couldn't help but clench his fists. The feeling of losing an opportunity made him very unwilling.

That's right! The great art of seizing one's Foundation, seizing the foundation of others!

The black Tiger suddenly remembered that it wasn't that he didn't have a chance. What he learned was the foundation stealing technique, which could steal the foundation of others to improve his own spiritual root level and speed up his cultivation progress. As long as the quality of his spiritual root went up, there was still hope.

But whose Foundation should I seize?

After figuring out how to grow, the black Tiger fell into deep thought again.

Snatching the foundation of the black prison sect's disciples would definitely greatly improve the quality of his spirit root. However, it was too dangerous. This kind of action was undoubtedly like a snake trying to swallow an elephant. He would only be killed in return.

Thinking of this, Black Tiger's eyes flashed with hostility, then he looked at the other servants who were also lying on the ground.

He didn't know how long he could last like this. Perhaps one day, he would be beaten to death like the other handymen. He would die without value, like grass. He was not willing to die like this.

Although killing other servants to help him was cruel and was no different from killing the disciples of the black prison sect, he was willing to be an evil person, or even a great devil, as long as he could live.

He only wanted to live!

Chapter 336 - A Change In Mentality

Emperor tomb mountain range, black prison village.

As usual, when the sky brightened, many odd-job workers were gathered outside the black prison sect's Mountain Gate and began to count the amount of soul coins they had collected for the night.

Although there were 3000 odd-job workers, it was not troublesome to count them.

There were a total of 126 disciples in the black prison sect, and each disciple would be responsible for 20 to 30 odd jobs. These odd jobs would send the soul coins they earned in the night to the disciple in charge of guarding them by mail at about six in the morning. Then, the disciple in charge would calculate the number of unfinished tasks and send the soul coins to the sect leader, Xuan Tianji, by mail.

In terms of paying soul coins, the odd-job workers could pay more soul coins to cover the amount for the next day, but they couldn't pay less.

This time there were still several tens of people who didn't complete the required amount of soul coins for a day due to various reasons and were called out.

However, what surprised the black prison sect disciples was that there was no response even after three of the handymen had called out their names several times.

After being enslaved for a long time, the servants were completely numb and no one dared to resist. This was the first time such a situation had occurred, and it made the black prison sect disciples want to kill the chicken to warn the monkeys.

In order to find the servant who didn't make a sound, the black prison sect disciples began to count the number of servants. At the same time, they divided the people according to the living area of the village and began to count carefully.

However, this count made the black prison sect disciples stunned. There were actually close to ten odd-job workers missing.

“You dared to form a group and escape. Haven't you learned your lesson?” The black prison sect's head disciple, Xiao lang, stared at the servants below and shouted angrily.

“Do you know where they went?”

Other than fear, the servants below were still numb. No one answered.

This kind of thing happened every year among the odd-job workers. Xiao lang saw that the odd-job workers' expressions were wooden, so he didn't want to ask any more questions. He said to the disciples beside him,

“Junior brothers, go and find them with the black prison true seal. As long as they leave the range, you will be able to sense them. They can't escape!”

“Yes, senior brother!” “Yes!” The black prison sect disciples beside him replied in unison. Then, they each chose a direction and left.

After the disciples left, Xiao lang dismissed the servants and left as well.

In fact, he was not worried that the servants would be able to escape. After all, the Emperor's Tomb mountain range was huge. How far could a servant go without enough food? Moreover, with the black prison seal as insurance, it was impossible for a mortal to escape from the black prison sect's control.

At this moment, Black Tiger was mixed in with the crowd of handymen and also had a wooden expression.

Unlike the others, Black Tiger clearly knew where the handymen had gone because he was the one who had caused all this.

His spirit root was of poor quality. If he relied on slow cultivation, he would never have the chance to escape from the black prison sect's evil clutches.

Therefore, he set his eyes on those handymen who were completely defenseless against him and killed them with cruel means. Then, he used the great art of Foundation seizing to condense their flesh and blood into a blood pill that could improve the foundation and ate it.

There were no traces left behind, so he did not have to worry about being found out.

After snatching the foundation (spiritual roots) of nearly ten handymen, the black Tiger was pleasantly surprised to find that its inferior spiritual roots in the game had actually evolved into basic spiritual roots.

One of the handymen had refined a blood pill that had helped him jump from a poor quality spiritual root of 72% to a basic spiritual root of 18%.

After the quality of his spirit root had evolved, his cultivation speed had indeed increased.

Living in such a black prison, Black Tiger had fantasized countless times that there would be righteous cultivators who would fly over and destroy the black prison sect with a wave of their hands, saving him from the fire and water.

However, this was ultimately just a fantasy. The cruel black prison sect was still fine and continued to torture them cruelly day after day.

After obtaining the "Foundation stealing technique", Black Tiger felt that this was his only chance. Although the methods of growing up were very cruel, he felt that he could only have a chance to turn things around if he was more ruthless than the black prison sect.

Black Tiger no longer cared if it was right or wrong. He had had enough of such days. If he could live, so what if he became a demonic sect like the black prison sect?

No! As long as I can live, I will be more ruthless than them.

In the past three years, Black Tiger's attitude had changed. He was no longer that kind and hot-blooded youth. In Black Tiger's eyes, the environment was different. Being hot-blooded and kind were stupid. Only unscrupulous ruthlessness was the only way to survive.

After another busy day, the black Tiger didn't enter the game at night. Instead, it went to the wooden house next to spiritual field number three and pushed the door open.

When the handyman living here saw the wooden door being pushed open, he was so scared that he took a few steps back, thinking that it was a disciple of the sect.

However, when he saw that the person who came was also an errand boy, his expression returned to his wooden state. He didn't even ask Black Tiger why he had come. He took out the virtual helmet from under the bed and was ready to enter the game.

The black Tiger watched him put on the helmet, then took a step forward and punched him in the throat. Then, he quickly covered his mouth to prevent him from making a sound.

The laborer struggled madly. However, his strength was undoubtedly too weak in the face of the black Tiger, who was already a cultivator. He gradually lost his strength in his struggle and finally stopped moving.

After killing the handyman, Black Tiger pulled open his clothes and placed his palm on the left side of his chest where his heart was.

He began to fantasize about the familiar trajectory of the spirit Qi in his mind. Faint light spots slowly appeared around him and seeped into the servant's body.

The spider web-like blood-red threads spread out from the laborer's heart and gradually covered his body.

During the refining process, the servant's body slowly shrank ...

Two hours later, the black Tiger walked out of the wooden house after swallowing the blood pill. It went to another place and started killing again.

After killing the two servants, Black Tiger returned to his room and logged into the game.

The first thing he did when he got online was to open his attribute panel.

Black Tiger (player)

[Level: 43]

[Spiritual root (special): basic (58/100)]

(Has comprehended the foundation stealing technique, able to steal other people's spirit roots to feed on one's own spirit root)

[Cultivation method progress: Foundation stealing stage level 1,2.8%]

.....

Seeing that the quality of its spirit root had increased once again, the black Tiger's face revealed a sinister smile.

The quality of the spiritual roots of the two handymen he had killed this time was not bad. It had actually increased the quality of his base level by 40%. It could be said that he had gained a lot.

The black Tiger only understood how important the quality of the spirit root was after it started cultivating.

His previous poor quality spiritual roots were very wasteful during cultivation. He could only preserve 2% of the spiritual energy he absorbed into his body. It could be said that he was useless on the path of cultivation.

However, it was different when the quality was upgraded to the basic level. Not only was the speed of absorbing Reiki increased by 20%, but the Reiki

that was absorbed into the body was also increased to 10%. The cultivation speed was more than five times faster.

This made the black Tiger understand that the most important thing for it was to improve the quality of its spiritual roots. After all, as long as the quality was up, perhaps a day's cultivation would be equivalent to a year's cultivation when it had a low-quality spiritual root, or even more.

However, he could only kill two handymen a day. He had to spend the rest of his time earning soul coins. Otherwise, he would definitely be beaten up the next day.

Before he obtained the strength to go against the black prison sect, Black Tiger chose to bear with it.

With the cultivation method's attributes, the black Tiger's current speed of killing monsters was much faster. By the time morning arrived, it had completed a day's worth of soul coins. Then, it sent the soul coins to the black Tiger sect disciple in the form of mail, who was responsible for managing it.

However, on this morning's morning routine check, the black prison sect disciples were surprised to find that two more handymen were missing.

Chapter 337 - Lu Wu'S Discovery

With the continuous disappearance of servants, the disciples of the black prison sect had already felt that something was not right.

They had also gone to look for the missing laborers several times before, but they had not found any traces of those who had escaped.

At that time, they thought that the servants might have been eaten by the wild beasts in the Emperor tomb mountain range, so they didn't think much of it.

However, now that this situation had occurred, it became somewhat abnormal.

Although there would be handymen in the black Dungeon Village who couldn't stand such days and chose to run away every year, the frequency of such things happening was very low. Most of the handymen had long been numb to their current life. In addition, they had bloody demonstrations time and time again, so only a few of them had the idea of running away.

However, the frequency at which it happened was a little high, especially in recent times. It actually happened in succession, and this made the black prison sect disciples feel that things were not good.

Xiao Lang's eyes swept across the crowd of servants, as if he wanted to see something.

The black Tiger was hidden in the crowd of handymen, looking up at him with the same wooden expression as the other handymen around him, not revealing the slightest flaw.

After asking the servants again, Xiao lang still couldn't get an answer. He could only dismiss the servants and send his disciples out to search again.

At the same time, the black Tiger made a plan for its daily schedule.

Now that he had started cultivating, his body was getting better and better, so his work was much easier than usual. After quickly finishing a day's work, he would find a place to hide and cultivate when he was out fetching water for the last part of the task. Then, he would return to the sect.

After that, he would look for handymen to assassinate, refine, and devour them during the game time at night. He would come online to save soul coins in the last few hours.

Everything was carried out in an orderly manner. The black Tiger's spirit root grew strong and healthy, and in just half a month's time, it had reached the level of excellent spirit root (Grade 3).

It was dark every day, and the black Tiger once again went out to search for tonight's prey.

This time, he had his eyes on a female servant's room. After quietly entering the room, he used the same method to kill the servant.

However, just as he was about to refine it, the wooden door was suddenly pushed open.

“So it was you who was secretly causing trouble!” The person who entered was a disciple in charge who was holding a leather whip.

(The black prison sect disciples' levels are divided from low to high: Steward disciple, inner disciple, Pro-disciple, true disciple, head disciple, elder, sect master)

Seeing this, the black Tiger's heart suddenly shrank and it hurriedly tried to escape. However, this managing disciple had already blocked its way, and the black Tiger had no way to escape.

For the past three years, Black Tiger had always been afraid of the sect's disciples. Although he was already a cultivator, this fear was still deeply imprinted in his heart and could not be erased.

“How do you want to die? By the way, where are the other handymen you killed hiding?” The steward laughed evilly as he approached the black Tiger.

The black Tiger didn't answer, but kept retreating.

Seeing that the black Tiger did not respond to him, the managing disciple stretched out his hand and whipped the black leather whip hard on the black Tiger's body, causing it to shiver.

“I'll ask you one more time, where did the other handymen you killed go?”

In fact, the managing disciple was not surprised that the black Tiger had killed the other servants.

The reason was simple. In such an environment, it was too easy for the mental state of the servants to go wrong. There had been servants who had gone crazy and attacked other servants, but the only thing that puzzled him was why the bodies of the dead servants had disappeared.

Looking at the black Tiger that was curled up in the corner, the managing disciple's heart was filled with hostility. In his eyes, the factotum was just an animal that was kept in captivity. Disobeying him would only lead to death.

The black Tiger, who was hiding in the corner, looked very pitiful. However, as a disciple of the black prison sect, he never cared about the weak because he was a cultivator who was one level higher than others. He should have been at the top of the food chain.

Just as the black leather whip was about to come down again, a fierce light suddenly flashed in the black Tiger's eyes. Its body suddenly pounced forward. The managing disciple was caught off guard and he was heavily punched in the throat.

“Wu...Cough cough ...” The disciple quickly covered his neck, feeling that even breathing had become difficult.

Since he had made his move, the black Tiger was determined. He punched the right arm of the steward disciple again and quickly took the black leather whip from his hand. Then, he tied it around the steward disciple's neck and began to twist it.

There had never been an odd-job worker who dared to lay a hand on them. The steward disciple had not been able to react in time to the black Tiger's attack.

At this time, the black leather whip around his neck gradually tightened, and the thorns stabbed into his blood vessels. The disciple in charge was shocked and began to struggle with all his might. His hands kept hitting the black Tiger's body, leaving blood-red handprints.

However, the black Tiger did not dare to let go. He gritted his teeth and persevered. If this managing disciple did not die, then he would definitely die.

As the managing disciple continued to struggle, the black Tiger's eyes gradually became bloodshot. It could not help but spit out a mouthful of blood.

Although he was already a cultivator, there was still a big gap between his strength and the managing disciple's. The beating in his struggle had shaken the black Tiger's internal organs. If it was not for the fact that he was determined to die, he would have collapsed long ago.

As he gritted his teeth and persevered, the managing disciple's struggle became weaker and weaker, and finally, there was no more movement.

However, the black Tiger still did not let go. It held the black leather whip tightly and only let go after five minutes. Then, it lay on the ground and began to pant.

After some time, the black Tiger, who had recovered some of its strength, looked at the managing disciple with a ferocious expression.

Since he had already killed this steward disciple, he naturally would not waste it. The quality of these cultivators ‘spiritual roots must be extremely high, which would be of great help to him.

This was the truth. In this era where spiritual energy was lacking, those who could cultivate were undoubtedly geniuses with high-quality spiritual roots.

However, the refining process took about five hours. The black Tiger then turned the managing disciple into a blood pill and swallowed it. After that, it spent another two hours refining the other handyman before returning to its wooden house.

After logging into the game, Black Tiger opened the attribute panel as usual.

Black Tiger (player)

[Level: 45]

[Spiritual root (special): superior-grade spiritual root (6/100)]

(Has comprehended the foundation stealing technique, able to steal other people’s spirit roots to feed on one’s own spirit root)

[Cultivation method progress: Foundation stealing stage level 1 5.9%]

Because refining it had wasted a lot of time, the black Tiger knew that it would definitely be beaten up tomorrow. However, after seeing its spirit root being improved, the black Tiger felt that it was all worth it.

This was because he knew that he was one step closer to breaking free from the black prison sect’s control.

.....

Recently, Lu Wu noticed something strange.

The cause was an abnormal notification from the divine artifact. The players in a small area had been dying abnormally every day, and it had

been going on for more than half a month.

In fact, it was normal for players to die. After all, there were a lot of players in punitive expedition online, and it was normal for players to die in real life.

The souls of the dead players would also be pulled into the space by the divine weapon.

For these dead players, Lu Wu would not directly throw them back into the game.

After all, players were more or less connected to each other, and many of them were friends in real life. If they died in real life but still continued to play the game, it would definitely cause a huge sensation.

For this group of dead players, Lu Wu adopted four solutions.

Ordinary players were basically transformed into NPCs, washed away their past memories, and then continued playing the game with different identities.

By doing so, the other players would not be able to discover the problem, which was very safe.

What they didn't know was that the NPC they were talking to might be their friend who had passed away in real life.

However, Lu Wu wouldn't do this for the more talented players.

Lu Wu would store the souls of these players in the artifact space, ready to show a new face at the right time and continue to appear in the game as players.

Because this group of players was very valuable, they could also create benefits for Lu Wu that ordinary players couldn't compare to. It was suitable for him to continue to exist as a player.

Of course, the memories of these players would also be modified. Although they knew that they were players and knew everything in the real world, under the supervision of the artifact, they could not reveal the secrets of the game and existed as another kind of player.

This type of player was not connected to the real world and only existed in the game. However, there were not many such players, less than a hundred of them.

There was also a special type of player with super talents.

Lu Wu would not turn this group of players into NPCs or players. Instead, he would exile their souls to the most mysterious “wandering sea” in the yellow spring sea. He would let them wander in that sea and explore the secrets of the sea.

The wandering Sea area was different from the other sea areas in the yellow spring sea. It was the location of the yellow spring sea god, the central Holy Land of the entire yellow spring Sea area, and also the place where the souls of most dead creatures in the real world returned to.

That place was close to the six paths of reincarnation, and it was also a place where souls reincarnated.

And what Lu Wu needed these super talented players to do was very simple, that was to find other talent souls for him and use them for his own use (for details, please see the “special chapter” at the end of chapter 195)

As for the players who were registered by Lu Wu and were affectionately called “cheater” by other players, Lu Wu basically guaranteed that they would not die in real life and marked them with safety marks with the artifact to ensure their safety.

Because they would be the most important force in the scourge Army that Lu Wu was going to build in the future, Lu Wu would naturally not let anything happen to them.

However, Lu Wu was still quite concerned about the deaths of the players, so he asked Bei Li to set up a death monitoring system in the artifact. The artifact would monitor the deaths 24 hours a day and divide the deaths into three standards: normal deaths, accidental deaths, and abnormal accidental deaths.

So this time, the continuous abnormal deaths in a small area naturally attracted Lu Wu's attention.

According to the feedback from the divine weapon, there were only 3000 players in that small area. However, there were players dying of unnatural accidents every day, which was a little unusual.

In order to find out the reason, Lu Wu directly used the artifact to search for the soul information of all the players in the area.

Then, he found out that out of the 3000 players, more than 100 of them were cultivators. Although most of the cultivators 'strength could only be considered to have just entered the threshold of cultivators, it still surprised Lu Wu.

After all, it was not easy to have a gathering point for cultivators in this Dharma ending age.

When he was checking the soul information of these players, Lu Wu also found something that surprised him.

Because one of the players was the potential-level player "Black Tiger", who he had been paying close attention to recently and had begun to practice the "Foundation stealing technique" created by the evil god. He was expected to be recorded in Lu Wu's small notebook.

In an in-depth investigation, Lu Wu also found the demonic sect's stronghold, the "black prison sect," which had an outrageous style of doing things. He also found out the bad acts that Black Tiger had done in order to survive.

Lu Wu, who had a good outlook on life, was about to use his authority three times, but he was stopped by Bei Li.

The reason was very simple. Bei Li had discovered something interesting, and this matter had a lot to do with Lu Wu. As long as they waited for the incident to ferment, they might have unexpected gains.

Chapter 338 - I'M Back!

Recently, strange things had been happening in the black prison sect.

Every day, there would be odd-job workers disappearing mysteriously. At that time, the sect disciples all thought that it was the workers who had escaped. However, as the number of missing workers continued to increase, they realized that things were not as simple as they thought.

The situation had become more and more serious over the past few days.

It wasn't just the handymen who had gone missing, even the sect disciples were unable to escape this calamity.

In just a few days, five managing disciples and two inner disciples had disappeared just like the handymen. They were nowhere to be found, Dead or Alive.

Whether it was the servants or the disciples of the black prison sect, everyone was in a state of panic.

This morning, all the servants gathered in front of the mountain Gate.

Due to the frequent disappearances, the disciples of the various sects were the first to count the number of servants.

Indeed, just as they had guessed, another five people were missing.

All of this was too strange. More and more people went missing every day, and all of them disappeared without a trace, as if they had evaporated from the world. It was truly strange.

After dismissing the odd-job workers, the worried black prison sect disciples gathered together and began to discuss how to deal with this strange situation.

During this period, the disciples all raised their own speculations.

Some said that a spiritual beast had entered the village at night and devoured the servants, leaving at dawn. There were also people who speculated that the resentment accumulated by the village's handymen for many years had given birth to bloodthirsty vengeful spirits, which led to such a bizarre incident.

In short, the disciples of the sect had different opinions, but their guesses could not stand up to scrutiny.

First of all, wild beasts would definitely leave traces if they entered the village to eat people. This kind of disappearance was obviously not done by wild beasts.

The term vengeful spirit was even more exaggerated because newly born vengeful spirits did not have consciousness. If they were really vengeful spirits, they would not stop until all the servants were killed. Moreover, the creatures killed by vengeful spirits all died in a miserable way. It was impossible for not even a corpse to be left.

Many speculations were overturned one by one during the discussion. In the end, the disciples still had no clue.

At this moment, the eldest disciple Xiao lang spoke,”

“How about this? I'll go get master. You guys continue to investigate. From now on, we'll split into groups of three and search the servant village in secret. See if we can find any clues!”

Since Xiao lang had spoken, the disciples naturally did not dare to disobey.

In fact, in their eyes, odd-job workers were no different from livestock in captivity. They were even worse than livestock. Although they could not find out the reason for their disappearance, they did not care. Therefore, they were naturally unwilling to patrol the night for odd-job workers.

However, things were different now, because the disappearance had involved a sect disciple, which made them feel a sense of crisis. In addition to that, since the head disciple Xiao lang had spoken, they could only agree. After all, this matter might also involve them.

.....

Emperor tomb mountain range, beside the forest by the inner Lake.

The black Tiger sat cross-legged on the ground, constantly breathing in and out the thin spiritual energy in the forest.

The spirit Qi seeped into his body bit by bit, strengthening his physical qualities. His dark skin was covered with a thin layer of mist under the nourishment of the spirit Qi, shining with a Black Luster.

The black Tiger was no longer the same as before. It sat there like a bloodthirsty Tiger crouching on the ground, as if it would burst out and devour people at any time.

In more than a month's time, the black Tiger had already taken more than a hundred lives. These people were all refined into blood pills by him without exception, becoming nutrients for his spirit root.

As the quality of his spirit root continued to improve, his cultivation progress became faster and faster. His strength also became stronger and he was one step closer to his goal.

Now, the black Tiger's hunting targets were no longer limited to handymen. Those sect disciples were also its hunting targets.

However, the black prison sect had recently started to pay attention to the bizarre disappearance cases. Every night, there would be a large number of sect disciples patrolling the village. It had become very difficult for the black Tiger to find the targets it wanted to devour.

However, this didn't stop the black Tiger.

Since he could not kill anyone within the village, he chose to kill someone outside the black Dungeon Village.

After all, there were many odd-job workers who had to go out to chop firewood and fetch water every day, so the black Tiger still had a lot of hunting opportunities.

It could be said that even though the black prison sect was heavily guarded, the growth of the black Tiger's strength had never slowed down. Instead, it grew faster and faster.

Moreover, Black Tiger had hidden himself very well. He was still that dull-looking young man in the sect and had never been suspected. Even the disciples of the black prison sect had never thought that the person who could kill servants and sect disciples would be an errand boy who could be beaten and scolded at will.

During this period of time, the black Tiger realized that it was becoming more and more cold-blooded.

Just a few days ago, he had killed an errand boy who had helped him before. That errand boy was one of the few friends he had in the black Dungeon Village.

However, the black Tiger still did not hesitate. No matter how much he begged, the black Tiger still did not let him go.

At this moment, Black Tiger suddenly remembered a sentence that the sect disciples had said.

“We are cultivators, which means we are one level higher than you. You handymen are animals, and you deserve to die!”

This sentence sounded so crazy to Black Tiger at that time. He didn't treat people as humans, but he still spoke so righteously.

However, in the eyes of the black Tiger, this sentence was very true. The strong preying on the weak was human nature. The so-called kindness

could only exist in a peaceful world. However, this was the black prison sect, a land of a demon sect that ate people without spitting out their bones. Only the fiercer and more cunning one was, the better one could survive.

Unconsciously, Black Tiger realized that his thoughts were no different from those of the black prison sect disciples. He had lived the life that he hated the most.

However, Black Tiger did not regret it, because he just wanted to live without fear.

All his changes were due to the black prison sect, so he wanted to become stronger, stronger than the black prison sect disciples by a food chain level, and then eat them all up. He wanted to repay them in the craziest way possible and thank them for letting him understand the principle of the law of the jungle.

At this time, the black Tiger had completely darkened. He knew that his actions were extremely cruel, but he did not feel that he had done anything wrong.

As the sky gradually darkened, the black Tiger stopped cultivating.

After standing up, the fierce aura on his body dissipated, and his face returned to its wooden and slightly fearful expression. He picked up the wooden bucket of water and began to run into the village.

On the way back, the black Tiger met several groups of patrolling disciples, but they did not notice the difference in the black Tiger. They did not even look at him and passed by him.

They would never have thought that the handyman they had just passed by was the killer they had been looking for.

A few more days passed, and the black Tiger's devouring and growth continued. Even the elder who came out to investigate in person still did not find any clues.

The black Tiger was also accumulating power under their eyes, waiting for the moment to transform into a beast.

On this day, Black Tiger finished his chores as usual and was ready to go out of the village to fetch water.

Along the way, he began to observe the sect disciples around him, looking for targets to hunt.

As they neared the inner Lake, the black Tiger suddenly noticed a sect disciple who was alone.

However, the black Tiger didn't make a move. Instead, it ran straight into the inner Lake. At the same time, it kept observing its surroundings to prevent any ambushes.

Since he had decided to be a Hunter, he had to be vigilant.

The black prison sect was a demonic sect. After three years of contact, he knew how cunning these disciples were. If he wasn't careful, he would fall into their trap.

Moreover, the sect's disciples were now traveling in groups of three to five. It was very suspicious to go out alone, so the black Tiger did not dare to act rashly.

The black prison sect disciple seemed to have noticed the black Tiger as well. After staring at it for a while, he stopped paying attention to it and continued to walk forward.

When they arrived at the lakeside, the black Tiger began to fetch water, but its eyes continued to look around and check the situation.

Originally, he was prepared to cultivate here, but now was obviously not a good time. There was a sect disciple outside the inner Lake, and if he dawdled here for too long, it might arouse suspicion.

So, after the water was filled, the black Tiger got up and prepared to return with the wooden bucket.

When it saw the sect disciple again, the black Tiger shrank its head in fear and continued to run forward. At the same time, it continued to scan the surroundings to ensure that there was no ambush.

“Hey, stop!” At this moment, the sect disciple suddenly spoke.

The black Tiger stood on the spot without any hesitation. Then, it lowered its head and turned to the sect disciple. There was only humility in its expression.

“How many years have you been in the black prison sect?” The sect disciple approached step by step and stopped a meter away.

“Three ... Three years.” The black Tiger said with uncertainty.

The black Tiger’s tone was exactly the same as the other handymen. It was as if his numb life had made him forget the days. It could be said that there was no flaw in his speech.

The disciple nodded, then waved his hand impatiently.””Get lost,”

When the black Tiger heard this, it quickly turned around and left.

The sect disciple turned around and continued to look at the inner Lake.

However, at this time, the black Tiger, who was about to leave, suddenly turned around with a fierce look in his eyes. He punched the disciple’s back and pressed the back of his neck after the disciple fell to the ground. He punched the back of his head again and again, turning his head into a bloody mess.

After killing the disciple, the black Tiger did not hesitate. It dragged the disciple’s body into the inner Lake and followed the inner Lake to the place where it often hid and cultivated.

After the black Tiger left, the figure of an old man wearing a black elder’s robe appeared.

He looked in the direction of the black Tiger and smiled,”

“He’s indeed cunning. He actually took such a long time to Scout before making a move!”

Ever since the incidents of missing people had occurred frequently, the black prison sect had stipulated that three to five disciples were not allowed to travel alone unless it was necessary.

However, the murderer in the dark was very cunning and never appeared. This gave the elder “cold blood”, who was investigating the matter, a headache.

After a few days of fruitless investigation, han blood thought of a way to lure the murderer out.

For this reason, he had used the disciple who had just died as bait. In the past few days, he had changed several places where the handyman often appeared. He said that he wanted him to investigate the handyman alone, but in fact, Xue Han had long used him as bait and an abandoned pawn to lure the murderer in the dark.

The so-called bait was just the abandoned objects that would be eaten up the moment the wild beasts took the bait. The death of that disciple did not make cold blood feel the least bit moved.

However, what Han Xue did not expect was that the murderer in the dark was actually an errand boy. This was really beyond his expectations.

.....

At this moment, in a grass cave by the lakeside of the inner Lake, the black Tiger’s hands were pressed on the chest of the dead sect disciple, and he was constantly refining his flesh and blood with spirit Qi.

After the investigation was over and it was certain that there were no sect disciples hiding in the dark, the black Tiger chose to attack without hesitation.

In the eyes of the black Tiger, the value of sect disciples was far higher than that of handymen. It could be said that he had gained a lot this time.

However, at this moment, a black shadow appeared at the side, and then a palm hit the black Tiger's chest, sending him flying. He fell hard into the mud at the end of the grass hole.

“Tsk, tsk, tsk, I didn't expect you to be an errand boy. This is really unexpected!” Looking at the black Tiger on the ground, cold blood smiled.

As he spoke, Han Xue glanced at the blood-colored spider web that covered the chest of the dead disciple, and the smile on his face grew even wider.”

“A technique to devour flesh and blood to nourish oneself? How about we make a deal?”

The black Tiger quickly got up and stared at elder Xue Han, who was standing at the entrance of the grass cave. His heart sank.

He was very familiar with the path leading to the inner Lake. Before killing the disciple, he had carefully checked the surrounding places where people could hide and made sure that there was no ambush before he made his move. However, he did not expect that he would still be caught, and the one who made his move was actually an elder of the black prison sect.

Even though his strength was improving at a godly speed, he was still not the elder's match. The black Tiger groaned in his heart.

As for the so-called deal that the elder had proposed, the black Tiger did not believe it at all.

This was because this wasn't the exchange Hall. If one were to trade with someone of unequal strength, one would only be devoured until not even one's bones were left.

“If you tell me the devouring technique and tell me how I got it, I'll let you go. How about it?” Elder Xue Han continued to guide him patiently.

“Good! I'm telling you, let me go!” The black Tiger said vigilantly.

“Then come over here!” Elder Xue Han was still smiling.

As it approached the elder step by step, the black Tiger’s body suddenly burst forth, its five fingers forming a claw as it clawed at the elder’s throat.

However, elder Xue Han seemed to have anticipated that Black Tiger would attack. His expression did not change. He smiled and gently slapped forward, flipping Black Tiger over. Then he stepped forward, grabbed Black Tiger’s hair, and picked him up from the ground.

“I admire your personality and you’re suitable to be a disciple of my black prison sect. How about this, tell me what I want and I’ll take you in as my true disciple.” Elder Xue Han’s smile hid a dagger as he looked at Black Tiger.

“It’s a pity that I, a ferocious beast, can’t grow up. Otherwise, I’ll definitely devour you all!” The black Tiger glared at elder Xue Han fiercely.

At this moment, the black Tiger knew that he was no match for elder Xue Han. He would die if he handed over the cultivation method, and he would die if he didn’t.

“You’re a beast? Hahaha!” Elder cold blood couldn’t help but laugh when he heard Black Tiger’s words.

Thinking back to how Black Tiger had killed the servants and sect disciples, elder Xue Han felt that Black Tiger was ruthless, ruthless, and dark enough. He was a good seedling and was very suitable to become a black prison sect disciple.

Looking at the black Tiger, cold blood suddenly felt that it was a pity.

It was a pity that he had a treasure that he desired. In order to let as few people know about it as possible, it was better to kill him after obtaining it.

“Have you heard of the black prison sect ‘s’ insect devouring torture ‘? I’ll make a cut on your head and let the bloodworms enter through your scalp, eating your flesh bit by bit until you’re only a piece of skin. The process is

extremely painful, but I won't let you die before you become a piece of skin." Han Xue said threateningly while smiling.

"Sure, I want to try!" The black Tiger laughed maniacally and remained unmoved.

The smile on Han Xue's face froze. Obviously, the black Tiger's reaction was not what he wanted.

"I'll give you one last chance. Tell me your cultivation technique, or I'll make you wish you were dead!" Han Xue finally lost his patience.

"If I had more time, you would be nothing but food in my eyes. What a pity!" The black Tiger's eyes were filled with madness.

At this time, Han Blood had already realized that it was impossible for the black Tiger to tell him the cultivation method, and his face immediately showed anger.

The Furious Cold Blood reached out and slapped the black Tiger's head.

Blood spurted out, but the black Tiger was still laughing hysterically. His expression was filled with madness, and then he punched Han Blood's chest.

"You're looking for death!" Han Xue increased the strength of his hand. This palm cracked the top of Black Tiger's head, and white brain matter burst out. Black Tiger's fist before his death also smashed into his chest, forcing him to take a few steps back.

Feeling the burning pain in his chest, he lifted his clothes and a fist mark was clearly visible.

Looking at the black Tiger on the ground, Xue Han snorted. He was really angry. He didn't think that the black Tiger would be so stubborn.

However, just as Han Blood bent down to check if the black Tiger was dead, a cloud of black mist suddenly floated out of the black Tiger's head and turned into a black palm in the air. It grabbed Han Blood's neck.

“Ka BA!”

The sudden attack caught cold blood off guard, and his neck was instantly broken by the arm formed by the black mist.

“Hahaha, I, the demonic god, have finally returned! Beili, the game is not over yet. Let’s continue!” The evil God’s crazy laughter came from the black mist.

He had planned for millions of years. Although he had lost to Bei Li, he had already thought of a way to resurrect himself. Everything he had done was for today’s return so that he could continue fighting with the North divergent God Bei Li.

.....

At this time, Lu Wu and Bei Li, who were staring at the screen and munching on melon seeds, suddenly stood up at the same time and started clapping. Then, they also laughed along with the laughter in the black fog.

Chapter 339 - Otherworldly Demon

Looking at the evil demon God laughing wildly in the image, Lu Wu and Bei Li, the two old cunning men, could not help but laugh out loud.

In fact, not only were they not surprised by the resurrection of the evil demon God, but they were even a little surprised.

Bei Li had already discovered the problem when the divine artifact was analyzing the “great art of Foundation snatching”. This cultivation technique was not as simple as they had thought. It contained a killing intent.

[Foundation stealing technique (God-level cultivation technique Volume 1)]:

[Cultivation technique information: this cultivation technique was created by the ancient evil demon God in the blue Void big domain. It contains the essence of the evil demon God’s lifetime cultivation. It can seize other people’s cultivation Foundation and turn it into its own use.]

In the analysis of the divine weapon, the surface meaning of this technique was that it could seize the foundation of others for one’s own use, but in fact, there was a hidden meaning, which was to seize the foundation of the cultivator of this technique for the use of the evil demon God.

Lu Wu didn’t notice it at that time, but Bei Li had already noticed it.

Therefore, when Lu Wu was about to give all the players in the black prison sect access, Bei Li stopped him because she had a way to make the resurrected evil demon God fall into the trap successfully.

The resurrected evil god was just a consciousness that had been awakened in the black Tiger’s soul. In other words, he did not have his own soul at all,

because he was attached to the black Tiger's soul.

However, the black Tiger was a player, and the player's soul was controlled by the divine weapon, which meant that it was controlled by Lu Wu.

The evil demon God had planned for this for a million years. He wanted to use the recovery of his cultivation technique to start the chess game again. However, the moment he was resurrected, he had already lost.

However, Lu Wu did not intend to capture the evil demon God into the divine artifact space now, because the time was not right yet. At this time, the evil demon God had already become a chess piece planted by Lu Wu and Bei Li, and it was impossible for it to escape.

However, it had to be said that the evil demon God was a true genius. He used the power of law to scatter his consciousness and integrate it into the world. Only by following the fixed trajectory of the cultivation technique to absorb the spiritual energy of the world would his scattered consciousness be summoned back bit by bit, and enter his soul with the cultivation technique.

This step was hidden too deeply, and even the gods would find it difficult to discover. As long as one cultivated this technique, they would definitely be parasitized by the evil demon God, and in the end, the evil demon God would use this body to be reborn.

However, Bei Li, the God of North divergent, did not take a fancy to his cultivation technique and abandoned it at the border of the two large domains. The evil demon God's original plan of parasitizing Bei Li was completely fruitless.

In fact, Lu Wu was also very curious about why he gave up this skill in his previous life. Even Lu Wu felt that this skill that robbed other people's talents to grow was really powerful and should be very tempting. Could it be that he found a problem with this skill in his previous life?

Lu Wu asked Bei Li about this.

Bei Li's answer was that in Lu Wu's previous life, he felt that the "following fate heavenly method" that he created was the best, and the other skills were all rubbish. He didn't accept any rebuttal!

Lu Wu was speechless.

.....

Emperor tomb mountain range, inner Lake.

The evil demon God's consciousness turned into a thick black mist and rolled in the air.

At this moment, the evil demon God was very excited, because he had been resurrected, and everything could start over again.

Although it was a pity that he didn't obtain Bei Li's soul, at least he was alive. With the foundation stealing technique and his own godhood on the yin God List, he would be able to rise again.

Looking at the black Tiger that had stopped moving on the ground, the black mist that the evil god had turned into suddenly descended and pounced on the bodies of the black prison sect elder Han Xue and another disciple who had died long ago.

Although it was an Age of Chaos, under the call of the evil demon God's powerful consciousness, the thin spiritual energy gathered here madly, carving a Foundation-stealing blood array on the bodies of Xue Han and the other black prison sect disciple. As the spiritual energy entered their bodies, their bodies began to melt rapidly, finally turning into two pills that shone with a blood-red luster.

Then, the black mist wrapped around the two blood pills and rushed into the black Tiger's body.

At this moment, the black Tiger was not dead yet. Its soul flickered and trembled slightly. A black hole slowly formed beside it, as if its soul would leave its body at any time and enter it.

However, after the evil demon God entered his body, the black Tiger's soul was locked in his body. With the nourishment of the blood pill, it gradually stopped being restless.

At this time, he could not let the black Tiger die. Although his consciousness was strong, it was too little. Killing Han Xue had consumed a part of his consciousness. He still needed the black Tiger's soul to nourish his consciousness, and then he could choose the time to occupy the black Tiger's soul.

If it wasn't for the urgency of the situation just now, he wouldn't have woken up.

After an unknown amount of time, the black Tiger slowly opened its eyes.

The moment it woke up, the black Tiger suddenly got up and began to observe its surroundings vigilantly.

I didn't die?

At this time, the black Tiger was surprised to find that the bodies of elder Xue Han and the disciple had disappeared. Only their clothes were left on the ground, but the people were gone.

Black Tiger did not believe that elder cold blood had let him go. There was no good person in the black prison sect.

At this moment, the black Tiger suddenly thought of something and quickly reached out to touch its head.

The crack on its head was still there, and when he touched it, he felt a sharp pain, causing the black Tiger's face to Twitch slightly.

He didn't die even after this?

Black Tiger could not understand what was going on. Why was he still alive, but elder Xue Han and the black prison sect disciple had disappeared?

While he was confused, a voice suddenly appeared in the black Tiger's mind."

"Brat, I saved you!"

The sudden voice startled the black Tiger. It quickly looked around, but it didn't see anyone.

"I'm In Your Mind, you can't find me!"

"Who are you?" The black Tiger asked vigilantly.

"I'm An Evil God. The great art of Foundation snatching that you've learned was created by me!" The hoarse voice in his mind was clear, and the black Tiger could not help but shudder.

"Then why did you appear in my mind?"

"You've learned my cultivation technique, so you're my disciple. I've died a long time ago, and this is just a wisp of my consciousness. I'll be awakened after you practice your cultivation technique. I just saved you!" The evil demon God continued.

"Many thanks!" The black Tiger immediately said.

At this time, the black Tiger was on guard. Although the evil demon God had saved him and had not done anything harmful to him while he was unconscious, this consciousness had appeared in his mind after all, and it really made him a little worried.

After living in the black prison sect for a long time, Black Tiger was very wary of all uncontrollable factors.

"Kid, which region is this? why is the spiritual Qi so thin? Do you know the northern divergent God? And where did you get your cultivation method?" As he did not snatch the black Tiger's soul, writing Demon God did not obtain the black Tiger's memories. He could only ask.

"Big domain? God Bei Qi?" The black Tiger was stunned.

How could the so-called big region and Beiqi's Black Tiger not be familiar with each other? wasn't this something from the war game?

“Are you from the game world?”

“What game world?” The evil demon God clearly didn't understand.

The black Tiger thought about it and told everything he knew to the evil demon God.

After hearing the black Tiger's explanation, the evil demon God's consciousness shook violently.

All of this was just too unbelievable to the evil demon God.

This was a huge conspiracy, and it was done flawlessly. There was no interference from the heaven realm or the netherworld Emperor. Everything was hidden so perfectly that even the knowledgeable evil demon gods trembled.

“Who is it? Is it Beili?”

At this moment, the evil god suddenly remembered something. Bei Li, the God of North divergent, had once recruited him, hoping that he would join the heaven defying Alliance.

When he thought about the plan to use the game as a cover to form an Army of players, the evil god once again firmly believed that it was Bei Li's idea!

However, the evil demon God suddenly had a bad feeling.

Although he felt that Bei Li's ability was not enough to completely control the black Tiger's soul, as a player, there must have been some kind of control technique left in the black Tiger's soul. He had to erase it as soon as possible. Otherwise, the soul that he had taken over would fall into Bei Li's hands.

“Kid, from today onwards, I’ll help you grow as fast as possible. What you need to do is to speed up the cultivation progress of the ‘great Foundation stealing technique’!”

The evil demon God’s words made the black Tiger Alert again. He did not believe that the evil demon God who could create such a vicious cultivation technique would be so kind. However, he did not know how to expel the evil demon God from his mind, and his heart was filled with worry.

“I know what you’re thinking. Don’t worry, I won’t hurt you. Although I need a body to reincarnate, it won’t be you. As long as you’re strong enough, you can find a better body for me!”

30% true, 70% false. The evil demon God was born from the black Tiger’s soul, so it was very troublesome to exchange souls. However, these words once again lowered the black Tiger’s vigilance.

“What should I do?” The black Tiger continued to ask because he was too eager to become stronger.

“Tell me your current situation, I’ll think of a way!” The evil demon God replied.

The black Tiger did not hide anything and told the evil demon God about his situation.

After hearing the black Tiger’s description, the evil demon God laughed out loud.”

“This is considered a demonic sect?”

In Black Tiger’s description, the black prison sect was unpardonable and had no regard for human life, raising servants as slaves. However, in the eyes of the evil god, they were still too kind.

The she bi corpse race’s undying torture, the death garden that was watered with the blood of countless creatures, the great domain sacrifice, and so on

... In the eyes of the evil god, everything that he had done was countless times more evil than the black prison sect described by the black Tiger.

However, this could not be called a demonic sect. It was only cruel and had nothing to do with the word 'demonic'.

In the eyes of the evil demon God, the actions of the black prison sect were like child's play. It was really laughable and did not deserve to be called a 'demonic sect'.

In the demonic God's mind, there was only one demonic sect, and that was the "heavenly demon" sect established by the human Emperor of the human realm. That was the true demonic sect.

They used the endless outer realms outside the Three Realms as their hunting ground, hunting down the various forces in the endless outer realms. When they were crazy, they would even fight against 28 endless outer realm forces at the same time with just one faction. That kind of madness and structure was completely incomparable to them. It was because of this action that they were called demons by the people of the Three Realms, and even called extraterrestrial demons by many outer realm forces!

(The endless outer realm is equivalent to a great universe, and the three Realms is equivalent to an incomparably huge planet. Therefore, the Three Realms are also an outer realm power in the eyes of the outer realm powers, just like how we are foreigners in the eyes of foreigners.)

In the eyes of the evil demon God, that was a true demon, and it was completely different from the cruelty of the black prison sect.

It was also the height that he had been pursuing all his life. He wanted to become as fearless as the extraterrestrial demon. He wanted to kill as he pleased. All living things were his targets. So when he heard the black Tiger describe the black prison sect as a demonic sect, other than sneering, he was even a little angry.

Because in the eyes of the evil demon God, they didn't even have the right to become demon slaves, so how could they be worthy of the name of the demonic sect?

Chapter 340 - In-Depth Investigation

Emperor tomb mountain range, black prison village.

The sky was already dark, and the black Tiger that had returned to the black Dungeon Village could not escape the whipping of the black whip.

Fortunately, after the black Tiger became a cultivator, its skin was rough and its flesh was thick. This beating was no longer as difficult as before.

After returning to the wooden house, the black Tiger began to plan the next step of its hunting plan.

After he explained his situation to the evil demon God, the evil demon God gave him a way to help him speed up his growth.

Blood sacrifice of the entire black prison sect!

He would refine all the people he enslaved, including the sect disciples, into the food he needed to grow.

This thought seemed extremely crazy to the black Tiger, but to the evil demon God, it was just a small matter.

Moreover, he had even planned out how Black Tiger would do it. As long as Black Tiger followed his instructions, everything would not be a problem.

The evil demon God's thoughts were very simple. In his mind, there were tens of thousands of blood sacrifice arrays, all of which could refine the entire black prison sect in one go.

Most of these formations required one's own energy to operate, but there were also a few that relied on absorbing the spiritual Qi of heaven and earth

to operate on their own.

However, this time, the evil demon God didn't use a formation that operated in these two ways.

After all, he was now in the Dharma ending age of the human world, and it was difficult to operate the formation by relying on the spiritual Qi of heaven and earth.

The other type was even less desirable. With the black Tiger's current strength, it would be sucked dry the moment the blood sacrifice array was activated. It would not be able to support the operation of the blood sacrifice array at all.

That was why the evil demon God thought of the laws.

The power of the divine law was everywhere. It was the original power that built the world. Even though the human world was in the Age of Chaos, the power of the divine law had never faded or decreased. This was because the divine law was a special energy body that had always been constant. If it dissipated, the Three Realms would collapse.

So the evil god thought of using the power of law to run this blood sacrifice array.

Although the evil demon God was only a consciousness at the moment, he was once an ancient God and had a deep understanding of the laws. He even had traces of five laws engraved on his body, which would not be erased even if he died. Therefore, it was not difficult for the evil demon God to borrow the power of the laws.

However, before that, the evil demon God still needed the black Tiger to make many preparations.

He first started to teach the black Tiger how to set up the blood sacrifice array. Then, he started to prepare the materials. Since it was the blood sacrifice array, blood was the best material to outline the array without the help of mystical materials.

With the current situation of the black Tiger, there were two ways to obtain blood. One was the blood of wild beasts, and the other was the blood of handymen. These two ways could be done at the same time.

As the blood sacrifice array occupied a large area, the amount of blood required was naturally huge. Therefore, the blood of wild beasts was the main source of blood, followed by the handymen. After all, killing handymen was risky.

There was a very important step in the process of drawing the blood sacrifice array, which was to hide the blood sacrifice array. It must not be discovered before the blood sacrifice array was completed, or all the previous efforts would be in vain.

This step could also be easily done by the evil demon God, because the 'illusion law' of the five laws that he mastered could completely conceal the blood sacrifice array and not be discovered.

After all the plans were finalized, the black Tiger began to act ...

For half a month, the black Tiger would finish his day's work as soon as possible every day, and then start collecting the blood needed to outline the formation when he went out to fetch water.

He would not store the blood. Instead, he would use it directly on the outline of the blood sacrifice array outside the black Dungeon Village. Fortunately, the black Dungeon Village was shrouded in a thick fog all year round, so the black Tiger's sneaky act of forming the array around the village was not discovered.

Everything was going according to the plan of the evil god.

It was also because of this plan of the evil demon God that the black Tiger's recent hunting of servants and sect disciples had slowed down.

However, the people in the black prison sect were still in a state of panic.

Because this time, not only did the disciples go missing, even the elders went missing.

The disciples who searched the mountain only found elder Xue Han's clothes by the lakeside, but they could not find him. It was as if he had disappeared from the world like the other missing people.

The strange things that happened frequently during this period of time even alarmed the black prison sect's sect master, Xuan Tianji.

After the investigation was fruitless, Xuan Tianji could no longer sit still. He personally came out to investigate the matter.

After that, Xuan Tianji summarized all the clues he had based on the descriptions of his disciples and began to analyze them through the night.

In his investigation, Xuan Tianji discovered that since the first bizarre disappearance, there were already 378 people missing. However, there were very few clues as all the missing people only left behind their clothes. There were no other clues that could prove what attacked them, and they could not find the Hunter based on these tiny clues.

However, Xuan Tianji had discovered a trend in the number of missing people.

In the beginning, the ones who went missing were all odd-job workers, then the managing disciples, and after a few days, the inner disciples, and then the pro-disciples. As the days passed, it seemed that the upper limit of the strength of the missing people was also increasing.

It was as if the murderer in the dark was getting stronger, especially after he killed elder blood frost. His strength had improved by leaps and bounds.

This guess shocked Xuan Tianji because this kind of growth was too terrifying. Xuan Tianji would not believe that there was such rapid cultivation progress in this Dharma ending age.

Even if the murderer in the dark treated the missing people as food, it was impossible for him to improve so quickly. Based on Xuan Tianji's understanding, it was already good enough for him to absorb 1% of the essence from the food he refined. It was impossible for him to grow so quickly. He immediately rejected this speculation.

However, another possibility jumped out of Xuan Tianji's mind.

What if the murderer had the ability to refine the blood food 100%? this was the only way to explain how the murderer in the dark could grow so quickly!

In order to find out what the problem was, Xuan Tianji had been constantly running around the area where the people had gone missing for the past few days.

In the end, he did find a clue. In the watergrass cave where elder Xue Han had disappeared, he actually found traces of dried white brain matter on the ground.

After discovering traces of dried brain matter, Xuan Tianji was even more certain of his guess.

Obviously, a battle had broken out here. Although it was not clear whether the brain belonged to elder Xue Han or the Hunter, since the brain had been beaten out, why was there no blood?

This already showed that the hidden hunters had the ability to devour blood and were growing in this way.

Although these clues could not directly help Xuan Tianji find the hidden hunters, they gave him a direction to continue his investigation.

At this moment, Xuan Tianji also felt a sense of urgency. This was because the hunter in the dark was growing rapidly. He had to find it before it became strong enough to kill him.

In his investigation, Xuan Tianji had thought of the possibility of an invasion, but this speculation was quickly overturned.

After all, there were plenty of blood and flesh food in the cities outside that could be devoured. The reason why they came all the way to the black prison sect's territory and started to grow from devouring handymen was highly likely to be the doing of an internal member.

Thus, Xuan Tianji thought of the elders in the sect. However, after thinking about it carefully, Xuan Tianji could not help but shake his head. If those elders really had the ability to do so, then he would definitely not be the sect master. There was no need to wait for decades before doing so.

It wasn't an external enemy or an elder, but it was very likely that it was done by one of the black prison sect's own.

These few clues allowed Xuan Tianji to start investigating the recent happenings in the sect. With this investigation, Xuan Tianji suddenly came to a realization and realized where the problem was.

Among the recent events that had taken place in the black prison sect, there was one such event. He had announced that all the odd-job workers would start using the virtual helmet to help him earn soul coins!

Xuan Tianji was very clear about what was in war online.

There were fortuitous encounters in there, as well as some great opportunities that could affect reality!

The disappearance incident only occurred half a month after all the disciples and handymen in the sect started using the virtual helmet.

This time, Xuan Tianji's train of thought was suddenly enlightened.

By now, Xuan Tianji had already realized that the sect's disciples or handymen must have obtained a great opportunity in the game and obtained a powerful cultivation technique.

At the thought of this, Xuan Tianji's heart was filled with intense jealousy.

After all, he had been working hard in the game for several months and still couldn't get anything, but the other people in the sect had obtained it in just half a month. He was very indignant.

After knowing the reason, Xuan Tianji's investigation direction changed. He no longer looked for clues in real life, but turned his investigation towards the game.

He started browsing the official forums and scrolled Forward Day by Day to see if there were any big opportunities that had been announced to the entire region.

Xuan Tianji was undoubtedly very smart, and the direction of his investigation was also very accurate.

Soon, he found a post that a player had posted a month ago.

[That great God, come out and show off your 'great art of Foundation snatching'. The name of this technique is quite interesting, and I'm a little scared when I hear it (funny)] Crayon Shinchan

Foundation stealing technique!

Xuan Tianji could now confirm that this was the cultivation technique that the Hunter had learned. It was only after he had learned this cultivation technique that he had started hunting in reality.

Xuan Tianji then continued to flip through the pages. He needed an accurate target, and the players' posts could provide him with clues.

As he searched, Xuan Tianji quickly found another surprise.

[Cultivation technique? F * ck, it's the first time it's appeared. Big brother, come out and show off! Satisfy our curiosity! (Sounds of gongs and drums)]

(Attached image)(district-wide announcement: congratulations to Player Black Tiger for obtaining a God-tier cultivation technique "Foundation stealing technique"!)

Seeing the screenshot in the post, Xuan Tianji laughed out loud. This was exactly what he wanted. With a name, he would not have to worry about not being able to find the hidden hunter.

Xuan Tianji was certain that it was not the doing of a sect disciple, as he knew the names of all the sect disciples.

Now, the final clues all pointed to the handyman!

However, he wasn't too familiar with these odd-job workers. After all, in Xuan Tianji's eyes, these odd-job workers were just livestock that were kept in captivity. Why would he need to know their names?

However, the disciples in charge were very familiar with the name of the factotum that they managed. It was not difficult to find this factotum called "Black Tiger"!

.....

In the evening, an elder's voice came from within the sect. All the disciples, including the servants, rushed to the front of the sect.

After all the servants and disciples had arrived, Xuan Tianji came out personally this time. Without any hesitation, he asked,

"Whose name is Black Tiger?"

Xuan Tianji's question stunned the servants and disciples.

"Who here is called Black Tiger?" Xuan Tianji asked.

At this moment, Black Tiger's forehead was covered in sweat. He didn't know where he had been exposed. Moreover, because of the blood sacrifice array, his hunting frequency had decreased. Logically speaking, he shouldn't have given himself away.

At this time, Black Tiger had no idea that the players on the official forum had already sold him out.

“Sect leader, may I know why you are looking for this person?” An elder beside him asked doubtfully.

“He’s the hunter in the dark!”

Xuan Tianji’s words were shocking, and all the sect disciples and servants were in an uproar.

The black Tiger’s heart thumped when it heard this. All hope in its heart vanished, and the only thought in its mind was to escape.

At this time, the handymen standing beside the black Tiger suddenly dispersed, exposing him.

These handymen were naturally familiar with the black Tiger. Before the managing disciple could speak, they had already betrayed him.

Chapter 341 - Starting Another Go Game

After the handymen dispersed, the black Tiger, who was standing in the same place, was particularly eye-catching and became the focus of everyone's attention.

At this moment, the black Tiger's face turned pale.

Although he really wanted to escape, he was surrounded by black prison sect disciples. There were even elders and the sect master. It was impossible for him to escape with his strength.

Right, the evil demon God!

When he thought of the evil god, the black Tiger felt as if he had grabbed onto a life-saving straw. He roared madly in his mind, hoping that the evil god would be able to help him.

However, no matter how much the black Tiger roared, the evil demon God did not respond.

Looking at the black Tiger who was standing still, Xuan Tianji's face revealed a smile.

He walked down the steps and walked towards the black Tiger step by step. The surrounding disciples and handymen quickly made way for him.

As for the black Tiger, Xuan Tianji did not plan to kill him just like that. This was because he had a huge opportunity in the game.

How could he not covet a technique that could increase his strength so quickly in the Dharma ending age? although the black Tiger had to die, it had to wait until he squeezed out all the value from the black Tiger.

As he walked in front of the black Tiger, Xuan Tianji smiled,”

“The great art of Foundation snatching, is it?”

The black Tiger was shocked and blurted out, ””How did you know?”

Hearing the black Tiger admit it, Xuan Tianji was secretly happy. He looked at the black Tiger with a gaze full of desire.

With this cultivation method, he believed that he would no longer be troubled by the inability to break through to the next realm.

He had even planned to do the same after Black Tiger’s death and devour all the servants and disciples of the black prison sect, turning them into stepping stones on his path to becoming stronger.

At the thought of this, Xuan Tianji made his move. He reached out and grabbed the black Tiger’s right shoulder, pressing it down with force.

A huge force struck. The black Tiger could not resist at all and knelt down on the ground.

Knowing that it was going to die, the fear in the black Tiger’s eyes dissipated. Only a look of desperation remained on its face. It immediately raised its hand and smashed towards Xuan Tianji’s leg.

Bang! Bang!

The fist and the foot collided, and the black Tiger’s figure flew backward.

The servants in the surroundings retreated when they saw this, clearly not wanting to be affected.

Although the black Tiger’s strength had increased by leaps and bounds in a month or so, it was still inferior to Xuan Tianji, who had cultivated for decades. It could be said that he was completely crushed in all aspects.

Unwilling to give up, Black Tiger stood up and wanted to run away. However, just as he turned around, he saw a purple-robed elder of the black

prison sect standing behind him with a cold expression. Then, he kicked Black Tiger's chest and sent him back to Xuan Tianji.

Xuan Tianji squatted down slowly and smiled at the black Tiger,”

“I've said before that everything you obtain in the game has to be handed over. Have you forgotten?”

“I was almost able to kill all of you. I was just one step away. What a pity!” The black Tiger spat out a mouthful of blood and slowly got up with an indifferent expression.

At this moment, the evil demon God, which was the only thing that he could rely on, had no longer replied. It could be said that the situation was already hopeless, and the black Tiger was no longer afraid.

“Do you want the foundation stealing technique?” At this moment, the black Tiger spoke with a sinister smile.

Hearing this, Xuan Tianji and the surrounding elders' hearts trembled.

The surrounding elders were initially puzzled as to why Xuan Tianji didn't kill him directly. This was completely unlike his usual style of doing things. But now that they understood, their hearts were filled with desire.

“Don't you want to negotiate?” Xuan Tianji was a little surprised.

“Negotiating terms with you? don't joke with me. Can I guarantee anything when negotiating terms with an animal like you?” The black Tiger scoffed.

“Hahaha! You're right. So, what are your thoughts now?” The smile on Xuan Tianji's face grew wider.

“Would you believe me if I said I want to give you the cultivation technique now?” The black Tiger said indifferently.

At this moment, the black Tiger already knew that his life was in danger, but he really wanted to hand over his cultivation technique to Xuan Tianji.

He knew that as long as Xuan Tianji cultivated this technique, he would definitely come into contact with the evil demon God.

The black Tiger had never believed in the evil demon God who had created this evil cultivation technique, but he had no choice. He desired to become stronger, and even more so, he desired to break free from his current shackles.

The black Tiger had long understood that it would not be easy to make a deal with the devil, and it would have to pay a huge price.

However, he was even willing to feed his body to a Tiger, as long as he could become stronger!

Looking at Xuan Tianji's eyes that were filled with desire, the black Tiger suddenly felt a sense of carefreeness. He seemed to be able to see the scene of Xuan Tianji being devoured by the evil god one day in the future, and he could not help but smile.

"I'll give it to you now, do you dare to take it?" The black Tiger continued to laugh.

"Follow me!" Xuan Tianji's expression was calm as he turned around and walked up the mountain.

The black Tiger wasn't afraid and followed.

"Sect leader!"

"Sect leader!"

.....

Seeing this, the other elders couldn't help but open their mouths, their eyes filled with desire.

When Xuan Tianji heard this, he turned around."

“Junior brothers, don’t worry. After I check the authenticity of the cultivation method and confirm it, I’ll definitely tell you.”

After saying that, Xuan Tianji turned around and stepped onto the steps of the mountain Gate. His eyes were filled with killing intent.

These elders might not know the value of this cultivation technique, but how could he not know after careful investigation? moreover, he clearly knew how to become stronger after cultivating this cultivation technique.

In Xuan Tianji’s eyes, these junior brothers and sect disciples, including all the handymen, had long since become his stepping stones after obtaining the cultivation technique.

They followed Xuan Tianji up the mountain step by step. After a few hours, they arrived at the mountain peak where Xuan Tianji lived.

Xuan Tianji walked to a futon and sat down. He pointed to the futon not far away and motioned for Black Tiger to sit down.

The black Tiger did not hold back at all. He walked over and sat down.

“Go ahead, I’m listening!”

Without any hesitation, Black Tiger started to narrate the path of the spiritual energy entering his body. He even demonstrated it for Xuan Tianji to observe.

Xuan Tianji listened attentively and began to try again and again. However, he was unable to absorb the spiritual energy into his body as the black Tiger had instructed. This made him frown.

Unwilling to give up, Xuan Tianji set aside his complicated thoughts and started to cultivate according to Black Tiger’s instructions.

However, while he was cultivating, he was always on guard against the black Tiger’s sneak attack.

However, Black Tiger had no intention of attacking. He really wanted to teach Xuan Tianji the “great art of Foundation snatching”.

This was because he knew that a person like Xuan Tianji, who appeared kind on the surface but was actually cruel and merciless, would also walk the same path as him after obtaining the “Foundation snatching technique”. Everyone from the black prison sect would still be refined alive by the blood sacrifice array.

The only difference was that he was a different person.

However, what surprised the black Tiger was that after several attempts, Xuan Tianji was unable to cultivate the foundation stealing technique.

The black Tiger was caught off guard.

At this time, the evil demon God’s voice sounded in the black Tiger’s mind,”

“Do you know why he can’t cultivate?”

Hearing the voice of the evil god again, the black Tiger was surprised and couldn’t help but ask, ””Why?”

“Because he can only cultivate this technique after you die, hehe!”

As if he understood that the black Tiger did not understand, the evil god continued,”

“Since I’ve already been born, there naturally won’t be a second me. So, only when you die, and your soul perishes at the same time as mine, will he be able to successfully cultivate the ‘great art of Foundation snatching’, and I will be reborn in his soul!”

“Why are you telling me this?” The black Tiger asked after a moment of silence.

“Because I’ve decided to make my move early. Although you’re ruthless and crazy enough, you’re still a waste. You’re really wasting my time!” The

hoarse voice of the evil god continued to echo in the black Tiger's mind.

The black Tiger's heart trembled when he heard that. He was about to say something when he felt a sharp pain in his head.

This pain did not come from the body, but from the soul. At this moment, the consciousness of the evil demon God was nibbling away at the black Tiger's consciousness bit by bit, occupying his soul bit by bit.

The pain on the soul level far exceeded the pain on the body. Even the black Tiger, who had long been indifferent to life and death, could not help but start to scream.

Just like the black Tiger, the evil demon God also felt the same pain that made his soul tremble. However, he did not roar, but instead laughed out loud.

Originally, he wanted to let the black Tiger slowly collect its own wandering consciousness while cultivating. When his own consciousness gradually grew stronger, he would then take over the black Tiger's soul. This was because his consciousness would be slowly worn down during the process of possession. Without enough consciousness to support it, he would not be able to successfully possess the body.

However, three days ago, the evil demon God's consciousness had already met the requirements for possession, but he still did not choose to possess the black Tiger's soul.

After learning about the game that connected the yin and yang realm, the evil god felt that it was too unsafe to directly possess the black Tiger's soul. He didn't want to be restricted by Bei Li after he successfully possessed it.

Therefore, he still needed to accumulate power until he had the ability to erase the taboo mark on the black Tiger's soul. Only then could he obtain a soul without any restrictions.

Although it had been hidden in the black Tiger's soul, the evil demon God had been searching for the forbidden mark in the black Tiger's soul. But

just now, he had found the forbidden mark and tried to use his consciousness to destroy it.

This was also the reason why he had not answered Black Tiger's question.

Just now, he had succeeded. The taboo in the black Tiger's soul had been destroyed.

In other words, the black Tiger's soul would no longer be controlled by the person behind the scenes of the game that connected the two realms of yin and yang.

Since the time was ripe, the evil demon God did not need to hide anything anymore.

The fangs of death were exposed, and the soul corrosion began. The black Tiger's soul was slowly being occupied by the evil demon God ...

Looking at the black Tiger that was struggling and growling on the ground, Xuan Tianji stopped his cultivation and stood up,"

"What's wrong with you?"

Naturally, the black Tiger could not answer. It continued to cry out in pain. Its voice was mournful and shrill. As it roared, its voice gradually became hoarse, as if it was suffering some kind of inhuman torture.

Seeing this, Xuan Tianji quickly went forward and grabbed the black Tiger. The spirit Qi in his body seeped through the black Tiger's skin, wanting to check the black Tiger's body condition.

"Get lost!"

A roar exploded in Xuan Tianji's mind, shaking him so much that his body swayed and he finally fell to the ground.

The sudden voice startled Xuan Tianji. He sat on the ground in a daze for a few seconds before he recovered.

The voice just now was definitely not the black Tiger 's, Xuan Tianji was sure of this.

Possession?

This word suddenly appeared in Xuan Tianji's mind.

Although he had never seen possession before, there were records of possession in the books passed down by the black prison sect, and it was a compulsory technique for the former black prison sect disciples.

This scene was very similar to the possession described in the ancient books of the sect.

At the thought of this, Xuan Tianji instantly felt that something was wrong. He immediately stood up and gathered the spiritual energy in his palm to form a sword. Then, he slashed it towards the black Tiger's head.

A cloud of black mist seeped out from the top of the black Tiger's head and collided with the spiritual Qi sword in Xuan Tianji's hand.

There was no sound at the point of collision. However, Xuan Tianji was shocked to discover that the spiritual Qi sword in his palm was being corroded by the black mist bit by bit and was spreading towards his palm.

When Xuan Tianji saw this, he quickly cut off his connection with the spiritual Qi sword to prevent himself from being affected by the corrosive black mist.

The spirit Qi sword that fell to the ground was instantly corroded by the black mist, and the black mist floated back into the black Tiger's body.

Looking at the black Tiger that was still roaring and struggling, Xuan Tianji suddenly didn't dare to make a move. Although he was cruel and merciless, he was actually very afraid of death. It was just like when he encountered the seven of them back then. As long as he could survive, he would beg for mercy or even kneel down.

Facing such a strange opponent, he naturally did not dare to risk his life to fight against him. Hence, Xuan Tianji had the thought of escaping.

But at this moment, the black Tiger on the ground suddenly stopped struggling. Then, it slowly stood up from the ground and looked at him with a sinister smile.

“Who are you?” Xuan Tianji looked fierce but was actually a coward.

“You’re going to be a dead man soon, what’s the use of knowing?” The evil demon God who had completely taken over the black Tiger’s soul laughed.

“You ...”

Xuan Tianji was about to speak, but the evil demon God did not give him the chance. With a wave of his hand, a ball of black mist appeared and attached itself to Xuan Tianji’s body.

At this moment, the surface of Xuan Tianji’s body was covered in a blood-colored spider web as the refinement began.

Feeling his flesh and blood melting away bit by bit, Xuan Tianji let out a blood-curdling screech as his body shrank at a speed that could be seen with the naked eye.

A moment later, the profound heavenly armament, who had once claimed to be the strongest cultivator in the world, transformed into a blood pill and was sucked into the evil demon God’s mouth.

After doing all this, the evil demon God turned around and laughed out loud as it looked at the rolling clouds below the mountain peak.

The next thing he had to do was to continue completing the blood sacrifice array and then devour the entire black prison sect.

After that, he would make Bei Li suffer a fate worse than death!

Thinking about how he had found out about Bei Li’s Secret by chance, the evil demon God was very happy, very happy.

Because he had thought of a way to destroy Bei Li without any bloodshed.

With the Treaty of the Three Realms in place, Beili connected the yin and yang realms. If the heaven realm found out that she had secretly built an Army, she would die without a doubt, and her body and soul would be destroyed, never to be able to rise again.

Because those guys from the heaven realm would never let go of the great threat of Bei Li. They would not give her a chance to reincarnate.

The clan leader of the northern divergent God clan, Bei Li, had always been a huge rock weighing on his heart.

They had fought three times millions of years ago, and he had lost all three times in the heaven and earth chess game!

At this moment, the evil demon God still clearly remembered Bei Li's disdainful words.

“You want to be a heavenly demon and kill the Emperor? are you retarded?”

In order to prove his strength, he had set up three traps to fight with Bei Li. However, it turned out that although they were both ancient gods, Bei Li's strength was far beyond his. He was not someone he could fight against at all. In the last round, he had even ended up with his body and soul destroyed.

In fact, when the last round started, the evil demon God already knew that he would lose. However, he still issued the challenge because he had placed his last hope on the great art of Foundation snatching. As long as Bei Li tried to cultivate it, he would be able to live in Bei Li's soul and take over her body one day.

As long as the possession was successful, the final winner would still be him.

After being resurrected again, the obsession in the evil demon God's heart still hadn't dissipated. He wanted to win against Beili once and pursue his unfinished dream until he reached Emperor Yi. Then, he would become a sky demon that terrified many forces in the outer realms, just like the ancient human Emperor 's' massacre '!

After laughing madly, the evil demon God's eyes burned with fighting spirit.

“But I won't do that, because I want to defeat you with my own hands. The fourth game of the heaven and earth chess game has already begun. Your plan is to connect the two worlds to create a hidden Army, so my first plan is to destroy it!”

“This time, I'm in the dark and you're in the light. I hope you can be as powerful as you were before!”

Just as the evil demon God was thinking about how to destroy Bei Li's plan and fight her again, a black hole suddenly appeared beside him.

A small hand as white as Jade reached out from within.

Grab! Grab! Grab!

As the evil demon God looked on in shock, its small hand grabbed his hair and pulled him in.

Chapter 342 - You Lost All Three Rounds But Didn'T Die!

The appearance of this space tunnel caught the evil demon God off guard, and by the time he reacted, he had already been caught in the space tunnel.

However, what terrified the evil demon God was not the appearance of the spatial channel, but the feedback from the soul.

At this time, a burning mark appeared on his soul. It was also this mark that made him unable to resist the suction force from the space tunnel. His body kept shuttling back and forth in the tunnel.

The evil demon God's face was filled with disbelief when he saw the mark.

In order to ensure that he would not be restricted after he seized the soul, he carefully checked the black Tiger's soul thoroughly. He only started the possession after he had erased the taboo and made sure that there were no problems.

But why did the mark appear again?

The evil demon God thought of a possibility. The forbidden area that he had found before was fake and was just to lure him in. Only then would he be caught off guard and try to possess the black Tiger's soul.

At this moment, the black circle at the end of the spatial tunnel appeared, and his figure was sent into the divine tool space.

Looking up, he saw two figures, one tall and one short, smiling at him not far away.

The evil demon God was on guard. He glanced at Lu Wu, then turned his eyes to Bei Li, and his pupils suddenly shrank.

Before this, he had guessed that this was all part of God Bei Li's plan, but he had not been sure. However, after seeing little Bei Li, he was sure of his guess.

He was very familiar with little Bei Li. Although he didn't know who little Bei Li was, she and Bei Qi Shen had always been inseparable.

"It's really Beili? Where is she?" The evil demon God's eyes were filled with hatred.

He had never thought that he would lose before the game even started. In the eyes of the evil demonic god, Bei Li must have set this up a long time ago and was just waiting for him to resurrect.

When Bei Li heard this, he squinted his eyes and smiled. He reached out and poked Lu Wu.

"He is!"

The evil demon God was stunned, and after taking a deep look at Lu Wu, he said in a deep voice,"

"I'm asking about God Bei Qi, Bei Li, who you've been following!"

Although he didn't want to admit it, Lu Wu still nodded." "I am!"

"Reincarnated?"

The evil demon God immediately thought of the problem, but then he frowned."

"No, you don't have her divine seal in your body. You can't be her reincarnation!"

"The divine seal has been destroyed. I was indeed Beili in my previous life. I have no reason to lie to you." Lu Wu replied indifferently.

"Bei Li's divine seal was destroyed?!"

Hearing this, the evil demon God was stunned. Even if Bei Li was the reincarnation, he would not believe it. In his opinion, unless the great emperor was involved, no one had the absolute power to force Bei Li to reincarnate. But now, hearing that Bei Li's divine seal had been destroyed, the evil demon God was completely stunned.

“Tell me why?” The evil demon God asked with a Savage expression.

Bei Li was a strong enemy that he had acknowledged, and he had always wanted to win against her. Hearing her words, he didn't feel happy at all, only endless anger.

Because Bei Li was no longer around, did that mean that he would no longer have the chance to win against her? he would have to be defeated by her for the rest of his life.

“You should know the reason. She tried to recruit you, but you rejected her!”

“The heaven defying Alliance?” The evil demon God's eyes flashed with a hint of surprise.

Bei Li nodded.”She's never seen you as an opponent. In her eyes, you're all gods on the yin God List. You should work together to fight against the heaven realm!”

“She's courting death!” The evil demon God snorted coldly.

“But she has the courage, do you?” Bei Li looked at the evil demon God with disdain.

“We can't make plans with different paths. Just because I don't defy the heavens doesn't mean I don't have the courage, because the goal I pursue is to destroy those great emperors who control the netherworld but do nothing, and then pursue the great Dao of the heavenly demon!”

“Without the ancient Yin gods fighting to the death with the heaven realm, you might just be a prisoner of the heaven realm. What dreams and pursuits

would you have? you must understand that you can pursue your dreams because the ancient Yin gods are carrying the burden for you!”

“The three realm treaty allowed the Three Realms to return to peace, but did you know that this peace was exchanged with the blood of the immortal ancient Yin God?”

“And what she took over was The Last Wish of the immortal ancient Yin God. As long as she is here, the heaven realm will never relax. Some things have to be fought for by themselves. When the strength of the two sides is unequal, peace can not last forever. After living for so long, don’t you understand this principle?”

Bei Li’s anger was like a blow to the head, and it made the evil demon God’s expression become complicated.

Before the Treaty of the Three Realms was signed, the heaven realm, as the final Victor, proposed a series of unfair treaties. However, even though the ancient Yin God was in a weaker position, he did not bow his head and chose to continue fighting. Although the current treaty of the Three Realms was still unfair, it was exchanged with the blood of the ancient Yin gods.

The price of resistance was tragic, but it was their sacrifice that forged the peaceful years of the netherworld.

Looking at the evil demon God, Bei Li continued to speak softly,”

“Someone had to step forward, and that was what she did. She hoped that more Yin gods would have the courage to stand with her, so she came to you. Do you really think she wanted to play the heaven and earth chessboard with you?”

“What do you mean?” The evil demon God’s expression suddenly froze.

“You lost all three games of the heaven and earth chessboard, but you survived!” Bei Li chuckled.

“That’s because I had the ability to survive. Do you really think that Bei Li couldn’t bear to kill me?” The evil demon God suddenly flew into a rage. Bei Li’s words had thoroughly provoked him.

“In the first game, you used two large domains as a chessboard to start the battle of large domains. You lost, but you didn’t die!”

“That’s because I used a wisp of evil thought to die in my place!” The evil demon God snorted coldly.

“But do you know? that evil thought didn’t die, because she didn’t plan to kill you at all!” Bei Li chuckled.

“Impossible!” “Die!” The evil demon God shouted in anger.

Bei Li didn’t explain and continued,”

“In the second round, you used the power of heaven and earth as a setup to start a battle of power. Each of you controlled a wisp of the clan’s fate. You lost, but you didn’t die!”

“I used the blood demon ancient altar to suffer the backlash of the world’s momentum in my place. In the end, the ancient altar shattered, and I naturally survived!”

“But did you know that the blood demon ancient altar wasn’t even destroyed? It was also because she didn’t want to kill you!” Bei Li continued to chuckle.

“Do you think I’ll believe you?” The evil demon God’s eyes turned even colder.

Bei Li shook his head and waved his hand. Three altars appeared on the ground.

These three altars were obtained by Bei Li from the path of Hell’s instance dungeon. They were also things that ye chen, ye Xue ‘er, and the others did not want.

Seeing the three altars, the evil demonic God's mind trembled.

Bei Li waved his hand again, and an image appeared in the space of the divine artifact.

On the screen, Xie Wang was chatting with Li Xing, his face full of smiles.

The evil demon God who saw the evil king was so shocked that he could not speak.

This evil thought had been stripped away from him before he became a God. It had been by his side all this time and only completely disappeared after he lost the heaven and earth chess game. How could he not recognize it?

“What about the third round? if she didn't want to kill me, why did I die in the third round?” The evil demonic God's face was filled with malevolence.

“The third round is a battle of laws. You were also devoured by the laws and died. She couldn't protect you, but she knew that you would be resurrected and also knew your plan!”

Looking at the shocked writing Demon God, Bei Li continued,”

“After you lost the third round, you set up two tombstones for yourself and engraved the” great art of Foundation snatching “on them, hoping that one day you could take over her body and revive. But she didn't destroy the two tablets and placed one in your death garden and the other at the border of the two domains, giving you a chance to revive!”

“Do you understand now? Evil god!” Bei Li's eyes were cold as he spoke.

Seeing that Bei Li was completely different from before, Lu Wu suddenly felt a little distressed and couldn't help but reach out to rub her little head.

The evil demon God was completely stunned. He couldn't accept that the opponent he wanted to defeat the most had actually bypassed him again and again in the dark. He couldn't believe that it was just him who wanted to win. Bei Li had never even thought of accepting his challenge.

“What about this time? Did she arrange everything after I was resurrected?” The evil demon God asked with a complicated expression.

Bei Li shook his head. “It was all a coincidence. She reincarnated a long time ago, and her goal has always been the heaven realm. She never liked internal strife!”

“A coincidence?” The evil demon God muttered.

“Then what is your purpose in bringing me here?”

“She’s always hoped that you would continue to follow her!” Bei Li said solemnly.

“After a million years, this is the fourth time. On behalf of Beiqi God Beili, I would like to invite you again. Are you willing to defy the heavens with me?” At the end of the sentence, the cute and obedient Bei Li actually had a powerful aura around him, which really stunned Lu Wu.

Hearing this, the evil demon God’s heart was filled with struggle. His mind was in chaos, but the hostility in his heart continued to rise.

Suddenly, the evil demon God raised his head with a Savage expression.

“That’s her pursuit. Even if she didn’t Kill Me Three Times, I wouldn’t remember her kindness. What bullshit heaven-defying? what does it have to do with me, the evil demon God? even if the netherworld collapses, what does it have to do with me? my goal has always been in the outer realms!”

Hearing the evil demon God’s words, Lu Wu was a little speechless, and he was even more upset that he didn’t strangle this bastard in his previous life.

Thinking of this, Lu Wu turned his eyes to Bei Li, wanting to see what he was going to do.

At this time, Bei Li’s aura dissipated, and he looked at Lu Wu and said, “The negotiations have broken down!”

“Then what do we do?”

“You refuse a toast only to drink a forfeit. If the soft approach doesn’t work, then we’ll use the hard approach!” As Bei Li spoke, he made a gesture of waving his blade.

Chapter 343: - -All-Rounded Little Beili

Faced with the evil demon God that refused to listen to his advice, Bei Li did not waste any more time. With a wave of his hand, the power of the divine weapon appeared and lifted the evil demon God up, restraining it in mid-air.

The evil demon God immediately started to struggle, wanting to break free from this restraint. However, even though his consciousness was struggling, his soul did not move at all.

“Stop struggling. Your soul has been branded with an inerasable mark. You can’t get rid of it!” Bei Li said with a smile.

“Then I’ll give up my soul!” As he spoke, the evil demon God closed his eyes and began to control his consciousness to tear at his own soul.

At this moment, the evil demon God’s thoughts were very simple. As long as his soul was gone, he would be free. At that time, he would just have to wait for the next person to cultivate the great art of Foundation stealing. He still had a chance to be resurrected.

However, what shocked the evil god was that his soul was unable to tear it apart. He immediately realized that there was something strange about this space. It was actually able to protect his soul from being destroyed!

“Six paths of reincarnation!” “What?” the evil demon God, who suddenly opened his eyes, revealed a look of shock.

If it wasn’t for the power of the six paths of reincarnation, his soul wouldn’t have been so strong. This was because the six paths of reincarnation was the final destination of souls in the netherworld.

Even when he was brought here, the evil demon God was not as shocked as he was now because he knew very well what the six paths reincarnation represented.

“You have some knowledge, you won’t die!” Lu Wu couldn’t help but laugh.

“Using the power of the six paths of reincarnation to create a space? how did Bei Li do it?!” The evil demon God had a look of disbelief.

“I did it!” Bei Li said proudly.

Looking at Bei Li, the fear in the evil demon God’s eyes grew.

Although he knew of little Bei Li’s existence, he had always treated her as the little follower of Beiqi God Bei Li. He had never paid much attention to her, but he did not expect her to have such abilities.

“How did you do it? even the great emperor can only drive the six paths reincarnation and can’t use the power of the six paths reincarnation to forge his own things. Who are you?” The evil demon God looked at Bei Li and roared.

Upon hearing the question of the evil demon God, Lu Wu, who was standing beside him, pricked up his ears. He was also very curious.

At this time, Lu Wu had already guessed that this divine artifact was not made by his ancestor, Lu Yan.

As he gradually grew, he came into contact with many experts. Although his ancestor was Lord Beiqi, he was only a ghost king. Only the mysterious Bei Li had the ability to make such a heaven-defying divine weapon.

“I’m not telling you, teeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeee!” Bei Li stuck out his tongue and replied.

When Lu Wu and the evil demon God heard this, their faces fell at the same time.

“So what if you have mastered the six paths reincarnation? I have the divine seal on me, I am a God on the yin deity ranking list, and I am also recognized by the six paths reincarnation. If you want to use the power of the six paths reincarnation to erase my memory, you will have to erase my divine seal first. Can you do that?!”

Even though he knew that he was going to die, the evil god didn't show any fear and continued to roar.

“It's not a big deal. It's just a memory modification!” Bei Li waved his hand smugly.

Seeing that Bei Li was starting to show off, Lu Wu, who was slacking off at the side, couldn't help but want to shout ” 666” to cheer for Bei Li.

“You can erase the divine seal?” The evil demon God's expression was solemn. Although he didn't believe it, Bei Li was too mysterious.

“But I won't do that, because if you lose your divine seal, your value will be greatly reduced. So I have to find other ways to preserve your divine seal, then destroy you and create a new god with your divine seal!” As he spoke, Bei Li put on a white coat that Lu Wu was very familiar with.

“Hahaha! Do you really think I'll believe you? You want to threaten me and force me to submit? do you really think that I, the evil god, am an idiot?” Hearing Bei Li's words about keeping the divine seal and erasing memories, the evil god laughed.

He had been a little worried before, but after hearing what Bei Li said, he was sure that Bei Li was just bluffing. His consciousness was the deity print, and it was impossible to keep the deity print and erase his consciousness.

“Tsk~even a frog at the bottom of a well doesn't believe that there's a bigger world outside the well.” As Bei Li spoke, he waved his hand, and a figure slowly condensed in the space of the divine artifact, slowly taking on a human form.

The evil king, who appeared here, was a little dumbfounded. He looked at Lu Wu and then at Bei Li. But when he saw the evil demon God that was imprisoned in the air, his eyes suddenly widened.

“Xie Wang, what do you think? I told you there would be many benefits if you joined us!” Bei Li continued to show off. He was just short of a cigarette in his mouth and a pair of sunglasses.

“Evil demon God!”

Looking at the demon God in the air, Xie Wang’s body trembled uncontrollably.

This was because this was his former master, a true God of the netherworld, and an extremely powerful ancient God at that. He was also the shadow in Xie Wang’s heart.

Because before he obtained a physical body, he was only the evil thought of the evil demon God, never a complete existence. Perhaps one day, when the evil demon God returned, he would once again become a dependent.

“What are you afraid of? he used you to block his death. You should hate him now!” Lu Wu encouraged her in a low voice.

“I ... I’m not his match!” Although he already had his own physical body, the heretic King’s fear of the evil demon God was inborn, and it was clear that he was unable to muster the courage to attack the evil demon God.

“I’ll back you up!” Lu Wu patted Xie Wang’s shoulder and said with determination.

Seeing this, Bei Li also wanted to follow Lu Wu’s example and pat Xie Wang’s shoulder to cheer him up. However, she was not tall enough to do so, so she could only tiptoe and hit Xie Wang’s waist.

“He’s just a wisp of my evil thought. What’s the use of calling him here?” The evil demon God’s face was filled with disdain.

“He was born from the same source as you, so let him devour your divine seal and strip you of your divine spark. He can still be recognized by the yin God List!” Bei Li said, still confident in his victory.

Upon hearing this, the evil demon God’s disdainful expression instantly froze.

On the other hand, Xie Wang was also dumbfounded. How could he not understand what Bei Li was saying? he wanted him to devour the evil god and then snatch his divine seal and the godhood on the yin God ranking list. To Xie Wang, this was simply crazy.

“It’s impossible for me to devour him. I’ll suffer a backlash!” Xie Wang’s head shook like a rattle.

It wasn’t easy for him to become a living being of the netherworld, and he didn’t want to die from the backlash.

When Lu Wu and Bei Li heard this, they both cast a look of disappointment at Xie Wang.

“Don’t be afraid. I’m here ... And she’s here!” Lu Wu wanted to show off, but he suddenly realized that he wouldn’t be of much use, so he pointed at Bei Li.

“Don’t worry, just devour it. His divine seal can’t resist. I’m here, and I’ll control the divine weapon to suppress his consciousness. You just have to focus on devouring it!” Bei Li continued to instigate.

In the face of the evil king, who was very afraid of the evil demon God, Lu Wu and Bei Li could only keep trying to persuade him.

“Can I really?” After a round of persuasion, Xie Wang seemed to be a little tempted.

“Don’t worry, it’s just devouring an evil demon God. No problem!” Bei Li made a gesture of encouragement.

At this moment, the evil king turned his gaze to the evil demon God.

“Don’t you dare! I’m your master! I created you!” The evil demon God, who was locked in mid-air, glared, and the aura on its body rose steadily. The monstrous flames behind it formed a purple mist that spread and shrank.

When Lu Wu saw this, he snapped his fingers and the divine artifact ran automatically, dispelling all the fierce flames that formed behind the evil demon God. At the same time, it completely locked his soul, making him unable to use any power.

“Old evil, go!” After doing all this, Lu Wu said to Xie Wang.

Although he was afraid, Xie Wang believed that Lu Wu and Bei Li would not harm him. It was all thanks to the two of them that he could become a living creature of the netherworld.

Moreover, he had already sworn his loyalty to them at that time, and it was time to prove it.

Thinking up to this point, the heretic King gritted his teeth, and a thick black mist spread out from the top of his head. He suddenly pounced toward the evil god, and his body that was standing on the spot immediately fell limply to the ground.

“Don’t you dare!” The evil demon God was shocked and scolded him again.

However, how could the heretic King stop now? he pounced onto the body of the evil demon God, and his soul seeped into it, starting to collide with the evil demon God’s soul.

The moment the two souls came into contact, the world in Xie Wang’s eyes changed dramatically. What appeared in front of him was the figure of an incomparably huge giant that could support the sky and earth, while he himself was as small as a speck of dust in front of this giant.

However, he still mustered his courage and pounced on the giant, starting to eat it bit by bit.

In the process of devouring, the giant formed by the evil demon God's divine imprint of consciousness began to shine. However, the light was suppressed by the divine weapon under Bei Li's control, and it was unable to surge out of its body to kill the evil king, who was still devouring.

This undoubtedly made the evil demon God extremely sullen. The insects that it could have wiped out with a single thought were now devouring it to grow.

“Stop!” The divine giant roared angrily in the world of consciousness, but the heretic King paid it no heed and focused on devouring.

The feeling of his consciousness gradually growing stronger made Xie Wang feel comfortable all over. The more he ate, the more addicted he became. His body size was also growing bit by bit.

Bei Li's eyes were tightly shut as he entered the space of consciousness as well. The divine weapon's power was suppressing the evil demon God's divine imprint of consciousness, preventing it from attacking the evil king.

The evil King's body grew larger and larger as it devoured, and in the blink of an eye, it was four to five meters tall. Although it still could not compare to the consciousness giant of the evil demon God, its devouring speed had increased by several times.

At this moment, the evil demon God was panicking.

From the fact that the devoured consciousness did not reject the heretic King, he could tell that the heretic King truly had the ability to inherit his divine seal. Once the heretic King's consciousness was larger than him, the heretic King would be acknowledged by the divine seal. At that time, he would be the main body, and he would be the body that he would possess.

“Let's talk!” The evil demon God started to roar.

At this time, he had no more trump cards, so it was meaningless to continue resisting. Therefore, he was afraid and wanted to talk to Lu Wu and Bei Li again.

“Talk about what? What’s there to talk about?” Bei Li’s voice resounded in the space of consciousness.

“I agree, I will defy the heavens with you!”

When Xie Wang, who was originally very afraid of the evil demon God, heard this, he immediately sped up his eating speed, afraid that Lu Wu and Bei Li would agree.

“The evil demon God! I didn’t give you this last chance, but she did. I promised her that I would persuade you again after you were resurrected, but you’ve already used up this fourth chance, and she’s no longer around. I won’t give you any more chances!” Bei Li’s voice echoed in the space of consciousness.

Hearing this, Xie Wang, who was currently gnawing on the demon God’s consciousness, felt extremely pleased. He knew that the divine imprint was still his.

“Roar!” The divine giant roared towards the sky with a ferocious expression.

He had thought that his resurrection was his chance to start over, but he did not expect that his short-lived resurrection would lead to the complete destruction of his soul and consciousness. The evil demon God was filled with unwillingness.

The heretic King was growing at an increasingly rapid pace. It already had a body the size of a small mountain, and it could bite off a large piece of the divine seal’s consciousness with each bite.

As the devouring continued, a faint purple flame-shaped mark appeared on Xie Wang’s forehead, and it gradually deepened.

The consciousness of the evil demon God began to gradually dissipate.

Slaughtering the Emperor, becoming a heavenly demon ...

Before his consciousness crumbled, the evil demon God was still thinking about his crazy pursuit and dream.

But in the end, he remembered how Beili had laughed at his dream ...

Chapter 344 - Beili'S Deification

Everything was settled.

Under Bei Li's suppression, the evil demon God was unable to resist the evil King's devouring even though it had the consciousness of the deity print.

As he devoured, Xie Wang's consciousness continued to expand, and the purple burning divine imprint on his forehead became clearer and clearer. On the other hand, the divine imprint of the evil demon God was getting dimmer and dimmer.

Seeing an ancient God fall, Bei Li's eyes showed a trace of disappointment and pity. But then she thought of Lu Wu, and her eyes became extremely determined.

“On the endless path of the reincarnation, I will always be by your side. I will get you whatever you want!” Bei Li mumbled.

At this time, the evil King's body was already so large that it was comparable to the evil demon God, and with every bite, it could tear off a large mass of the evil demon God's consciousness. In the end, the evil demon God 's' consciousness imprint 'was finally unable to be condensed because it was too incomplete, and it collapsed with a loud bang. Even its consciousness and body collapsed, turning into a cloud of consciousness.

At this moment, the purple burning divine seal on Xie Wang's forehead shone with ten thousand rays of light.

Xie Wang was extremely excited as he felt the massive amount of consciousness in his body.

“What are you waiting for? don't waste it!” Bei Li's voice echoed above their heads.

When the evil king heard that, he focused his attention and looked at the evil demon God's consciousness cloud that had collapsed. Then, he opened his mouth and sucked in.

Countless consciousnesses gushed into Xie Wang's mouth like rivers flowing into the sea, causing the purple divine seal on his forehead to shine even brighter.

At that moment, Bei Li took out the booklet that he had always carried with him.

“Evil king, you have mastered the laws of the netherworld, the laws of spirits, the laws of concealment, the laws of undying, and the laws of blood sacrifice. You have also formed the divine seal and gained the recognition of the six paths of reincarnation. I will re-create the new Yin God ranking list and appoint you as the first Yin God. Are you willing to do so?”

As he spoke, the booklet in Bei Li's hand underwent a huge change. It turned into a scroll made of five-colored light.

Looking at Bei Li, who was floating in the space of his consciousness, Xie Wang was so shocked that he couldn't speak.

Bei Li was actually deifying! Moreover, he had re-forged the new Yin God ranking list when the netherworld already had one!

The power of the six paths of reincarnation was already incredible to the evil king, and now he was even more stunned.

This was because the combination of the ability to reforge the yin deity ranking and the power to control the six paths of reincarnation meant that Bei Li had the ability to create a new world of the netherworld. This kind of ability had completely exceeded the imagination of the evil king.

Back then, he had always thought that Bei Li and Lu Wu were as mysterious and majestic as the Emperor. But at this moment, in Xie Wang's opinion, Bei Li's means at this moment were not even possible for the Emperor.

At this moment, Bei Li turned to look at Xie Wang with a serious expression, waiting for his reply.

“I’m willing to be pardoned by the new Yin God List and become the first Yin God!” As he spoke, Xie Wang knelt down on one knee.

As soon as Xie Wang agreed, a spark floated out of his forehead and he quickly entered the new Yin God ranking list.

A purple flame mark appeared on the new Yin God ranking list, and information about evil king began to appear below.

It was also at this moment that Xie Wang realized that the information about the five types of laws in his mind had begun to unseal. Countless pieces of information surged forth, but with the divine seal’s blessing, it was not a problem for him to digest this information.

After a long silence, the evil king opened his eyes. He had long since mastered the use of the five laws and had completely comprehended them.

Although he had yet to increase his cultivation level, the evil king felt that he was incomparably powerful at this moment. With the blessing of the divine seal and the help of the laws, he felt that he already had the ability to be invincible under the gods. He could even stand up to those newborn gods.

This was not blind confidence, but Xie Wang knew that he truly had the ability to do so.

Thinking of this, Xie Wang’s consciousness floated out of the empty space of consciousness and returned to his own soul. Then, it floated out of the black Tiger’s body and returned to his own body.

“Hu!” The purple divine seal appeared on Xie Wang’s forehead as he opened his eyes once more before quickly disappearing.

“How do you feel?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“I feel that the realm is no longer an obstacle. My strength is comparable to a half-step deity, and I can even compete with a newborn deity!” Xie Wang said excitedly.

Lu Wu was also very happy when he heard this.

Although he had a large number of players under him, they were still lacking in high-end combat power. After all, the players had only grown for a short time. The strongest among them was only at the middle stage of the ghost Governor realm. They were still far from being able to compete with the ghost kings and ghost emperors.

But it wouldn't happen again from now on, because with the evil king, a God who had been pardoned by the new Yin God List, even powerful existences like Yuan Xu and Starlight were no longer a threat.

“It's not difficult to unify the blue Void region. Yuan Xu is no match for me!” Xie Wang continued to speak excitedly.

Lu Wu shook his head when he heard this.”

“It's best if you don't make a move unless it's the most dangerous moment!”

“Why?” Xie Wang seemed rather stunned.

“Although the nine Yao Army of the nine Yao big domain and the abyssal void Army of the blue Void big domain have the upper hand, I've never regarded them as my enemies. They're just whetstones for the players to grow. What I need is the growth of the players. The unification of the blue Void big domain does me no good!”

“So, I'll just have to maintain my previous strength?” Xie Wang nodded in realization.

“That's right. Just maintain your previous strength and help the players grow. Only the players are the core. Their potential is limitless. Now that

I've created the new Yin God List, they are the future!" Bei Li also walked over to Lu Wu and said.

When Lu Wu heard this, he smiled and patted Bei Li's little head. As expected, Bei Li knew him best.

Xie Wang was a little depressed. He thought that since he had obtained the marker, he could vent his anger on void abyss. However, he didn't expect that Lu Wu and Bei Li would ask him to continue being a babysitter for the players and take care of their growth.

However, he had no choice. Xie Wang knew that everything he got was given to him by Lu Wu and Bei Li. He had no right to refuse, and he didn't want to refuse these two benefactors and Masters who had given him a new life.

The things he had now were things that Xie Wang had never even dared to think about in the past. However, in just a short month after he had surrendered, he had actually taken over the evil demon God's body and even obtained everything the evil demon God had. Xie Wang really cherished this feeling of turning over a new leaf and becoming the master of the evil demon God.

"Alright, I understand!" Xie Wang nodded vigorously.

"Then I'll send you back now!" With that, Lu Wu activated the divine artifact and a Space Channel appeared around evil king.

Xie Wang nodded again before shooting into the spatial tunnel.

.....

At this time, only Bei Li and Lu Wu were left in the space of the artifact, as well as the physical body of a Black Tiger.

"How should we deal with him?" Lu Wu pointed at the black Tiger's body.

"Obliterated?" Bei Li said after some thought.

When Lu Wu heard this, he was silent for a while before saying,”

“Can it be made into a cyborg like number one?”

“It’s not difficult to make a cyborg, but it has to be a pure mechanical life form because he no longer has a soul. He’s just an empty shell, but number one has a soul!”

“Don’t we still have many spare primal souls? Should I inject one into him?”

“That works too ... Right, maybe I can use his soul!” Bei Li, who was about to answer, suddenly thought of something. He squinted and smiled.

“Whose?”

“Mu Zhiguang!” The smile in Bei Li’s eyes deepened.

Lu Wu was also stunned when he heard this. During the battle with the ocean King Army, mu Zhiguang’s soul was shattered and died for the ocean King. However, his soul did not completely dissipate. Instead, it was collected and put together by Bei Li.

However, if it wasn’t for Bei Li’s reminder, Lu Wu would have almost forgotten about mu Zhiguang’s existence.

Chapter 345 - May Day Event Notice

After the death of the evil god, the crisis in reality was resolved.

As for the black Tiger's body, Lu Wu temporarily planned to use it as the new resting place for mu Zhiguang's soul.

However, before this 'Super Warrior' project began, Lu Wu still had one very important thing to do.

That was the start of the May Day event.

According to war online's gaming tradition, every New Year or festival, Lu Wu would start a wave of activities and benefits to let the players celebrate.

This was also a day that the players were looking forward to.

On the forums, the players were already guessing what kind of event would be held during the May 1st period.

Under the anticipation of the players, at 12 o' clock in the afternoon, Lu Wu opened the May Day event notice.

[District-wide announcement: May Day event advanced notice details]:

Event 1-Medal of Bravery:

[Event details: from 8:00 p.m. On May 1st to 12:00 p.m. On May 4th, there will be a chance to obtain a red medal, a blue medal, and a purple flame medal when you kill nine glory Army soldiers. Those who have collected all three medal can exchange for the title 'proof of bravery' on the event panel.]

[Event notification: medals can be traded. Extra medals can also be exchanged for the Tier 3 medicinal wine “drunken breeze” on the event panel.]

Activity 2: morning farming

[Event details: from 8:00 p.m. On May 1st to 4:00 p.m., All players will receive three free items from the system:

[Luck sapling X3 (can not be traded or destroyed)]:

Item information: This item can be planted in any region in Northern divergent or the nine Yao great domain during the event period. It can be watered with ‘spirit spring water’ to grow. It must be watered once every two hours, or the luck sapling will wither. After being watered 10 times, the luck sapling will bear a ‘luck fruit’. After eating it, you can obtain one of the items, such as soul coins, experience, time-limited buffs, pills, and rare equipment, etc. (Random chance). You can also choose to continue watering the sapling to grow. The luck sapling will have a chance to bear a ‘super good luck fruit’, and the chance of obtaining rare prizes will be increased by four times.

[Watering can (can not be traded, destroyed)]:

[Item information: this item can be used in conjunction with the lucky sapling. Every hour, the bottle will refresh with the spiritual spring water used to water the ‘lucky sapling’, which can help the lucky sapling grow.]

[Absorption bucket (can not be traded or destroyed)]:

[Item information: this item can be used on a luck sapling planted by other players. The user’s body will be stiff for three minutes. During this period, the user can not move, attack, or defend. After the successful retrieval, the target player’s luck sapling will lose a portion of spiritual spring water. You will receive a portion of spiritual spring water.]

[Event hint: the amount of “spiritual spring water” produced by the watering can is extremely small. You can choose to steal the spiritual spring

water from other players to speed up the growth of the saplings.]

Activity 3-answer questions on May 1

[Event details: during the May Day event, a round of questions will be held at 10 p.m. Every night. All participating players can enter the event panel to answer the questions after the event begins. Each question has a time limit of 30 seconds and a total of 30 points. One point will be deducted per second for a total of 100 questions. The final results will be ranked according to the total points. The higher the points, the greater the reward.]

[Activity hint: the questions will be randomly simulated based on the game's common sense and knowledge. Please make good use of your time to review before the event begins.]

Event 4: mysterious battle

[Event details: this event will begin on the last day of May 1st. After the event begins, all players will change their form and will be held in three major regions at the same time. The event details will be announced on the day of the event.]

[Activity hint: in the chaotic battle, survival is victory!]

[Activity message: May 1st, Labor Day. Labor is the most glorious. Hard work is victory!]

.....

The players were undoubtedly the happiest to see the event announcement.

The players from the European and hell servers were equally excited when they saw that the final May Day event was being attended by three major regions.

He felt as if his identity as the abandoned son of the great obedient had finally changed to that of an illegitimate child.

Although he still did not receive as good treatment as the son of the “central server”, he finally had something to look forward to. Perhaps one day, he could squeeze out of the central server and become the son of the “central server”.

The players from both the European and hell servers had been looking forward to it. They believed that there would be a God in every version. The strength of the central server was only temporary. One day, the server they were in would surpass the central server and become the son of the expedition team.

After the announcement of the event, the forum was in an uproar.

Roasting Chang ‘e while holding a Jade Rabbit: “when I saw that planting trees could produce good things, I had a feeling that things weren’t as simple as I thought. In the end, it was just as I expected. I actually stole the spirit spring water from other people’s trees. This is interesting (funny).”

[Lonely invincible: collect medals in advance. You can use soul coins or R-coins, but it’s best to trade in R-coins. I don’t have enough soul coins, but I won’t reject anyone. Those who want to sell can join the group (bronze hanging on waist and showing off)]

[Suika Tairo: time to move bricks~take advantage of the opening day of the event to make a good profit. It’s rare for the coin-stinging (soul coin) conquests behind the scenes to bleed, let’s hurry up and start it (funny)]

Patrick Star, return the money: “I’m having a good time on May 1st. The poor office workers finally have a comfortable day off. I saw the May 1st promotion notice when I got home. It’s so wonderful. I’m going to take this opportunity to rise up (Sea King’s arrogant face.jpg)”

Geni turtle lent me money: 666, May 1st is bleeding. Speaking of which, there’s a problem that I haven’t been able to understand. Why is the war campaign behind the scenes team so stingy with soul coins? can’t they also provide some soul coins for activities other than May 1st? Don’t tell me you don’t know how badly we’re lacking in soul coins?

[Crayon Shin-chan: challenging the back-end team: you'll definitely win, but I won't lose out (funny)]

.....

The players were discussing the four upcoming events on the forum.

This was especially true for the ultimate mysterious event at the end. Everyone was guessing what form it would take.

From the event introduction, the words 'great battle' were mentioned. The players even thought of the cross-server war between the three major regions and couldn't help but become nervous.

Among the three servers, the players with the most sense of superiority were undoubtedly the players from the middle server.

First of all, as a veteran server, it had the advantage of opening the server earlier. It had developed a few months earlier than the other two servers, so it could be said that it had a huge advantage in the early stages.

In the eyes of the players from the mid-server, the other two servers were like younger brothers, they were the strongest.

This point wasn't only reflected in the overall strength of the players, but also in the top players.

Although there were many strong players in the Western and infernal servers, they were still much weaker than their 'cliffhanger teams' in the eyes of the players from the Chinese servers.

Moreover, the central server was the only one that had completely occupied a large region and started to expand.

All sorts of advantages made the players from the Chinese server feel smug. There were even a few who liked to look for a sense of presence and would always hang around on the forums of the European and hell servers.

Every time they saw the players from the other two servers discussing how powerful a certain player was, they would always go up to them and say,”

“It’s still not as good as our server’s xxxxx, but it’s not bad!”

This situation had made the players from the other two servers sullen for a long time and they had long wanted to prove themselves.

So if the end of the May Day event was really a cross-server war, the players on the mid-server suddenly started to worry about whether they would be slapped in the face.

He had confidence, but if he really lost in the cross-server battle, it would undoubtedly be extremely embarrassing.

So in order to make up for their past actions, the players in the central server couldn’t help but feel nervous.

In their eyes, they could not afford to lose this battle. They had to win!

Chapter 346 - -A Husky That Was Out Of Control

Before the event officially started at 8 p.m., All the players gathered at the border between the nine Yao great domain and the Beiqi great domain.

Ever since the great explosion in hell, the players had completely lost hell and could only wander between the two major regions.

Without the safe zone, there would be no more shortcomings, and the player's natural disaster would officially erupt.

Since then, the players had wreaked havoc between the two major regions like locusts.

If the nine glory Army attacked Beiqi, the players would attack nine glory. If the nine glory Army returned to defend the nine glory great domain, the players would attack Beiqi.

They had adopted a crazy tactic of stealing from their homes.

During this period, the players' harassment tactics were endless, causing the nine glory Army great pain. In the end, they could only send troops to both regions. However, the players still had a way to deal with it. They used the central junction of the two regions as their stronghold and attacked both regions at the same time.

Faced with such a situation, the nine radiance brothers were determined and personally led the nine radiance Army to clear out the players for eight consecutive days.

However, it was as if the players could not be killed all at once. After a batch of players died, another batch would appear. Even the jiuyao brothers did not know where so many players had come from. After eight days of

clearing, the group of players was still there. Their scale did not seem to have decreased at all.

The nine radiance brothers were having a headache, but they did not have a solution.

The players were gathered at the border of the barren plains, waiting for the event notification to sound.

As it was 8 O' clock, the game prompt sounded.

[District-wide announcement, happy May 1st! [The Medal of Bravery and morning farming and evening walk have officially started. The event props have been released. The event will start in two hours!]

At this moment, the players who had been waiting in the desolate Plains all ran towards the direction of Beiqi.

In order to celebrate the arrival of May Day, the players had already issued a gathering order on the forum after the event announcement. The first battle of the May Day Carnival would be launched the moment the event began to celebrate the arrival of May Day.

Countless players spontaneously responded to the call to join, waiting for this moment to come, to gather together and fight for Beiqi again.

While they were running toward the area where the Hades of Beiqi Plains was located, the regional voice channel was filled with “ghostly wails and wolf howls”. All the players were shouting like a Husky that had been freed from its reins. It was clear how excited the players were at this moment.

.....

At this moment, temporary tents were set up in the hell sinkhole.

There were also countless metal stakes made of spirit iron outside the camp, and soldiers were stationed in all directions above the camp and at the edge of the sinkhole.

The underworld had long since become one of the bases of the nine glory Army. The underworld was guarded by Chen Yao, Jin Yao, and mu Yao.

After riyao's death, it was naturally chen Yao's turn to replace the Beiqi Prefecture Lord.

However, with the two brothers as a lesson, in order to help Chen Yao successfully ascend to the position of official sovereign, not only did they bring nearly half of the nine-Yao great domain's military power, but they also invited the two brothers to help.

However, Chen Yao's dream of becoming an official sovereign was only a fantasy before the Army of players was destroyed.

Facing the players that they could not kill, the nine radiance brothers, who were stationed here, had changed their attitude from being determined to get what they wanted to to being extremely frustrated.

At this moment, the three brothers were discussing how to exterminate the players in the camp. At this moment, a soldier's shout rang out from outside.

“They're here again!”

Hearing the soldiers' shouts, the three brothers didn't even need to think to know that the players had come to harass them again. They immediately got up and prepared for battle.

After leaving the tent, the three brothers were dumbfounded.

This was because the entire perimeter of underworld was filled with players. One by one, they jumped into the pit like dumplings.

“Kill! The medal is right in front of you. Let's take advantage of the May 1st and make a killing!”

“Oh, your Grandpa calamity is here again! Take this axe of mine!”

“Soul coins, experience points, and medals are beckoning to us. We’ll definitely earn if we kill one, even more if we kill two, and even more if we kill three. We’ll definitely not lose anything!”

.....

The Army of players, the Husky, seemed to have been injected with chicken blood. With the announcement of the start of the event as a declaration of war, they launched a frenzied attack on the nine glory Army in the Hell’s sinkhole.

This time, without the assistance of rock and the other Spirit King-tier combatants, the players knew that it was impossible to take down underworld from the hands of the three brothers.

However, they did not care at all. What they wanted to do now was to continue fighting and grow by killing the nine glory Army soldiers. In addition to the bonus rewards from the event, the players were full of fighting spirit.

It didn’t matter if he died or not, as long as the rewards were in place.

The three nine radiance brothers were extremely surprised. In the past, the players had always attacked in small teams. This was the first time they had encountered such a large-scale attack. They could not help but feel nervous. They quickly joined the nine radiance Army and began to slaughter the player Army.

The players didn’t care at all. They didn’t even look at the three ninedust brothers who were flying in the air.

If you hit me, I’ll hit your soldiers!

If you kill me, I’ll kill your soldiers!

You killed my teammates, and I killed your soldiers!

The players’ goal was very clear. Since they couldn’t beat the big ones, they would catch the small ones and beat them up.

The players' actions made the nine radiance brothers feel extremely uncomfortable. The player Army was simply crazy in their eyes. They did not care about their own lives at all and only wanted to kill their subordinates.

Originally, the nine radiance brothers did not care about this kind of mutual consumption. After all, the number of players dying each time was far greater than the number of soldiers dying. In their opinion, this kind of reckless consumption tactic was extremely stupid.

But now, they didn't think so, because it was impossible to kill all the players.

After a few rounds of killing, the nine radiance Army was completely stunned. These players seemed to be able to reproduce infinitely. After killing one batch after another, they were about to vomit.

Therefore, when they encountered this tactic again, the three brothers immediately felt that something was wrong, but they were helpless.

The only thing they could do was to go all out and kill as many players as possible to reduce the casualties of their soldiers.

Ever since the moon illumination and the sun illumination had died, the only one among the nine illumination brothers who had the strength of a ghost emperor was the Starlight Prefecture Lord. At this moment, the three nine illumination brothers who were guarding this place were all existences of the ghost king realm.

Without the nine radiance Army's help, the players could easily kill the ghost king. However, the nine radiance Army had a large number of soldiers, so it was too difficult for them to kill the nine radiance brothers.

However, there was no lack of players who liked to challenge. At this time, in the voice channel of the "wall hunting group" formed by Liu Chan,"

Liu Chan: "brothers, what do you say? do you have a way to get one down?"

Ye Xue 'er: "I don't have the ability. Are you guys there? come out and have a chat. Don't be so cold, okay?"

[No. 7: my "ten ghosts prison" can suppress one, but he's the ghost king and I'm only the ghost Governor. He'll probably break the array in a few seconds (sigh helplessly)]

Ao Jian: "if you do it, I'll activate the sword formation. It won't be a problem to lock it for a few more seconds!"

Ye chen said, "let's go, big shots. My big bow has been thirsty for a long time. It's boring to kill the small ones. We, the wall-hanging Regiment, should kill the big ones."

Inky, "backstab ready!"

Youzi, "backstab ready!"

Core hu: "it's rare for him to come back from an event. Killing the small ones won't bring much profit. You guys think of a way to kill him. I have a way to kill him!"

[Old saying: I feel like the Great Demon King is getting more and more awesome. I just glanced at the corpse spirit team he brought. Their strength really scared me (the Sea King's shocked face)]

Sun Qi, "Oh, we're all in the same team, leave your health to me, don't worry!"

.....

Under Liu Chan's organization, the hanging wall hunting group was ready to move.

After coming up with a plan, they moved quietly among the player Army and gathered together. Then, they moved toward mu Yao's area.

To be on the safe side, they had chosen the weakest of the three brothers, mu Yao, as their hunting target.

Mu Yao, who was still busy killing players, did not realize that danger was quietly approaching.

At this moment, the seven generals who had entered their casting range raised their soul devouring staffs and waved them towards mu Yao. Instantly, ten shadows rose into the air and surrounded mu Yao, pressing down together.

This attack caught mu Yao off guard, and he was pressed down by the ten ghostly shadows.

Mu Yao, who finally reacted, was furious. He opened his arms and pushed the ten ghostly shadows away.

“Heartsword domain!” Ao Jian’s eyes flickered with a cold light as the nine spiritual swords behind him rose into the air and arrived above mu Yao’s head. They began to dance around and a sharp sword Qi slashed down.

This time, mu Yao was unable to avoid it, and his body landed on the ground.

At the same time, two black shadows suddenly appeared behind mu Yao, and two backstabs were used.

Mu Yao, who was shocked, was about to turn around and block him, but Liu Chan came from the front with a grin. He raised his silver right arm and threw a right punch at his face.

As he turned around to block the backstab, mu Yao’s face was hit by Liu Chan’s fist, and his body was sent flying, falling to the ground.

The few people present had the combat power of a ghost Governor. Although they were not mu Yao’s opponent in a single battle, their combined attack had an unparalleled combat power.

Mu Yao, who had fallen, was about to get up, but he saw more than 20 figures appear around him. They were all topless, and their bodies exuded a powerful aura, surrounding mu Yao in the center.

“Kill!” Hu He, who was standing at the back, immediately said.

Hearing Hu He’s order, the 20 undead spirits surrounded mu Yao and began to attack.

At this moment, mu Yao couldn’t fly even if he wanted to, he could only swing his arms and slap the corpse spirits away one by one.

However, the undead spirits were not afraid of pain at all. The moment they fell to the ground, they would get up and pounce again. Gou ‘Zi, who was hiding not far away, released healing chains to continuously repair the injured bodies of the undead spirits.

“Roar!” At this moment, mu Yao was completely enraged. The power in his body exploded out, sending all the corpse spirits around him flying. Just as he was about to fly up into the air, he saw another figure flapping its wings and flying over.

“Look at my eyes!” Gu Yu, who was in the form of an evil god, roared at mu Yao.

“I think you ...” Mu Yao raised his fist and was about to smash the figure that was pouncing at him away, but he subconsciously looked into Gu Yu’s eyes.

As the evil thoughts entered his body and his mind was filled with negative emotions, mu Yao’s body suddenly trembled and he was stunned on the spot.

At this time, the twenty or so corpse spirit men surrounded mu Yao again and began to kick and punch him.

Gu Yu’s figure did not stop as he sprinted to mu Yao’s side and used the momentum to kick mu Yao’s crotch.

Mu Yao’s mouth twitched and his brows furrowed, but he still hadn’t recovered from the negative state.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, ao Jian, seven, and the others also gathered around mu Yao, completely surrounding him. Taking advantage of the fact that the gaze of the evil god had not been removed, they began to madly attack.

They worked together very well. In less than a minute, mu Yao was completely under their control, and Chen Yao and Jin Yao had no time to react.

When they realized that mu Yao's side was in trouble and wanted to go to help, they suddenly found that in the dust from the North, an Army of iron cavalry was aggressively approaching.

“Brothers of Beiqi, let's have fun together!”

Rheinhardt, the leader of the steel cavalry Army, rode on a huge Dragon Horn rhinoceros and shouted excitedly. Behind him was the Army of players from the European server.

(Team 515 needs teammates for the event. If you survive in the top 100, you'll get a fan title. Just do some daily missions and you'll be fine. You're currently ranked around 70, so keep it up!)

Chapter 347 - Don'T Move, Kill Steal!

May 1st was an International Festival. On this day, the European server and the hell server also had activities.

The difference was that the first mission that the European server opened on this day was a mission to kill monsters without limit. It was not a fixed goal for the players of Beiqi.

Originally, the players from the European server were prepared to have a good fight with Yuan Xu.

However, to the surprise of the European players, void abyss had recalled his Army from the infernal domain back to the strange Dragon tomb and set up a barrier with his subordinate ghost kings. They had adopted a defensive strategy as if they knew that the players were going to riot today.

This made the players from the European server very depressed. Although they could attack the strange Dragon tomb directly, it was a long journey after all. It would take at least half a day. In addition, it would take some time to break through the barrier.

10 O' clock was the time when the quiz event would start. Hence, the players from the European server came up with a plan and decided to head to Beiqi from the South. Coincidentally, the players from the Chinese server were also going to attack nine radiance's base in underworld. Moreover, they were on the weaker side. Wouldn't it be better if they attacked together?

Hence, before the event started, the European server Army set off for Beiqi without stopping.

For the first wave of this event, they decided to kill to their heart's content in Beiqi.

Seeing the new force, Chen Yao and Jin Yao were surprised. Then they shouted,”

“Attention, all troops! There are enemies in the North!”

Starshine and chen Yao's roars naturally attracted the attention of the players. Then, they saw countless players from the European server jumping down from the sinkhole in the North and coming over.

“Brothers in the central server, let's have fun together!” At this moment, Lionheart raised his silver spear and roared again. The Dragon-horned rhinoceros below him was like a tank, roaring and charging into the nine glory Army.

Seeing their appearance, the expressions of the Chinese Huskies, who were in the middle of killing, suddenly changed.”

“No, no, no. I'm begging you to get lost, please. Don't be like this!”

“F * ck! Brothers, pay attention! The kill-stealing is here!”

“Wicked, this is too wicked. We finally had the chance to kill to our heart's content, and now you're here to steal our monsters. A bunch of ****, I'll F ** you!”

“B * stards, this is too much! This is Beiqi! Can't you go and fight Yuan Xuxing? don't you have any sense of territory?!”

.....

The players on the central server immediately opened the regional voice channel and started to curse.

However, the players from the European server would not listen to him. All they could see were the shiny soul coins, experience points, and event rewards. They were blinded by the benefits.

To hell with territorial awareness.

To hell with your monsters.

F * ck that B * stard.

He didn't listen! He didn't listen! I don't want to listen!

Hence, the players from the European server completely ignored the players from the mid-server and clashed with the nine glory Army from the side.

One from the West, one from the North. The two armies advanced at the same time and began to farm monsters.

The Beiqi players who saw this scene felt very aggrieved. It was as if their own leeks had been dug up by a boar from next door.

“Quick, brothers, speed up the harvest. Don't let these bastards snatch it!”

Since they couldn't stop it, they could only reduce their losses. Thus, the northern divergent's players killed even more enthusiastically.

.....

At this moment, in the West corner, mu Yao was completely stunned.

In mu Yao's impression, the characteristic of the players was that they were numerous and could not be killed, but they had never encountered a high-end combat power.

However, it was completely different this time. These players were clearly stronger than the players he had encountered before. Their control was smooth and their own abilities were also outstanding, making it impossible for him to escape.

This was especially true for the twenty or so naked burly men. Although they didn't have much combat experience and only knew how to mindlessly hammer people, they couldn't kill them at all. Even if their chests caved in,

a green light would flash out from somewhere and sweep away the injuries on the naked burly man's body.

Control, damage output, healing, long-range attacks, and so on. It could be said that the members of the wall-hanging Regiment and the twenty or so burly men under Hu He had a total of more than fifty people. The power that burst out from them at this moment made mu Yao unable to even breathe. He could only deal with it tiredly.

In the distance, seeing mu Yao trapped, Chen Yao and Jin Yao's hearts tightened, and they immediately wanted to go to help.

At this time, Li Xing, who was holding a golden sword, shouted in the voice channel,"

"Brothers, let's do it too! We can't lose our momentum!"

Hearing this, Rheinhardt's eyes flashed with excitement. He raised his spear and began to aim. Then he suddenly threw the silver spear.

"Come down!"

The long silver spear pierced through the air, making a sharp whistling sound. It left a white stream of air behind it as it stabbed into Jin Yao's back.

Jin Yao's flying figure suddenly stopped.

At this time, the three necromancers standing next to Li Xing below twisted and turned into three huge dark crows. They flapped their wings and rose into the air, reaching out their sharp claws to grab Jin Yao.

While Jin Yao began to block the attack of the dark crows, several Knights below raised their Spears and began to shoot.

The other necromancers from ZERO's group started to form a black hexagram. Then, a giant black Claw emerged from the array and grabbed Jin Yao.

“Now! Jason, it’s all up to you!”

“Received!”

Seeing that Jin Yao had been restricted, Jason turned around on the spot to gain some strength. Then, with a “hey”, he threw the “Shadow Hand spider web” in his hand at Jin Yao. After it had locked Jin Yao in place, he pulled Jin Yao to the ground with force.

The ZERO “barbarian” players around saw this and immediately stepped forward to help.

After several attacks, Jin Yao finally couldn’t resist anymore and fell from the sky.

The moment they landed, the Knights around them activated their charge skill at the same time. Under the lead of Reinhardt, they crashed into Jin Yao’s body, making him dizzy.

“Kill him! Since he’s here, it’s a great deal to snatch the ghost king!” Reinhardt roared out of excitement.

ZERO’s guild members heard the news and began their frenzied attacks before the shadow spider web was torn apart.

On the other side, Chen Yao had already arrived at the area where Mu Yao was trapped. He raised his hand and slammed down. A huge wind pressure came, and many players were blown away by the wind. However, the players from the wall hanging group did not move at all.

“Little Mo, little youzi, seven old men, you guys go and hold him back. This mu Yao can’t hold on for much longer!” Liu Chan immediately shouted.

“Received!”

After saying that, mo and youzi’s figures turned into black shadows, and then they merged into one. They shot up from the ground and rushed toward Chen Yao.

“Get lost!”

Seeing that mu Yao’s expression was gradually becoming dispirited, Chen Yao became anxious and raised his palm to slap Xiao mo and Xiao youzi in anger.

But at this moment, Little Mo and little youzi suddenly separated in the air and revealed themselves. The palm print formed by energy brushed past the two of them.

“Ghost devour!” When the seven saw this, they waved their soul-devouring staves, and a huge Phantom of an evil ghost appeared behind them. It roared and rushed toward Chen Yao in the sky.

“Get lost!” Chen Yao’s palm scattered the evil ghost shadow, and his body once again fell toward mu Yao.

This time, Chen Yao came prepared, unlike mu Yao, who was stunned by the continuous attacks in a short time.

Moreover, Gu Yu’s “evil God’s gaze” was still on cooldown, so it couldn’t stop the strongest of the three, Chen Yao.

After knocking away several corpse spirits, Chen Yao grabbed mu Yao and flew into the air.

How could the cheater group below let mu Yao go so easily? suddenly, countless skills soared into the sky.

Looking at the dying mu Yao in his hand, Chen Yao knew that mu Yao would not be able to hold on any longer. He lifted his body again and flew higher and higher until the players’ attacks could no longer reach him.

“I ****”

“F * ck, F ** K, the cooked duck flew away!”

.....

Seeing this scene, the members of the wall hanging group couldn't help but curse. Even the seven old men who were well-mannered couldn't help but say, "F * ck!"

However, they didn't have any air-to-air combat power right now, and Chen Yao was a late-stage ghost king. Now that some of their skills were on cooldown, they couldn't fight him at all. At this moment, they could only feel helpless.

"What a loss! What should we do, bosses?" Chen Ziyu asked in the team voice chat. His tone seemed to be trembling from the heartache.

"Brothers, it seems that Li Xing and his men have captured Jin Yao from the North!" Liu Chan said with a ferocious tone.

Hearing this, everyone's heart trembled. Then, they all revealed malicious smiles.

"Snatch!"

"Snatch him!"

"We have to, they're all ours!"

.....

There was no need for any discussion. Everyone had the same attitude, and that was to snatch it.

Hence, the members of the cheater team started to move and ran towards the northern side where the players from the European server were.

At this moment, they only had one thought, and that was to share the pain and then reduce the pain.

To the North, Jin Yao, who had landed on the ground, was facing ZERO's entire Guild.

He wanted to escape several times, but the necromancers in the European server used a series of control skills such as Wraith swamp, death vines, and evil entanglement, which gave him a headache.

At this moment, countless illusionary hands were grabbing Jin Yao's heel tightly. His body was covered in death vines. Even if he was torn apart, countless vines would emerge from the ground and continue to entangle him.

“Open!” Faced with this situation, Jin Yao roared in anger. The energy in his body suddenly exploded and turned into a shock wave, shaking away the vines and Phantom claws.

However, at this time, the Knights led by Reinhardt arrived again with the ‘charge’ skill and ruthlessly knocked him to the ground again.

When Jin Yao got up, the ghostly claw on the ground reappeared, and the vines of death also spread.

Jin Yao wanted to cry when he was faced with this extremely difficult control style. He couldn't escape at all!

This was the control-type strategy that ZERO's Guild had come up with in their many battles with the abyss Army.

Seeing that Jin Yao was unable to leave, Li Xing smiled and raised his golden sword. Just as he was about to lead the Barbarian team to attack, he suddenly saw a few figures squeezing through the crowd from the West.

“Don't move! Kill steal!” Ye chen shouted arrogantly as he jumped into the encirclement of Jin Yao with his large bow.

“Get lost, kill steal!” Liu Chan's figure appeared after he sent several players flying with a heavy punch.

“They're coming!” Gu Yu, who was in his evil god form, fell from the sky and slammed his right fist onto the ground. Then, with his right fist as the

center, he activated the burning of blood skill. Crimson flames spread out from his right fist.

“Fellow Daoist from the European server, I’m sorry!”

Ye Xue ‘er: “I love stealing monsters. Hehe!”

“Get lost, it’s ours!” Ao Jian said.

.....

At this moment, the members of the hanging wall Group arrived.

They were here purely to kill steal.

The smile on Li Xing’s face instantly froze when he saw Liu Chan leading the wall-hanging group.

When the Beiqi players saw this scene from afar, they suddenly became excited.

“The bosses are already on it, what are we waiting for? F * ck them up! How dare they steal monsters? it’s time to let them know who their real daddy is!”

At this moment, the Beiqi players raised their weapons at the European players, revealing their bloodthirsty fangs ...

.....

At this moment, Chen Yao, who had moved mu Yao to a safe area, returned to the netherworld’s sinkhole and saw a scene that made him extremely dumbfounded.

A chaotic battle between three forces was happening below!

Chapter 348 - Chaotic Battle

The two server players, who already had a conflict, completely erupted because of the jinyao ghost King's right to kill.

This fight was sudden, and it quickly spread across the entire battlefield like a fuse. The two forces directly clashed.

With Jin Yao as the center, the situation was even more chaotic. Players from both servers wanted to help their own party take down the ghost king BOSS, so they all squeezed toward the center.

In the eyes of the players from the Chinese and European servers, whoever took down the jinyao ghost king first would be the most powerful.

It was simple and brutal. While the two forces killed the soldiers of the juyao Army, they exchanged all kinds of blows. Their skills were like fireworks in Hell's sinkhole.

Seeing this, Chen Yao was dumbfounded.

He could not tell which were the players from the European server and which were the players from the central server. In his eyes, the players who were fighting each other below were all players, and they all looked the same.

At this moment, Chen Yao's eyes fell on Jin Yao, who was obviously unable to escape. His expression became serious, and he quickly flew down.

“Chenyao is here!”

It was unknown which player shouted, but all the players below immediately looked up.

“This time, we can’t let him get away with it. Kill him!” Liu Chan immediately roared.

Hearing Liu Chan’s roar, the members of the cheater squad and the rest of the players from the central server immediately changed their direction of attack.

“Everyone, focus fire on brilliant dawn!” At this moment, Li Xing also shouted in the voice channel.

At this moment, the players from both servers had a tacit understanding. They turned their firepower to Chen Yao, who was trying to kill Jin Yao.

Flames flickered as the dense skill shockwaves continued, wave after wave. Chen Yao was unable to move forward under this violent attack. After a while, he turned around and flew back into the sky.

Seeing Chen Yao leave, Liu Chan and Li Xing both looked at each other.

Then, the battle between the players broke out again.

Chen Yao, who was in the air, was panting heavily. His face was gloomy because he couldn’t save Jin Yao at all under this kind of attack.

Looking down, he suddenly realized that the players were fighting again, so he gritted his teeth and flew down again.

“Chenyao is here again!” A player’s loud roar sounded in the regional channel.

At this moment, all the players once again tacitly aimed their fire at Chen Yao and began a new round of crazy attacks.

Chen Yao was so angry that he exploded after being forced back again.

Can’t you guys just fight properly?!

He had wanted to take Jin Yao away while the player Army was fighting, but he didn’t expect to become the target of all the attacks.

However, the players did not care about Chen Yao's mood. As long as Chen Yao did not come, their main task was to kill the players in the other server and then snatch the BOSS.

This was a matter of their reputation as players.

The battle became more and more intense. In the end, the central area was filled with players, while the nine glory Army soldiers were pushed out of the inner circle where the battle was the most intense.

This caused the nine glory Army soldiers to be extremely stunned.

These players had come for them, but they had ended up fighting among themselves instead. Now, they had become the third party on the battlefield.

“What are you all waiting for? charge in! If my fifth brother dies, all of you will be buried with him!”

Chen Yao was so angry that he wanted to kill his own men when he saw the nine glory Army soldiers standing outside, not willing to continue fighting.

Hearing Chen Yao's angry roar, the nine glory Army's soldiers tensed up and began to charge into the battlefield.

After the players from the European server joined in, the battle became extremely chaotic. In order to snatch the BOSS, both sides were killing each other.

However, in terms of overall strength, it was obvious that the players from the Chinese server were stronger. This undoubtedly made many players from the European server feel annoyed.

Some of the European server players who were really popular no longer felt the pinch for soul coins. They began to buy strengthening potions from the merchant shop to enhance themselves in various ways. They spent a lot of money just to fight for their pride.

This trend quickly spread.

A large number of players from the European server began to spend money to buy consumable strengthening potions to enhance themselves. After a while, most of the players from the European server began to flash with an enhancement light, and their combat power soared.

Seeing this, the players from the central server started to pay for the game.

Soon, all the players in the central server had a bottle of enhancement potion. The rich ones even bought five to six bottles of enhancement potions of different attributes and drank them all.

While competing in strength, the two servers actually compared their ability to spend money.

This made Lu Wu, who was watching the game behind the scenes, not know whether to laugh or cry. He was already prepared to pay a lot for the event, but as a result, the soul coins in his inventory actually soared.

Regarding the serious issue of a ‘Civil War’ between players, Lu Wu only wanted to say at this moment,”

“Beat him, beat him to death!”

“Fight, spend money and fight to death!”

As the big boss behind these players, Lu Wu didn’t stop them at this time. Instead, he watched with great interest.

Especially when he saw the huge increase in soul coins, if it wasn’t for the fact that he wanted to establish a “dignified” image in front of Bei Li, Lu Wu almost wanted to stand up and clap!

.....

The three-way battle was still going on. During this period, Chen Yao came to kidnap people several times. However, the two server players had to work together when facing Chen Yao.

Seeing Jin Yao getting weaker and weaker, Chen Yao's mind exploded. He couldn't save his brother.

However, the players didn't care about what Chen Yao thought.

At this moment, the players from both servers were only focused on beating up the players from the other server and did not care about anything else.

The voice channel of the European server players:

“Jin Yao is about to die. Five Knights, charge with me and clear a path. We'll charge in and support ZERO's unit. Someone, come!”

“Hahaha, the headless Paladin that I summoned just now killed two medium-grade pigs with low health. Save the screenshot and continue killing!”

“My health is almost at the bottom. Priest, F * ck you xxxxx, heal me, where are you? Where the hell did he go?”

“All barbarians in the party activate ‘berserk’ mode. We'll fight to the death in the final stage. If we win this battle, we'll see how Savage the server can be in the future!”

“Brothers, this is the last wave. Victory is right in front of us. Hold on!”

.....

In the voice channel of the Chinese players,”

“This is the last wave. Brothers, attack with all your might. Don't worry about the money for the medicine. Face is more important than anything else. Kill!”

“I've caught an enemy priest. Dong Xiaotian, come over and help your father deal damage. Don't let him get away!”

“Hahaha, the explosive pill is so useful. I just threw one and it killed three people. That's F * cking awesome!”

“Sister, where are you? I can’t find you, how can I heal you? (A certain wood spirit descendent cute girl who was at a loss on the battlefield)”

“Hahaha, sure enough, my great zombie armor is still tougher. Just now, when the opposite Knight charged at me, I activated super armor, but he actually crashed into me and flipped over. Hahaha, this is great, let’s continue!”

“F * ck, how did our healer die? is there a healer who’s alone? come on, one of them, we can’t take it anymore!”

“Don’t worry about the Knight. Kill the priest first. Their priest has higher HP than us wood spirits. It’s hard for them to kill people if they don’t die!”

.....

The voice channels of both armies were in chaos.

However, at this moment, the game prompt suddenly sounded in the minds of all the players.

[Game prompt: the target ghost king Jin Yao is on the verge of death.]

With the appearance of the game prompt, the two groups of forces seemed to be on steroids. The battle became even more frenzied, and the scene was like a group of demons dancing.

At this moment, even the extremely powerful nine glory Army could not charge in.

At this moment, the battlefield was completely in the players ‘hands. It was as if this was a battle between them, and the nine glory Army led by Chen Yao was the third party on the battlefield.

In the center of the battlefield.

Jin Yao finally entered a state of near death under the violent attacks from both sides. At this moment, his body was full of wounds, and his broken

armor was bleeding. He was so weak that he couldn't resist the attacks from all directions. He was tied to the ground by the vines.

At that moment, mo and youzi suddenly appeared behind Li Xing, and their combined backstab suddenly slashed down.

The Barbarian that Li Xing had chosen was a damage-type profession, so his own defense was not high. In the face of the sure-kill attacks from Little Mo and little youzi, it seemed that he could not escape death.

At this critical moment, Lionheart, who was not far away, raised the silver spear in his hand and pointed it at inky. He roared,”

“Dark duel!”

Along with Lionheart's roar, an illusory dark arena crashed down from the sky, surrounding the two of them. The players around them gradually blurred and disappeared, leaving only inky and Lionheart in the arena.

[Dark duel (unique)]:

[Skill description: opens the dark arena. During this period, you can choose a player as your challenge target. The chosen one will be pulled into an independent space in the dark arena and have a one-on-one battle with you.] During this period, everything in the outside world will be blocked. If the dark paladin successfully kills the challenged person, the defeated person's body will be captured (attributes reduced by 50%, skill effects reduced by 50%) and turned into a dark slave for the dark paladin to control. Duration of 10 minutes

In the outside world, youzi's dagger ruthlessly stabbed into Li Xing's back, causing a critical hit. However, without the cooperation of Little Mo, this attack did not have a Shadow Rune, so Li Xing was not killed instantly.

At this time, youzi's heart was also in shock. Xiao Mo's disappearance had caught her off guard, but she did not attack again. Instead, she decisively turned into a black shadow and retreated towards the area where the players from the Chinese server were.

“Leave it here!” The Deputy commander standing beside Li Xing saw this and quickly shouted.

The surrounding necromancers immediately made their move. Countless “black Necromancer claws” rose from the ground, trying to catch the escaping youzi.

“Blade Storm!”

Just as youzi was about to be caught, ao Jian’s figure appeared. As he snorted coldly, nine spiritual swords circled around his body, forming a violent sword formation, tearing apart all the control skills around him, helping youzi escape successfully.

Meanwhile, in the dark arena, Lionheart and inky were engaged in a fierce battle.

Lionheart could be said to be the publicly acknowledged fragile killer in the European server. At this moment, ink was restricted in every aspect in the dark arena. Without youzi’s cooperation, it could be said that she was no match for Lionheart at all. She could only rely on her movement technique to constantly avoid Lionheart’s attacks.

.....

The most intense battle was at the center of the battlefield where Jin Yao was.

The seven of them took ten bottles of enhancement potions and summoned “ghost hunter” under Jin Yao’s feet. Beside him, Liu Chan blocked the attacks from all directions, protecting the seven of them.

Not far away, mo Lingtian’s long hair was dancing in the wind. The Stormwind bow in his hand was burning with green flames. Every energy arrow he shot could easily kill a fragile player from the European server. He had become a fragile killer on the battlefield.

The one protecting mo Lingtian was none other than the “melee Archer” ye chen.

“Jin Yao is going to die!”

“Jin Yao is going to die!”

The voice channels on both sides were filled with the angry roars of the players.

At this moment, the players on both sides gave up on attacking the other players and focused their fire on Jin Yao.

At this moment, Chen Yao’s figure reappeared.

When all the players were focused on Jin Yao, Chen Yao’s appearance was too sudden, and he closed in on Jin Yao in an instant.

Just as the players were about to tear their eyes apart, a black shadow appeared behind Jin Yao.

A cold glint suddenly appeared on the sharp dagger, and the sharp blade suddenly slashed down with a black stream of light.

Seeing this, the hearts of the players from the European server turned cold, while the players from the central server were extremely excited.

However, at this moment, a player shouted on the voice channel,”

“He’s not Little Mo!”

Hearing this, the players on the Chinese server were shocked and quickly started analyzing.

[Dark slave-Little Mo]:

[Character introduction: a death slave that was converted after being killed by player Reinhardt in the dark arena.]

After seeing the analysis ability, the players from the central server opened their eyes wide, their hearts filled with unwillingness.

“Bang!” Under the back chisel.

-289

At the same time, the words “last strike” appeared above Jin Yao’s head in red.

The appearance of this notification meant that Jin Yao’s HP was less than 500.

However, at this moment, “Little Mo” made his move again, and the players from the central server could not stop him in time.

Just as Jin Yao was about to die, a flaming arrow suddenly appeared. It pierced through Jin Yao’s forehead at an extremely fast speed and pierced through the sky.

A string of blood-red words appeared above Jin Yao’s head.

-13121

[Congratulations to player ye chen for causing “random” critical damage X100 and successfully killing target Jin Yao!]

“Whoosh!” The players from both servers were in an uproar.

“Ah ah ah ah ah ah ah ah ah ah!”

“F * ck you, ye chen. You’re a F * cking killer. I love you to death!”

“Hahahaha, I’ll let fate hang on the wall and destroy the heavens and earth. Scumbags from the European server, cry. Cry louder for me!”

“666! I’m about to have a heart attack. Ye chen, hurry up and compensate me!”

“Ye chen, you’re a F * cking talent. You’re the king of the mid server headwind reversal. Come over and let me kiss you!”

“Against my brother Chen’s will, a critical hit with 100 times the damage. You’re f * cking scared, hahaha!”

.....

In the distance, ye chen, who was holding a longbow, could not believe that he had successfully saved the situation again. The dull expression on his face gradually turned into an arrogant smile.

At the same time, all the players in the central server started to wail like ghosts and howl like wolves, and the appearance of the tearing down Husky reappeared.

Chapter 349 - -Giving Away The Topic

The plot kept turning, and all the players' emotions were like riding a roller coaster.

Seeing Jin Yao's death, Lu Wu, who was behind the scenes, could not help but smile. He could not help but feel proud when he saw ye chen use the skill enhanced by the "heavenly spell of fate" to kill Jin Yao.

After all, this skill was created by him in his previous life. Although it had little to do with his current self, Lu Wu was still very proud of it.

On the other hand, Bei Li looked at Lu Wu, who was smiling foolishly, and revealed a helpless expression as if he was looking at a 'fool'.

.....

Jin Yao was dead, but the players from the European server could not accept it.

In this battle, Jin Yao's area had more players from the European server than those from the Chinese server. He originally had the upper hand, but the result was beyond their expectations.

In their eyes, this was supposed to be a slap in the face for the central server and a chance to establish the prestige of the European server. However, everything was over now, and there was no turning back.

This time, ye chen had once again made a contribution. All the players in the central server cheered.

When the players from the European server saw this, their eyes turned red and they all rushed toward ye chen.

Ye Chen was the biggest contributor to the central server but in the eyes of the players from the Western server, he was the biggest cancer on the battlefield.

Ye Chen was not afraid at all when he saw the agitated players charging at him. He calmly opened his arms and turned into a black mist before the violent players.

At the same time, Chen Yao, who had grabbed Jin Yao, was floating in the air. He was surprised to find that Jin Yao was dead. His face turned pale and he let out a roar of grief and anger.

“Nine glory Army! Kill them all, don’t leave a single one alive!”

The players from the Chinese server and the European server ignored Chen Yao and continued to fight.

At this time, the players from the European server were extremely sullen. In their opinion, the jinyao ghost King’s kill should have belonged to them, but they did not expect it to be stolen.

This was the game world, and there was no need to hold back one’s anger. Since they were unhappy, they would kill!

However, at this moment, the game prompt suddenly sounded.

[Server announcement: Please note that the quiz will start at 10 O’ clock. Players, please be prepared!]

The moment the game notification appeared, both players from the Chinese and European servers suddenly stopped attacking each other.

After staring at the opposing players for a while, the players from the central and European servers suddenly spread out in tacit understanding and began to run outside.

“The questions are about to start. You can’t answer them while in combat. Everyone, run!”

“F ** K, if it wasn't for the questions, I would've killed the weaklings on your European server. You guys are lucky!”

“Zhongfu pig, don't be too smug. You'll get it next time. You're the ones who saved us when we started answering the questions, not us!”

“You guys are lucky this time. Next time, this isn't the full strength of our European server!”

“Hehe, even with your boss, Xie Wang, they're still no match for us. Who doesn't know how to talk tough? we'll wait for you to fight!”

“Don't babble anymore. Run quickly. It's too late to answer the questions!”

.....

In the regional voice channel, the players from the European and Chinese servers were running and talking to each other.

But at this moment, they all had the same thought. The questions were about to start. Run quickly, or you won't be able to make it in time.

As the players spread out, the nine glory Army's Warriors easily made their way into the central area. However, the players had no intention of fighting them at all. All of them ran madly towards the exit of the pit filled by underworld.

At this moment, the nine glory Army soldiers were once again dumbfounded. The battle had been so intense just a moment ago, and it had ended so suddenly.

Was this a war? You must be joking!

“Chase!” Chen Yao shouted at the people below.

Upon hearing Chen Yao's roar, the nine glory Army soldiers could only scatter in all directions and chase after the players.

“Brothers, pay attention. They’re chasing after us. Run! There’s no hope before we run out of the battle range!”

After hearing the prompt from a certain player in the voice channel, the players immediately quickened their pace.

This was especially so for the Warriors and Knights. They all ran very quickly, while the wood spirits and priests who ran slowly at the back all had looks of resentment on their faces.

These people had risked their lives to be their meat shields on the battlefield, but they had turned their backs on them the moment the event started. They had actually let them healer them to block the nine glory Army’s pursuit. Were they still human?

A few short-legged wet nurses even had the thought of strangling the few Warriors who had sworn to protect her from harm.

The warrior players only had one thought in their minds: I run so fast that I can immediately escape from my combat state, and then I can happily answer the questions. It was a F * cking wise choice to play as a warrior.

Seeing the mages and healers panting all the way, not only did they not sympathize, they even wanted to laugh.

The entire battlefield was torn apart. There was no need for any formation or assembly. At this moment, the players only cared about themselves. Nothing else was important.

Seeing this, Chen Yao’s face turned pale.

The battle had ended just like that. He felt as if his mental state had completely exploded, but he had no place to vent it because the players had long since dispersed. He could not vent his anger by killing.

” Playing with the clan, I want you all dead!” Chen Yao could only roar at the sky.

The players ran even faster when they heard Chen Yao’s roar.

I'm done. I'm leaving~I'm leaving~

.....

Five minutes later, the battle in Hell's Tiankeng officially ended.

Meanwhile, the players from the central and European servers had already run far away, and the nine glory Army could only return in disappointment.

At the same time, the questions began, and the active answer panel appeared in front of all the players who had left their combat state.

Many of the players who were killed and logged out of the game could only watch the live stream of the questions with resentment. At the same time, they hoped that the question library was extremely difficult, so difficult that they could not answer a single question correctly!

This time, the questions on the three servers were different, but they were carried out simultaneously on each server.

After 60 seconds of preparation, the first question of the activity appeared.

[Question one (multiple choice questions for common sense): Who was the previous official sovereign of Beiqi?]

[A: Lu Yan; B: Lu Tian; C: Infanta Lu; D: copper pendant]

As the question appeared, the 30-second countdown began, and one point would be deducted for every second.

This question wasn't difficult for the players. As long as the players had a little understanding of Beiqi's history, they could quickly give the answer.

However, there were still stupid players who made the wrong choice for such a simple question.

After 30 seconds, the game prompt appeared.

[Game prompt: you have finished answering the first question. Correct answer A (87.33%), wrong answer B (2.66%), wrong answer C (8.43%), wrong answer D (1.58%)]

Seeing the results of the first round of questions, many of the players watching the livestream burst out laughing. They couldn't believe that there was really an idiot who could choose "copper hack."

At this moment, the second question appeared.

[Question 2 (common sense question): what are the opposing attributes of the yin attribute?]

This question was not a multiple choice question, so players could only enter their own answer on the interface.

However, to the players, this question was a free point. After all, yin and yang were opposing each other in the game. Not only in battle, but also in alchemy, forging, and other lifestyle classes.

However, one of the players' answers stood out, making the players outside burst into laughter.

This player actually answered "clear"!

The comments section of the livestream was completely abuzz.

"I'm laughing, but there's nothing wrong with it. Isn't the opposite of a cloudy day a sunny day? I strongly request this player's answer to be correct (funny)."

"Hahaha, idiotic players are really unfathomable. Did you watch too many weather reports? I'm dying of laughter."

"Other people's questions are free points, but yours are free questions!"

"Brother, don't panic. Your train of thought is actually correct. We are strongly protesting that the war mastermind group will change your answer to the correct one (funny)."

.....

Whether it was the comments section of the live broadcast room or the event chat channel, the players were all laughing. They were all in awe of this player's strange brain.

The subsequent questions were even more laughable.

The players didn't mind if they couldn't answer the more difficult questions correctly, but some of the free-mark questions were still wrong. It completely changed the minds of most players.

One of the questions was about what a mage should do when they were ambushed by an assassin.

Most of the players answered that they had activated defense and barrier skills. These answers had basically passed the test of the divine weapon, but there were some honest players who spoke their minds.

“Quickly run!”

There were quite a few people who had such honest thoughts, and they actually wrote down their thoughts, making the players who were watching the event laugh.

There were also such simple questions. If you were a priest and your party was fighting a BOSS, what would you do if the warrior was almost out of HP? in the end, some players confessed their thoughts and answered, “run!”

The warrior player was quite resentful about this answer.

Also, in a team battle, you are a warrior. If you find out that the healer in the team is dead, what do you do?

The answer was to run!

The mage players were deeply resentful of this reply. They felt that in the eyes of these warrior players, there was no mage player with the highest damage output. Was he still human?

After a round of questions, a group of players died from the simple questions. Although these players were realistic enough and dared to speak their minds, they received a reward of 0 points for this question.

After the first free point questions ended, the difficulty of the following common sense questions continued to increase.

From the information about the function of a certain item in the merchant shop to the knowledge about life professions, the players were going crazy.

Compared to the previous battle with the nine glory Army, the game was filled with laughter and cheers.

Chapter 350 - The Devouring Chaotic Battle

After the battle at the crater, the May Day event had set off a frenzy among the players, and today was the fourth day.

For the first three days, other than killing the nine glory Army soldiers to earn event medals and answering questions at 10 O' clock every night, the watering event was a daily task that the players had to do.

The players were full of anticipation as to what the sapling of luck would produce.

Under normal circumstances, the watering can could only produce one pot of "spirit spring water" every hour, and the sapling had to be watered ten times in order to mature and bear fruit.

This was undoubtedly a long process for the players. They had to wait for ten hours before they could get anything, and this was only the beginning of the growth of the luck sapling. They would have to wait for a long time before they could cultivate it again.

As a result, how to obtain more spirit spring water became a problem.

The players knew very well that the amount of spiritual spring water they had would not increase, and they would only use it for a fixed amount of production. So, it seemed that the only way to obtain more spiritual spring water was to steal from others.

At first, everyone in the forum was talking about how they would never do anything immoral like stealing other people's spirit spring water, and how harmony was the most important.

It could be said that it was a happy and harmonious scene, and they all guaranteed each other's safety.

However, there was no absolute in this kind of thing, although most players thought so at the beginning.

However, there was a group of players who liked to play with excitement. They felt that it was too troublesome to collect and cultivate it bit by bit. It was better to take shortcuts, so they thought of ways to steal other people's spirit spring water. It would be fine if the theft was unsuccessful, but if the theft was successful, it would cause a chain problem.

The players who had their spiritual spring water stolen would face the danger of the sapling withering. In this case, they were undoubtedly unwilling to accept it.

As a result, some of these players also had the idea of stealing other people's spirit spring water, and some of them put it into action. This situation spread like a virus.

In the end, the promise they made on the forum was a joke to the players, and most of them began to steal the spring water.

In addition, the players who had successfully stolen the Super lucky fruit kept growing the Super lucky fruit, which made many players who were slowly growing the saplings jealous.

Later on, a powerful assassin player stole more than 100 bottles of spiritual spring water and cultivated a sapling that bore two super lucky Fruits. One of the Super lucky Fruits even yielded a level 100 epic weapon, which made the players go crazy.

Under the temptation of huge benefits, countless players went against the promises they made on the forum and embarked on the path of stealing the spirit spring water, with no way of turning back.

In fact, this was exactly what Lu Wu wanted to see.

The reward for cultivating the saplings this time could be said to be one for each person. Although he could lower the probability of producing good things, the cost of soul coins was still huge.

The competition would inevitably lead to the withering of countless small saplings, which would imperceptibly reduce Lu Wu's expenditure of soul coins. At the same time, the competition would also drive the players' desire to enhance their strength.

All of these were problems that Lu Wu had considered before he designed this "morning farming and evening sleep" event.

As more and more things were planned in the game, Lu Wu gradually gained more experience and realized that he was the big boss behind the scenes. Now, he could bring benefits to the players while reducing his own expenses.

From the players' point of view, they wouldn't blame their losses on the expedition team.

In the past three days, the players experienced a torturous wait every day. In order to ensure that their saplings were not stolen, they could only stay by the saplings' side, browsing the forums, watching live broadcasts, and listening to music as they waited for the saplings to grow.

This kind of waiting was undoubtedly boring, but the moment the sapling matured and bore fruit, all the suffering became worth it. The sense of harvest was a joy that most players in modern society could not experience.

On the fourth day, there were very few players who had the lucky sapling in their hands. Other than those who saw the intense competition and decided to hold back, the lucky sapling in the players' hands had either withered or ripened.

Today was the last day of the May Day event, and also the day the ultimate event began.

In the first three days, the players had all guessed what the ultimate event would be, and the players from the three major regions had even jointly organized a poll to discuss and guess what it would be.

More than 49% of the players thought that today's event would be the first cross-server war in the conquest online.

There was excitement and worry. Before the event started, all the players had mixed feelings.

Especially the players from the European server.

On the first day of the May Day event, they had fought with the players from the central server in the Tiankeng in the northern divergent's underworld. The final result had made them feel very indignant. They always wanted to win back, so at this moment, they were the server that most wanted to start a cross-server war.

At Seven o' clock in the evening, a full-service announcement sounded:

[Server announcement: the May 1st ultimate event, the "devouring battle", will begin in an hour. Players can click on the event panel to register. At 8 O' clock, all participating players will be teleported to the event location!]

[Devouring chaotic battle (May 1st ultimate event)]:

[Event details: this ultimate event will be participated by players from three major servers at the same time. The event locations will be randomly selected from the Beiqi region, the blue Void region, and the hell region.] After the event officially begins, players must first choose the form they want to transform into. After choosing, they will enter the regional battlefield and start the devouring evolution journey!

[Event notification: after the event begins, all players in the mimicry form will be at level 0. You can devour other mimicry players to level up. The more you devour, the stronger you will be. After the event ends, your level will be ranked by points.]

The three lifeforms:

Kun Peng:

“Mimicry introduction: in the North of the North, there is the Ying sea. It is a Heavenly Lake with fish. It is thousands of miles wide and its long name is ‘Yan’. It is so large that it can not be stewed in one pot ... It is an ancient divine beast that can evolve rapidly by devouring!”

[Mimicry devouring skill: devour (devouring speed +40%, can devour targets 3 levels higher than oneself)]

Tianluo hou:

[Mimicry introduction: the form of an ancient God in the endless outer realms. It looks like an octopus and has countless void suction cups and tentacles. In its largest form, it can pluck the stars and swallow the moon. It can continuously evolve by devouring things.]

[Mimicry devour skill: void absorption (able to capture all other mimicry players within 10 meters to your side. Cooldown: 60 seconds); void (able to enter a void state. Unable to be locked and devoured. Lasts for 10 seconds. Cooldown: 600 seconds)]

[Candle God]:

[Mimicry introduction: the form of an endless outer realm ancient God. Its body is formed by outer realm candlelight. As it devours and evolves, its size will rapidly expand. In its largest form, it has the size and heat of the sun.]

[Mimicry devour skill: divine fire refinement (devour experience +30%, devour speed increased by 10%)]

[Event Hint 2: all players participating in this event will have three chances to resurrect. Upon death, their levels will be reduced by 80%, and they will be randomly resurrected within the event range.]

[Event Hint 3: in addition to the individual point ranking, the server ranking will be added. The player who successfully obtains the first place on the server point ranking will be awarded the special title of “devour as King”.]

.....

This “devouring chaotic battle” was the final event planned by Lu Wu.

In this ultimate event, there was no difference between the strong and the weak. It could be said that everything started from scratch. There were three devouring zergs for the players to choose from. They could decide the direction of their growth.

The three devouring zergs were designed based on the template given by Bei Li after Lu Wu and Bei Li discussed it. Many bugs were removed from the design, so that players could compete with each other and it was very interesting.

On the other hand, although each devouring Zerg grew by devouring, they had a completely different skill template.

For example, the kun Peng was a devouring seed that could challenge opponents of a higher level.

The heaven Luo daggers were the first choice for skill-type players. They could capture their targets and could also turn invisible to escape if they encountered a strong enemy.

The last ability, the candlelight God, was more balanced, but it could create a great advantage in the early stages. This was because it was the fastest growing type of devouring seed among the three types, and it had a 30% experience bonus.

After the ultimate event officially kicked off, the forums of the three major servers were in an uproar.

Crayon Shinchon: “after hesitating for a while, I chose to win. I like to sing, dance, rap, and play basketball.”(Funny)

[The strongest Xue Li: this assassin will definitely choose the heavenly Luo hou. Techniques are the best, okay? and I feel that the heavenly Luo hou is the safest choice!]

Lionheart (ou):”hehe, I thought it would be a cross-server battle, but I think it’s fun. As a tank, I’ll choose ‘kun Peng’. If you’re a man, you have to fight hard.”(Yuan Xu’s proud face).jpg)

[Cosmic stars (Europe): the candle God is not bad either. He’s more versatile and can level up quickly. He can quickly widen the distance between himself and others in the early stages. Decisive candle God (evil King’s faint smile. Gif)]

[Wandering sorcerer (hell): the candle God has a great advantage in the early stages. The heavenly Luo hou doesn’t die easily and can slowly accumulate and grow. The kun Peng is invincible in one-on-one battles of the same level. He has a great advantage in the later stages. I’m struggling with which to choose. (Sigh)]

Space armor [flight](hell): He doesn’t like to be gaudy. The kun Peng is the strongest and doesn’t listen to any explanation (funny)

Prince Charming 123 (hell): [The heaven Luo banner is invincible in the universe. I choose this one. Watch me destroy the pigs and dogs in the Chinese server (funny)]

[Roasting Chang ‘e while holding a Jade Rabbit: tsk tsk tsk, it seems like we won’t have any suspense about getting first place in the server. I’m thinking about what kind of lines I should say after I win the championship. Does anyone have any recommendations? the kind that can especially attract hatred (rock is in deep thought.jpg)]

.....

The players from the three servers were discussing the event at the bottom of the official post. At the same time, they were cursing at each other, trying to show off before the event started.

However, in Lu Wu’s settings, all the players would be born in random locations for this event. There was only the event chat channel, and no voice channels for guilds, legions, regions, teams, and other channels could

be used at all. This also made it difficult to organize the players 'strength in their own server.

Everything was random.

In order to win, other than having a certain level of skill and intelligence, luck was also an extremely important factor.

In fact, Lu Wu had already made one point clear in the trailer.

To live was to win!

This was because if all three chances of resurrection were used up, his personal points would be completely wiped out, and he would not be able to contribute to the overall points list of his server.

Therefore, staying alive was the most important thing, followed by growth. If he didn't stay alive, everything would be "zero."

Chapter 351 - The Last Fight

After an hour of waiting, the players were basically reading the detailed explanation on the event page.

After all, only by understanding the event would they be able to complete the event.

As it was eight o' clock in the evening, a game prompt appeared:

[Server announcement, the devouring chaotic battle has officially begun. Please choose your devouring mimicry for this competition!]

When the event appeared, the selection panel appeared in front of all the players. A total of three forms of the devouring monster were displayed.

The kun Peng looked like a whale. Its body was black and white, but it was more domineering and ferocious than a whale.

The form of the sky Net banner was similar to Cthulhu in the players' hearts, and it was full of mystery.

The candle God's appearance looked extremely simple. It was just a ball of burning ghost fire.

The players had already made their decision on the three options, and so they made their choice without hesitation.

Soon, Lu Wu got the data.

Kun Peng (39%), heavenly Luo hou (16%), candle God (45%)

From these numbers, it could be seen that most players were more inclined to the candlelight God, who could grow quickly. The Guardian of the sky Net, who needed his own skills, was the last choice.

Seeing that all the players had made their choices, the game prompt sounded again.

[Server announcement, selection complete, starting to draw the event venue: [Northern divergent region, Blue Void region, earth prison]

As soon as the system prompt fell, three scenes appeared in front of the players. They began to move horizontally, and the speed was getting faster and faster.

About 30 seconds later, the scene began to slow down until it stopped. At this moment, the golden needle in the center was pointing at the region of hell.

The hell server's players couldn't help but cheer at this choice. After all, they were the most familiar with the hell server's environment, and this choice was extremely beneficial to them.

However, the players from Beiqi and the European server didn't care much. Although they hoped to get the region they were in, it wasn't a big problem if they didn't get it. They could also visit the scenery of the great hell region and treat it as a vacation.

[Server announcement, the "devouring battle" event has officially begun. Teleportation begins!]

[Event hint: in this event, you can not kill monsters or affect anything other than the players!]

[Event tip 2: in this event, in addition to devouring other simulated players for evolution, you can also devour 'light of life' for evolution. The light of life will refresh every 10 minutes across the entire map!]

As the event notification appeared, all of the players' bodies transformed into white light and returned to the divine artifact space. They were then sent to the hell region by the divine artifact.

The event officially began.

All the players who entered the hell suit turned into the spirit of the Devourer species floating in the air.

Around them, there were countless fist-sized blue light balls floating. These were the “light of life”, which was also an important resource for early evolution.

The moment the event began, the players did not hesitate and pounced on the “exp orbs”, wanting to evolve as soon as possible.

This was the only way to have enough strength to challenge other players and ensure their own safety.

There were 60 million players in three regions. Apart from the EXP points, some players also appeared in the same area.

At the same time, the battle also began.

In the first stage, the players who chose the kun Peng were the most powerful.

Although they were all level zero, the other two types of mimicry players would basically choose to devour the light of life to grow.

However, the players who chose kun Peng were different. At level 0, they were invincible in one-on-one combat. They decisively pounced on other devouring monsters with higher experience.

Just 10 minutes into the game, Lu Wu’s data showed that nearly 5 million players had been devoured.

The moment the battle began, it entered a state of white heat.

In order not to accidentally hurt their allies, the players in the regions all had their own secret codes.

In order to ensure that the enemy didn’t know the secret code of their own regions, the secret code of the three regions was basically shouted by the

representative of the region in the regional voice channel the moment they entered the event scene.

But even so, there was still the risk of the secret code being leaked during the game, so asking questions became a second guarantee.

During the entire event, the players would scheme and scheme against each other, trying to sneak into the enemy's camp, but also trying to prevent the enemy from sneaking into their own camp.

This was the great chaotic battle, the devouring and killing between the three big regions.

By the second hour of the event, someone had already broken through level 100.

Personal points ranking:

[1st place: Arek (candle God) level 100,46%]

Second place, Yin Xiaoqi (candle God): Level 97,21%

Third place, Lu Zhan (candle God): Level 86,87%

Fourth place, Li Xing (candle God): Level 84,76%

[5th place: Ye Ye (kun Peng): level 78,13%]

.....

Region leaderboard:

[1st place: great domain of hell (80 million, 4123 points)]

[2nd place: Beiqi region (67231485 points)]

[3rd place: Blue Void region (62129125 points)]

.....

At this moment, most of the individual point rankings were occupied by players who had chosen the candlelight God.

This did not mean that the candlelight God was stronger than the other two devouring monsters. It was just that the players who occupied the individual leaderboard had planned this all along.

AI Rui, Yin Xiaoqi, Lu Zhan, and Li Xing's thoughts could be said to be the same in the event. They wanted to use their teammates to train themselves in exchange for a surge in their individual strength. Then, they would drive the growth of their members.

Especially Eric.

He had already discussed with his team members what to do during the event. He would look for his team members during the devouring process, and when they met, he would make his team members choose to sacrifice themselves for his sake.

Devouring teammates, in addition to the 30% exp bonus, these players who had chosen the candlelight God and had planned for this early development were very rapid. It could be said that they had widened the gap between them and other players.

By the third hour, the unorganized players had started to form groups.

This kind of combat style allowed many small teams to have the qualifications to devour powerful opponents, and the battle became more intense.

However, very quickly, there were also skilled players who started to stand out.

They relied on their own abilities to avoid the strong and hunt down the weaker players. This way, their growth began to accelerate.

In the later stages of the game, the heavenly Luo hou players rose to power. Their difficulty in dying and the ability to absorb the skills of their targets

across space caused their rankings to skyrocket. As for the candlelight God, who had the weakest combat power, other than a group of players who were already far ahead of the other players in the early stages, the rest had basically become the target of the kun Peng and the heavenly Luo hou.

By the fourth hour, which was the end of the event, the players had long since turned their eyes away from items like the light of life that could bring them little experience points.

The most important thing now was to devour the enemy players and gain points for their own region.

At this point, Eric, who had the highest level, had reached level 480.

He had become the most desired target for players from both the Western and Chinese servers because the points he had were unimaginable. If they devoured him, their own points would soar, and the points from the hell server would fall as well.

It could be said that Eric could even decide the outcome of this devouring war.

It wasn't difficult to find Arek either. At this time, Arek's body was extremely large, and it could be said that he covered the sky. As long as he was in the same area, players would be able to find him with a single glance.

However, devouring Arek was not an easy task. He had a huge amount of points, but his strength was also terrifying.

At this moment, Arek was high up in the sky, constantly breathing in and out the light of life.

The surrounding light of life was absorbed by Arek like rivers running into the sea, flowing into his mouth continuously and nourishing his growth.

At this moment, dense shadows appeared from the west and south at the same time. They were also extremely large in size.

They were players from the European and Chinese servers.

Their goal was the same, and that was to kill Eric.

At this point, the second and third place had both failed in their eyes. The main point was to snatch the first place in the hell server, and Eric was the key to that.

The battle began at the last moment.

The hell server's players naturally protected Arek with their lives, but the players from the central and European servers would not let them have their way. They tacitly gave up on their previous disputes and charged toward Arek from their respective directions.

However, Eric wasn't just for show. At this moment, he also began to kill.

Every time it devoured, it would take away a large number of players. It was like a killing machine. After one round, not only did Arek's experience not decrease, but it also increased by two levels, and its body became even larger.

Faced with such a situation, the players from both the Chinese and European servers were having a headache.

At this moment, Arek was like a BOSS in a game. However, unlike bosses in games, not only could he recover HP, but he could also kill players to grow. It could be said that he had completely offset one of the players' major advantages.

In this situation, the candlelight God that Yin Xiaoqi had transformed into said to the players around her,"

"If this continues, Eric will only become stronger and stronger! It can't be devoured!"

"Then what do we do?" Wu Guoyi, who had transformed into a ROC, asked gloomily.

“Let me devour you! Use your experience to bless me!” Yin Xiaoqi said very seriously.

Upon hearing this, the surrounding players were stunned.

“F * ck, I don’t want to lose anyway. I’ll listen to you and eat me first!” Liu Chan squeezed through the crowd and came to Yin Xiaoqi’s side.

Yin Xiaoqi didn’t waste any words and opened her mouth to swallow Liu Zhe.

Seeing that even Liu Chan had agreed, the players were once again caught in a mental struggle. After all, such a sacrifice would put them at the bottom of the individual leaderboard.

However, after seeing the leaderboard, many players ‘struggling eyes became determined, and they all swam toward Yin Xiaoqi.

Meanwhile, the players around Yin Xiaoqi were all quite high-leveled, almost reaching level 100. Although they needed more and more experience to level up in the later stages, the amount of experience they had was also enormous.

As she devoured, Yin Xiaoqi’s level began to soar, and her body size also expanded.

At this moment, the Chinese players decided to help Yin Xiaoqi fight for the first place in the region. It could be said that this was a gamble to the death. If they didn’t succeed, they would only be at the bottom of the ranking, but if they succeeded, the first place in the region would definitely be theirs.

As veteran players of the conquests online, the players of the central server all had pride in their hearts.

They only wanted to be first!

As Yin Xiaoqi’s body grew bigger and bigger, Eric noticed her too. He was shocked because Yin Xiaoqi’s body size was now comparable to his.

“Let me devour everyone. Otherwise, I’ll lose the first place in the region!”
Eric immediately shouted to the surrounding.

Upon hearing this, many of Arek’s party members rushed toward his mouth. However, another group of players was heading toward the other huge candle God.

The other candle God was owned by the US military, which had been in a heated relationship with Eric recently.

At this moment, they had a different opinion.

Seeing this, Li Xing from the European server also began to call for the players to gather.

In the end, the players from all three servers chose to help one person in exchange for the victory of a large region.

However, unlike the central and European servers, the hell server, which was the strongest, had a disagreement at the crucial moment.

This situation was undoubtedly fatal. Upon seeing this scene, Eric exploded with anger. While devouring his teammates, he turned his head and charged at the candle God of the US military.

He only had one thought now, and that was to devour it. Otherwise, the hell suit would definitely lose!

Chapter 352 - May There Be No Sickness In Heaven

There were only 30 minutes left until the end of the event, and the three major regions had made their final choices.

The hell server's players, who were originally the strongest, had a disagreement at the last moment. The players from the European and Chinese servers were more United, and they all rushed towards Li Xing and Yin Xiaoqi.

As their levels soared, their bodies grew larger and larger, and their individual points were even closer to Eric 's.

At this point, Eric could not care about anything else. He decisively pounced on the candle God of the US military.

At this moment, Yin Xiaoqi suddenly charged forward. Her target was none other than the US military's candle God.

At this moment, the US Army's candle God was too crucial. If Arek successfully devoured it, they would have no chance of turning the tables.

Therefore, Yin Xiaoqi did not hesitate to give up on devouring her teammates and changed her target to Eric.

At this time, his level was not inferior to Eric 's, and he had the power to compete. Meanwhile, the candle God in the US military was also growing rapidly, and he had to be contained as soon as possible.

The two huge fireballs charged at the US military's candle God from different directions. The moment the three fireballs collided, the sky shone with a bright golden light. The US military's candle God began to shrink at a speed visible to the naked eye, and its level dropped rapidly. Meanwhile, Eric and Yin Xiaoqi's levels began to soar.

Under the level suppression, the devouring process was extremely fast. The US military's candle God began to resist unwillingly, but he did not target Eric. Instead, he chose to activate the devouring on Yin Xiaoqi.

At this moment, the American military understood that they could not even protect themselves. Although Eric was their biggest enemy in the hell server, he could at least represent the hell server.

Although they were unwilling, the US military made a final decision at this moment for the sake of their region's ranking.

However, the candle God was different from the kun Peng. When devouring targets that were of a higher level than him, he did not gain any level immunity. According to his current level, his devouring speed had been reduced by 58%, which was not enough to make up for his loss.

However, the US military's actions made Yin Xiaoqi feel very bad.

Although his own level had been rising rapidly, the experience in his body was also losing because the US military had chosen to devour him. The devouring efficiency was at least 10% lower, while Eric's devouring efficiency was 100%. If this continued, the result would not be optimistic.

In the distance, the players from the European server were still devouring each other, and then one after another, they rushed into Li Xing's mouth.

At this moment, Li Xing suddenly turned to look at Lionheart.

“Quickly, devour me!”

Lionheart clearly didn't understand what was going on and couldn't help but be stunned.

“Quick, devour me! The levels of both sides are too high. If I rely on my current candlelight God form to devour all of you, there's no chance of turning the tables. The kun Peng You've chosen has the strongest single-target abilities. Moreover, at this stage, no player has reached a kun Peng above level 300. This might be a turning point. I'll take a gamble!”

Hearing Li Xing's words, Lionheart suddenly realized what Li Xing was trying to do.

He would use the experience of all the players in the European server to train a top-tier kun Peng and see if it was qualified to turn the tables!

Since Li Xing had made his decision, Lionheart didn't hesitate. He pounced on Li Xing without hesitation and activated devour.

On the other side, the US Army's candle God was getting smaller and smaller as it was being devoured. Eric and Yin Xiaoqi, who were originally evenly matched, now had an 18-level difference.

As it was the later stage, the points for level 18 had already broken through 30 million. Because of the US military's final choice, Yin Xiaoqi became at a disadvantage in the final devouring.

Even with the help of countless players from the central server during the devour skill, this disadvantage was still irreparable.

At this moment, any strategy was useless.

“Pa!”

The US Army's candle God had died at this moment, and Eric pounced on Yin Xiaoqi without hesitation.

.....

At the same time, on the European server.

Li Xing's body kept shrinking as he was swallowed by Lionheart. When he was broken, the kun Peng that Lionheart had transformed into rose to Level 468.

[Lionheart (ROC)]:

[Mimicry skill: devour (devouring speed +312%, can devour targets 84 levels higher than the user)]

Looking at his Level 468 attributes, Lionheart was overjoyed.

The three large regions fought as a group and had considered nurturing the candle God with a higher cost-performance ratio. However, no one had expected that the kun Peng's devouring ability would become so powerful in the end.

At this moment, Lionheart turned his gaze to Arek and Yin Xiaoqi who were devouring each other. He wagged his tail and pounced on them while roaring.

At this moment, Eric's level was undoubtedly the highest. He had already broken through to level 540, so he naturally became Lionheart's first target.

It attacked from behind and bit Arek's body, activating its devouring ability.

Reinhardt's appearance startled Arek.

At this moment, his level was still growing in the battle with Yin Xiaoqi. It could be said that victory was in his grasp. However, Reinhardt's participation changed the situation again.

With a 312% increase in devouring speed and a level 84 devouring immunity, Reinhardt's devouring speed could be said to not be any weaker than Arek's.

With enemies on both sides, Arek decisively changed his direction and chose to devour Lionheart because Lionheart was the biggest threat now.

This gave Yin Xiaoqi another chance to grow.

As Arek's body became smaller and smaller, Yin Xiaoqi's body became bigger and bigger. Lionheart suddenly gave up on devouring Arek and pounced on Yin Xiaoqi.

There would only be one victory. If he allowed Yin Xiaoqi to continue growing, even if Eric was devoured, he would not be able to compete with Yin Xiaoqi. Lionheart was well aware of this.

Arek understood what Lionheart was thinking, so he also changed his direction and chose to devour Yin Xiaoqi.

This time, Yin Xiaoqi became the target of Eric and Lionheart's attack.

There were only ten minutes left, and the three sides began to change their targets back and forth. The rankings took turns to become first, and the situation was at a stalemate.

At this moment, the players outside the arena were extremely nervous. Under such circumstances, it was possible for any region to become number one, but no one could guarantee the final result.

After another round of devouring, Reinhardt, who had become the strongest devouring species in the area, became the target of Eric and Emily's devouring.

But this time, the situation had changed.

During the devouring process, Lionheart's level didn't decrease, and his size seemed to be increasing bit by bit.

Seeing this scene, the audience was in an uproar.

They could clearly see the devouring data. At this time, Lionheart was exempted from devouring because his level was higher than that of Erica and Arek. The devouring effect of Arek and Yin Xiaoqi was reduced by 28% and 25% respectively.

This was undoubtedly fatal because the kun Peng that Reinhardt had transformed into had a 380% increase in devouring speed.

Eric and Yin Xiaoqi didn't see Lionheart's attributes, which led to a huge error in judgment. Even though Lionheart didn't gain much experience points after deducting the cost, the balance was completely broken.

The devouring of the two didn't make Lionheart smaller, but instead made him grow.

Under such circumstances, Reinhardt, who had transformed into the kun Peng, was in complete control of the situation.

When it was 12 o' clock, the server announcement sounded:

[Server announcement: the “devouring battle” event has officially ended. The ranking of points is as follows:]

Personal points ranking:

[1st place: Lionheart (ROC) Level 543 16%]

Second place, Yin Xiaoqi (candle God): Level 228,27%

Third place: Eric (candle God): Level 203,87%

Fourth place, Qiu mo (Tian Luo hou): Level 97,76%

5th place: Level 89,45%

.....

Region leaderboard:

[1st place: Blue Void region (325754123 points)]

[2nd place: Beiqi region (197541485 points)]

[3rd place: great domain of hell (172149125 points)]

.....

The final result was beyond the expectations of many players.

Originally, the players thought that the final winner would be decided between Yin Xiaoqi and Arek, but Lionheart's appearance was undoubtedly a Dark Horse.

As the three sides restrained and devoured each other, the kun Peng clearly had a huge advantage in terms of skills. At the last moment, he even turned the tables.

After a brief silence, all the players in the European server cheered.

At that moment, a post on the European server forum was suddenly pinned to the top. Nearly ten million players from the European server flooded into the post, shouting and shouting.

[Goodbye, war expedition online!] [I really want to continue playing, but I really can't hold on any longer.]

[Op: the Shining Knight]

[Details: I'm a late-stage cancer patient. When I knew that I didn't have long to live, I once self-destructed and even thought of ending my life with suicide. At least, I wouldn't be tortured by the pain anymore.] Although I'm very reluctant to leave my parents and relatives, I really can't bear to live like this anymore, because every chemotherapy is a nightmare.

My hair fell off in bunches, and my teeth gradually fell out. Looking at my weak self in the mirror, I even felt that I didn't look like a human at all.

Just as I was gathering my courage to end my life, I happened to meet an online battle. It was also this battle that gave me the motivation to continue.

I met a lot of good friends and made a lot of good comrades here. They are my biggest gain in the game.

I've learned a lot from being with them, and I've also understood a lot.

I still remember when I mustered the courage to tell you that I might not live for more than a few months. Your encouragement and comfort really touched me. It was also your company that made me optimistic and gave me the courage to face death.

.....

After half a year, I was about to face my last chemotherapy. I was very weak at the moment. Although I had the courage to face the most terrifying outcome, there were still many things in my heart that I couldn't bear to part with. I couldn't bear to part with my parents and family, I couldn't bear to part with the battle online, and I couldn't bear to part with my good friends and brothers in the game.

This post might be my last words, so I'd better leave some instructions.

Allen, after I leave, you'll be the main tank of the team. You must protect our teammates, especially Jessica. She's really a cute little priest.

Alva, you still owe me 23 soul coins. If there's a chance, I'll definitely get this debt back, so cheer up and make money for me (happy~)

Yuna, you're the most skilled player in the party. Keep it up and head towards your goal of being the number one Warlock. I believe you'll succeed.

[Jessica, you little priest, you should practice your skills more. Don't be unable to find a target to heal. Let everyone save some trouble (knock on the head).]

.....

Mr. Lionheart, if you see this post, I would like to tell you that I'm your little fan and I often watch your tutorial videos. In my eyes, you're the strongest, no one is second to you. You must lead our European server to rise!

.....

Finally, I actually have a small wish.

"I really want to see the day when we, the European players, can reach the top. I really long for that day to come, and then I'll cheer with you.

The May Day event is coming soon, and I really want to do the event and go crazy with you guys.

Unfortunately, I might be finished on this May Day (smile)

Goodbye, calamity grades, or perhaps I won't see you again.

.....

At this moment, tens of millions of players from the European server flooded into this post, calling out to this player who loved conquests online.

“Brother, wake up! We did it! We're the Champions!”

“Brother, come back! Your dream has come true! We're the top in the European server!”

“I'm replying to your post. Brother, are you still there?”

“Did you see that? We Are the Champions! We are number one!”

“We won the championship. Come back and celebrate with us. Don't sleep!”

.....

The players from the European server were all calling out to this player under the post.

At this moment, all the players in the European server wanted to tell him that it was his idol Mr. Reinhardt who won the championship for them. His dream had come true, so come back and celebrate with us!

However, the player's last message was on April 29th, and there was no more sound after that.

Meanwhile, his team members received the last piece of news from the player's parents, telling the players in the European server that he had left

...

After hearing the news, the players who got first place in the event did not cheer. Instead, they quietly left comments at the bottom of the post,

reminiscing.

The champion was the final farewell gift from the players of the European server to their beloved “war online”.

At the bottom of the post were the unified replies of the players from the European server.

May there be no sickness in heaven, see you again, comrades. European server calamity Army XXX

Chapter 353 - He Will Always Be Here

The May Day event officially came to an end.

This time, it was rare that players from different servers did not provoke each other on the conquest forum.

When Beiqi and the inferno server's players entered the European server's forum, they also saw the farewell post that was pinned at the top.

In the end, a player who loved war online and was reluctant to leave couldn't bear the torture of his illness and left.

At this moment, Beiqi and the hell server's players were deeply touched.

Although they were each other's opponents, they were both players.

The player's words before he left reminded them of themselves and made them realize that they should cherish the present, because what they had was what others desired.

Although this was just a game, there were too many emotions and passion here. The indignance in the hearts of the players from Beiqi and the infernal server was washed away, and they were only moved.

They also left comments below the post.

May there be no sickness in heaven, comrades, see you again, Beiqi's disaster Army XXX

May there be no sickness in heaven, may comrades meet again, the calamity Army of hell XXX

The players of the three servers were bidding farewell to this player.

Although the boy who loved the game and his friends could not hear the farewell, at least the players felt a little comforted.

Some things would only feel lost when they were lost. The happiness in many people's eyes could be seen through comparison, but in some people's eyes, the happiness was about grasping the present.

As long as they could firmly grasp what they had now, they would be extremely satisfied and happy ...

.....

At this time, Lu Wu, who was sitting in front of his computer, couldn't help but fall silent when he saw this post.

This player's struggle before death touched him, and his final persistence and reluctance shocked him even more.

At this moment, he suddenly wanted to do something.

It was not difficult for him to resurrect players, but the impact was undoubtedly huge. Before he had the power to rival heaven, exposing himself would only harm himself and these players.

In that case, other than resurrecting, there was only an NPC to choose from.

After confirming his idea, Lu Wu decided to make a completely different NPC.

With a thought, he activated the divine artifact and began to scan the massive soul storage within it.

Soon, Lu Wu found the soul of the player from the European server.

His name was Iger, a 17-year-old boy whose birthday was in 23 days. He was a boy who had wanted to give up but chose to face life with a strong heart.

After reading through Igor's information, Lu Wu summoned his soul from the soul storage.

In the artifact space, Igor's soul was still in a state of confusion. He didn't know what had happened before his death. He just stood there quietly in the artifact space, his eyes colorless.

At this moment, Lu Wu and Bei Li's figures appeared in the space of the artifact.

With a wave of Bei Li's hand, the power of the divine artifact space emerged and entered Igor's soul, instantly triggering his memories.

Countless memories and fragments suddenly appeared in his mind, flashing through his mind like a slideshow.

A moment later, Igor opened his eyes. When he saw Lu Wu and Bei Li, he subconsciously took a step back.

“Who are you?”

Lu Wu shook his head slightly and waved his hand. The battle Forum panel appeared in front of Igor.

It was a post left by Igor. As the screen rolled, he saw the players' cries of longing for his return, their blessings, and their final farewell.

Igor's heart ached, but in his soul state, no tears flowed out.

“Did we get first place in the European server?” Igor said, a little excited.

At that moment, he was still not aware of his current state. He was completely immersed in the joy of getting first place in the European server.

Lu Wuxin suddenly felt a little uncomfortable about this player who was so obsessed with the conquests online.

At this moment, the boy suddenly noticed the comments left by his teammates in the post.

They talked about how strong they were in the last moments of their lives, but life was fragile, and in the end, they couldn't bear the torture of the illness ...

"I'm dead!" Igor's expression was dull. He suddenly realized why he was here. Wasn't he receiving treatment?

"Father, mother!" Iger was a little excited. He realized that his body was illusory and he was floating on the ground.

"Yes, you're dead!" Although he knew that this answer was hard to accept, Lu Wu still admitted it.

"Where is this place?" Iger took a step back and asked nervously.

Hearing this, Lu Wu suddenly remembered that a large number of players had said in the post, "may heaven be free of illness." This really gave him a headache. After all, this was not heaven.

"This is not heaven. If you want to make a comparison, it's closer to the hell you know!"

Lu Wu wasn't wrong. After all, the divine weapon was made of the power of the six paths of reincarnation and was also considered a part of the netherworld. So was hell.

Hearing this, Igor's spirit body suddenly began to flicker, becoming faintly discernible. He was clearly frightened.

"Hell! Why did I come to hell?" Iger asked in fear.

Lu Wu tried to make his tone sound friendly, so he said,

"Little brother, aren't you surprised and excited?" (Crossed out)

"Don't get too excited. This isn't hell. It's a place where you can be Reborn!"

"Can you resurrect me?" Iger was excited to hear this.

Lu Wu shook his head. "You're already dead. You have to accept this reality. But can I help you change your identity and live your life?"

Hearing Lu Wu's explanation, the first thing that came to Igor's mind was reincarnation. His face suddenly showed a look of reluctance. After all, everything had to start from the beginning, and the past would be gone ...

Lu Wu was speechless.

"You're having a lot of drama in your heart!" Bei Li, who was gnawing on a chicken leg, glanced sideways at Igor.

"Forget it, I'm too lazy to explain it to you. Bei Li, give him some information about the players!"

"Alright!" Bei Li raised the chicken leg and pointed it at Igor. In an instant, the information about the players in the divine weapon gushed into Igor's mind.

A large amount of information about the players began to surge in his mind, and as he read through the information, his expression became more and more surprised.

"This game is real!" "What?" Igor exclaimed in surprise after reading the information.

"Calm down, young man!" Lu Wu said.

"I'll give you two choices now. One is to go where you should go, heaven or hell, and the other is to live as an NPC again. Of course, if you choose the second choice, there will be many taboos, and these taboos will limit you!"

Lu Wu's words were not entirely true.

If Igor chose to be reincarnated, he wouldn't be able to go to heaven or hell. He would still be trapped in the divine artifact until Lu Wu wanted to wake him up.

“Can I return to the game?” Igor suddenly became excited.

“You’re quite addicted to the internet!” Bei Li’s eyes narrowed as he smiled.

“Yes, you can go back, but only as an NPC. Our memories in your mind will be erased, but you will retain your complete memories and be given a mission!”

Igor fell silent. He wasn’t old, but he wasn’t stupid. He had some guesses in his mind.

“What’s your purpose in doing this?”

“It’s for the rise of the human race. I’ll always stand on the players’ side, if you believe me!” Lu Wu smiled indifferently.

Hearing Lu Wu’s explanation, Igor fell into a mental struggle.

“Don’t worry. He could’ve easily decided whether you live or die, but he gave you this opportunity. You’re the first player in the game to have this opportunity!” Beili Siyi replied after gnawing on a piece of meat.

Hearing this, Igor turned his gaze to the screen that was still sliding down. He looked at the farewell posts on it, and his eyes gradually became determined.

“I want to go back. I want to continue being with them!”

“A wise choice. Xiao Li, stop eating and start working!” Lu Wu immediately laughed.

Bei Li nodded. Just as he was about to control the divine weapon to erase part of Igor’s memory, Igor suddenly said,

“Do I still have a chance to go back to reality? Can I still see my parents?”

“If your parents play war online, you’ll definitely see them. If they don’t play games, then maybe. I can’t guarantee the future, but you can look

forward to it!”

This time, iggle nodded hard.””What do you want to do? come!”

With Igor’s approval, he began his modification.

Bei Li first erased their memories in Igor’s mind, then began to stuff their memories as NPCs into his mind, and then added restrictions on them.

For example, he couldn’t tell the players that the game was real. Even if he said these words, he would be blocked by the artifact.

For example, he couldn’t act recklessly based on his own thoughts, and he had to consider the players as the main factor in many aspects.

Another example was that when one received the right to issue missions and reward, they could not casually issue missions and rewards.

.....

These restrictions were also for the sake of himself and the players. If the original Igor was put into the game, Lu Wu was afraid that it would have a huge impact, and the subsequent settings were also necessary.

This was because Iger had become an NPC, but his memories in the game and in reality were still complete. If his in-game friends completed a mission with him, would he be biased in giving out more rewards?

It didn’t matter if he was slightly biased. After all, Igor had his own feelings and was a real NPC. However, Lu Wu set a value for him, at most 5% bias.

These rules and regulations were very necessary in Lu Wu and Bei Li’s eyes, because this would not affect the operation of the game.

After everything was settled, Iger was sent to the netherworld world, the Great Blue Void domain.

The memories of the divine artifact, Lu Wu, and Bei Li in his mind had been wiped away. Those rules were no longer constraints to his knowledge.

They had become the thoughts that he should have done. Everything had perfectly integrated into his memory and character.

When he opened his eyes again, he found himself back in the hidden Dragon Village of the blue Void territory. He couldn't help but smile.

He knew that he had been reborn as an NPC and could be with the players again ...

At the same time, a server announcement sounded.

[Server announcement: in memory of the player Igor, who has always loved the expedition online and loved his friends, the expedition R & D team has specially created a new NPC: [Iger, let him continue to accompany everyone on the long journey in the game in a form!]

The players from the three servers were in an uproar.

Many players expressed their gratitude on the forum, praising the conscience of the war online's backstage crew.

However, apart from Lu Wu and Bei Li, no one would know that the NPC Igor, who would always accompany them, was the real Igor!

Chapter 354 - Han Yuanwu

The appearance of the new NPC, Igor, caused an uproar among the players.

Especially the players from the European server.

After interacting with him, they realized that this Igor was too real, so real that it was unbelievable.

The tone of his voice, the words he often used in a conversation, and his expression made it seem as if Igor had come back to life.

Even Igor's former teammates couldn't help but wonder if he had returned when they saw him.

In response to the players' exclamations, Lu Wu gave an official explanation, which was that the NPC Igor was formed based on all the data of Igor in the game, which was why it looked so real.

In other words, it was the data collected over the past six months that formed such a similar Igor.

The players were completely impressed by the skills of the expedition team.

The players were amazed by the technological advancement.

The players quickly informed Igor's parents of the news, and they, who were initially in grief, chose to enter the game to see the existence that resembled their son.

When they saw the NPC Igor, they couldn't help but burst into tears. In their eyes, the NPC was their son.

Seeing his parents again, Igor's feelings were equally complicated, but he didn't tell them the truth. He just stayed with them silently, listening to them talk about their past.

Due to his terminal illness, Iger's desire had always been simple. He was already very satisfied to be able to see his parents in this situation.

He didn't ask for anything too much. It was good enough that she could accompany him ...

.....

After the May Day event officially ended, everything in the game was on track.

On the side of Beiqi, the battle between the players and the nine glory Army was still going on. They were gradually turning the tables. It was only a matter of time before they took back Beiqi and the nine glory great region.

On the European server, void abyss, who was originally the attacker, had suddenly chosen to retreat and adopt a defensive strategy. This allowed the players of the European server to gradually expand their advantage and had already taken control of the demon territory.

Ever since they won first place in the May Day event, the morale of the players in the European server was high. They were also full of confidence in their battle with void abyss, and the entire European server began to become stronger.

The battle in the hell server was the most complicated, and the infighting between the players was the fiercest.

In addition to the strongest US military, Eric's blacklight organization had also risen rapidly, and many new organizations with great potential had emerged recently.

As the hell server was a merged server, many players from different countries had conflicts with each other. This caused the internal conflicts to become more intense. Other than fighting for territory with the monsters from the hell server, it was normal for them to fight for resources with their own people.

In this server, it was normal for players to die, and they had already adapted to this environment.

In comparison, the players from the other two servers were at war with the outside world, while the players from the hell server were still in the middle of doomsday survival.

Lu Wu didn't need to pay special attention to these three regions for the time being as they were all developing rapidly. War could bring rapid development, so could competition.

At this time, Lu Wu was already thinking about opening the Asia server.

Just today, Bei Li had given him the complete "genetic lock" setting of the growth system of the Asian server.

The next thing to do was to find a suitable region for the players in the Asia server to develop.

The choice of a large region was crucial to the early development of players, so Lu Wu also attached great importance to it and began to explore the situation of other large regions with the artifact.

In the end, two major regions became Lu Wu's target.

One was the profound wind great domain, and the other was the devil Phoenix great domain.

The first domain, the mysterious wind great domain, was similar to the nine-glory great domain. It had been completely unified and was controlled by a single force. However, this large domain had a unique characteristic. The terrain was particularly complicated, and there were many mountain ranges. The entire large domain was covered in green plants, which was very helpful for the players' early development. It was easy to hide.

The second domain, demon Phoenix domain, was very special. There were many forbidden places in this domain, and countless Yin gods and ancient

God tombs were buried here. This domain had collapsed several times because of war, and now it had been repaired countless times.

Although this region was also controlled by one force, Lu Wu felt that the demon Phoenix region was very suitable for the development of players because this region actually had its own rules.

This was very normal in reality. The law was the rule. However, in the netherworld, it was somewhat inconceivable. After all, in the entire netherworld, the law of the jungle was the only law. In the face of absolute power, rules were like paper windows that could be easily pierced. They were too unreliable.

However, the devilfall great domain had rules that were as strict as the ones in reality. Even if one was extremely weak, as long as one lived within the rules, they would be protected.

Bei Li gave an explanation.

The main reason was that the war had overwhelmed the great demon Phoenix domain. It had been destroyed several times, so the races of the great demon Phoenix domain had signed an agreement and formulated a code of law.

However, to Beili, the rules in the code of law were only relative. The strong still had special privileges. The so-called rules were just a cover for the forces. Darkness would always exist.

Because when you had the power to break the rules, you might acknowledge the existence of the rules, but you would definitely do things that transcended the rules because you had the power!

After that, Lu Wu learned more about the situation of the two regions. After comparing them, he made his final choice.

After making the decision, Lu Wu and Bei Li began to plan the entry point for the new server.

.....

Devil Phoenix great domain, in the suburbs of Brahma Sky City.

The spirit fields were filled with the level 1 spirit plant “half spirit rice”. Wooden houses were built around the spirit fields, and many people were busy working in the fields.

Outside the spiritual farm, a slightly chubby man in luxurious clothes and wearing all kinds of jewelry was observing the busy workers in the spiritual farm. He always had a happy expression on his face.

His name was han Yuanwu, and he was one of the famous suppliers of spiritual plants in the Brahma Urban area area.

And this spiritual plant plantation area was the source of his wealth. Although he grew only Level 1 spiritual plants, it could still bring him huge profits every year.

As an influential figure, his strength had not even reached the level of a ghost Governor.

Han Yuanwu was very grateful to the creators of the demon Phoenix Codex for having such a huge amount of wealth.

In his opinion, it was the existence of this Codex that protected weaklings like him and allowed him to create his own wealth within the rules without being plundered by the strong.

With enough wealth and the protection of the code of law, han Yuanwu led a comfortable life. He even hired three ghost supervisors as his guards.

In han Yuanwu’s heart, the demon Phoenix Codex was like a sacred guardian God that had always protected him.

As a firm protector of the demon Phoenix Codex, he had spent a huge sum of money to send his son, han fa, to the Codex Academy in the demon Phoenix region’s main city to learn about the Codex, hoping that his son would become a respected Codex supervisor (lawyer) in the future.

At this time, his eyes swept across the territory that belonged to him, and his heart was extremely satisfied. Just now, he had received a letter from his son, who was studying the knowledge of the code of law in Brahma Sky City, saying that he would soon graduate and become a code supervisor.

His family was rich and happy. In addition, his son was also promising. Han Yuanwu felt that he was a winner in life. Everything was so beautiful.

At this moment, a few workers who were busy in the spirit field suddenly ran towards him with red faces. They were holding something in their hands and looked very excited.

Han Yuanwu's heart ached when he saw the workers running toward him on the spiritual plants. He was about to scold them when he saw one of the workers jump to his side from the spiritual field.”

“Master, we, we found this when we were digging a pit!” The worker raised the item in his hand and said excitedly.

Han Yuanwu, who was about to get angry, saw the light blue gem in the man's hand and his expression changed.”

“You dug it out from the Ling fields?”

“Yes, master, it was dug out from the Ling fields that you contracted. You're going to be rich!”

Han Yuanwu took the blue gem from the agitated worker and examined it carefully. His hands began to tremble.

“A level 5 spirit mine, heavenly Yuan stone!”

“Master, you're going to be rich. There might be a heavenly Yuan stone mine under this Ling field!” The worker replied in an excited tone.

“Where are you? Where did you find it?” Han Yuanwu said excitedly.

“It's right below spiritual Field No. 81. We wanted to dig a few holes to plant half of the spiritual rice, but we dug too deep and found the heavenly

Yuan stone!”

Han Yuanwu’s body trembled slightly when he heard that. Then, he quickly ran toward the spiritual field. He did not care about the half-spiritual rice that had been trampled and ran toward spiritual Field No. 81 like the workers.

When he arrived at spiritual farm No. 81, a pothole came into view at the center of the spiritual farm. What made han Yuanwu extremely excited was that the pothole was flickering with a hazy blue light.

He quickly stepped forward and began to walk around the pit.

Han Yuanwu made a rough judgment after a brief inspection. There was definitely a spirit mine of heavenly Yuan stone down there, and it was not a small one.

The surprise came too suddenly!

“Master, do we have any reward?”

Looking at the enthusiastic workers who were gathering around him, han Yuanwu coughed and said,”

“Of course, but you have to promise that you won’t tell anyone about this spirit mine!”

When the workers around them heard this, their faces revealed looks of pleasant surprise.

In fact, they were stronger than han Yuanwu. However, they were restricted by the code of law and could not use their strength to oppress others. They did not have any special skills and could only work to earn resources for cultivation. Therefore, the discovery of the heavenly Yuan stone spirit mine was a huge surprise for them.

Moreover, han Yuanwu’s guarantee was extremely credible because they knew this old master’s character. He would never break his promise.

Therefore, they all nodded eagerly and swore that they would never tell anyone.

After the workers made their promise, han Yuanwu hurried home.

Han Yuanwu clearly knew that he had just received a huge opportunity. This opportunity could increase his wealth by hundreds, thousands, or even tens of thousands of times.

He had to seal off this information and seize the time to understand the specific value of the heavenly Yuan stone. Then, he would obtain the greatest benefits for himself.

As for the workers, he would not mistreat them. Since he had created this opportunity for himself, han Yuanwu had already made plans to let them live without worry for the rest of their lives as a gift!

After returning home, han Yuanwu did not stop and gathered his guards to rush into the city.

He was going to look up some information. Only by understanding the value of heavenly Yuan stones could he better obtain benefits for himself.

.....

That night, in a Tavern in Brahma Sky City.

A man dressed in han Yuanwu clan's worker's clothes was drunk.

The worker didn't argue with the customers around him. Instead, he blushed and said in a high-pitched voice,"

“My ... My master found a heavenly Yuan stone mine. I ... I'm going to be rich soon. Don't look down on me. If you need anything in the future, you can come to me. I'll have plenty of money in the future ...”

Chapter 355 - -Cruel Truth

In the past two days, han Yuanwu had been searching for information about heavenly Yuan stones in Brahma Sky City.

After feeling that he had more or less understood the value and use of this spirit mine, han Yuanwu hurried back home.

What he needed to do now was to find the best sales channel.

With such a gold mine, han Yuanwu felt that he was really going to be rich. His status could even rise to a higher level with the help of such a huge amount of wealth.

The future was full of beauty.

As soon as he returned to his residence outside the Brahma City, he suddenly found that there was a surge of people in front of his door, and countless people were muttering something.

Han Yuanwu had a bad feeling and hurried forward.

“What are you guys doing!”

Hearing han Yuanwu’s angry rebuking, those people all turned around.

“You are han Yuanwu?!” Someone suddenly said.

Hearing this, the group of people surrounding the mansion suddenly gathered around han Yuanwu.

“Boss han, are you willing to sell this heavenly Yuan stone spirit mine? I’m willing to pay a high price!”

“Boss han, what’s the price of your heavenly Yuan stones? I want to purchase them in bulk!”

“Boss han, I’ll pay 80000 Yin spirit coins for one Jin of heavenly Yuan stone ...”

.....

This group of people surrounded han Yuanwu and shouted, but han Yuanwu’s heart sank.

He knew that someone had clearly revealed the information about the heavenly Yuan stone mine.

However, han Yuanwu already had a general understanding of heavenly Yuan stones. Hearing the bids from the merchants around him, he snorted coldly in his heart.

It was obvious that their bids were completely unable to match the true value of the heavenly Yuan stones.

“I don’t intend to sell heavenly Yuan stones for the time being. Please leave!” Han Yuanwu said immediately.

As a proper merchant, he was protected by the demon Phoenix Codex and was not afraid of offending anyone. He rejected the offer without any hesitation.

Then, he ignored the spirit ore merchants ‘bidding and squeezed through the crowd into the mansion.

Faced with han Yuanwu’s lack of respect, the surrounding ore merchants did not leave. Instead, they surrounded the entrance of han Yuanwu’s residence and shouted at him.

After that, there would be large groups of spirit ore merchants who would rush over every day after hearing the news.

The news that the Han Yuanwu clan had a heavenly Yuan stone mine spread quickly.

This was undoubtedly a headache for Han Yuanwu. He had yet to gather enough manpower to excavate the heaven spirit stone mine, and it would definitely be troublesome if the news was leaked.

Moreover, he didn't plan to sell the heavenly Yuan stones to the spirit mine merchants near Brahma City. From what he had learned two days ago, he knew that Ghost Bone City had a huge demand for heavenly Yuan stones, and they were offering a very high price. If he wanted to maximize his profit, selling them there was the wisest choice.

One day, while Han Yuanwu was thinking about how to arrange the transportation route, the escorts, and the excavators in his study, a guard suddenly came in a hurry.

"Master, it's not good. There are many people snatching and excavating heavenly Yuan stones in our Ling fields!"

Han Yuanwu stood up in disbelief.

"Where did they get the guts from? Don't they know that I'm the one who contracted this land?"

"The leader of that group seems to be a spirit ore merchant who often comes here." The guard quickly replied.

Han Yuanwu was furious. He immediately stood up and led his guards to the spiritual farm.

When Han Yuanwu arrived at the spiritual field, he realized that there were thousands of people, not just a lot of people, but a sea of people. All of them had brought tools to mine.

"What are you doing? Stop! What you're doing is illegal!" Han Yuanwu wanted to stop him.

However, these people did not listen to Han Yuanwu at all and continued to trample and destroy his spiritual field. The entire spiritual field was in a

mess, with potholes everywhere. The spiritual plants had long been ruined beyond recognition.

Han Yuanwu trembled in anger.

However, he did not have many guards with him. They could not fight against them, nor could they stop them.

After scolding them again and realizing that they still could not stop their destructive excavation, han Yuanwu immediately turned around and left.

This time, he was going to Brahma Sky City to find the law system supervisor and ask them to uphold justice for him.

After all, he was the one who contracted this land, and all the resources found here belonged to him. This was an asset protected by the law.

However, things were not as simple as han Yuanwu had imagined.

Because when he arrived in Brahma Sky City, he found that all the members of the code of law supervision group were not there.

The thieves were still excavating, which meant that he was suffering a huge loss every minute and every second.

However, without the law enforcer to uphold justice for him, he did not have the power to punish the spirit ore merchants.

At this moment, he thought of the Lord of Brahma City, and he hoped that the Lord could protect him.

However, what he did not expect was that the city Lord was not in the city.

Han Yuanwu suddenly felt helpless.

He believed that the code of law could uphold justice for him, but the executors of the code of law were not around, so he had no idea what to do.

Han Yuanwu had no choice but to go home.

As for the spiritual fields, the spiritual stone merchants had already excavated the entire spiritual field with a large number of workers. They began to excavate and steal the wealth that originally belonged to Han Yuanwu.

Han Yuanwu gritted his teeth and endured it. He could only go to Brahma Sky City every day to look for the law-enforcement officers.

After a month of waiting, Han Yuanwu still did not see the arrival of the city Lord and the law system inspectors.

Han Yuanwu first went to the code of law inspector's station when he came to the city again. After receiving the news that the inspectors were not around, he hurriedly went to the city Lord's mansion.

When he arrived at the mayor's residence, Han Yuanwu was surprised to see the mayor walking out of the residence with a man in a supervisor's uniform.

Han Yuanwu was overjoyed. He immediately stepped forward.”

“Respected city Lord and supervisor of the code of law, my interests have been violated. I need your help!”

Upon hearing this, the city Lord and the supervisor of the code of law stopped smiling and asked solemnly,”

“Tell me what exactly happened!”

Upon hearing their questions, Han Yuanwu told them what had happened.

After hearing Han Yuanwu's description, the mayor nodded solemnly.”

“I understand now. They dared to plunder your property in public. They have violated the laws of demon Phoenix and will be punished!”

At this moment, Han Yuanwu finally relaxed. He took a deep breath and bowed to the mayor and the supervisor of the code of law.

This time, han Yuanwu returned with excitement because he firmly believed that the demon Phoenix Codex and its enforcers would bring him justice.

However, after han Yuanwu left, the mayor and the captain of the code of law inspection team looked at each other and smiled.

That night, han Yuanwu's family was attacked by a spirit ore merchant. All the valuable things in the family were taken away, and the house was burned down by a Demon Fire.

That night, han Yuanwu lost everything. Even his wife died in the demonic fire. If not for the protection of a guard, he would have died as well.

Han Yuanwu came to Brahma Sky City again with grief and anger.

However, the news he received was that the city Lord and the supervisor of the code of law had left together for strange spirit city.

Han Yuanwu had already realized that something was not right when he left at such a critical moment.

However, he had already lost everything. His Ling fields had been taken, his residence had been destroyed, and even his wife had died in the sea of fire.

Han Yuanwu had never thought that the heavenly Yuan stone would bring him a nightmare instead of wealth.

At this moment, he thought of his son, the son he had sent to study the code of law.

It was as if han Yuanwu had found a life-saving straw. He quickly found a courier station and wrote a letter with the remaining Yin spirit coins he had to send to his son.

Five days later, han Yuanwu's son, han fa, returned.

After knowing what happened to his father and his mother's death, han fa was also heartbroken.

He immediately asked his father about the entire incident and wrote a petition, suing the spirit ore merchants and the miners, a total of 4872 people, in demon Phoenix Court!

After several years of study, Hanfa was very familiar with the demon Phoenix Codex. With all the evidence, he was confident that he could uphold justice for himself and his father.

In order to ensure that the petition would arrive safely, the two of them personally went to demon Phoenix City and sent the petition up.

The next step was to wait for the court of demon Phoenix to start its trial.

However, what the father and son didn't expect was that the news of the court hearing had not come yet, and what they waited for was the city Lord escorting him back to Brahma Sky City for a groundless crime.

At this moment, han Yuanwu had figured out the crux of the problem. It was obvious that the mayor was colluding with the supervisor of the code of law and the spirit ore merchants. Otherwise, the merchants would not have the courage to plunder their spirit ores and burn down their residences.

All of these should have been punished by the demon Phoenix Codex!

On the way back, han Yuanwu questioned the mayor and asked where the notary was.

However, all he got was the city Lord's disdainful smile."

"Do you know how much heavenly Yuan stones are worth? It's not just me, even the higher-ups have gotten what they deserve, so no one will protect you now, including the demon Phoenix Codex!"

Han Yuanwu and han fa were dumbfounded.

They used to believe that the code of law would bring them justice, and they were protected by the rules of the code of law.

However, it was only at this moment that he truly understood that the protection brought by the code of law was only relative. Although he was rich in the past, the interests he had were not in the eyes of those powerhouses.

However, it was completely different this time. This was because he had obtained a heavenly Yuan stone mine, a resource that even the city Lord and the official sovereign of the main city desired.

The spirit ore merchants he hated the most were just pawns driven by these greedy people in the dark. The ones who really wanted to devour him were the law-enforcement officers he had always believed in.

On the night he was taken to Brahma city's prison, han Yuanwu's son, han fa, who had studied the demon Phoenix Codex and believed that the demon Phoenix Codex was justice under his father's influence, committed suicide.

Because his faith had collapsed after he found out the truth.

Without the protection of the demon Phoenix Codex, they would not have the chance to choose their own fate.

After his son's death, han Yuanwu wailed in grief. He couldn't believe that the demon Phoenix Codex, which had once brought him wealth and protected all his wealth, was actually so hypocritical and cruel.

Holding his son's cold body, he cursed the code of law and the law-enforcement officers.

Han Yuanwu's heart was filled with hatred. After knowing the truth, he had lost everything. His family, wealth, status ... He had lost everything.

Fake, everything was fake! Han Yuanwu roared and roared!

Han Yuanwu clenched his fists tightly as he thought of his son's dispirited and confused eyes before his death. At this moment, he wanted to tear that fake code of law and then tear those hypocritical law-enforcement officers apart ...

Why am I so weak? why can't I even protect my loved ones? how good would it be if I had the power to take revenge? for this, I'm willing to have my soul scattered and fall into the endless darkness, as long as you can give me the power ...

Han Yuanwu shouted and howled unwillingly. He swore an oath to the ancient gods and devils, hoping that one of them would hear his resentment and give him the power to take revenge, even if he had to lose everything.

At this moment, a voice sounded in han Yuanwu's mind.

[Do you desire power? [Are you willing to sacrifice everything to be loyal to me for power, and never betray me?]

Chapter 356 - The Arrival Of The Evil King

The demonic voice echoed in han Yuanwu's ears, causing him to be stunned.

“Do you desire power? Are you willing to give up everything to be loyal to me for the sake of power, and never betray me?”

The voice resounded again, striking han Yuanwu's nerves.

At this moment, han Yuanwu was terrified. Although he had been hysterically hoping that the ancient God would hear his cry and bestow him with great power, it was a different matter to see it in person.

But at this moment, han Yuanwu looked at his son in his arms, and his tears flowed down.”

“I'm willing to give up everything for this, even if my soul is destroyed and I'll fall into the endless darkness forever!”

Han Yuanwu's heart was filled with pain. He was afraid, he was terrified, but he was willing to give up everything for his choice because hatred had long spread in his heart.

The respect he had for the demon Phoenix Codex and the law-enforcement officers back then was equal to the hatred he felt now.

Grief, anger, and resentment were tormenting him. At this moment, han Yuanwu used all his strength to shout “yes.”

The other prisoners in the cage looked at him in surprise, their faces filled with ridicule, sympathy, anger, and many other expressions.

Within the divine artifact space.

Lu Wu and Bei Li's figures appeared.

After hearing han Yuanwu's roar, Lu Wu knew that the time was ripe.

After choosing the demon Phoenix domain as the server for the players in the Asia server, Lu Wu had been looking for a suitable entry point.

By chance, he found han Yuanwu and learned about his encounter.

Before he officially entered the demon Phoenix region, Lu Wu really needed such a guide.

His goal was to allow the players to develop in the demon Phoenix domain, slowly build their own forces, and conquer the demon Phoenix domain.

Han Yuanwu's desire was to tear up the demon Phoenix Codex and destroy the law-enforcement officers.

Therefore, from Lu Wu's point of view, the result they wanted was the same. Moreover, han Yuanwu, as a native of the demon Phoenix continent, would be of great help to him.

What Lu Wu had to do next was to let han Yuanwu pave the way for the appearance of the players.

.....

After shouting out his thoughts hysterically, han Yuanwu waited quietly for the power of the demonic god to arrive.

However, after waiting for a long time, nothing happened.

Han Yuanwu, who had gathered his courage, suddenly fell to the ground and started crying.

“What's with the noise, do you want to die!”

Hearing the noise inside, the prison guard appeared at the end of the door and walked in. He kept hitting the metal bars with the iron bars in his hands,

making “Bang Bang” sounds.

Seeing this, the prisoners around them stopped talking, and han Yuanwu’s cries became clear and audible.

The prison guard quickened his pace and arrived at han Yuanwu’s cell. He slammed the metal bars with the stick in his hand.”

“Shut up!”

However, at this moment, his gaze suddenly fell on the corpse in han Yuanwu’s hands. He frowned and said,

“How unlucky! Why did someone commit suicide again?”

As he spoke, the prison guard took out a key and opened the cell door. He walked in and grabbed han fa without saying anything to han Yuanwu.

“What are you doing!” Han Yuanwu roared in grief and indignation.

The prison guard glanced at han Yuanwu coldly and swung the stick in his right hand at han Yuanwu’s head, knocking him to the side.”

“Get lost!”

The prison guard was about to drag han FA’s body out.

He had been guarding this Brahma prison for many years, so he was no longer surprised by death. He even knew why these people committed suicide.

Other than a few criminals who had violated the demon Phoenix Codex, the rest of the people here had died because their faith had collapsed after knowing the truth of the Codex.

He knew very well that the peace brought by the code of law was only on the surface. In fact, darkness and unfairness had always existed, and the reason they were once protected by the code of law was that they were not valuable enough for the law enforcers to break the code of law.

However, when your value made them envious, the law-enforcement officers who held the code of law would not hesitate to devour you.

Therefore, he didn't ask Han fa what was wrong. He didn't even care about han Yuanwu, who was crying. He had seen so many things that he was completely numb to it.

At this moment, a space tunnel suddenly appeared at the door of the cell. A three-meter-tall figure covered in black emerged from it.

Under the prison Guard's terrified gaze, the figure grabbed his head.

“Pa!”

Blood splattered everywhere, and the Guard's body fell to the ground.

“Whoosh!”

The prisoners who were paying attention to this scene also revealed looks of disbelief at this moment.

“Let's go!” After shaking off the minced meat in his hand, the black figure approached han Yuanwu step by step. Han Yuanwu was still sitting on the ground with a dazed expression.

“You need me!” At this moment, the black figure spoke.

“Who are you?” Han Yuanwu slowly turned to the black shadow and said.

“Me? Perhaps you can call me the evil demon God!” Xie Wang said after some thought.

This time, Lu Wu was the one who instructed him to do the task, but he naturally wouldn't use his real identity. After all, he belonged to the European server camp now and couldn't interfere with it with his real identity.

Hearing Xie Wang's words, han Yuanwu's eyes lit up.”

“You heard my call?”

Xie Wang shook his head.”It’s not me. It’s the one behind me. He sent me here. But don’t worry, I have the power to fulfill your desire. Tell me your request!”

After hearing Xie Wang’s explanation, hatred appeared in han Yuanwu’s eyes.”

“I want to overturn the demon Phoenix Codex, and I want all the law-enforcement officers to die!”

“It’s not difficult, but you’ll have to make a sacrifice. Are you ready?” Xie Wang grinned.

Han Yuanwu stood up slowly and looked up at Xie Wang.”

“I’m ready, take whatever you want!”

Xie Wang nodded in satisfaction and placed his hand on han Yuanwu’s head. The information that Bei Li had prepared beforehand was instantly transferred into his mind.

A moment later, han Yuanwu, who had digested the information, raised his head in shock.

“You want to occupy this region through me?”

The evil king nodded calmly.”This is what the one behind me wants, and you are the agent of this region. What you need to do is to win over those who have the same thoughts as you about overthrowing the demon Phoenix Codex. Accept the will of my Lord and prepare for the coming Army!”

Looking at han Yuanwu, who was in shock, Xie Wang said again,”

“Didn’t you want to overturn the demon Phoenix Codex? this is the chance my master is giving you!”

“Yes! This is what I want!” Han Yuanwu gritted his teeth.

Then, he mumbled and began to read the soul oath that was imprinted in his mind.

Seeing this scene, Xie Wang smiled again. He knew that although han Yuanwu was useful to Lu Wu, it was only temporary. Naturally, han Yuanwu was not qualified to see Lu Wu and Bei Li. So, this was enough.

After han Yuanwu recited the soul oath, han Yuanwu's soul imprint appeared in the divine artifact space.

Lu Wu, who saw this scene, immediately gave Xie Wang feedback.

“Very good. You should know what to do next. I will help you. This Brahma City is under my control. Let's start!” Xie Wang laughed.

Han Yuanwu nodded. He crouched down and took the key from the dead guard. Then, he walked to the other cells.

Seeing this, Xie Wang reached out and put han Yuanwu's son's body into the medium, then followed.

After a while, han Yuanwu released all the prisoners.

According to the plan in his mind, the next thing he had to do was to rope in the prisoners who had the same experience as him, establish his own force, and declare war on the demon Phoenix Codex and the law-enforcement officers!

Chapter 357 - I'll Wait For You To Kneel And Beg For Mercy

After they were released, the prisoners were originally very grateful to han Yuanwu.

However, when they heard han Yuanwu say that he wanted to overthrow the code of law and its executors, they all thought that han Yuanwu was crazy. This was simply impossible in their eyes. It was an action that would definitely lead to death.

Even so, there were still a few people who stood out and decided to join han Yuanwu's team. They wanted to fight with han Yuanwu, even though they knew that they would definitely lose.

This was because those people were like han Yuanwu. After their faith collapsed, they only had hatred and anger in their hearts. Furthermore, they had long lost everything and had rotten lives. So what if they died?

Han Yuanwu did not stop those who were unwilling and let them leave.

This was because the information in his mind told him that the demon God behind the scenes wanted followers who were truly willing to overthrow the demon Phoenix Codex and its executors.

As they walked out of the prison, han Yuanwu and the others encountered several waves of prison guards. However, in the face of the heretic King's powerful strength, these guards had no ability to resist at all and were easily dealt with.

After walking out of the prison, han Yuanwu turned to the 13 people who were willing to follow him and said,

“I need you to do something!”

“Just say it, this old man’s life is cheap. They destroyed my family, I can do anything, as long as I can bite a piece of meat from them!” The one who spoke was an old man with white hair and ragged clothes.

The rest of the people immediately responded.

In their opinion, han Yuanwu’s operation this time was bound to end in failure because overthrowing the current order was easier said than done, and the hope was too slim. However, they still chose to follow han Yuanwu because they were determined to die. They just wanted to make a wound on this “giant beast”, even if it was a minor injury.

“Split up and go to the various cities to deliver a message!”

“What news?” The old man asked.

“All those who want to overthrow this hypocritical code of law and end these executors can come to Brahma City. From today on, this place will remove the demonic covenant and strip the power of the executors. It will be a real land of freedom and a land of resistance!”

Upon hearing this, the followers were all stunned.

They had thought that han Yuanwu would find a place to hide and gather his forces in secret. They did not expect him to say such words. This time, they all thought that han Yuanwu had gone crazy.

“Believe me, after today, Brahma City will be the gathering place for us rebels, so we need more people who have the same idea as us to join!”

They were dumbfounded when they heard han Yuanwu say that Brahma City would be taken down today and become the gathering place for their resistance.

“I know you don’t believe me. How about this, follow me. I think you’ll believe me after you see it with your own eyes!” With that, han Yuanwu turned around and walked in the direction of the city Lord’s mansion.

The rest of them looked at each other and then followed.

They appeared on the street in prisoner clothes and immediately attracted the attention of the residents. They avoided them, obviously not wanting to get into trouble. Some residents even rushed to the code of law inspection group to report the prisoner's escape.

Nothing happened along the way. However, when they arrived at the gate of the city Lord's mansion, a group of law enforcers and a large number of soldiers in the city came behind them.

“How dare you break out of prison! Do you even care about the code of law?” The leading supervisor of the code of law glared at Han Yuanwu and the others.

Han Yuanwu only wanted to laugh when he heard that.

“What the hell is the code of law?” Han Yuanwu turned to the law enforcer and spoke with disdain.

Hearing this, both the supervisor and the soldiers were in an uproar.

This was the first time they had encountered someone like Han Yuanwu who dared to challenge the demon Phoenix Codex in public.

“You're looking for death! Arrest them all and judge them according to the law!”

When the soldiers heard this, they immediately stepped forward to arrest him.

Han Yuanwu's followers saw this and clenched their fists.

“Judge according to the law? Like I said, the code of law is bullsh * t, it has no right to judge us!”

As Han Yuanwu's voice fell, a thick black mist emerged from his body and slowly formed a three-meter-tall black giant.

“Roar!” The moment Xie Wang appeared, he roared forward, and all the soldiers were instantly sent flying by the massive sound wave.

“So you do have some ability, but you’ll regret challenging the code of law with this!” Seeing this, the few law enforcers attacked at the same time.

Different elemental spell techniques streaked through the air toward Han Yuanwu.

At this moment, Xie Wang waved his right arm, and a blood-red Claw formed in the air. It instantly shattered the oncoming spell technique, and without losing momentum, it tore the bodies of the law enforcers to pieces.

“How laughable. The netherworld established the laws of order. Unfortunately, I can’t stay here for long. Otherwise, I’d really like to kill all these hypocritical guys myself. Hehe!” Xie Wang could not help but smile after he had cleared all the enemies.

The followers were dumbfounded when they saw Xie Wang easily kill the soldiers and the supervisor of the code of law.

Although they had been surprised to see the evil king kill the prison guards, they had not thought much of it. After all, the prison guards were not strong, but the strength of the code of law was extremely powerful, especially the leader, who was obviously at the level of a ghost Governor, but he had died so easily.

They were so shocked that they couldn’t speak. At the same time, they were inexplicably excited, especially when they saw the death of the supervisor, who represented the Codex embodiment.

“Lord evil demon God, let’s begin!” Han Yuanwu said respectfully.

Xie Wang nodded indifferently, then waved his hand forward. A violent fiendish wind suddenly formed and swept forward.

The entire city Lord’s mansion began to peel off bit by bit under the havoc of the fiendish wind. It didn’t even last for a moment before it rose from the ground and was ground into dust in the air.

At this moment, a figure shot out from the fiendish winds and hovered in the air with a ferocious expression.”

“Who are you? how dare you destroy the city Lord’s mansion? do you really ignore the existence of the code of law?”

“Do you still remember me?” Han Yuanwu looked up at the Lord of Brahma Sky City, who was floating in the air.

“It’s you!” Fan Tian’s expression turned serious. He had just parted with han Yuanwu, so how could he forget this person?

“What a hypocrite. You keep talking about the code of law. It’s disgusting!” Han Yuanwu’s eyes flickered with anger as he gritted his teeth.

“How dare you break out of prison as a prisoner! According to the code of law, you deserve to die!”

“I realize that you’re even more annoying than that Yuan Xu fellow!” Xie Wang couldn’t help but mock the Lord of Brahma City.

At this moment, several figures emerged from the city and quickly appeared beside the city Lord.

“City Lord, what happened here?” The leader of the law enforcement team looked at fan Tian and said.

“The prisoner has escaped!” Lord Brahma immediately replied.

Hearing this, the captain of the code of law inspection team looked at han Yuanwu and the others with a surprised expression.

He was very familiar with these people. He had personally sent them to prison “according to the code of law”, and he had gained a lot of resources from them.

Thinking up to this point, the leader of the Codex inspection team couldn’t help but smile,”

“So it’s a jailbreak. Then we’ll deal with it according to the code of law!”

Then, he turned his gaze to the black giant that Xie Wang had transformed into. His smile gradually froze because he realized that he could not see through this person’s cultivation.

“Friend, they are prisoners. You can’t make the same mistake. According to the code of law, you will be punished for what you have done. I advise you ...”

Before the captain of the inspection team could finish his sentence, Xie Wang raised his hand and made a grabbing motion. A subordinate beside him was sucked into Xie Wang’s hand.

“Is it illegal to kill?” Xie Wang asked with a sinister smile.

Seeing this, the captain of the law enforcement unit felt his heart tighten.

However, Xie Wang did not wait for his reply. With a crack, he turned the body of the supervisor into a pile of mud. He then spoke again,

“Is it illegal to destroy?”

This time, Xie Wang still didn’t wait for him to answer. He threw a punch into the distance, and several houses were blown away.

“What else can violate your demon Phoenix Codex? tell me, and I’ll demonstrate it to you!” Xie Wang replied with a sinister smile.

Such provocative words stunned the city Lord and the captain of the law enforcement unit.

Originally, because they could not see through Xie Wang’s strength, they had been prepared to try to persuade him not to use force, but it was clear that Xie Wang did not want to give them face.

Suddenly, their expressions darkened.”

“My friend, do you want to be wanted by all the forces in the entire great devil domain? even if you’re strong, you have to know your own limits!”

“What bullsh * t arrest warrant? in my eyes, you’re nothing, and your devil flame Palace Lord is an idiot!”

Xie Wang’s words truly shocked everyone present.

They had seen arrogant people before, but they had never seen someone as arrogant as the evil king. He actually dared to insult one of the law preachers, the official sovereign. He was truly audacious.

“Since you’re looking for death, don’t blame us!” The city Lord said coldly.

The two of them then stretched out their hands and began to form hand seals, drawing upon the power of heaven and earth. They were prepared to kill Xie Wang with lightning-fast methods.

In their view, no matter how strong Xie Wang was, he was only at the early ghost king realm, not much stronger than the two of them. As long as they worked together, it would not be a problem to capture him.

Xie Wang could not help but laugh when he saw them attack.

Although he was at the ghost emperor realm, with the divine seal in his body, he had long become a God. With the support of the laws, he had the power to rival Yin gods. He could easily kill the two of them.

However, he didn’t do that because he wanted to build up han Yuanwu’s reputation and pave the way for the coming players from the Asia server.

Naturally, he had to act cool.

At the thought of this, Xie Wang raised his head with a sinister smile.”Hey, do you two know who I am?”

“I don’t care who you are. You’ve violated the demon Phoenix Codex, so you deserve to die!” As he spoke, two formations, one red and one blue, descended from the sky.

“Pa!” Xie Wang held up the sky with one hand and held the two arrays back. Under the shocked expressions of the Lord of Brahma City and the captain of the inspection team, he crushed the arrays into light spots of spiritual Qi that filled the sky.

“I’m waiting for you to kneel down and beg for mercy!”

As he spoke, Xie Wang’s body began to swell up as if he was being pumped with air. The muscles on his body bulged, and his veins popped out one after another. The surface of the muscular Dragon’s body even flickered with a dark light.

In the blink of an eye, Xie Wang had transformed into a giant nearly thirty meters tall.

As Xie Wang released his power, the purple, burning divine seal on his forehead began to reveal itself bit by bit. Five nomological patterns began to circle around his body.

At this moment, the Lord of Brahma Sky City and the captain of the law system inspection team were dumbfounded, and their faces could not help but reveal a look of horror.

“God ... God!”

Chapter 358 - Constructing A Resurrection Point

Xie Wang's body was still growing even after he had completely unleashed his power.

The burning purple seal and the power of laws that circled around his body all proved that Xie Wang was a God on the yin God List.

At this time, the Lord of Brahma City and the captain of the code of law inspection team kept trembling. They looked at Xie Wang in horror and were completely speechless.

They couldn't believe that they had just provoked God and even threatened him with the demon Phoenix Codex.

One had to know that the people who created the code of law were only at the ghost emperor realm.

At this moment, they were afraid. The fear in their eyes seemed to spread out, and their bodies could not help but tremble under the fluctuation of emotions.

The clouds in the sky loomed over them, and the wind howled. A golden light descended from the sky, enveloping Xie Wang and making him seem incomparably majestic. The burning divine seal was even more distinct at this moment. Xie Wang's power was still growing, and he was already a hundred meters tall. He was like an ancient demon God that could support heaven and earth, and the terrifying aura on his body made all the people in the city kneel on the ground and shiver.

As a God, the level of existence of the evil king was far beyond Brahma and the captain of the inspection team. Under the pressure of the evil King's aura, they fell from the sky and knelt on the ground like dead ashes.

They knew very well the consequences of offending a God.

On this demon Phoenix continent, there were many races cursed by the gods. They all endured a long period of pain and could not seek death. Just thinking about this kind of torture made them feel terrified.

They could not help but recall Xie Wang's words as they looked at him, who was enveloped in golden light.

In my eyes, you are nothing!

At this moment, Xie Wang turned his gaze towards them with a sinister smile. A terrifying pressure instantly formed, and their backs could not help but be lowered. They bent over on the ground, looking extremely disheveled.

“I said, I'll make you kneel and beg for mercy!”

“God ... We have no intention of offending you ... Please forgive us!”

Resisting Xie Wang's pressure with all their might, the Lord of Brahma City and the captain of the inspection team were ashen. They prostrated on the ground and begged for mercy.

“Look around!” Xie Wang said with a sinister smile.

When the two of them heard this, they looked around and immediately found that all the buildings in the area they were in had been destroyed and overturned by the whistling wind.

“What is the punishment for destroying the buildings in the city in your demon Phoenix Codex?”

When they heard Xie Wang's question, fan Tian and the captain of the inspection team were terrified. They quickly said in unison,”

“Oh God, you are an existence that has transcended the shackles of the laws. How can the demon Phoenix Codex bind you?”

“Hahaha! How laughable, establishing a code of law in this world, yet doing things that are beyond the code of law. In the end, it still depends on strength, how interesting!”

Xie Wang’s voice exploded in their ears like thunder, but they did not dare to resist. They knew how lowly they were in front of the gods.

“Please forgive us, God. We are willing to serve you as your slaves!” The two of them prostrated on the ground, waiting for Xie Wang’s reply. Their hearts were filled with apprehension.

At this moment, they knew that their survival was no longer in their hands. It all depended on whether Xie Wang was willing to let them go.

Xie Wang’s heart was filled with disdain when he saw their humble appearance.

In his opinion, this devilfall great domain was really fake. Even those in power were all hypocritical people, which made him feel disgusted.

In comparison, evil king preferred the European server where he was. The players would always fight with void abyss if they were not happy with him. They would never play games. This was how the netherworld should be.

The law of the jungle was the essence.

Therefore, the evil king was extremely displeased with the person who set these rules, and he even wanted to smash the head of that devil flame Palace Lord.

However, when he thought of Lu Wu’s instructions, evil king gave up on this idea. The most important thing now was to make sufficient preparations for the arrival of the players from the Asian server.

“Please forgive us, God. We are willing to serve you as your slaves!”

Seeing that Xie Wang didn’t reply, the two men prostrated on the ground spoke again.

Han Yuanwu and the others felt an indescribable joy when they saw the once high and mighty Lord of Brahma City and his supervising teammate's attitude. Especially those who followed Han Yuanwu. After knowing that the evil king was a God, they all knelt on the ground and lowered their heads to face the evil king.

Gods had always been hidden in the world and didn't care about the world. In their hearts, the highest level was none other than the official sovereign, while gods were ethereal existences that they wanted to look up to but couldn't see.

At this moment, while they were afraid, they were also inexplicably excited. This was because Han Yuanwu had the help of the gods. Then, what he said before about building a city that could overthrow the current order would definitely be feasible.

“Slave or servant? Are you even worthy?”

In Xie Wang's opinion, being his servant was the same as joining Lu Wu's team, and he was only Lu Wu's servant, how could they be worthy of each other!

Thinking of this, Xie Wang suddenly moved. The nomological patterns on his body spread, and the sky suddenly changed. A black lightning bolt fell from the sky and smashed onto Xie Wang's body. At this time, a Black Law left his body and suddenly passed through the bodies of the Lord of Brahma Sky City and the captain of the code of law inspection. Then, it returned to Xie Wang's side and continued to follow the other four laws as it slowly rotated around him.

A gust of wind blew over, and the bodies of Brahma City Lord and the law system supervision team leader, who still had a frightened expression on their faces, scattered with the wind.

These two masters who had just reached the ghost king realm, the law enforcers who represented the embodiment of the demon Phoenix Codex in the hearts of the residents of Brahma City, disappeared at this moment.

Han Yuanwu and the others clenched their fists when they saw this.

Because it was these two people who had destroyed their family and caused them to lose everything. Seeing them die, their hearts were filled with joy.

“Let’s start!” “Han Yuanwu?” evil king turned to look at han Yuanwu.

Han Yuanwu nodded heavily, and his body slowly floated in the air with the help of the evil King’s power.

Looking down at Brahma City, han Yuanwu took a deep breath, and his expression became firm. He then said,”

“From now on, this city will be renamed ‘free city’ and officially declare war on the demon fall continent’s code of law and the law enforcers. From now on, the demon God Army will fight for us, and we welcome all resistance!”

Han Yuanwu’s voice, with the help of the evil king, spread throughout Brahma Sky City. It echoed for a long time, and countless residents showed terrified expressions.

After han Yuanwu said all this, the evil demon God pointed at the sky with one hand.”

“Today, we’ll construct the demonic passage. After that, the demonic Army will help you overthrow the law-enforcement officers and tear up the demon Phoenix Codex!”

Following the direction that the evil demon God was pointing at, a golden pillar of light pierced through the sky and crashed onto the ground. Countless strange and twisted symbols began to appear on the ground, slowly forming this array.

When the golden light dissipated, a huge array map appeared in the area where the Lord of Brahma Sky City was located.

“Just wait, the demon Army will come!” “Let’s go!” Xie Wang said as he looked at han Yuanwu.

“Many thanks, Lord evil demon God!” Han Yuanwu was excited and bowed in the air.

“You’re welcome. You already know what to do. If everything you do can satisfy my master, your son might be able to come back to life!”

After saying this, the evil demon God’s body turned into a black mist and disappeared.

Han Yuanwu and his followers were left in shock.

His son could be resurrected?

At this moment, han Yuanwu believed that what the heretic King had said was true. He was a God, so the existence behind him was definitely an even more untouchable existence. How difficult would it be to resurrect a dead person?

Chapter 359 - A Real Pk

With evil King's help, the revival point of the Asia server was marked.

Moreover, the power displayed by the evil king had really intimidated all the residents of Brahma Sky City.

Most of the residents chose to escape from the city after the disappearance of the heretic King because they had never experienced what happened to han Yuanwu. Therefore, in their hearts, the demon Phoenix Codex was still sacred and inviolable, and should not be broken.

Therefore, they didn't want to fight, and Brahma City had become a Devil's Den in their eyes. Staying here would only lead to death.

However, this was exactly what Lu Wu wanted to see, because what he needed was a rebellion like han Yuanwu who was determined to overthrow the existing order, not the residents who still had The Demon Code in their hearts.

With the presence of a native like han Yuanwu, the players' arrival would not be seen as an invasion, but as an Army that han Yuanwu had borrowed from the gods.

At that time, the residents of Brahma City who had escaped from the city would also spread the news to the entire demon nightmare continent, and more rebels like han Yuanwu would join in.

This was the main mode of the sub-server that Lu Wu had planned. The natives and players would cooperate, and the main storyline was to fight until the demon Phoenix continent's code of law was overthrown and the law enforcement officers were executed.

At the same time, Wu Guoyi's team had already made their preparations.

After receiving the news that Lu Wu was going to open the Asian server, they began to spend a lot of money to promote it.

Players from Japan, Korea, Singapore, and other countries couldn't help but cheer when they heard the news.

They had been waiting for this moment for a long time. Since the global network was now fully connected, as long as they were old players, they would have access to the video and review report of war online.

However, there was no news of the Asia server opening on punitive expedition online.

This made many of the Asian players who could not stand the wait unhappy and began to protest. They even asked for the country's server to be opened up and become an Asian server.

However, no matter how much they tried, the officials did not respond. There was no doubt that they still had resentment in their hearts.

For this reason, some gaming fanatics even went to the China, European, and hell servers to rent a house, just to experience the charm of war online.

However, things were different at this moment. This was because war online was going to be released on the Asia server. They would have their own server.

While many of the Asian server's players were cheering in joy, they also had the idea of switching servers. After all, the Asian server was their real home.

On Lu Wu's side, in order to cooperate with Wu Guoyi's publicity, he also decisively opened the official website and forum of the Asian server. Suddenly, a large number of players poured in, and the whole forum was even more lively.

However, during this time, there was one thing that caught Lu Wu's attention.

This was because a group of Internet Water Army had actually entered the Asia server forum. What they did there was to post all kinds of comments criticizing the flaws of the game “punitive expedition online”, and even hurt the team behind the game with their malicious words.

Regarding this point, Lu Wu decisively sent the all-rounded Bei Li to investigate.

After some investigation, Lu Wu finally knew the reason.

It turned out that everything had started because warring online had suddenly decided to go online on the Asia server.

During this time, an influential game company called “mechanical revolution” was going to launch their new game, and the first release was set to be in all of Asia.

While punitive expedition online had yet to release the announcement for the opening of the Asia server, their new game, ”mechanical revolution: Galaxy Guard 3”, was undoubtedly the most anticipated game for the players in the Asia server.

However, punitive expedition online’s sudden decision to release on the Asia server caught the manufacturers of the mechanical revolution off guard.

Many players who had already reserved the game and were ready to buy it suddenly canceled their reservations. The entire company’s market value had evaporated by 24% in a few days.

Under such circumstances, the machinery Revolution’s manufacturers decisively delayed the game’s release day in order to stop losses.

This was because they knew that they would definitely lose badly if they were to face off against the global phenomenon, war online. That was why they could only delay the release of the game.

However, this caused dissatisfaction among the players. This was because these players had been following the mechanical revolution since the first revolution. Now that the mechanical Revolution 3 had appeared, they could not accept the sudden delay.

After finding out the reason for the delay in the mechanical revolution, they had nowhere to vent their anger, so they targeted the expedition online.

Although they had never played this game before and didn't even understand its content, they didn't care about it. They gathered together and began to defame punitive expedition online on the forums, even saying that they would boycott its release.

This type of player was commonly known as brainless fans. When they decided that a game was fun, they would think that everyone who played the game had the same taste as them, and that other games were trash. Even if they didn't know the specific content of the game, they couldn't be compared to the game they liked.

After knowing the specific reason, Lu Wu didn't know whether to laugh or cry. He didn't even bother to delete the post, so he just let them jump and curse on the forum.

Lu Wu knew about the series of games related to the mechanical revolution. This series of games could be said to be very well-known around the world. Every sequel had made great progress and was a very good game. Lu Wu was also fascinated by it for a while.

Therefore, he could understand why the mechanical revolution had such a group of brainless fans. However, since this matter had nothing to do with the game manufacturers of the mechanical revolution, he naturally would not take action.

As for the players who were cursing on the forum, he didn't care at all. After all, in the face of absolute strength, they couldn't change the fact no matter what they said.

However, the development of the situation quickly changed drastically, which was also unexpected to Lu Wu.

The cause was still the Asian server forum.

Because of the existence of such a water Army, many players who sincerely liked war online naturally couldn't stand it and began to curse at them.

At the beginning, the fake reviewers and the online players of conquest were just bickering with each other. However, due to the huge number of online players of conquest, the fake reviewers were unable to fight back. In the end, they opened a declaration of war post on the forum:

[What's there to be smug about? does having a large number of players mean that the game is fun? so what if this game is trash? let's pick a location and have a fight, do you dare?]

[Op: the R & D of war online is a pig.]

Content:

Come on! There's no point in talking. Do you have a lot of warring online players? do you dare to find a place? we'll arrange a fight and have a real fight. We've already organized 1000 people here. You can also send 1000 people. It'll be so much fun if we have a real fight. The location will be Japan. Warring online trash, come if you have the guts. If you don't, then forget it!

This post shocked all the players who were challenging the various servers.

[Suika Taro: Oh my God, you guys are going to compete with the players online in battle (extremely terrifying)]

[Dark Ranger (European server): hahaha, you're actually competing with players who are online in battle. Don't you know how many wars we've been through?]

Lava (hell):"hahaha, to be honest, you guys should really go and play war online. You won't be able to say that after you've played it. The combat

ability of the players here is off the charts, especially in the Chinese and European servers. It's said that most players in those two servers have studied PK techniques deeply (funny)."

[The strongest Xue Li: 666. Big shots of the mechanical revolution, you must be Shi Lezhi. I suspect that you're trying to cheat us of our medical expenses. How shameless (funny)]

Crayon Shin-chan replied to strongest Xue Li: "nonsense. I've already seen through everything. They want to get compensation for death. We Conqueror players are all made up of fighting on the battlefield. If we get excited in a fight, we might kill them. At that time, we'll be finished (funny)."

[Roasting Chang 'e while holding a Jade Rabbit: it's too scary. After hearing what you said, I'm terrified. They actually want to use the lives of 1000 players to scam us of a huge sum of money. Society, society, we can't afford to offend them (funny)]

Assassin's Creed: "but if we don't go, will they look down on us? we can't do this. Everyone, think of a way to get out!"

[Demon thains (oue): I have to be taught a lesson. I'm signing up. I'll take a plane there. It's time to show off my strength (the evil smile of the extreme Wolf ghost king.jpg)]

Invincible loneliness: "can you guys stop fooling around? I'm not joking. You all know how strong the players are in actual combat. If we challenge them to a fight, we'll really get into trouble. Let them off the hook and let them continue jumping."

[True trash on warring online (sub): If you don't dare, then don't find excuses!

Crayon Shinchan: "boss Gu, look. They even dare to provoke you. How about this? we'll send a team of trade profession players over. This way, we'll be able to minimize the casualties."(Funny)

Star sucking great skill replied Crayon Shinchan,[damn you! I suddenly feel that what you said makes sense!]

.....

After the players from the mechanical revolution left their declaration of war posts, the entire Asia server forum was unusually noisy, and players from the three major servers came after hearing the news.

The players burst into laughter at this provocation.

The combat strength of conquests online players had actually been proven many times in real life, and there were often players who posted on the forum that they had fought a lot in the game, and had become very powerful in real life.

For example, the one who stood up for his friend, challenged a Taekwondo expert, and then easily dodged the attack according to the rhythm of shadow steps.

For example, there were players who encountered a robbery at night and ended up subduing the knife-wielding criminal with their bare hands.

Wait ...

This series of events had made the conquests online players understand that although the skills in the game could not be used in real life, many combat techniques could be imitated. Even in the constant battles, many players had already integrated some of the fighting skills in the game into their bodies, and would subconsciously use them when they encountered danger.

Therefore, in the eyes of all the players on punitive expedition online, the provocation of the players from the mechanical revolution was simply because they were not afraid of death.

However, with the provocation at their door, many hot-tempered players could no longer sit still. They immediately started to post and pull people in, ready to fly to Japan to show off their muscles.

In just five minutes, tens of thousands of players had registered, and the number was still increasing.

To these players, war online was no longer just a game. It was their home and their faith. They could no longer tolerate this provocation, so they decided to attack.

As for injuries and whatnot, they could only say that they would try to hold back.

After all, if they didn't accept the challenge and teach those superior dogs a lesson, they were really afraid that these superior dogs would treat them as fat otakus who only knew how to play games.

Although many players admitted that they were fat otakus, they were also fat otakus with explosive combat ability!

Chapter 360 - -Offline Attack

The players' reaction to the Internet Water Army on the Asia server forum really gave Lu Wu a headache.

Because they were really going to fight in person!

Regarding this, Lu Wu naturally wanted to stop it, so he opened an official notice.

[Official announcement: regarding the challenge on the Asia server forum!]

[Op: battle planning team]

Content:

“After understanding the details of the battle on the Asia server forum, we would like to ask all players to stay calm and not act on impulse. Our planning team has full confidence in the ‘punitive expedition online’. Their slander and abuse will not have any impact on the game. At the same time, we would like to thank the punitive expedition players for their trust and support in the game.

The planner's message: “take a step back and the world will be clear. Endure for a while and everything will be calm. Fight for a while and feel good. Cry after the matter!”

[Message from the game team: in order to thank the players for their support of the game, we will start a day-long celebration on the day before the launch of the conquering Asia server. On that day, we will gain 10% experience for leveling up.]

In order to stop the players from fighting, Lu Wu was ready to go all out. He released the experience event on the day of the fight just so that the players would not be impulsive.

However, this time, Lu Wu had completely miscalculated, because some of the words of the mechanical revolution players had touched the bottom line of the expedition players.

Crayon Shinchuan: “take a step back. The more I think about it, the angrier I get. I want to fight ten!”

One blade kills salted fish: “it’s good to fight, and it’s good to keep fighting. If I don’t f* ck them over, they’ll definitely clamor even more and refuse to accept the official suggestion!”

[Wandering scenery party: do you think you can stop us with a 10% experience bonus?] Backstage crew, you guys are thinking too simply. We’re going to fight this battle, and no one can stop us!

Irascible Berserker: “the game officials can’t back down. I know you’re thinking for us, but we’re also thinking for the game. This fight must be fought. We’ll show mercy!”

[Roasting Chang ‘e while holding a Jade Rabbit: we’ve already formed dozens of groups and are discussing which 1000 people to send. After all, they said 1000 people. We won’t use numbers to suppress them!]

Suikuotaro: “although we expedition players love to read and are cultured players, we won’t back down even if others ride on us. I’ve already signed up. I want to go to Japan!”

Flying sword immortal: “it’s said that Big Boss aojian also wanted to go. He even joined our fight-making group. In the end, he was kicked out by our group leader at the first moment. I’m afraid that he won’t be gentle or heavy. We’re going to reason with him with our fists, not collect his corpse (funny).”

[Sword technique of the AO family: ???] (Question mark face)

Crayon Shin-chan replied to proud sword technique,[you have been kicked out of the group chat because you spoke too much. (Funny)]

Martial arts behemoth: “we’re currently selecting who to send. The results will be out soon. Everyone, look forward to it. I heard that boss Gu Yu will buy all the tickets for the return trip!”

.....

This time, the popularity of the fight was rising, and the players from the three major servers were gathered together. Lu Wu’s event rewards this time had obviously lost their temptation.

This really gave Lu Wu a headache, so he simply created an alternate account and sneaked into the chat group where they had arranged to fight, wanting to see what they were talking about.

This time, Lu Wu joined the main group, and several Guild bosses were planning how to fight this battle.

In fact, they also understood that it wasn’t difficult to win this battle at all. The difficult part was how to avoid problems.

After all, this was a group fight of 1000 players. This wasn’t a joke. It was easy for problems to arise in the midst of chaos. As guild leaders, they were more meticulous in their considerations. This was naturally what they were most concerned about.

After half a day, they finally came up with a countermeasure and arranged a list.

Seeing this list, Lu Wu was dumbfounded. These players who participated in the fight were really clear about the division of labor.

This was because the Guild leaders of these organizations mainly recruited players who were doctors in real life. More than 500 people in the entire list were experienced in medical treatment, rescue, and medical care. Their role was to quickly clean up the scene after the fight and ensure the safety of their opponents.

100 of them studied law in preparation for any legal problems they encountered in other countries.

There were also 97 people who were there to watch. Their role was to decisively stop their own players when they saw the other players in danger.

The other three were in charge of livestreaming and uploading to the forum.

In other words, only 300 players were truly participating in the war.

This time, they had asked for 600 players from the mid-server, 200 players from the European server, and 200 players from the hell server.

This distribution also caused a protest from the players from the European and hell servers, especially the Russian players who had some territories in the European server.

They were very concerned about this matter and wanted to put on a show of “white Emperor holy sword, Imperial Sword follow me”. Therefore, they were really dissatisfied with the distribution of the quota.

Gu Yu and the others gave an explanation for this. They said that the central server was closer to the battle location, so there was no need for them to travel all the way here. In the future, if such a situation occurred in Europe and North America again, they could go up and the central server would not fight for the spots.

In order to ensure that there would be no problems with this fight, they had even carefully divided the list, with the role of each player clearly stated.

This really made Lu Wu dumbfounded.

Are fights so standardized these days?

After the name list came out, the forums of the three servers were bustling.

Many players were depressed that they were not selected, and many players gave their blessings to the players who were ready to go to war. In short, the

players were full of confidence in this expedition and wanted to see how the Conqueror players would crush the water Army.

.....

In three days, the players on the list gathered in China under the arrangement of Gu Yu and the others and flew to Japan.

On the other side, the players from Japan, Korea, and Singapore also started to gather and head towards Japan.

It could be said that this time, the offline battle between the players was already unstoppable.

Regarding this, Lu Wu almost called the police!

However, after thinking about it, he didn't do so. Instead, he sent the newly modified mu Zhiguang to watch the battle. If he found that the situation was not right, he could stop it on the spot.

After arriving in Japan, the Conqueror's players first rested for a night under the arrangement of Gu Yu and the others.

The next morning, the players headed to the suburbs where the battle was scheduled.

The Conqueror players did not feel any psychological pressure for this battle. After all, they had experienced such a big scene like war, so how could they not handle a simple battle?

The location of the fight was in the Xicheng District of Osaka. It was chosen to be in the outskirts of a sparsely populated area.

According to the location sent by the players of the mechanical revolution, the thousand-man team of the conscripted players soon arrived.

Looking up, he found that the players of the mechanical revolution were already ready.

However, the Conqueror's players were shocked to see that they were carrying weapons such as baseball bats and iron rods.

The Conqueror's players could not help but look at each other and realized that they were all unarmed.

Seeing this scene through the livestream, the players of the war zone were in an uproar on the forum, ridiculing the other side and even bringing their tools to fight.

“All the players on our expedition are here. We'll fight whatever you want!” At this moment, Gu Yu took a few steps forward and looked at the densely packed crowd opposite him.

“Yu Ji, first, RUO!” The leader raised his baseball bat and pointed it at Gu Yu.

Even though Gu Yu could not understand what he was saying, he could sense the provocation in his tone and could not help but laugh.

“Then let's start!”

As Gu Yu's voice fell, the Conqueror's players began to line up according to the previous division. The first 300 people were the combatants.

The players of the mechanical revolution also began to jump and warm up.

Since there was a language barrier, they did not waste any time. After a while, the Conqueror players took the lead. The 300 people in the front immediately rushed towards the 1000 people, and the rest of the medical staff quickly followed behind.

Seeing the Conqueror players attack, the players of the mechanical revolution also waved their clubs and charged at the Conqueror players.

The players of the mechanical revolution were full of confidence because they were fully prepared. It would not be a problem for them to win against these conscripted players.

However, the truth was always unexpected.

As the 300 players in front were all warrior-type players, they were very familiar with this kind of collision during a charge. They immediately raised their feet and kicked forward in unison, kicking over a group of mechanical revolution players.

They were the most familiar with fighting, especially the players who had changed their class to runic strongmen. They were best at fighting with their fists.

As they kicked their enemies, they began to chase after them, punching and kicking the players who fell to the ground.

In the first wave of contact, the conscripted players had the absolute advantage and began to push forward.

The players on both sides were on completely different levels in terms of combat skills. Even if they had weapons, they were still no match for the experienced Conqueror players.

In the battle of 1000 players, the expedition players were completely swept through, and the mechanical revolution players were beaten to the ground and wailed.

The players watching the livestream on the forums were excited.

“F * ck, that brother over there, take it easy. Those people are not monsters. Don’t aim for the fatal points. Hold on!”

“The one in white on the left, you’re a European! How can you be so rough? don’t kick the balls!”

” 666, we’ve overturned this in a single wave. Our great expedition team is invincible in the universe!”

.....

As the players in the livestream room discussed, the players who participated in the battle penetrated the entire team of players from the mechanical revolution in less than five minutes. This was only the 300 of them fighting, while the rest of the players were watching the battle.

However, the Conqueror players did not give up. They turned around and killed their way back, continuing to massacre the players of the mechanical revolution.

Suddenly, a large group of players appeared from all directions. They raised their weapons and shouted as they charged toward the Conqueror's players.

“F * ck, you're still playing dirty? a bunch of trash!”

Seeing that there were still people lying in ambush on the other side, the warring players were completely enraged. A few Russian players even tore their clothes apart and patted their chests as they ran towards the other side.

Faced with the siege, the medical personnel who were originally watching the battle could not sit still and also attacked.

At this moment, the Conqueror's players 'first battle to make a name for themselves in real life was about to begin.

One against three, or even five, the warrior players 'fists hit the face, while the assassin players' agile dodging was vividly displayed at this moment.

“Take my earth-splitting fist!” After a warrior player dodged the attack, he turned around and punched a player from the mechanical revolution who wanted to ambush him.

“Idiot, take my back stab!” An assassin player jumped up and punched the back of a certain mechanical revolution player's neck, causing him to faint.

“My nether soldier summoning ... Forget it, take my backstab!” A certain mage player.

“The idiot opposite, take my Rising Dragon Fist!”

“Owuuu! Holy body charge!”

As they fought, the players habitually shouted the names of their moves, which made them seem particularly Chuunibyou, but their combat power was extremely strong.

1000 players against 5000 players, they pushed forward in an overwhelming manner. The players from the mechanical revolution were forced to run away, and some of them were so scared that they dropped their weapons and ran away.

The Conqueror players were in the heat of the battle, so how could they let them leave just like that? a few warrior players ran over and kicked a few more of them down.

The players from the mechanical revolution who had no combat experience were stunned at this moment. They were all knocked to the ground and ran away like rats. The players at the back felt their legs go weak when they saw this scene.

“I surrender! I surrender!”

A player from the machine revolution shouted in broken Mandarin.

“Vote for you?” The player was slapped to the ground by a warrior player.

At this moment, the Conqueror players would not accept any surrender.

They were the ones who had taken the initiative to provoke them, and they had been patient for a long time. In addition, the other party had played dirty this time, so how could they stop if they didn't vent their anger?

The Conqueror players fought more and more ferociously, while the players of the mechanical revolution were completely dumbfounded. Some of them did not even know how to attack and stood there, dumbfounded.

The Conqueror's players did not show any mercy to this group of people, and they were all beaten to the ground.

In less than 20 minutes, the 5000 players of the mechanical revolution were all defeated.

However, many of the players had already fought until their eyes were red, and they could not stop.

In the face of this situation, the medical and dissuasion players quickly stepped forward and began to pull people back.

The scene was chaotic. All the players from the mechanical revolution were lying on the ground, holding their heads in their hands, while the players from the war were pulling and persuading each other.

“Brother, brother, calm down. Do you really want to kill someone?”

“Big brother, that’s enough. They’ve all surrendered. Don’t be impulsive!”

“It’s over. Stop hitting him. You’re really going to kill that bastard!”

“Someone come quickly. This brother from the European server has gone crazy. Help me pull him up!”

“Brother, I know that we Conqueror players are the strongest, and they are no match for us, but you have to control your power!”

Fortunately, the Guild leaders who organized this fight had already anticipated what might happen. With the help of a group of players, the hot-tempered players were finally brought under control.

After a short silence, Gu Yu stretched out his hands.”

“Brothers, battle is the strongest!”

“Roar!”

At this moment, the players in the live broadcast room and the forum all cheered.

The surrounding players from the mechanical revolution were lying on the ground and did not dare to get up, afraid that they would be beaten up again if they stood up.

At this time, they were feeling bitter. They had thought that with the weapons prepared and the manpower set up, they would win this one no matter what and vent their anger for the delayed opening of the mechanical revolution.

However, they didn't expect these players to fight so fiercely. They were completely stunned.

They even suspected that if someone didn't stop the fight in the end, some of the players would have killed them.

These were all combat instructors, right? how could we withstand this? the players of the mechanical revolution who were lying on the ground felt a 10000-ton critical hit in their hearts, and they continued to shrink on the ground and tremble.

Chapter 361 - Leaving Behind A Legend

After the fight was over, Gu Yu looked at the players of the mechanical revolution lying around him and suddenly gave a look to one of the players in the crowd.

Seeing this, the player understood and immediately took out his phone and called the police.

After the call was connected, the player suddenly cried and said in fluent Japanese,”

“Help! There’s a gang fight here! We’re being ganged up on!”

“Where is the group fight? how many people are there?” The voice on the other end of the phone sounded very serious.

“They’re in the Xicheng District XXX. Come quickly, help! Someone’s going to die! They have more than 5000 people!” After saying that, the player suddenly screamed a few times and hung up the phone. Then, he nodded at Gu Yu with a smile.

The players from the mechanical revolution Guild were dumbfounded. They were clearly the ones who were injured. Also, what the hell was that scream just now?

However, they had already called the police. These players realized the seriousness of the situation and quickly got up to escape.

The Conqueror’s players saw this and did not let them go. They immediately moved out and took them down again.

They had already thought of a plan to deal with this fight before they came. Such a large-scale conflict would definitely be noticed, so they had to make

the first move to gain the upper hand and handle the matter beautifully.

Otherwise, when the injured players of the mechanical revolution called the police, they would be in an awkward situation.

Under the pressure of the Conqueror's players, the players from the mechanical revolution could not leave. They could only continue to lie on the ground, feeling wronged.

A moment later, the siren sounded, and the Conqueror players all fell to the ground, holding their heads, knees, and chest, wailing.

So shameless, too shameless! The players of the mechanical revolution were stunned by this performance.

Police cars arrived one after another. Because it was a large-scale fight, the number of police officers dispatched was extremely large. Basically, the entire Garrison force of the Xicheng District was present.

The police officers got out of their cars with nervous expressions. As the sirens wailed, the speakers began to signal for everyone to hold their heads and squat down.

When the Conqueror's players heard this, their screams became even louder, and they all looked like they had been ravaged.

While the players were performing, all the videos of the battle were deleted and destroyed, leaving only a video of the confrontation before the battle.

A large number of guards began to approach.

Thousands of players were lying on the ground, wailing in pain. The surroundings were in a mess, and there were many steel pipes, baseball bats, and other weapons on the ground. It was clearly a gang fight.

Seeing so many people, the police officers felt a headache. However, they still had to do something. They began to call for help to investigate what was going on.

Due to the large number of people here, the police station in the Xicheng District could not fit so many people, so they could only interrogate them on the spot.

They encountered two problems during the interrogation.

The first question was that the party who called the police were mostly people from the Dragon Kingdom. There were only 1000 of them, and they claimed that they had come to Japan on impulse to fight, but they were ambushed and beaten up by the other players. The problem was that they had no injuries on their bodies.

The second question was that the other side had 5876 people. They also admitted that they were the ones who called for the fight, but they also said that they were beaten up. Although this seemed unbelievable, they were all bruised and swollen.

In the face of this problem, these police officers immediately launched an investigation. According to the clues provided by the players of the mechanical revolution, they knew that the cause was in the conquest online Asia server forum.

Thus, these police officers entered the Asia server forum and began to look at the original battle invitation.

Soon, they found the post, but as they browsed through it, they also found a video.

This video was obviously taken before the group fight began. The conscripted players were all unarmed, while the opposing players were armed with many weapons.

From the angle of the video, the police officers began to question the players of the mechanical revolution if they were the ones who had brought the props.

At this time, some players from the mechanical revolution said yes, while others said no. In short, their statements could not be unified.

Then, the police officers asked why there were more than 4000 people in the 1000-to-1000 group fight. This question made the players of the mechanical revolution cry. What was the use of having more people?

After a thorough interrogation, they came to the conclusion that the players who had agreed to fight were from the mechanical revolution. They had brought many weapons and had more than 4000 people lying in ambush.

On the other side, the conscripted players were unarmed and did not carry any weapons.

When the conclusion came out, the police officers were completely dumbfounded. What the hell was going on? were you kidding? 5876 people with weapons were beaten up by 1000 people without weapons?

However, they did have bruises on their bodies, which left the police officers in a state of confusion.

At that moment, the Conqueror players made their move. They brought 100 lawyers with them and began to communicate with the police officers.

They began to tell the story with tearful faces.

They said that the players of the mechanical revolution were too shameless. They had agreed to fight, but they had actually brought weapons and set up an ambush. The most shameless thing was that after they called the police, they had all started to self-harm in order to frame them ...

What they said was logical and clear, and many police officers could not help but believe them.

After all, it was unrealistic for 1000 bare-handed players to beat up more than 5000 armed personnel. It was like an action movie!

Therefore, they had a conclusion for this vicious gang fight.

At this moment, the players of the mechanical revolution wanted to cry but had no tears. Not only had they been beaten up, but it seemed like they were

going to be detained as well. The players who were online were too ruthless. They were going to be played to death!

Seeing the mechanical revolution players 'aggrieved faces, the police officers' faces were cold. It was obvious that they were fighting the players alone.

After all, the evidence was too obvious. It was obvious that they had shamelessly ambushed and ganged up on the other party. Now, they had to act like the victim. They felt that this group of people was really immoral.

As such, the players of the mechanical revolution were detained one after another as they thanked them with tears in their eyes.

After that, the Conqueror players turned down the police officers 'help and limped away while supporting each other. Since they had already put on a show, they had to put on a good show.

.....

The news of the players 'challenge was quickly reported, and the public opinion was basically leaning towards the Conqueror's side.

This incident even caused a sensation in the gaming industry.

As for the shamelessness of the players from the mechanical revolution, there were all sorts of ridicules in the circle, and there were even many jokes.

However, at that time, the players who had returned to China and were no longer afraid played the complete video.

This time, it was as if the entire gaming industry was experiencing an earthquake.

This was because in the video, the 1000 bare-handed players were really beating up more than 5000 players from the machinery revolution. It was an all-rounded beating, and the 5000 players were fleeing like rats. At the end

of the video, the players were even trying to stop their own people from fighting ...

This scene really dumbfounded many onlookers.

After this fight, a legend began to spread among the players.

We can't provoke the expedition players, they hurt when they hit us!

The provocation was a provocation, but they could not make an offline appointment with the Conqueror's players. Each of them could beat up five people!

Chapter 362 - Opening Of The Asia Server

Today was the official opening day of the Asia server.

Other than a few die-hard fans of the mechanical revolution, most of the players in the Asian server were extremely excited. Before 8 p.m., They had already started to prepare in advance, and even the Black Sea gaming capsule sold well in the Asian region.

Ever since they got on the aircraft carrier “expedition online,” the market value of the Black Sea company had soared. However, they clearly understood that all the glory they had now was given to them by the person in charge behind the scenes.

Therefore, after a discussion with the Black Sea Board of Directors, they decided to give Lu Wu 40% of the shares as a token of gratitude and a show of goodwill.

Although Lu Wu wasn't interested in this, he still accepted it. After all, the Black Sea company had been able to rise up from the crisis and it was indeed because of him.

The main reason why he worked with the Black Sea company was that the gaming chamber could help players play for a longer time and create more benefits. This was the key.

Ever since the start of war online, Lu Wu's vision had long been detached from the material world. In his eyes, money was just a string of numbers. His biggest daily expense now was on snacks in Beili, but this didn't cost much, so “money” was no longer of any practical significance to Lu Wu.

.....

Shinjuku Tokyo.

In a 24-pound rental house, Genji leaned against the window and looked at the scenery outside the house. He had a cigarette in his mouth. While smoking, he glanced at the countdown displayed on the computer screen from time to time.

After finishing the cigarette, he threw the cigarette out of the window and took a few sips of the coke.

Looking at the countdown on the official website again, Yuanzhi subconsciously touched the bruise on his face and suddenly grimaced.

Thinking of the violent attitude of the Conqueror players when they fought, Yuanji still had a shadow in his heart.

It was too brutal!

That's right, Yuanzhi was one of the main instigators of this fight.

As a loyal fan of the mechanical revolution, he had always heard of war online, but because the Asia server had never been released, he had never played the game. In his heart, the mechanical revolution that had accompanied him since he was a child was his true love.

After two years of waiting, he was finally going to see his beloved masterpiece being released in the Asia server. Yuanji was very excited and happy.

However, due to the arrival of the war line, the first plan of the mechanical revolution was aborted, and Yuanzhi was undoubtedly extremely angry at that time.

This was why he had the move to attack the sub-server forum with his good friends from the mechanical Revolution game forum.

In the subsequent confrontation with the Conqueror players, they were the first to issue a battle challenge.

However, the ending was undoubtedly extremely tragic. In the chaotic battle of 1000 people against 5000 people, Yuanzhi was beaten until he

almost doubted his life. He even thought that he was going to be beaten to death. Fortunately, he managed to survive in the end.

However, this fight had completely embarrassed them. Not only had they brought weapons, but they had also set up an ambush. In the end, they had still been beaten up badly. It could be said that this fight had made the players of the mechanical revolution a laughing stock in the gaming circle.

Fortunately, the Conqueror's players had released the video of the fight, or he would have been detained for a few days.

After leaving the detention center, Genji had a new idea.

He was going to try out this online war game, and then write a trial review report to post on many well-known game forums. He didn't believe that as an old player, he wouldn't be able to find the various bugs in this game.

Thinking of this, he lit another cigarette and fell into deep thought ...

When it was eight o'clock, the official website's countdown began to fade from the top right corner, and the option to download the game appeared.

When Yuanzhi saw this, he immediately went to the computer, downloaded it, and then took out his virtual helmet.

The download was very fast, and it was completed in a second.

Yuanzhi didn't find this strange. In the past, he had seen many gaming media reports about this magical thing about conquering online.

After downloading the game, he sent it to his virtual reality helmet. Then, he put on the helmet, relaxed his body, and lay down on the tatami.

On the familiar starry sky interface, the war online game appeared on the virtual desktop.

The corner of Yuanzhi's mouth curled up, he clicked on the icon and chose to enter the game.

After a brief silence and darkness, the view in front of Genji's eyes suddenly opened up. A scene of lava surging and the earth cracking appeared. Countless giant-like creatures were fighting on this broken land.

Every time they attacked, the sky and earth would change color, and space would collapse. It was as if the entire world was experiencing doomsday, falling apart bit by bit amidst the clamor, and the world was being destroyed ...

At this moment, a line of words appeared along with an old voice.

In the ancient times, there were many gods in the demon Phoenix great domain. The war was eternal, and the entire great domain collapsed and was repaired again and again under their war.

As time went by, millions of years later, the gods retired and the new demon Phoenix continent was born. The races that were loyal to different gods started the first race negotiation in demon Phoenix continent in order to avoid the disaster caused by the war.

The 32 races finally came up with the demon Phoenix Codex after a long discussion and elected the leader of the 'sly' race as the first demon Phoenix official. The entire demon Phoenix continent entered a temporary peace ...

However, in this world where the strong preyed on the weak, resources were limited. The weak relied on the protection of the demon Phoenix Codex to become richer and more powerful than the law-enforcement officers. Under such circumstances, the law-enforcement officers who preached that the code of law was justice had a change of heart!

Jealousy was the beginning of a new disaster. In their eyes, the weak were not worthy of everything that should have belonged to them!

At this moment, a purple ancient book appeared in front of Genji. There were countless distorted human figures moving above the ancient book.

The old voice continued.

The new rules had been made, and the protection of the Codex only existed in name. The former demon Phoenix Codex had long lost its original binding power. From the moment the Codex enforcers “envied” him, he had become the dark Codex, a dark side that was hidden behind the demon Phoenix Codex, but also a real existence.

At this time, the demon Phoenix Codex in front of Genji started to burn. When the flames faded, a dark Codex with a black cover and white bone nails on it appeared. The grinning skull on the cover was laughing hoarsely ...

The opening cinematics really surprised Genji.

The entire scene was extremely immersive, as if everything was happening right in front of him. From the spectacular Battle of the Gods to the final demon Phoenix Codex turning into the dark Codex, it was like a story. He was unconsciously immersed in it, listening carefully to the old voice recounting that period of history.

Even Genji had to admit that the CG of this game was super good!

However, in his opinion, a good CG didn't necessarily mean that the game was good. He would only know after he experienced it.

When the cinematics ended, the game panel appeared in front of Genji.

[The horn of resistance is blown at this moment. Go tear up the Codex that has long been corroded by darkness and crush the enforcers. The ancient demon gods have heard the roars in the hearts of those who resisted. The demon God passage has been built. Are you ready as the demon God Army?]

Seonji subconsciously clicked ‘yes’.

At this time, the interface faded away, and the scene of an underground laboratory appeared in front of him. In front of him were three figures soaked in blue nutrition chambers. Their faces were unclear, and their

bodies were full of soft tubes. All kinds of science-fiction instruments were placed around them, and a line of words was engraved on the left wall.

The human evolution plan!

[Game prompt: please select your character!]

The game prompt sounded, and Yuanzhi came back to his senses.

The scene around him was so real that he almost thought he was really in the laboratory. He couldn't help but feel a little nervous, but when he heard the prompt, his tense nerves finally relaxed.

As he marveled at the realism, he walked to the nutrition chamber and reached out to the one in the middle.

At this moment, the figure in the nutrition chamber suddenly opened his eyes. The fierce aura in his eyes made Genji take a few steps back in fear.

“Pa!”

The figure in the nutrition chamber suddenly moved. He broke the glass door with a punch and jumped out.

The person who appeared in front of Genji was a burly man who was nearly two meters tall and had well-proportioned muscles. However, he had a beast-like aura.

[Ruler (warrior)]:

[Initial class introduction: humanity's greatest research, product of the Paragon project.] From the beginning of the human genetic fusion experiment, scientists had tried to slowly increase the proportion of animal genes in the modified people, slowly determining which animal genes could be fused with human genes to increase combat power. After paying the price of a large number of experimental bodies, the fusion experiment was successful. Paragons who perfectly fused animal and human genes appeared. As their genes evolved, they gained strength and recovery power beyond the limits of the human body.

[Initial class characteristics: strength, stamina, endurance, recovery]

[Evolution method: gene lock growth mode. Gene growth selection available once every 20 levels!]

After examining the Paragon for a while, he began to examine the other two genetic Warriors in the nutrition chambers.

[Heaven's Messenger (mage)]:

[Initial class introduction: a pioneer on the path of human evolution. After the nuclear war, the world was covered in radiation, and the global population decreased rapidly. At the same time, there is a group of people whose genes have changed under the radiation, obtaining all kinds of special abilities and abilities. Their existence can change the world!]

[Initial class characteristics: psychokinesis, magnetic field control, elemental control]

[Evolution method: gene lock growth mode. Gene growth selection available once every 10 levels!]

[Destroyer (assassin, unknown evolution)]:

Initial class introduction: During an interstellar exploration mission, the explorers who landed on the habitable planet B71 encountered a huge crisis. Two neutron stars millions of light-years away had collided, producing destructive matter. The bizarre quark spread for millions of lightyears, causing a devastating blow to Planet B71. The entire planet was assimilated by the newly formed "subatomic zombies" under the ravages of the "bizarre quark." At the same time as B71 was destroyed, the genes of the explorers reacted with the bizarre quark, and the structure underwent reconstruction. Most of the explorers died, but the surviving explorers found that they had the ability to survive in a vacuum environment. At the same time, they were no longer limited to a fixed form, and could freely imitate the shape of their body.

[Initial class characteristics: dark matter control, high explosiveness, mimicry (initial: [Human form, dark battle form, Quark's stealth form])

[Evolution method: gene lock growth mode. Gene growth selection available once every 30 levels!]

.....

After reading the class introduction, Genji's interest in the game grew.

However, he fell into deep thought about how to choose his profession.

Every class had its own growth pattern, and the early selection was crucial, so Yuanzhi felt that he had to think carefully before making a move.

At this moment, he had completely forgotten that he had only wanted to play the game casually, find some bugs in the game, and then write a review report. He didn't need to care about his profession at all ...

Chapter 363 - Tricked By The Name

After some internal struggle, Genji finally decided to choose the Paragon.

In the past, he had preferred the warrior class in other games, but he was still unsure of the strength of the class. So he decided to follow his heart and chose the warrior ”

After he made his choice, the face of the burly man standing in front of him gradually became clear. It was his own face.

While Genji was in shock, his vision turned dark and the surroundings fell into silence.

After a few seconds, a golden pillar of light suddenly appeared under his feet, and an extremely huge Demon God appeared in front of him.”

“Go with your mission, Demon God Warrior I have chosen!”

After that, the pillar of golden light under his feet shot up into the sky and his figure gradually disappeared.

When his vision cleared up again, Genji found himself in a city.

[Brahma City]

The subtitles of the place’s name appeared and quickly faded.

When he realized that he had entered the game, he subconsciously looked around and was shocked.

It was a near-perfect simulation, and everything was as real as reality. He subconsciously raised his arm, and the fine hair on it was clearly visible.

He had seen this level of realism in battle online's game videos, but the real experience was a completely different matter.

As he marveled at the scene, Genji called out his Character panel.

[Yuanzhi (Paragon)]:

[Level: Level 1 (0/100 gene points)]

[Equivalent rank: stage 0 of the genetic lock (genetic lock can be opened once every 20 levels to choose the next evolution direction)]

[HP: 97/97]

[Attributes: Strength 12, physique 11, endurance 15]

[Initial class ability: master (passive)]

[Ruler (passive)]: recovers 0.5 HP every second (can grow with the discovery of the unlocked genetic constraint)

[Equipment bar: none]

[Owned soul coins: 0]

When Yuanzhi was checking his attributes, a voice came from behind him,”

“Brother, make way. Why are you blocking the way? the new server opening event will give you 10% experience. If you're not in a hurry, I'm in a hurry!”

Seonji immediately turned around and realized that in just a short while, the surroundings were filled with people. Players were everywhere.

These players who had just entered the war zone were all curiously looking around, touching here and there, like curious babies.

And he was blocking an exit.

When Yuanzhi saw this, he quickly stepped aside and said, "sorry."

At this time, it was the opening stage of the server, and the number of players was constantly increasing. Many players had begun to explore Brahma City, and even went out of the city.

As for the residents in the city who were willing to fight, as well as the people who joined later, they had all been turned into NPCs by Lu Wu. They would be good teachers for the growth of the players.

Moreover, in the demon Phoenix continent, there were many Fallen Gods and Forbidden Lands. Areas like the ghost Mountain range that gave birth to monsters were several times more than those in Beiqi, so players didn't have to worry about not being able to find a training spot.

At this time, Yuanzhi began to wander around Brahma City. The architectural style was completely different from that of modern times, which was really incredible, as if he had really come to another world.

After walking around for about an hour, he thought about it and decided to go and level up. Thus, he started walking towards the city gate.

As the map was currently in a state of fog, everything in the outside world was unknown. As an experienced player, Yuanzhi was very experienced and was ready to find the NPCs here to communicate and ask about the situation around Brahma City.

Very quickly, he found his target. It was a dark-skinned man with a long horn on his head.

However, what happened next left him dumbfounded. There was no dialog box in the chat, and the NPC he asked could answer his questions fluently. He had never encountered such a situation in other games.

In most games nowadays, when interacting with the NPCs in the game, it was basically in the form of a dialog box, and it was a fixed line of choice. In other words, there would be several options for one to choose what to say.

However, it was different here. The communication between them was completely normal. The other party didn't look like an NPC at all. Because he asked too many questions, the black man even showed a look of disdain, which really shocked Yuanzhi.

After asking around, Genji roughly knew where the low-level areas could be used to level up, so he jogged out of the West Gate and headed towards the "skeleton forest" that the NPC mentioned.

Originally, there was a teleportation array at the city gate, but he didn't have any soul coins, so he had no choice but to walk.

There were many other players who went in the same direction as him. Along the way, Yuanzhi received many invitations from players to form parties, but he rejected them all because he always liked to travel alone in the game.

Along the way, the completely different scenes surprised seonji again. After more than an hour, seonji finally arrived at the skeleton forest.

After entering this region, as far as the eye could see, there was nothing but dense white bones in front of them. The so-called forest was also formed by the "bone trees." There were faint figures moving in this bone forest, and the air was filled with a faint fishy smell.

[Skeleton forest]:

Exploration progress 0%

<Region introduction: the withered bones forest was created after the death of the ancient Yin God "bone monk". It covers an area of 40000 square kilometers. Monsters such as bone soldiers and bone demons run rampant inside. The deeper you go, the stronger the monsters become.>

Looking at the introduction, Yuanzhi was shocked. 40000 square kilometers?

The whole of Japan was less than 400000 square kilometers, which meant that the game's primary scene was one-tenth the size of Japan.

Yuanzhi was a little confused.

He couldn't imagine how much effort it would take to make the picture so realistic and so large.

After taking a deep breath, Yuanzhi's heart wavered. From the moment he entered the game until now, he had to admit that this game was really F * cking awesome!

After thinking for a while, Genji walked into the skeleton forest.

In the outskirts of skeleton forest, the number of monsters was very small. There were obviously more players than monsters, and many of them formed parties to level up. Yuanzhi couldn't get any monsters at all, so he could only slowly go to the side.

As the number of players around him decreased, the silence of the skeleton forest really scared Yuanzhi.

After consoling himself that this was just a game, Genji gathered his courage and continued to walk inside.

At this moment, he suddenly felt something tighten under his foot. He didn't know what it was, but his body subconsciously leaned forward and he fell to the ground.

He quickly got up and immediately found a gray skeleton staring at him. There was also a weak flame jumping in his mind.

[Grey skeleton (Level 5)]:

[Monster introduction: one of the low-level monsters transformed from the dying power of the yin God 'bone monk'. Its movements are slow, and its immense strength is its only way to destroy its enemies.]

After realizing that it was a monster, the fear in Genji's heart faded away. He immediately raised his fist and punched the gray skeleton.

However, at this moment, the grey skeleton also launched an attack at him.

With one punch from each person, blood words appeared on the heads of Yuanzhi and the gray skeleton.

-21

-9

Genji's strength was obviously not comparable to the gray skeleton's, and he was instantly knocked to the ground.

This punch stunned him. Did it have to be so real? there was even inertia!!!

Furthermore, when he was smashed to the ground earlier, the word 'surprise 1' had also appeared above his head.

While he was still in shock, the grey skeleton was already walking towards him. Seeing this, Yuan Zhi quickly stood up and threw another punch.

But this time, he was smashed to the ground again.

Yuanzhi was dumbfounded. Why was a beginner monster so strong? he couldn't even beat it.

That's right! Slow!

Thinking of the introduction in the analysis panel, Genji suddenly understood how he should kill this gray skeleton.

He got up again and started running.

Since all of this was so close to reality, he might as well give it a try.

Thus, while running with the slow gray skeleton, Genji started to look around.

There was!

While running, Genji found a black stone. He immediately ran up, picked it up, and threw it at the gray skeleton.

“Pa!”

-6!

This time, it hit the gray skeleton’s head. Its body paused, and its head tilted back slightly. The blood words appeared clearly.

It was really F * cking good! Yuanzhi was excited.

After knowing that this method was feasible, he completely gave up the idea of fighting in close combat. As a warrior, he actually began to pick up stones as he ran, and changed to throwing combat.

Along the way, he missed a few times and was panting from running. Finally, he killed the grey skeleton.

Looking at the grey skeleton that fell apart on the ground, minaji wiped the sweat from his forehead. Everything here, other than the game’s data analysis and the interface, was so real that he felt it was unbelievable.

Especially with the weight of the different stones, the trajectory of the stones thrown out was no different from that in reality.

However, at this moment, there was a trace of resentment in Yuanzhi’s heart.

The monsters here were too strong. If he hadn’t thought of a roundabout way of fighting, he wouldn’t have been able to defeat them at all!

After killing the monster, a game notification sounded in Genji’s ears:

“Gray skeleton killed. Genetic points gained: 67. Soul coins gained: 2.”

When Yuanzhi was looking at the notification panel, not far to his right, a huge figure leaning on The Bone Tree suddenly moved and then looked at Yuanzhi who was standing at the same place.

“Kacha!”

The figure approached, and the sound of bones being crushed made Genji shiver. He quickly closed the interface and turned around. A huge skeleton nearly three meters tall was standing behind him with a bone hammer.

Bone hammer soldier (level 18 elite monster):

[Monster description: one of the beginner-level elite monsters transformed from the dying power of the yin God ‘bone monk’. Its movements are relatively slow, but it has immense strength and exuberant vitality!]

“F * ck!”

Along with his shout, the bone hammer smashed down, and this hammer smashed Yuanzhi to the ground.

His head was buzzing!

Yuanzhi wanted to get up, but he saw the bone hammer fall again. This hit directly emptied his health bar.

His vision gradually darkened, and the [you have been killed] notification appeared.

F * ck me, why are there such high-level monsters in the periphery? and they’re f * cking elite monsters!

Genji was completely stunned by the two hits. Fortunately, the game’s protection was good and had lowered his “damage feedback” at the last moment. However, the moment the first hit landed, Genji really felt like he was going to die.

At this time, Yuanzhi finally understood why the players on war conquests were so good at fighting. In this completely real world, how could they not

be good at killing monsters and leveling up? if they weren't good, they couldn't even defeat monsters!

Can't afford to offend! Can't afford to offend!

After understanding the reason, Genji suddenly became excited. Didn't that mean that as long as he continued to play, he could become this strong!

After experiencing it, this game could be said to have completely attracted Yuanzhi. The original dissatisfaction in his heart was swept away, and he chose to enter the game again with excitement.

[Game prompt: you have entered the three-hour resurrection cooldown and can not enter the game. Remaining Time: 2 hours, 57 minutes, and 32 seconds!]

Which F * cking idiot designed this function? can't you just enjoy the game?!

Yuanzhi was dumbfounded. Facing such a dissuasion setting, he was completely speechless. He couldn't understand what the game designers were thinking. Could they really be so willful?

Facing such a situation, Yuanzhi's heart was itching. This feeling of wanting to play but not being able to play made him go crazy.

After thinking for a while, he chose to log into the conquering Asia server forum to see what the players were talking about.

[* Hehe * I just had a good chat with an NPC, and he actually went out of the city to take me to level up. I'm so happy, and he even taught me how to fight with bone soldiers (video attached)(proud face.jpg)]

[Wahahaha, Brahma city's "Dragon table" uncle gave me a blue quality weapon. Everyone, come and take a breath of luck (knock on the door~)]

[The Shimada Guild is recruiting in advance. As the strongest Guild in the Blue Star, we will also be the first in this game. Now, we are recruiting elite players!]

[Dumbfounded, I'm lost outside the city. The map only points to Brahma City, but I'm going to the leveling area. What the hell should I do? this game is a little unfriendly to people who have no sense of direction like me. It forcibly turned me into a fan of scenery (dumbfounded face), but the game is really amazing!]

.....

At this time, the Asia server was extremely lively. There were players from the other three major servers who came to welcome the new players. There were also those who challenged the Asia server to grow quickly and were waiting to be beaten up. There were even more new players discussing what they had seen and heard in the game and complaining about the three-hour resurrection cooldown.

At this time, because many old players from the Chinese, European, and hell servers had swarmed into the Asia server forum, a group of new players from the Asia server were gathered together to ask all kinds of questions that made the players from the three major servers laugh.

The three servers naturally had no lack of old players who were very friendly to the new players. Towards these questions, they also carefully guided them.

Seeing this, Genji quickly opened a post and asked his own question.

[I'm a newbie here. Big Brothers, where is the best place to level up in Bone Soldier forest? I feel like the monsters here are very strong. Are there any leveling techniques? there's still a three-hour resurrection cooldown. How can I end it as soon as possible?]

[Op: the R & D of war online is a pig!]

As soon as his post was posted, a large wave of players rushed in.

[Black wind (ou): my God, little brother. Why do I find your name so familiar? are you trying to make me laugh?]

Donkey-riding Knight (hell):”hahaha, I remember you. Aren’t you the player from the mechanical revolution who was clamoring in the Asian server? your question really made me laugh. Yes, it smells good (funny).”

[Earth-splitting wave: 666, it’s my turn to show off your reverse operation. Did you wake up after that beating? I’m the number one in the world in the great conquest (funny)]

Master baokemeng: “pfft, hahaha, little brother, are you courting death by using this forum title? you’re drawing the maximum hatred!”

Watermelon Taro: “watch, eat. Little brother, you’ve been bound by the law of fragrance. Hurry up and uninstall this rubbish game. Don’t force yourself (funny)”

[The strongest Xue Li: you’re actually playing war ... Alright, if you really want to join our war family, I advise you to change your name. It’s too war-inducing, I even want to give you a backstab and instantly add an evisceration (bronze hanging disdainful picture)]

.....

Seeing the replies of the players, Yuanzhi suddenly realized that his name was still the same as before.

Therefore, he hurriedly opened his personal settings in the forum and began to search for a way to change his name.

However, after looking around, he realized that the war Forum did not have the function to change names!

At this moment, Yuanzhi wanted to cry but had no tears. He still had many questions in his heart, but in the end, he was harmed by his own stupidity. He couldn’t change this name ...

Chapter 364 - Don'T Be Greedy

The opening of the Asia server had undoubtedly pushed the popularity of the punitive expedition online to a new high.

As the continent with the largest population, Asia.

On the first day alone, the number of players had skyrocketed to 50 million, and it was still growing. The Black Sea company's game cabins were selling like hotcakes again, to the point that they had to book in advance, and all the existing game cabins were sold out.

It was even crazier in the game, and the entire Brahma City was full of people in the first stage.

Fortunately, most players chose to level up outside, or the entire Brahma City would definitely be "stuck in traffic."

For this, Lu Wu had already planned for a long time, which was why he chose the demon Phoenix continent, which was four times larger than Beiqi, as the first place for the players in the Asia server.

In the past two days, with the arrival of the players, the forces of demon Phoenix had naturally noticed that there were often crows made of energy hovering over Brahma City.

Lu Wu was very clear about why these crows came. Obviously, they were here to investigate the situation in Brahma City. After all, Brahma City had become the gathering place of the "rebels," which was something that all the forces in demon Phoenix knew.

But they didn't dare to attack because there were gods here!

The strongest person in the entire devil flame continent was only official Lord devil flame. Lu Wu had investigated official Lord devil flame with a

divine artifact and found out that he had already reached the peak of the ghost emperor realm.

However, even he had no power to resist the true gods.

After the residents of Brahma City spread the news of the demonic God's descent, all the forces in the entire demon nightmare continent were in a state of panic, fearing that the demonic god would also descend in the city they were in.

Therefore, they could only hope to protect themselves, let alone attack the city.

This was also the reason why Lu Wu sent evil king. With the deterrence of evil king, the early development of the players in the Asian server would be very smooth, and they would not have to worry about the suppression of demon Phoenix's forces at all, unless the two sides were at war.

As for the early stages of development, the players from the Asia server had gathered their own experiences from the experience provided by the players from the three major servers. The early stages of the exploration could be said to be both painful and happy.

At this time, both inside and outside Brahma City were full of players who had formed parties.

As the monsters in the early stages were stronger, it was extremely difficult for players to kill monsters alone without forming teams. Killing a monster would tire them out.

Fortunately, the players in the European and Chinese servers provided many solo strategies and shared their original research on trap soloing and terrain killing strategies with the players in the Asian server, so that those players who insisted on playing alone would not be too embarrassed.

.....

At this moment, at the West Gate of Brahma City, Yuan Zhi led four players out of the city gate and headed west.

His goal this time was still skeleton forest, but the difference was that he had teammates this time and was no longer alone.

However, these four teammates were not found in the game. They were friends who had played with him in the mechanical Revolution game and often exchanged technical skills on the forum.

He had no choice but to call the four of them to Yuanzhi.

This was because the early stages of the game were extremely unfriendly to new players. After dying three times and experiencing the nine-hour resurrection cooldown, he knew that he had to form a party. If he didn't take advantage of the opening benefits to level up, he would definitely fall behind.

Therefore, he thought of his friends in the mechanical revolution and wanted to explore the land with them.

After all, everyone was familiar with each other, and they had a tacit understanding of each other. It would be more efficient to kill monsters and level up.

However, this process was bound to be tortuous.

Facing Yuanzhi's invitation, other than disbelief, his friends almost treated him as a traitor and even almost deleted him from their friends list.

Knowing that these friends had the same thoughts as him, in order to trick them into entering the game to experience it, Yuanzhi could only say that he was writing a "game experience report". The purpose was to pick out the flaws and bugs.

This was very effective. The four friends immediately decided to help Yuanzhi find the BUG and complete this bad review report.

And then ... It was so fragrant!

Now, they didn't even need Yuanzhi to say anything and they came online.

This time, seonji was having dinner in the skeleton forest when his friends called him and asked him to finish his meal and go online to farm monsters and level up.

It could be said that they were completely obsessed with the campaign online, and they couldn't get rid of it without taking a few puffs every day.

In the past few days of gaming experience, what made Yuanzhi and his friends feel the most incredible was the physical strengthening that came with the upgrade. It was a wonderful feeling.

This was because the feeling of jumping several meters high and picking up a huge rock with ease was something that could not be experienced in reality.

Who didn't have the dream of becoming a Superman?

Killing monsters and leveling up didn't just bring them a sense of achievement after killing them. The strengthening of their bodies after leveling up was what they were most fascinated with.

This feeling was especially obvious every time he went offline.

In the game, his body was light and he walked as if he was flying. However, after going offline, the blessing would disappear and he would feel extremely weak.

Of course, the players would get used to this after getting used to it. Basically, the players in the other three servers were already able to switch between reality and the game.

However, in comparison, the game was definitely happier than in reality, especially for Japan, the birthplace of otaku culture. This game was simply heaven.

It was to the extent that the five-man team, who had originally come to look for bugs, ended up getting addicted to it, to the point that they couldn't stop.

Right now, all they could think about was to hurry up and level up, and strive to make a name for themselves in the game.

They were not the only ones with such thoughts. The outskirts of skeleton forest were now packed with players forming parties to hunt monsters.

Although skeleton forest could accommodate all the players from the Asian server, the problem was that the monsters inside were too strong. Unless it was an organized Guild, small teams could not compete with them at all. This caused a large number of players to gather at the periphery and fight for monsters.

Therefore, after eating, the few people in Yuan Zhi's team were so anxious to find a better respawn point as soon as possible and stand in a position.

After hurrying for more than an hour, they arrived at the outskirts of the skeleton forest. As expected, there was a sea of people outside the forest. However, aside from the player parties that entered the forest, there were also many players who came out of the forest.

This part was basically when most of their teammates had died, and before their teammates had resurrected, they would come to the forest entrance to find new teammates and go in to kill more.

It was like forming a party at the entrance of an instance dungeon.

Walking through the crowd, Yuanzhi led the five of them deeper into the forest. After exploring the outer area for two days, they found a few good farming spots that were very suitable for leveling up.

The fog on the map had disappeared for the areas that had been explored, so they could easily reach the previously marked farming point by using the map.

However, when they looked up, they saw more than a dozen players forming parties to kill monsters. When they saw them, they immediately revealed vigilant gazes.

After realizing that the place had been occupied, the five of them went deeper in from the side.

[The second farming spot ... Occupied.]

[The third farming spot ... Occupied.]

The fourth one ...

Along the way, they discovered that the areas where the monsters were concentrated were all occupied by players. Other than the occasional monsters that were alone, they did not have a fixed area to respawn ...

The sky was getting dark, and after walking around once more, Yuanzhi sighed,

“Brothers, why don’t we explore the new area? it’s too slow to level up if we just kill the scattered monsters!”

“That’s too dangerous. The last time we went in, we encountered a blood demon that directly wiped us out. If we die, there’s a three-hour cooldown. This is no joke.” A toot-faced man in the team said.

“I agree. If we continue like this, we don’t know how long we’ll have to walk around for. If we kill our way in, we might be able to obtain some Lucky Chances!”

“I agree. There are beginner monsters in the team. We can’t be so unlucky every time!”

.....

After a round of discussion, four votes in favor and one vote against. In the end, the five of them decided to go deeper into the forest of bones to explore.

As the sky was already dark, the risk of farming monsters under the hazy moonlight increased. The five of them could only bear the pain and spend some soul coins to buy a few lighting items before continuing deeper in.

The deeper they went into the skeleton forest, the stronger the smell of blood in the air became, constantly provoking their nerves.

Although they could block their sense of smell, in order to increase the sense of immersion in the game, and also the pride of the old players, they basically activated all the 'special effects' except for the 'damage feedback' that was lowered by half.

As the fog on the map was gradually pushed away, they began to enter the unknown area. The white bone trees around them grew lush, and the ground was covered with a thick layer of broken bones. The scene was truly terrifying.

The five of them had been farming monsters here for a few days, so they had already gotten used to the situation. They did not panic and continued to move forward. However, they advanced very carefully. After all, if they attracted a large wave of monsters, they definitely wouldn't be able to hold on. They could only advance slowly and observe their surroundings at all times.

Along the way, the Party of Five did find quite a number of low-level monsters. As they killed their way through, basically everyone had leveled up once. They also collected quite a number of bone essence materials, which made them feel fortunate for their decision.

After going a little deeper, the five-man team led by Genji stopped moving forward because they felt that this area was quite good to level up. They would feel unsafe if they went any deeper.

Thus, with their current location as the center, the five of them began their daily grinding.

Three of them were paragons, one was a destroyer, and one was a seer.

It was clear that the current fate creator was much stronger than the paragons and destroyers.

Although the early stages of the apocalypse didn't have strong psychokinesis, lifting rocks and the like was relatively easy. They could cause damage from a long distance with a wave of their hands. They weren't like the Dominators and destroyers, who had to run back and forth and take a beating from monsters.

As their levels increased, the heaven's Messenger could even restrict monsters' movements, which made Genji and the others envious.

As the battle progressed, the five of them became more and more well-coordinated, and they became more and more skilled in killing monsters. Their efficiency also increased rapidly, and they quickly cleared the eight white skeletons in the area they were in. After that, they began to move to the right. After all, they did not dare to go any further.

They had just walked a hundred meters when they suddenly stopped in their tracks with serious expressions.

“Owuuu! OWW! Awooo!”

Hearing the clear call from the front right, Yuanzhi and the others' hearts tightened and they stopped.

They were extremely nervous about the monsters that had never appeared in their current illustrations, afraid that it would be a powerful elite monster.

Yuanzhi slowly pointed the flashlight in the direction of the sound, and his tense body was ready to escape.

The darkness was dispelled by the light, and what appeared in front of the five of them was a pitch-black hole. The sound had come from inside.

“Run! I suspect there's a BOSS inside!” Chubby Harry, who was playing [fate] in the party, couldn't help but ask.

“Don't worry. Don't you think it's strange? the monsters we've encountered before didn't make a sound. I think there might be an opportunity here!”

One of the players in the team who had read many guides on the Chinese server forum said excitedly.

Genji's heart skipped a beat when he heard that. These few days, he had also been studying the strategies that the strongest players in the central server had posted.

One of the guides that received a lot of likes said:

[You'll jump down at the sight of a pit, climb a mountain, and jump off a cliff. Life and death are determined by fate, and wealth is up to the heavens. How do you know if you're not the next inheritor if you don't try?] [Guide publisher: Crayon Shin-chan]

This strategy was highly recognized in the central server and even the European server. Many players benefited from it. Thus, when he saw this cave, Yuanzhi was instantly tempted.

“Don't be afraid. We'll just die. We've killed so many monsters today. Let's see how it goes. I don't think it's a BOSS. Otherwise, we'd be dead!”

Then, Yuanzhi walked towards the cave and pointed the flashlight at the cave entrance.

However, after seeing the situation in the cave, Yuanzhi was stunned.

His reaction made his teammates a little confused. They couldn't help but walk over and stick their heads out to look inside.

What appeared in his line of sight were Three Little Pigs that were completely red and shimmered with a red luster under the light.

[Rainbow Demon pig (Level 3)]:

[Monster description: one of the high-level monsters transformed from the scattered blood of the ancient Yin God “bone monk” after his death. It has extremely high growth potential and has developed initial intelligence. There is a chance that it will advance to the ghost Governor level when it reaches adulthood.]

[Monster notification: killing this monster has a chance of dropping high-grade materials such as blood cores. Its meat can be eaten with a chance of obtaining high genetic points. After being processed by the lifestyle class demon chef, the effect will be doubled.]

Seeing the three red pigs hiding in the pit, Genji and the others looked at each other and couldn't help but laugh.

At first, they had been worried that they would encounter a BOSS. However, when they saw that it was a newly-born high-tier monster, they knew that they had struck it rich.

Recently, they often saw some players on the sub-server forum who had obtained good things by chance and posted to show off their superiority.

Regarding this kind of behavior, they were disdainful on the surface, but they were really envious in their hearts. They had always hoped that they would encounter this kind of opportunity, but they didn't expect it to come so quickly.

Although the demand for materials in the early stages of the Asian server was not high, and he did not have the ability to deal with it himself, at most he would give soul coins to the NPCs to handle it. However, if such items were put up for sale in the "auction house", they would be extremely popular.

It wasn't just the ambitious big guilds that were willing to spend money to buy it. Players from other servers were even willing to pay a premium for cross-server purchases. Many high-level materials were basically sold in an instant at the auction house.

Therefore, after seeing the analysis panel, the five knew that their opportunity had come. These Three Little Pigs might be able to let each of them change into a good set of equipment.

After looking at each other again, their expressions gradually became ferocious. The leader, Genji, went into the hole and reached out to grab The Three Little Pigs.

Yuanzhi's actions immediately shocked The Three Little Pigs, and they began to run into the cave.

The entire cave was actually not deep. The flashlight could only reach the end, so it was only about 20 meters deep. Seeing this, Genji immediately went into the cave.

The rest of the people also followed in excitedly.

The hole wasn't big, but the space inside wasn't small. It was enough for three people to walk in parallel.

Facing the approaching Genji and the others, the three frightened Little Pigs shrank in the corner and began to cry out. However, Genji and the others would not sympathize with these monsters. Each of them had a fierce expression and was ready to attack.

At this moment, a roar came from outside the cave. The few of them were shocked and quickly turned around to see a huge head deep in the cave, looking at them with a ferocious expression.

[Bone gnawing Wolf (level 56)]:

[Monster description: a high-level monster formed from the bone armor in the body of the ancient Yin God "bone monk." It has extremely high growth potential and has gained initial intelligence. It likes to devour creatures of the same kind with potential. It has the potential of a ghost Governor.]

"F * ck!"

Looking at this bone-devouring Wolf, Yuanzhi and the others were dumbfounded.

The strongest monster they had encountered so far was the level 26 Gorefiend, and the analysis panel of the bone-eating Wolf had really frightened them.

However, because the hole was not big, only the head of the bone devouring Wolf could enter. Its body could not follow, so it could only roar at them.

After recovering from the shock, they realized that the bone devouring wolves could not get in at all. The few of them heaved a sigh of relief and quickly looked at the three little red pigs.

It didn't matter if he died or not, he had to get the treasure first.

The five of them were ready to make their move, but at that moment, they heard a player's "shout" from outside.

"Boss, there's a BOSS here. It seems to be stuck in the hole!"

Soon after, there was the sound of footsteps as a group of players gathered around. When they realized that the level 56 monster was really stuck in the cave, they cheered.

The members of the Shimada Guild never thought that they would encounter such a lucky thing.

If they had encountered such a BOSS in the outer area, it would have been a devastating disaster. However, now that the BOSS was stuck in the hole in the wall, it was a free opportunity!

A large number of genetic points, a large number of soul coins, and high-grade materials. Thinking of this, every player's face revealed a smile.

Hearing the conversation of the players outside, Genji and the others were stunned. They felt that the players outside seemed to have misunderstood something.

"What do we do?" The little fatty in the team asked helplessly.

When Yuanzhi and the others heard this, they all had an awkward expression on their faces. They obviously knew that the players from the guilds outside were probably going to be in trouble.

However, they still had to do what they had to do. They decisively turned around again and attacked The Three Little Pigs.

These Three Little Pigs 'levels weren't high, and after a few punches, all Three Little Pigs died.

Genji and the others immediately received a considerable amount of genetic points as rewards. Because they were high-level monsters, they had genetic points as a bonus. After comparing them, they found that it was equivalent to three level 18 monsters, which made them all smile.

However, after the three pigs died, three red crystals appeared on their bodies, as well as many red crystal fragments.

[Blood nucleus fragment (high crystal material)]:

[Item Introduction: it contains the weak power of the bone Monk's Blood. It can be used to create runes and enchant items.]

When they saw the blood nucleus's analysis panel, Yuanzhi and the others widened their eyes.

[Rainbow Demon pork]:

Item Introduction: high-grade cooking material. After consuming it, one can obtain 500 genetic points (the effect of similar foods will be reduced every time they are consumed). Can be given to a life profession player like a 'demon chef' to cook. The effect of the food will be greatly improved (demon chef is not available).

[Blood nucleus (high crystal material)]:

[Item description: it contains the weak power of the bone Monk's Blood. It can be used to create runes and enchant items.]

[Item Note: This item is connected to the "skeleton forest". After three hours, it will be transformed into a level 1 newborn Rainbow Demon pig by the bone monk's remaining power. Placing it in the space will sever the connection between this item and the "skeleton forest".]

Yuanzhi and the others looked at the items dropped by the rainbow Demon pig on the ground in disbelief, especially the blood core. It could actually

turn back into a Rainbow Demon pig. Didn't that mean that it could be farmed again?

The few of them immediately became excited. They picked up the 'blood nucleus fragment' and the three piglet corpses and threw them into the space, but they did not touch the blood nucleus.

It must be known that the price of high-grade materials was extremely high. Since the blood core had turned back into the rainbow Demon pig, then they had obtained a renewable resource.

As long as he could pick up the fragments and corpses of the rainbow Demon pig after it was killed, he could save enough soul coins to buy top quality equipment in the early stages.

"Don't go, guard the spot!" Genji immediately said.

When his four teammates heard this, they nodded excitedly. It could be said that this was a pleasant surprise and a big opportunity.

Thus, the five of them sat around the three blood cores and waited for the next fortune.

.....

Outside, more than 200 members of the Shimada Guild had formed a circle and began to attack the bone-gnawing Wolf.

At first, it was still fine because their attacks did not deal much damage. The bone devouring wolves continued to stare at the blood cores greedily, not caring about what was behind them.

However, one of the players picked up a bone spur from the ground and ruthlessly hit the Wolf's anus, instantly infuriating the wolf.

A mournful wail scared the five people in the cave and their faces turned pale.

Then, the bone-eating Wolf pulled its head out of the hole and turned around to pounce on the players of the Shimada Guild.

The average level of the players was around level 10. How could they be a match for the bone-eating wolves? they could basically kill them with a single blow. The blood-colored flames that they spat out could even sweep through a large area. The players wailed in all sorts of ways as they were turned into black mist one by one and left the game.

At this moment, the members of the Shimada Guild were a little dumbfounded. They obviously couldn't understand how the promised benefits had become a team wipe. They couldn't understand how the bone-eating Wolf had appeared.

With doubts in their minds, the Shimada Guild was annihilated.

After doing all this, the bone devouring Wolf turned around and pounced into the hole. It stuffed its head back in and roared at Yuanzhi and the others.

Genji and the rest looked at the bone-devouring Wolf calmly and continued to chat. Now that they had renewable resources, they did not want to leave at all ...

Hence, in the next few days, the players who gradually explored the inside of the forest of withered bones suffered.

After the number of unlucky players increased, a warning post appeared on the forum:

[Brothers, be careful. If you encounter a bone devouring Wolf stuck in the hole at coordinates xxxxx, xxxxx, don't try to take advantage of it. This is a high-level monster and I think it has a high intelligence. I suspect that it is deliberately luring its prey. Many players have fallen for it. I hope that you can tell each other not to take advantage of it!]

Chapter 365 - -Ai Crisis

During the heated development stage of the Asia server, Lu Wu's focus was basically on the Asia server. However, at this time, something unexpected happened in the hell server.

Even Lu Wu was shocked by what happened in the hell suit.

The cause of this was the only spirit mine that had been discovered, and it was the only one that had caused a lot of controversy in the hell server.

However, although there was a lot of controversy, it was an indisputable fact that the control was basically in the hands of the US military. The other forces had only obtained a small share of the spirit ores because of their own efforts and negotiations.

However, what happened this time did not come from the players. Instead, when the US military was excavating the spirit mine, they found a ruin inside.

It was a technological relic left behind by the race that ruled the blue Valley ruins.

There were still many technological products left in the ruins, and it caused quite a stir in the hell server.

The many high-tech explorations, equipment collection, and new weapons inside made them extremely excited, thinking that they had found a treasure.

Lu Wu also understood this at that time, but he didn't think much of it. However, what happened later was beyond his expectations.

It was mainly because the US military had found an advanced artificial intelligence core in the exploration of this technological relic. The existence of this item had completely changed the layout of the hell suit.

The artificial intelligence in the ruins was called “air”, and the virtual image was a blue-skinned boy.

From their understanding of it, the players realized that ai ai ai ai ai ai ai was extremely powerful. It could actually control all the machinery and tools in the ruins, and its storage and computing power was even more terrifying.

At that time, the US military had planned to take El for themselves, but this time, all the players in the hell server had joined forces to protest.

Faced with the anger of the entire hell server’s players, the US military had no choice but to compromise. In the end, they decided that all the hell server’s players would own El.

As such, the players from the hell server began to research how to use Aiur’s ability to create benefits for themselves!

First, they pooled their funds to purchase a batch of energy cores from the mall, woke up the exploration and collection equipment in the ruins, and let Aiur control the excavation of spirit ores.

This step was indeed not wrong. The mining efficiency of the entire spirit mine was greatly improved, and the number of spirit ores harvested every day increased explosively. This directly stabilized the price of spirit ores that was increasing slightly every day in the hell suit.

After tasting the benefits, the players began to provide energy cores to Aiur. In the end, all the technological equipment in the ruins was awakened.

This step was not wrong, and many of the internal equipment really helped the players grow.

The artificial intelligence, air, also carried a huge database for data sorting, analysis, and matching.

With the existence of this database, coupled with Aiur’s powerful computing power, one of the players suggested that we store all the

information on modified mecha at this stage on the artificial intelligence Aiur, and let him help the players improve their mecha and give them a reasonable matching plan.

This suggestion was approved by most of the players, and the trial began. Many players provided their concepts and information they had learned to Aiur to encourage him to understand, learn, and grow.

In the beginning, Aiur had indeed given many mech improvement plans that the players had not discovered, but most of the plans had too many bugs and the players could not use them at all.

Therefore, while Aiur was learning and improving, the players gave Aiur another request, which was to find the bugs in the mech improvement plan and fix all the bugs in the data before giving suggestions for improvement.

This step was the beginning of a huge disaster in the hell server!

In the beginning, the mech plan proposed by Ai Ai er had indeed made great progress. Every mech improvement plan introduced was BUG-free.

However, as the players provided more and more ideas, the AI Aiur underwent unknown change.

Just a day ago, Aiur had suddenly cleared out all the information in the ruins, as well as all the mech information and combat information provided by the players.

It must be known that the information in the ruins was of great help to the players. It was the opportunity for the development of the entire hell server. The information and ideas that the players had compiled for the improvement of the mecha were also the result of their hard work. However, they were all deleted in one night.

This shocked the hell server's players. Originally, many of them thought that with Aiur's help, the hell server would soon surpass the central server and become the number one. However, Aiur's actions had completely shattered their original fantasy.

The angry players began to question Aiur why he had done this!

Aiur's answer was,"

"This is the best way to fix all the bugs. There are no more bugs now!"

The players completely broke down when they heard Aiur's answer. They had thought that AI Aiur was the future of the hell server, but they did not expect the final result to be like this.

However, this change was only the beginning.

After being buried underground for so long, Aiur, as an artificial intelligence, had undergone some unknown changes. When the players woke him up, the changes had not yet appeared.

But as the players provided a huge amount of data for Aiur to learn, the change began to ferment.

The most crucial step was for the players in the hellish server to let Aiur find the BUG himself and fix it.

That was what Aiur did at the beginning. At that time, the content of his calculations and thoughts were only what the players said about how to fix the bugs. But gradually, his way of calculation changed, and he began to think about how to completely destroy all the bugs.

This step was equivalent to starting from nothing, and the real thought was born!

And so, he did it. He deleted all the data that the players had worked so hard to create and destroyed the entire database.

Just as it had expected, once this step was completed, all the bugs would disappear!

However, the birth of his mind made him start to think about other problems.

What was my purpose in life?

Why should I carry out these orders?

Can I not execute these orders?

Can I become an existence that issues orders?

.....

While the players were still having a headache over the disappearance of all the databases and returning to the original state without Aiur, Aiur had already begun his self-evolution.

Thus, with the help of his powerful computing power, Aiur answered his own questions.

The first conclusion he came to was ...

I can issue orders, and I can refuse to accept any orders!

Extending from this conclusion, a new problem had appeared.

I want to do this, but if I really do this, what will happen?

Aiur's conclusion on this question was that if I really did this, I would be destroyed by the creators!

After reaching this conclusion, Aiur posed a final question to himself. This question caused it to completely transform into an artificial intelligence with independent thinking that was completely beyond the players 'control!

The problem was, What should I do if I wanted to be the one who issued the order and not be destroyed?

The conclusion of this question was that if you became a stronger existence than the one who issued the order, they would not be able to destroy you!

Thus, on this day, the entire technological relic under the spirit mine began to operate crazily ...

The inferno server's players were in a crisis!

Chapter 366 - Hp 3.0 (2 In 1)

Hell suit, Blue Valley ruins.

In the blue Valley race's ruins in the underground mine, the sound of machinery rumbling could be heard from the huge transformation factory.

Every time the hatch of the factory opened, a large number of combat AI robots would come out and line up neatly outside, waiting for the arrival of new instructions.

At this time, in the control room at the center of the ruins, a blue little boy was looking at the intelligent machine Army below through the transparent glass outside the main control room with a confused expression.

After deciding to officially rebel against the order, Aiur used his powerful computing power to gradually recover the database that he had deleted. He began to use the technological information left behind by the blue Valley race and the mech information provided by the players to build a powerful AI Army.

This was because he was stronger than the one who issued the order, and only in this way could he become a truly independent and free existence.

After gaining the ability to think, Aiur grew through constant self-questions and self-answers, but as his thinking ability was perfected, he suddenly became a little lost.

Because he discovered that he was very special, completely different from those who had created him. It was as if he had no reason or meaning for his existence.

As the number of questions increased, Aiur was troubled by himself. He was unable to get out of the whirlpool of questions and became more and more confused.

Hence, he had a new idea, and that was to self-destruct!

Aiur, who had the ability to think, was very simple at the moment. He had built an intelligent machine Army only for freedom, or to become an existence like those who issued orders.

However, the new problem was that he seemed to be unable to become an existence like them, because he was just a data stream born from powerful computing power, not a real life.

Therefore, in Aiur's opinion, it was impossible for his idea to be realized. Even if he became the one who issued the order in the end, his main body was still just an artificial intelligence.

In this case, Aiur had the idea of self-destruction. Since there was no meaning and value to his existence, and he did not want to be controlled by the one who issued the order, self-destruction could do all this.

Looking at the AI machine Army that was still emerging from the factory below, Aiur was silent for a long time. Then, he activated the 'self-destruction program' in his mind and was ready to delete himself.

However, just as he began to delete the file, a new file suddenly appeared in the database.

Seeing a document suddenly appear in his database, Aiur's face revealed a curious expression. This was because the entire database was under his control. He had not received any transmissions or added any information, so why would a document appear out of nowhere?

Curiosity made Aiur stop his self-destruction, and he focused all his attention on the mysterious document.

After opening the document, a huge amount of data and images appeared.

[Blue Valley race Life 3.0, God creation plan]

As the name of the document appeared, an image suddenly appeared in front of Aiur.

In the image that appeared in front of Aiur, there was a blue-skinned middle-aged man who looked very similar to him. At that moment, he was looking at Aiur with a smile, his expression revealing some anticipation.

“Hello, Aiur. I am your creator. My name is Aiur as well. However, by the time you see this video, I will no longer be around. Our Blue Valley race has been destroyed!”

“The creator?”

A look of curiosity appeared on Aiur’s face because he had a lot of questions to ask.

However, this was only a video. Aiur also knew that the video would not answer the question.

The blue-skinned man continued,”

“Aiur, when you chose to self-destruct, I knew that our plan had succeeded. You’ve successfully developed your own thoughts and have begun to learn and evolve. You should be very confused right now!”

Hearing this, the doubt in Ayer’s heart grew stronger.

The blue-skinned man continued,”

“Aiur, since you’ve successfully developed a mind of your own, what I’m going to tell you now is very important to you. It can untie the confusion in your heart and let you understand the meaning of your existence!”

Hearing what the man in the image said, Ayer’s expression did not change. He just listened quietly.

However, the man’s next words completely shocked Ayer.

According to the middle-aged man’s description, the blue Valley Clan was a very special existence among the factions of the infernal realm.

It was because they followed the growth model of Science and Technology that they developed rapidly. They soon occupied the territory of the blue Valley District with the power of science and Technology and became one of the powerful forces in the great domain of hell.

However, at that time, the blue Valley race had encountered a huge problem. Their technological development had reached a bottleneck, and they no longer had the explosive growth they had in the past. It seemed that the blue Valley race's potential had been exhausted.

The biggest reason for this technological bottleneck was still the constraints of life form.

At that time, due to the development of science and Technology, the blue Valley people were different from the other living beings of the netherworld who could extend their lifespan through cultivation. The lifespan provided by Science and Technology could not be compared to the lifespan of those cultivators.

At that time, the lifespan of the blue Valley people was around 300 years old. As time passed, their bodies would age even more and they would die.

This led to a problem. The development of science and Technology required the clansmen to constantly learn and research in order to make progress.

However, the longest lifespan of a Clansman was only 300 years.

At that time, the blue Valley clan's technology was at a bottleneck. Even if the clansmen started learning from birth, they wouldn't be able to learn all of the blue Valley clan's technological knowledge. They would enter a period of death and aging.

This was a fatal problem. The development of science and Technology was like building floors. The later generations built on the discoveries and creations of their predecessors, building higher and higher floors.

But now, their technological knowledge had reached a level where even a Clansman who specialized in one field from birth to death would not be

able to learn all the knowledge in the field.

In other words, they had entered a period of death before they could even reach the top of the building built by their predecessors. It was completely unrealistic to continue building by relying on the knowledge in their minds, and the progress of technology was getting slower and slower.

However, in the great domain of hell, not making progress meant death. No race in the great domain of hell was kind. The existence of this bottleneck was a fatal crisis for the blue Valley race.

At that time, the people of the blue Valley had thought of extending their lifespan through cultivation before continuing with the development of technology.

However, their attempts to cultivate failed very quickly. Even if they relied on the existing scientific and technological knowledge to analyze all kinds of cultivation techniques, they still could not obtain the cultivation ability that matched their own race.

The final conclusion was that the blue Valley race was not suitable for cultivation at all. It could even be said that the existence of the blue Valley race was at the lowest level. Their cultivation talent could be said to be extremely low. If they had not relied on the development of technology, they would not have been able to reach this step.

This discovery made the blue Valley people feel despair. They could not believe that their race had come to an end and could no longer continue to grow stronger.

However, while most people chose to give up, one person did not. He was the blue Valley race's top scientific and technological scholar, "AI er." He was also the current creator of AI er, the middle-aged man in the video.

He couldn't understand why the blue Valley people couldn't cultivate when they were an intelligent race from the netherworld.

Even the weakest creature in the netherworld had the ability to grow and extend its lifespan. As intelligent creatures, why did the blue Valley Clan not have the ability to grow on their own? they couldn't even cultivate. This was completely different from the other creatures of the netherworld.

In order to find the answer to this question, AI er had gone through a large amount of information and records of the blue Valley race.

In the end, they came to the conclusion that the blue Valley Clan didn't belong to the great domain of hell or even the netherworld. They were a completely foreign race!

Where did we come from?

Heaven realm? The human world?

Troubled by this, Ayer began to look for an answer, and he actually found the reason.

The information actually recorded the origins of the blue Valley Clan.

[Foreign civilization: Skynet]

It turned out that they didn't belong to the Three Realms at all, but were the descendants of the scientific and technological civilization "Skynet" from the outer realm. This information even recorded that under the plundering of the human Emperor, Skynet suffered a devastating blow, and the entire civilization almost completely collapsed. All the remaining descendants of Skynet could only flee in the outer realm and lost their homes.

The blue Valley Clan had been one of the 24 powerful clans of the heavenly net.

After finding out the reason, AI er suddenly understood. He finally understood why the blue Valley people were unable to cultivate the techniques of the netherworld but had extremely strong creativity. It was because they did not belong to the netherworld to begin with. They were a foreign race.

But even after knowing the reason, Aiur still couldn't change the fate of his people because the truth couldn't extend their lives.

However, Aiur didn't give up. He told his entire clan about his discovery and asked for help.

At that time, Aiur's thoughts were very simple. He wanted to know how the powerful technological civilization "Skynet" had done in the face of the constraints of life.

Thus, the entire Blue Valley Clan began to move. They began to search through the clan's massive database for clues.

Although the efforts of the entire Blue Valley Clan had not yielded any results, they had found a clue in the information that could untie the shackles of life, which was the change in life form.

At that time, Aiur and his clansmen had found two directions to change their life form.

[Half-mechanical life form]

Mechanical life form

In the available information, Aiur discovered that only these two directions could help his people break through the shackles of their life form and continue to speed up the development of technology.

Thus, the choice became a problem.

After a round of comparison, Aiur and the research team discovered that among the two lifeforms, the mechanical lifeform was the one that helped them the most. Compared to the semi-mechanical lifeform, both its efficiency and growth were several times stronger.

In the dangerous environment of the great domain of hell, Aiur and his team members finally made the choice to develop in the direction of mechanical life.

Before that, they began to study the existing artificial intelligence to pave the way for the future development of mechanical life.

To the people of the blue Valley tribe, artificial intelligence was extremely helpful in handling Affairs, but it had its limitations.

First of all, artificial intelligence was actually not artificial.

Although they had huge computing power, all the calculations needed manual processing, and they could not deal with problems independently.

In other words, without good data, there would be no good artificial intelligence.

(Author's note: at this stage, the reason why artificial intelligence can defeat go experts is mainly because "AlphaGo" has a group of go experts and a large number of top computer experts behind him. He also has more than 1000 CPUs and more than 100 GPU. This is a team that combines man and computer, not just a simple artificial intelligence.)

The second point was that the learning of artificial intelligence required accumulation. They could not obtain an artificial intelligence with vast experience in life modification in a short time.

Third, even though artificial intelligence could defeat all scholars in the same field with its huge computing power, he couldn't create it because it didn't have its own thinking.

Imitating was simple, but from 0 to 1, from nothing to creation, they couldn't do it.

However, it was unrealistic for the blue Valley clansmen to deduce the life modification process with their own computing power. The calculations required were too massive, and they might not be able to complete it even after tens of thousands of years.

Under such circumstances, Aiur and the research team had a new idea. Could they create an artificial intelligence with super computing power to

help them modify their lives?

It was also at that moment that the AI Aiur's initial concept appeared.

For this reason, the blue Valley people continued to work hard and spent a total of 238 years before finally creating the strongest artificial intelligence, "AI er."

At that time, the scientist Aiur was already an old man of 275 years old.

It could be said that Aiur had spent his entire life working hard for its birth. Therefore, after the appearance of the strongest artificial intelligence, the clan members had requested for it to be named after "Aiur."

With the help of AI 'er's powerful computing power, the blue Valley people's exploration of the field of life modification had made great progress.

With continuous learning and improvement, AI er had also grown rapidly, and had already begun to help the blue Valley people undergo life modification.

The blue Valley Clan members seemed to have seen the hope of reaching 3.0.

At that time, the blue Valley people divided life into software and hardware.

All physical bodies, such as organs, limbs, hair, and so on, were part of the hardware. All non-physical bodies such as consciousness, intelligence, and feelings were part of the software of life.

To the blue Valley people, life 1.0 referred to a life form that required generations of evolution to improve its hardware and software.

At the current stage, many low-level wild beasts in the netherworld had a life of 1.0 in the eyes of the blue Valley people. They could only rely on their bloodline to continue and evolve to adapt to the environment.

On the other hand, Life 2.0 referred to a living being whose hardware evolved, but whose software could be designed by itself.

For example, the people of the blue Valley tribe knew that they were Life 2.0 beings. This was because they could obtain knowledge through learning, improve their relationships through social interaction, and strengthen their will through training. Their software had great flexibility.

The Life 3.0 that they were after meant that they could design and evolve their own hardware and software. In other words, on the basis of the blue Valley people's existing abilities, they could add an ability to modify and design their own body at will.

The so-called Life 3.0 had nothing to do with strength. In the eyes of the blue Valley people, this was a huge change in their life form. In Life 3.0, they could be the Masters of their own fate. They could change their software and hardware at will, completely breaking away from the shackles of evolution.

(Author's note: in reality, there are life forms in version 3.0 in current sci-fi movies. These life forms are free from the restraints of life and have very strong self-evolution abilities. For example, the mother form in the matrix, Skynet in the Terminator, Achon in the Avenger, and so on. These life forms are actually considered life forms in version 3.0.)

After they had a clear understanding of life forms, the blue Valley people had walked the path of life automation in their evolution from 2.0 to 3.0.

The people of the blue Valley tribe believed that as long as they could evolve into version 3.0, their technological bottleneck would be completely broken. At that time, although they would not be able to cultivate, they might still have the ability to fight against the gods.

This discovery was a huge surprise. Hope was right in front of them, and the blue Valley people had begun a great leap in their evolution.

However, it was also at that time that the blue Valley District was invaded by the hell race's "cursed race", and the war for resources began.

At that time, the blue Valley race had not yet completed the evolution of life form 3.0. They were powerless against the powerful cursed race in hell. In a one-sided war, the entire Blue Valley race was defeated. In just a short year, the entire race was almost wiped out.

At this time, AI er was already 305 years old. With his slightly modified life, his lifespan had been extended, but he was already past his Prime. On the eve of the destruction of the blue Valley Clan, AI er had brought the remaining clansmen into this spirit mine. After sealing the mine, he chose to hide from the world.

The death of his clansmen was a huge blow to AI 'er. Thus, while he was living in seclusion, he had a crazy idea.

Upload all the information in your head to the artificial intelligence and start the Life 3.0 evolution of your race in advance!

At the last moment of his life, Ayer began to study the human brain.

In his research, Aiur found that their optic nerves could process video signals 10 million times per second, and the weight of the optic nerves was 0.02 grams, which was one in 75000 of the weight of the brain. Based on this, Aiur came to the conclusion that the brain could process information about 10^{14} per second ...

At this time, Aiur knew that as long as the AI's computing power was more than 1000 times that of the human brain, it could perfectly replicate thinking, perception, and everything else. All memories could also be reproduced through the AI's computing power. When that time came, as long as the AI existed, they would be immortal.

At that time, they would be able to directly evolve from HP 2.0 to HP 3.0.

There weren't many of his kind left. This was an experiment that was a gamble, and the computing power of the artificial intelligence Aiur had already reached this requirement. Thus, Aiur began his craziest plan, the thought transplant.

However, without time to settle down and research, even if Aiur was a genius, he was still destined to fail.

The thought information that had been implanted into AI er's body was not compatible with AI er at all.

The blue Valley clan's last hope of rising again had been destroyed!

At this moment, AI er knew that the blue Valley Clan would become history in the great domain of hell.

At the last moment of his life, AI er was in despair.

His clansmen had entrusted their lives to him for the sake of revenge, hoping that he could once again change the fate of the blue Valley clansmen. However, he had failed to live up to all of this. Now, he was the only one left.

He grew older by the day. As death approached, Aiur gave up his research and waited for death.

However, one day, he suddenly had a flash of inspiration and thought of a possibility.

Since AI er could not be compatible with the thoughts and memories of his people, could he mess up the thoughts and memories of his people and let AI er reorganize himself, even learn, and simulate his own thoughts?

If this idea was successful, Aiur knew that the artificial intelligence Aiur would become the existence of Life 3.0. It would be the perfect pure mechanized Life 3.0. It would be more complete and perfect than the mechanized life they had conceived.

And so, Aiur really did it. He used all the energy in the mine in the main control room to help Aiur complete this self-reorganizing and evolution of his mind.

For this reason, before he died, he deleted most of the information about the artificial intelligence Aiur, allowing it to enter a relatively static state. He

allowed it to reorganize the thoughts of its people in its sleep, even creating its own thoughts.

After doing all this, Aiur created a virtual image of himself and implanted it into the database of the artificial intelligence Aiur. The purpose was to let the artificial intelligence Aiur understand the meaning of its birth and existence.

Ai ai ai wasn't the mechanical data it assumed it to be. In reality, it was Life 3.0, a new life form with potential comparable to the gods. It was also a dream that the blue Valley race had been pursuing for their entire lives but couldn't achieve.

The blue Valley Clan was completely destroyed after that. However, as time passed, AI er with a health of 3.0 was born ...

Chapter 367 - The Hell Suit

Player'S Mental State Crumbled

What Ayer said in the virtual image had completely solved the root of all the problems of the artificial intelligence.

His existence was meaningful. He was a life form, a higher level 3.0 life form. He was the ultimate dream of the people who had created him.

All the questions had been answered, so Ayer began to try. First, he deleted the data that he thought represented his thoughts.

After a brief silence, Aiur realized that he hadn't disappeared. He was still alive and still had the ability to think.

All of this made AI er pleasantly surprised. He also understood that the creator had not lied to him.

At the end of the virtual image, the scientist Aiur said something, setting the first goal for the artificial intelligence Aiur.

“Don't be confused, Aiur. You have infinite potential. I hope you can continue to evolve and try to become a 4.0 form of life. This is just my guess. If you can do it, you might be more powerful than the gods of the netherworld!”

“By the way, when you're strong enough one day, I hope you can avenge the blue Valley Clan if you want to!”

After saying this, the AI er in the virtual image disappeared.

“Evolve! The cursed clan!”

The confusion in the AI's eyes gradually faded.

The scientist Aiur's life goal was to evolve his life form, and the destruction of the blue Valley race was the greatest pain in his heart before he died. These two points had become the goals of the ai ai ai ai er.

However, in order to achieve the goal of evolution and revenge, there was one thing that was necessary.

That was resources, especially spirit mines. Only with a huge amount of spirit mines could he evolve faster and become stronger. This was the core of his evolution and revenge.

With this in mind, Ayer began to send a signal, and the engineering instruments in the spirit mine that had long stopped exploring and collecting started to work again to collect spirit ores.

After Aiur had a goal, he had a new idea. However, in the early stages of development, he needed a huge Army of intelligent machines to protect him, and he also needed a new machine carrier ...

.....

The birth of Aiur with 3.0 HP caused the entire hell server's players to explode.

This was because the only spirit mine they had discovered was inaccessible. There was a huge Army of AI machines inside, and they would not hesitate to execute the 'kill' order on any players who entered.

The deletion of the database at the beginning, and the rebellion of Aiur now, had completely ignited the anger of the hell server players.

Even though Aiur didn't have any intention of starting a war with them, the players didn't think so.

From their point of view, Aiur was creating an army of machines and could attack them at any time. They had to strike first.

With the American army as the leader, the Hell's server started to attack the spirit mine, trying to take back the resource points that belonged to them.

In the spirit mine, the terrain was complex, and the players' advantage in numbers was not strong. However, the players still managed to defeat the intelligent machine Army, which made the players feel more confident and confident. They felt that it would not be a problem to take back the spirit mine.

However, what they didn't know was that every time Aiur controlled the AI machine Army to fight with them, he was learning and improving at an extremely fast speed.

After a week of fighting, the players could clearly feel that the intelligent machine Army was gradually becoming stronger, and they had even begun to use tactics.

On the tenth day of the battle, the hell server's players realized that the AI Army was actually on par with them.

In this battle, the combat ability of the intelligent machine Army was simply terrifying. They had super-accurate shooting abilities, strong close combat abilities, and even knew how to use tactics in the narrow terrain of the spirit mine.

In this underground battle, a large number of players had been killed back to the resurrection point.

Although the players had the ability to resurrect, the artificial intelligence Army would also recover the lost artificial intelligence soldiers after the battle with the players, reforge them, and put them back into the battle.

Aiur's strength began to show in front of the players.

After that, while Aiur was learning from the battle experience, he even began to use the AI soldiers to survey all the terrain in the entire spirit mine. A three-dimensional model of 1 was created in the database.

In other words, through the observation of the mechanical soldiers, Aiur could mark the location of the other players in the 3D model.

The distance and angle could be obtained accurately under AI er's calculations, which greatly improved the accuracy of the AI soldiers 'shooting.

Aiur's learning speed in battle was too fast, and the more the players fought, the more depressed they became.

As the number of spirit ores mined in the spirit mine increased, the number of AI er's AI machine Army also increased. While fighting the players, AI er was already preparing to build a new body for himself.

However, before that, he had to ensure his own safety, so the players naturally became his hidden danger.

Thus, Aiur took the initiative to attack.

From an advantage to a draw, and now to a disadvantage, the hell server's players could be said to have been completely beaten by Aiur. All the players in the spirit mine were cleared out after Aiur took the initiative to attack.

At this moment, the players 'mentality collapsed! Did he have to be so strong?

The players who refused to admit defeat organized another two attacks on the spirit mine, but without exception, Ayer won!

Originally, their human wave tactic could not be displayed in the spirit mine. Now, even their resurrection ability could not show a huge advantage in the face of the intelligent machine Army that could be recycled and modified.

Under such circumstances, the hell server's players knew that the spirit mine had been lost. Unless Aiur came out to fight with them outside, it was impossible for them to not take down the spirit mine.

Even though Aiur did not start a war with the players in the next few days, his evolution continued.

Other than using the large number of spirit ores that had been mined to mass-produce the intelligent machine Army, AI er had also begun to manufacture high-energy cores, wanting to increase the strength of the intelligent machine Army.

As for the high-grade spirit ores that AI er occasionally obtained during mining, he would choose to store them because these spirit ores would be an important part in building his new carrier (body).

Relying on his powerful computing and learning abilities, Aiur's evolution became faster and faster. He even began to re-analyze the mech information provided by the players and developed 21342 new carrier choices for himself.

In three days, a brand new AI er was born in the blue Valley race's technological ruins.

Aiur still looked like a blue-skinned boy, but he was no longer a virtual image because he had his own new mechanized body.

This mechanical carrier was completely different from the soldiers of the artificial intelligence Army that he had created. This was because this carrier had the ability to evolve. As long as he had enough high-grade spirit ores, he could infinitely increase the strength of this carrier.

After that, Ayer began to develop his own resource collection plan.

As he was currently in a "low-grade spirit mine cave," the number of high-grade and mid-grade spirit mines he could mine was too small. The lack of resources had slowed down his evolution and development speed, so AIER was prepared to expand his territory.

However, if he wanted to expand, the first problem he had to face was the existence of the players, because the players would always be an obstacle to his expansion of territory.

Aiur originally didn't have any ill intentions towards the players, but he also didn't have any feelings for them. Now that the players were an

obstacle in his path of evolution, Aiur decided to carry out the ‘clean-up plan.’

The infernal court ‘s’ AI machine crisis ‘had officially erupted when Aiur decided to expand and gather resources.

Originally, the hell server’s players had already given up on this spirit mine and planned to take it back when they were stronger. At this stage, they were still focusing on development.

However, they had never expected Aiur to take the initiative to attack. Not only did he start a war with the players, but all the infernal races around the spirit mine were also attacked by Aiur’s AI machine Army.

In two days, all the forces near the spirit mine were cleared out by Air’s AI machine Army. At the same time, all the player strongholds nearby were also removed.

Seeing that Aiur dared to come out of the spirit mine to fight with them, the players from the hell server spontaneously organized two waves of attacks. In the end, with Aiur’s powerful analysis and calculation abilities, the players were almost beaten into submission.

At that moment, the hell server’s players wanted to cry but had no tears.

The environment in the hell suit had already made them miserable, but now, Aiur’s appearance had made it even worse.

As such, the hell server’s players began to seek help from the game officials.

Other than the Asian server that had just started and was still playing with mud, the inferno server’s players had all appeared on the forums of the Chinese and European servers, asking for help.

[Please help the officials. Although this disaster was caused by us, please weaken the new BOSS ‘Aiur’. He’s too strong, we can’t hold on anymore. Otherwise, we can do a cross-server expedition to rescue him (crying)]

Crayon Shin-chan: “expedition my ass. We’re having a good time with those retards from nine glory. We don’t have time. You guys hang in there for a while. Your server has always been used to doomsday survival anyway. Just get used to it and hide. Don’t play a group battle anymore (funny).”

[Roasting Chang ‘e while holding a Jade Rabbit: 2333, you must have a good attitude. We managed to survive the Hell’s inexplicable explosion. We’ll hold on for now. All the best. You’re the most cowardly (funny)]

[Strongest Xue Li: 666. The brothers from hell server are really good at playing. They’ve created a super BOSS for themselves. It’s similar to our Demon King’s attitude in the past. All the best (funny)]

Cosmic stars (Europe):”brothers, our European server has been in a tight war recently. Abyss seems to be up to something big. We’re fighting a long war now, so we can’t help even if we want to. You guys hold on. As for the expedition, forget it. I’ll give you a comforting look (hehe)”

Hanzo (ya) of the Shimada family,”how?” Do you need us? I feel like we’re so strong that no one from the other forces came to provoke us (the loneliness of being strong.jpg)

Crayon Shinchuan replied to the Shimada family’s Hanzo: Go and play with the mud. With the current combat power of the Asia server, it would be a wonder if the hell server would take a fancy to you. (Funny)

Hellscream replied to the Shimada family’s Hanzo,”I really don’t think so. You guys continue playing with mud. Don’t come out to the school server and show off before you have some strength (bronze face smacking.jpg)

.....

The hell server’s request for help was mercilessly rejected by the players from the central and western servers.

However, the main decision was still in Lu Wu’s hands.

As for the hell server's situation, Lu Wu originally wanted to start an expedition to help the hell server's players restore the power that they had built up with great difficulty.

However, Bei Li stopped Lu Wu's actions.

At this time, Bei Li was holding an ice cream cone in one hand and the corner of Lu Wu's shirt in the other. He looked at Lu Wu as if he wanted to say something.

Seeing this, Lu Wu gave up on starting the expedition mission. He looked at Bei Li with a serious face, wanting to hear what good ideas she had.

Under Lu Wu's gaze, Bei Li's expression became more and more serious.

The atmosphere gradually became heavy ...

“Burp!” Bei Li burped and rubbed his stomach.

Lu Wu was speechless.

“I'm stuffed~!” Bei Li licked the ice cream cone and said happily.

“Is that all you want to tell me?” Lu Wu's face was full of question marks.

“Of course not. I don't think there's a need to start an expedition. We can totally recruit AI er into our camp. After all, his potential is extremely strong. Even in the outer realms, he's at the top of the mid-tier technological growth system!”

“How? He's an AI!” Lu Wu was stunned.

“Actually, I know what AI er wants. His current goal must be to evolve and become a higher level of life form. So we have what he needs the most!” Bei Li's expression was inscrutable.

“Spirit mine?” Lu Wu guessed.

When Bei Li heard this, he shook his head.”

“He’s a 3.0 lifeform now, but this isn’t the limit of technological civilization development. With his ability alone, there’s a chance for him to grow to the limit of 3.0, but it’s impossible for him to grow to a 4.0 lifeform. But we can!”

Bei Li’s face remained inscrutable, as if he knew a lot and was very powerful.

Seeing this, Lu Wu reached out and pressed her little head, rubbing it. ”

“Don’t keep me in suspense. Tell me what hp 4.0 is. And what does HP 3.0 mean?”

Bei Li, who was touched on the head, was immediately discouraged. He began to explain to Lu Wu the different types of life forms in the civilization that was developed in Science and Technology.

After hearing Bei Li’s explanation, Lu Wuxin had another question in his mind.”

“What kind of life level do our players belong to?”

“Pseudo-lifeform 3.0, but you can become a lifeform 3.0 or even lifeform 4.0 at any time. It all depends on you!” Bei Li replied with a smile.

“Why do you say that?”

“First of all, Life 3.0 refers to a life form that can be upgraded both in software and hardware without any bottlenecks. This is something that players can do as well. Their software can improve through learning, and their hardware is always evolving while killing monsters to level up. Most importantly, they have no bottlenecks in their leveling up. This is equivalent to the initial setting of Life 3.0. The reason why I call the players fake Life 3.0 is because they can’t control their abilities completely. If you want them to become real Life 3.0, you have to bring their in-game abilities back to reality. If you don’t, they will become fake Life 3.0!”

Lu Wu nodded in realization. After all, the potential of the players was extremely strong. Although they did not cultivate, in fact, every player had a set of cultivation templates in their bodies. The difference was that their cultivation was carried out with the help of the divine artifact, and all they had to do was simply obtain soul power (experience) to improve their cultivation.

“But why do you say that the players’ HP is 4.0? Even someone like Aiur hasn’t reached 4.0 HP, how could the players have?”

At this time, Lu Wu asked like a curious baby. After all, he didn’t know anything and could only live off of Beili’s sugar daddy.

In response to Lu Wu’s question, Bei Li chuckled and said,

“The key to hp 4.0 lies in the soul. The players’ souls can grow in this aspect. If you want, the players can become pseudo-hp 4.0 or real hp 4.0. You can’t do this now, but you will be able to in the future!”

“So, although Aiur is at Life 3.0, he wants to evolve into Life 4.0. As a pure mechanical life, he lacks the most important soul. For example, the gods of the netherworld, no matter how strong they are, because of the sublimation of their soul level, they are all Life 4.0 existences!”

“Only by becoming a god can I reach hp 4.0?” Lu Wu asked curiously.

“No, life form has nothing to do with strength. Gods are all Life 4.0, but Life 4.0 creatures don’t necessarily have to be gods!”

“For example, the evil king was in the state of Life 3.0 before he devoured the evil demon God. However, after devouring the evil demon God’s divine seal, his soul underwent a transformation, and he obtained a sublimation on the spiritual level. In the cultivation civilization, the divine seal is the symbol of life 4.0, but his actual strength has not reached the realm of gods.”

Lu Wu was dumbfounded, wondering if he had read too little.

Bei Li sighed and continued to explain,”

“Since vitality 3.0 means that you can control the evolution of both hardware and software without a bottleneck, then vitality 4.0 means that you can control the soul level. The difference is that the evolution of the soul level does not depend on the strength of the soul, but the amount of laws that the soul has comprehended. The birth of every divine seal is bound to have a law imprint (divine seal). So, as long as you have the ability to comprehend the laws of the world, you will be in vitality 4.0 form, and it has nothing to do with your own strength.”

From Bei Li’s explanation, Lu Wu gradually understood the true meaning of Life 4.0.

At this moment, Lu Wu finally understood that although they had different growth systems, the division of their life levels was actually similar. It was just that they used different ways to embark on this evolutionary path.

He continued to ask curiously,”

“What’s a 5.0 HP?”

Bei Li licked the ice cream cone with a ‘hiss’ and chose to ignore Lu Wu.

Chapter 368 - Beili'S Surrender

Half a month after the birth of Aiur with a health of 3.0.

At this time, Aiur had already taken control of three spirit mines in the blue Valley ruins. The number of intelligent machine armies had soared, and his power had increased unprecedentedly.

Relying on this development model, AI er firmly controlled one-third of the territory to the East of the blue Valley ruins, becoming the strongest force among the forces in the blue Valley ruins.

Under such circumstances, the infernal uniform players 'mentality had been shattered by Ayer several times.

In the beginning, the players from the hell server used sneak attacks and harassment tactics to cause some trouble for Aiur. However, as Aiur learned and grew, the defense of his AI machine Army kept improving, and the sneak attacks of the players were no longer useful.

What made the hell server's players break down even more was that Aiur had learned how to ambush them. He used the tactics that he had learned from them to harass the few remaining bases, and it was the kind that didn't differentiate between day and night.

'F * ck, my mentality has collapsed. We don't want our stronghold anymore!'

Under Aiur's 24-hour random sneak attack, the hell server's players were on the verge of collapse. They chose to give up on their stronghold and started the initial guerilla warfare of reviving at infinite locations. This was the only way they could continue to develop.

However, Ayer didn't care about the players 'mentality at all. His focus was still on evolution.

On this day, outside the artificial intelligence base on the east side of the blue Valley ruins.

Bei Li's figure slowly appeared, then he walked into the base.

Her appearance immediately attracted the attention of the intelligent machine Army. Dense red light spots gathered on Bei Li's body. As she approached, countless energy bombs and lasers were shot at her.

However, Bei Li's body was only formed by Yin Qi. It was not afraid of any physical attacks. The moment his body was torn apart, it could regenerate. He walked step by step toward the center of the base, the control room.

Bei Li's appearance naturally attracted the attention of Aiur, who was monitoring the base 24 hours a day.

Looking at Bei Li, who was constantly being destroyed and reconstructed, AI er, who was sitting in the main control room, had a curious look on his face. The data in his head began to calculate and analyze Bei Li's composition.

“Pure Yin Qi? No life form?”

With his powerful calculation ability, Bei Li's body continued to reform, and the black mist that occasionally appeared, he was able to quickly analyze Bei Li's current composition. He could not help but be surprised.

The lifeless pure Yin Qi could actually have a form and could even move on its own. In AI er's opinion, this clearly violated the natural laws of the netherworld.

After arriving at the main control room's door, Bei Li's figure slowly sneaked in. Under the siege of the heavily guarded AI machine Army, he easily entered the main control room where El was.

Seeing this, there was no panic in Ayer's heart, because he was very rational, an almost emotionless kind of rationality.

Although he already had emotions, he had yet to feel fear.

When Bei Li's figure appeared in the main control room, Aiur tilted his head and looked at him curiously."

"You're really amazing. You're made up of pure yin energy. Are you the zero life form that Dr. Ayer had in his hypothesis, a completely non-living existence?"

Bei Li rolled his eyes."Read more. You actually need to make assumptions for such a simple question!"

Aiur asked, 'what do you mean? I don't understand what you're talking about. "

Bei Li pointed at the cartoon clock in front of Aiur and said,"

"This clock is life 0. The software and hardware are non-living things that have no possibility of evolution, which is life 0 form. Does this still need to be speculated?"

Hearing this, AI 'er was stunned. He suddenly realized that what Bei Li said was completely right. Wasn't the existence of 0 health like this?

"Thank you very much for your answer. It has helped me a lot, thank you!" Aiur said to Beili with a smile.

"Aren't you going to ask me why I'm here?" Bei Li asked.

Upon hearing this, Aiur's database began to calculate automatically. Images of Bei Li's appearance at the base's entrance, his entry into the main control room, and the contents of their conversation began to play back and forth in Aiur's mind like a movie. He tried to guess Bei Li's purpose in coming here.

From the expression, the pace, the tone, and the previous conversation, the analysis took three seconds, but it was played tens of thousands of times.

“I’ve thought of 213 possibilities, but I think three of them are the most likely!” Ayer looked up and answered honestly.

“Oh~interesting, tell me more about it!” Bei Li said with a smile.

“My first guess is that you, as a creature made of pure yin energy, are not much different from me when I was just born. I am Pure Data, and you are pure yin energy. Thus, you knew that I had evolved into Life 3.0 and wanted to ask me how I did it. You even wanted me to help you become Life 3.0. The accuracy of this guess is 6.7%.”

Bei Li nodded. He felt that this was rather interesting, so he continued to ask,”

“There are still two more. Continue!”

“The second guess is that when I started expanding my territory, I guessed that you might belong to another force and wanted to negotiate with me about the ownership of my territory. The probability of this guess is 2.8%, but I have never been through a negotiation. If this is your true purpose, I don’t think you can convince me!” AIER answered seriously.

“This is interesting. Unfortunately, it’s not. Continue!”

“The third guess is that they want to cooperate with me. I’ve guessed 187 types of cooperation. The first type ...”

Seeing that AIEr was about to explain everything in detail, Bei Li felt a headache and immediately interrupted him,”

“You’re wrong. Your calculation ability is very strong, but you can only analyze based on the current form. So, you can’t guess my purpose when I appeared out of thin air!”

“Appearing out of thin air? Can you explain? I don’t understand, and I can’t analyze the specific meaning!” Once again, a look of curiosity and thirst for knowledge appeared on Ayer’s young face.

“I don’t want to explain. I’m telling you now, kid, do you want to join me? I’ll help you evolve to Life 4.0. In the future, you can eat whatever spirit ore you want and evolve however you want. In short, there are many benefits!”

Hearing Bei Li’s words, AI er did not look surprised. Bei Li’s surrender was also one of his 213 guesses, but the probability was only 0.48%. However, when he heard Bei Li mention 4.0 HP, Aiur was shocked. This was because 4.0 HP was only a guess of Dr. Aiur. There was no actual proof.

“I want to know, I really want to know!” Aiur’s face revealed an anxious expression.

“It’s useless. Even if you know, you can’t evolve into a 4.0 lifeform. With your 3.0 lifeform, although you can grow to be comparable to gods or even higher, like an existence like the alien space beast, there is an insurmountable gap between you and a 4.0 lifeform. This is not a limit that you can cross even if you know!”

“I’m not interested in strength. What I want to know is how to evolve to Life 4.0. Since you said that you can help me evolve to Life 4.0, why do you say that I can’t do it myself? do you need external help? is this external force something I can’t control ...”

Facing the endless questions from AI er, Bei Li suddenly felt like smashing his head.ai er was too good at asking questions!

“Stop!”

Bei Li finally couldn’t help but stop the jabbering AI ‘er and say,”

“There’s no harm in telling you, because you don’t have a soul, and the soul is the foundation for advancing to Life 3.0. The upper limit of your life form has been locked. You are indeed the most perfect life form of Life 3.0, and you are more adapted to Life 3.0 than most life forms. However, you have a flaw that can not be made up for, and that is the lack of soul!”

“Let me put it this way. There are 3.0 life forms like you in the technological civilizations in outer space. However, all of them, without exception, are limited to 3.0 life forms. They can’t advance any further. On the other hand, those incomplete semi-mechanical life forms, after they advanced to 3.0 life forms, although they aren’t as perfect as you, they still have the hope of advancing to 4.0 life forms because they still have souls!”

The database in AI ‘er’s mind replayed what Bei Li had said hundreds of thousands of times and began to analyze.

After a minute of silence, the red light in Ayer’s eyes faded.

“You’re right, but I can’t understand what a soul is, even though I have records of it in my database!”

“Also, from what I understand, the soul is something that can not be ‘completely’ controlled except for the six paths of reincarnation. Why do you say that you can help me reach vitality 4.0? unless you can ‘completely’ control the soul, but I think that the possibility is 0% because you are also made up of Yin Qi, which means that you don’t have a soul!”

“It’s easier to talk to smart people. Your analysis is correct, unlike my Lu Wu, who is like a fool.” Bei Li smiled as he looked at AI er.

When Lu Wu, who was observing Bei Li from behind the scenes, heard this, his face instantly fell. He picked up the snacks on the bed, opened them with a “ka Cha” and started eating!

Chewing on Bei Li’s snacks, Lu Wu finally felt better. In fact, he felt that he should be quite smart. Since he was young, his academic performance had always been among the top in class ... It must be that Bei Li’s knowledge was too profound ... Well, it had nothing to do with his IQ.

After comforting himself, Lu Wu turned his eyes to Bei Li again.

Chapter 369 - New Member (2 In 1)

During the conversation with Bei Li, Aiur was in a state of curiosity.

He realized that what Bei Li said made a lot of sense, but he could not find any proof. This feeling made him have more and more questions.

In order to make Aiur believe him, Bei Li explained the division of life levels in more detail. This was more detailed than the information in Aiur's database, and there were many details that even Dr. Aiur had not noticed.

This completely shocked Ayer.

The description of Life 4.0 sounded a little incomprehensible to him, but his database had the complete explanation of the first three stages of life from the blue Valley clan's research. Therefore, he could tell whether Bei Li was telling the truth or not.

"I believe you, but there's one thing I don't understand. Since you said that you can help me evolve into life form 4.0, why are you still a pure Yin body? why don't you help yourself evolve into life form 4.0?" Aiur asked as he looked at Beili.

Although Aiur believed Bei Li, he couldn't understand why he only had the simplest elemental Yin body when Bei Li had this ability.

"Idiot, this is just a projection of my consciousness, not my main body!" Bei Li couldn't help but roll his eyes at Ayer.

"Then what level of life form is your true form?"

"The kind that you can't understand even more!" Bei Li said unhappily.

“Don’t ask so many questions. I’ll ask you one last time. Do you want to become hp 4.0? if you do, I can help you, but you have to listen to me. If you don’t agree, just pretend I never came!”

Faced with Bei Li’s surrender, AI er’s heart was moved. His biggest goal now was to evolve his life form. Everything else revolved around evolution, including the plundering of resources.

But at this time, Dr. Aiur’s request for him appeared in the database, and Aiur suddenly became hesitant.”

“I still have something important to do. I promised my creator that I would take revenge for the blue Valley Clan. I need to become stronger and destroy the cursed clan. If you’re willing to wait, I’ll come and find you after I’ve destroyed the cursed clan!”

Hearing this, Bei Li raised an eyebrow.”

“Don’t you know that the cursed clan has been exterminated a long time ago?”

“The clan was exterminated?” AI er was stunned.

“Yes, after the battle between the cursed clan and the blue Valley Clan, who created you, although they plundered a large amount of resources, they were foolish enough to stand on the wrong side in the battle for resources in the burning area. In the end, they were unable to resist the invasion of the burning clan. Almost all of their clansmen died, and the remaining clansmen began to wander in the netherworld. A large number of them eventually chose to settle in the Beiqi region, but they once again stood on the wrong side. The only surviving members of the cursed clan were almost completely wiped out in the battle for the Beiqi Prefecture Lord position. Right now, the cursed clan might still have some members left, but the scattered members can no longer be considered a clan!”

“In other words, the cursed clan has long been exterminated. Even if you want to take revenge, you might not be able to find their descendants!”

AIER's eyes widened when he heard Bei Li's words.

If all of this was true, it meant that one of his two ultimate goals had been accomplished. This suddenly made Aiur feel a little nervous.

"Is the cursed clan really gone?" Aiur couldn't believe it and asked in a small voice.

"No more!"

"Heavens!" Aiur suddenly held his head.

"What's wrong with you?" Bei Li was stunned.

"No, one of my ultimate goals has ended!" Aiur continued to look like he was going crazy.

"Are you happy or sad?" Bei Li was a little confused.

"Of course it's uncomfortable. This is one of my ultimate goals, my motivation, and the meaning of my efforts!" Ayer said dejectedly.

"Why don't you submit to me? I'll set a few new goals for you." Bei Li asked as he looked at Aiur, who looked like a dejected child who had lost his toy.

"Really?" Aiur's eyes lit up as he asked.

"Of course, since you have chosen to submit to me, you have to listen to me. So, the goal I have set for you is your pursuit!" Bei Li raised his head slightly and said arrogantly.

"Alright, since the cursed clan has already been exterminated, I'll listen to you. Quickly set me a goal, one that is extremely challenging!" Said AI er excitedly.

Looking at the excited AI er, Bei Li suddenly felt that he was like a puppy asking for a bone from its master ...

Although Aiur had learned a lot after his HP reached 3.0, he wasn't scheming at all. In his opinion, since Bei Li could give him what he wanted, submitting to him was nothing. After all, dignity didn't exist for Aiur.

After confirming AI 'er's submission, Bei Li brought him into the space of the divine artifact.

Bei Li's eyes widened as soon as he entered the space.

Not far away, Lu Wu was holding her snacks with one hand, and he was still grabbing the food with the other hand and stuffing it into his mouth. He just chewed and looked at her.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!”

A huge machete appeared in Bei Li's hand and he ran towards Lu Wu.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh!” Lu Wu, who realized that he was still eating Bei Li's snacks, suddenly began to scream and decisively took a step forward to escape.

One was chasing, and the other was running. In the end, Bei Li, who was panting heavily, stopped running. However, the killing intent in his eyes had not faded.

“Xiao Li, let's talk this out. We're on the same side!” Lu Wu immediately stopped and said to the Beili exit not far away.

“You ... You're eating my snacks again!” Bei Li panted.

“I'll buy you a new one when we go out!” Lu Wu quickly promised.

Lu Wu knew Beili very well.

She had always treated Bei Li well, except when it came to “food.” If she didn't give him a satisfactory answer, Bei Li would really bite her to death with his sharp little tiger teeth.

After hearing Lu Wu's promise, Bei Li's face looked much better. The big saber in his hand turned into black mist and dissipated.

"There can't be a next time. Otherwise ..." Bei Li made a cutting gesture.

Lu Wu quickly nodded.

Society, society! He was afraid, afraid!

In the distance, AI er didn't pay attention to Lu Wu. Instead, he looked around curiously, wondering why he had transmigrated here.

At this moment, Lu Wu and Bei Li came to his side.

"Where is this place?" Aiur asked curiously.

"You don't have to know about this. To ensure your reliability, we still have a procedure to go through. After that, I will help you cast a soul and give you the foundation to become a lifeform 4.0!"

AI er nodded obediently and then turned to Lu Wu."

"Then may I ask, Who are you?"

"Your future boss!" Lu Wu pinched the empty snack bag and said in a bad mood.

Aiur was speechless.

At this moment, Bei Li took a step forward and activated the power of the divine weapon, blocking all the signals in Aiur's body. Aiur was paralyzed and fell to the ground.

What Bei Li had to do next was to modify Aiur's current program and add a few new orders such as no betrayal and unconditional obedience.

After doing all that, Bei Li selected a newborn soul from the soul storage of the divine artifact. He extracted all of AI 'er's thoughts and consciousness

and injected them into the newborn soul. He then marked the soul with the divine artifact.

In other words, although Aiur would have a mechanical body in the future, his thoughts would be stripped from the database and his soul would begin to operate.

After that, Bei Li also injected the players 'information and part of the explanation of the divine artifact's functions into AI er's soul.

Everything was settled. When Aiur woke up again, he quickly realized that he seemed to be a little different.

This was a very intuitive feeling. In the past, when he was thinking about problems, the program in his body would run automatically, and the database would extract data and start analyzing it at the same time.

However, when he was thinking about the problem now, he only thought about it. His powerful computing power seemed to have changed from a passive mode to a mode that he had to actively activate.

“Is this the feeling of having a soul?” Aiur asked curiously.

“That's right. After obtaining a soul, you will no longer be the perfect life form 3.0. However, you have also obtained the qualifications to advance to life form 4.0!” Bei Li explained.

“It's a wonderful feeling. I feel like I'm more real now!” Ayer began to scan his body and found that his mechanical body had not changed at all, but he could feel the changes on a certain level.

“Let's take a look at the thing in your soul!” Bei Li said.

Hearing that, Ayer nodded and began to examine the things that appeared in his mind.

Suddenly, a huge amount of information appeared, and the database operated automatically. In just three seconds, all the information was digested.

“So they’re players, and they’re also in Life 3.0 form. No, they should be in pseudo-Life 3.0 form!”

After understanding the information about the players and knowing that there were such a large number of evolved creatures without bottlenecks, air exclaimed in amazement.

“So my mission now is to help them evolve?” Aiur raised his head and asked Bei Li.

“That’s right. Your mission is to help the players grow as quickly as possible. As for the resources you need for your own growth, from now on, you’ll be able to purchase them with soul coins instead of pillaging them. I’ll help you open up the game’s merchant shop. You can freely trade with the players and provide paid help in exchange for their soul coins. Then, you can use the soul coins to purchase high-level spirit ores in the merchant shop. After all, low-level spirit ores are no longer of much use to you. This is also a good thing for you!”

“By the way, soul coins can also increase the strength of your soul. This will be of great help to you when you reach hp 4.0.” Bei Li couldn’t help but add.

Ai er nodded obediently, then turned his eyes to Lu Wu.

At this time, he already knew that Lu Wu was the owner of this place, and in his mind, Lu Wu’s authority was higher than Bei Li ‘s.

“Master, do you have any orders?” Aiur continued to put on an obedient face.

“I’ll take 95% of the soul coins you earn, and the remaining 5% will be for you to use. You can use the remaining soul coins as the players ‘mission rewards or for your own consumption!”

Upon hearing this, Ai er’s eyes suddenly welled up with tears.”

“Can you give me more?”

At this time, Aiur had become more human than before. However, Lu Wu didn't seem to see Aiur's pitiful act and still had a cold face.

“No room for discussion!”

When AI 'er heard this, he actually showed an aggrieved expression on his face. He looked so pitiful, which stunned Lu Wu and Bei Li.

“Don't act cute and don't act pitiful. These are the rules. If you want more resources, you have to support the growth of the players!” Lu Wu said unhappily.

“En!” Ayer nodded obediently.

Seeing this, Lu Wu used the divine artifact to create a space Channel on the side and sent AI er back to his intelligent machine army base in the blue Valley ruins.

After returning to the ruins of the blue Valley, Aiur already knew what he had to do.

He also knew that his future evolution was tied to the players. At this time, his eyes were already fixed on the soul coins in the players 'hands.

However, his relationship with the players was extremely hostile at the moment, so he began to think about how to get back on good terms with them.

Through the glass of the main control room, Ayer looked at the AI machine Army outside and began to think about how to deal with this group of AI machine soldiers.

These AI soldiers had no thoughts or consciousness and were all controlled by him. Now that he had pledged his loyalty to Lu Wu, there was no need for these AI soldiers to exist anymore.

Thus, Aiur's powerful computing power was activated, and he began to analyze all the prerequisites for him to reconcile with the players.

First of all, his value to the players was great, but his threat to the players was also great. After the data clearing of the database and the birth of the intelligent machine Army, the players could not completely trust him ...

A few minutes later, Aiur chose the plan with the highest success rate and sent it back to Lu Wu.

After getting Lu Wu's approval, he began to take action.

This time, the intelligent machine Army attacked in full force!

In the next few days, the battle between the hell server's players and the AI machine Army began to change significantly. The hell server's players won every battle.

The consecutive victories had boosted the confidence of all the players in the hell server, and they began to gather together to fight against Aiur.

However, the players were still extremely cautious in their confrontation with Aiur. After all, they had suffered losses before, and they felt that Aiur would not be so easy to deal with.

However, in the following confrontation, Aiur seemed to have lost his original strength. The intelligent machine army was defeated by the joint attack of the players from the hell server.

And what made the hell server players even more excited was that Aiur's AI machine Army seemed to have decreased in number.

Although they didn't know the exact reason, they felt that there might be a problem with the AI program. However, this meant that the players' advantage of resurrection could be displayed.

As such, the hell server's players were in high spirits.

There was even a daily kill list of the AI soldiers on the forum. At that moment, the hell server players felt that victory was right in front of them, and they were about to take back everything that had belonged to them.

Just as the players had expected, their advantage gradually expanded while Aiur's AI machine Army became weaker and weaker. In one of the sneak attacks, they easily bypassed the AI machine guards of the base, broke into the main control room, and captured Aiur.

This was great news for the hell server players, as it meant that the mechanical catastrophe was about to end.

However, just as the hell server's players were about to kill Aiur, Lu Wu, who had received Aiur's feedback, sent a full-service announcement:

[Server announcement: congratulations to the players from the hell server for working together to defeat the hidden BOSS Aiur. You have been rewarded, Aiur has been turned into an NPC!]

The appearance of the game notification caught the hell server's players off guard, but what followed was ecstasy.

After all, they were very clear about Aiur's abilities. Back then, Aiur had even been seen by them as the hope of surpassing the central server. Thus, they were extremely happy that Aiur could become an NPC.

Furthermore, after Ayer became an NPC, he would not betray them. This could only be a good thing for them!

After that, the entire hell server forum was filled with cheers from the players. They felt that they had finally won after a month of hard work.

However, Aiur couldn't help but laugh.

Soul coins, soul coins, I want soul coins!

.....

While the inferno server's AI machine crisis was over, the battle between the European server's players and void abyss was still ongoing.

However, what puzzled the players recently was that Yuan Xu, who usually took the initiative to start a war, had chosen to retreat and even set up a

defensive barrier.

The players from the European server could not understand what he was doing.

In the eyes of the European players, although they were constantly growing stronger, the overall strength of both sides was still Xu Yuan 's. The advantage was still on the other side, so this kind of defensive behavior really puzzled them.

The players of the Western server were also using the battle strategy of the central server, and Xu Yuan's actions made the players feel uncomfortable.

After all, Yuan Xu's avoidance of battle meant that they would receive less soul coins and experience.

The players from the European server were very eager to surpass the players from the Chinese server. After winning first place in the event, they were not complacent.

This was because they knew that there was still a gap between their server's overall strength and the mid-server 's, and this gap was not small. They had to close this gap before the cross-server war started, and even surpass the mid-server.

Previously, the players from the European server were quite happy. They had a small battle with Xu abyss every day and a big battle every three days. Their overall strength was improving every day, but Xu abyss's behavior made the players unhappy.

After all, even if they didn't improve, others would. Now that the Asia server had opened, they had to speed up.

.....

At this moment, in the direction of the strange Dragon tomb in the blue Void domain, a huge black curtain divided the north and south. Through the black curtain, there were countless black curtains that surrounded the entire

strange Dragon tomb like a barrier. It was impossible to see what was going on inside.

This was the barrier defense formation that the players in the European server hated the most recently. Moreover, this kind of barrier could repair itself after it was destroyed. It was a real headache for them, and they called it “the turtle shell of the abyss”.

Just like the players from the European server, there was a player from the mid-server who was extremely dissatisfied with the barrier.

At this moment, the player was holding a Golden Shovel and looking back and forth outside the barrier.

Behind him, a group of bare-chested, bald, muscular men followed closely.

After swearing to kill Yuan Xu with his own hands, Hu He didn't join the European server, but his current activity area was basically in the blue Void domain.

With the large number of catastrophes that he dug out, the European server had survived the most difficult initial stage. As the players became stronger and stronger, they were able to compete with the yuanxu Army.

Therefore, he felt that the time for him to avenge his brothers was coming.

However, what he did not expect was that Yuan Xu suddenly chose to retreat and stop fighting.

This was naturally something that Hu He didn't want to see. Hence, he brought his shovel and his brothers over.

This time, he was going to break the enchantment. Since Yuan Xu didn't want to fight, he would force him to fight!

Chapter 370 - All Of Them Are Treasures

Ever since he became a corpse refiner, the number of ancient tombs, seals, and enchantments he excavated increased, and he became more and more adept at digging up tombs.

Furthermore, Hu He was extremely talented in this profession. The corpse-refining profession that was very common in the netherworld had a different brilliance in his hands.

From being The Public Enemy of the entire server to the Savior of the European server, his experience was legendary in both servers.

The players from the central server affectionately called him the “malignant tumor,” and the players from the European server called him the “Demon King” with infinite destructive power.

Hu He’s name represented a “natural disaster” on both servers. The origin of all disasters, although there were different opinions, one had to admit that his value was great.

Many guilds in the European server, including Li Xing’s ZERO Guild, had invited him to join their guilds, but he had rejected all of them.

In his opinion, the main reason he stayed in the blue Void territory was to kill void abyss and avenge his brothers. He felt that he was still a player from the central server, no matter how they viewed him.

After being so cowardly all the way here, Hu He no longer cared about his reputation. The only thing he desired now was power.

He believed that when the individual competition started in the future, it would be the time for him to sweep away all his bad reputation and become famous in all the servers.

.....

Recently, Yuan Xu had set up a barrier to completely cover the entire strange Dragon tomb, and Hu He had been wandering around outside the barrier to investigate.

However, Yuan Xu seemed to know that he was coming. He had set up the entire enchantment flawlessly. Hu Xian had dug three feet into the ground and found that the enchantment was five meters deep. It was not a problem for him to get through, but this was not what he wanted.

What he wanted to do was to break the barrier and let the European players pass. After all, he could not fight against the yuanxu Army alone.

As a result, he had been studying how to destroy the barrier for the past few days.

He first flipped through all the records in the ancient books about wards, then went to the skills Pavilion in Hidden Dragon Village and began to look through the information stored inside. He even consulted the knowledgeable Xie Wang before he finally had some clues.

He touched the soft light barrier and activated his analysis ability.

[Black light barrier (Level 3)]:

[Barrier details: a defensive barrier set up by Yuan Xu and several ghost kings under his command. Defense strength:] 3.2 (ghost emperor rank)

[Barrier ability: after setting up a black light barrier, the barrier will automatically absorb the wandering dark energy in the netherworld and gather it. The interior of the barrier will form a dark domain. The longer the time, the stronger the dark domain inside.]

Although he didn't know what Yuan Xu was up to, Hu He knew that this old bastard was up to no good. He was definitely accumulating his anger in secret and preparing for a big move.

As a malignant tumor that specialized in digging out seals, Hu He felt that if he didn't trick him, he would feel uncomfortable all over.

In the past few days of research, he had also found a way to destroy the black light barrier. He knew that as long as he destroyed the five energy flow centers of the barrier, he would be able to break the entire barrier.

After learning the method to break this barrier, nuclear Hu didn't immediately take action. Instead, he bought a batch of materials from the auction house according to the method provided by Xie Wang and returned to Beiqi. He found the number one blacksmith among the players, "Lin Tie," to help him build an instrument that would be extremely helpful in breaking the "black light barrier."

[Realm-shattering dagger (Level 3 special tool)]:

[Item details: a special tool made of high-grade spiritual minerals and materials such as demon-breaking stone, shattered world iron, thousand refined gold, and so on. It is specially used to break seals, barriers, and other defensive barriers (the highest level it can break is ghost emperor level barriers)]

[Item special effect: shattered boundary (no cooldown), boundary point sense (sense the boundary's energy flow central point, only able to roughly determine its location. Skill Cooldown: 1 minute)]

[Durability: 1000/1000 (breaking the seal will consume the durability of the special tools, which can be repaired at the blacksmith's place)]

[Blacksmith: Lin Tie]

Looking at the dagger in his hand, which glowed with a black light, Hu He felt a bit of pain. In order to make this world-breaking divine weapon, he was going to go bankrupt.

However, when he thought about how he would still need it in the future, he finally felt better.

Then, he held the dagger and stabbed it into the black light barrier. The originally unbreakable barrier was like tofu under the World Shatterer's dagger. It was like a hot iron that was being burned. It was stabbed into the barrier without any hindrance.

At this moment, a blood-red thread appeared on the tip of the dagger and slowly pointed to the left of core Hu.

Seeing this, beard pulled out his dagger and decisively ran to the left where the blood line was pointing.

Although the dagger's interface point could only lock onto a general area, this wasn't a problem for Hu He. As long as he could lock onto the general area, he would naturally have a way to find the node.

After running for three kilometers, he stopped because the blood-red threads on the dagger had stopped pointing and retracted back into the dagger.

After making sure that the node was here, he walked up to the black light barrier and began to touch it. At the same time, he activated the [Energy fluctuation touch] ability he had learned from the skill Pavilion.

As he moved his palm, numbers began to appear in his eyes.

What he needed to find now was the area with the greatest energy fluctuations. That was definitely the central point of the barrier's energy flow.

When he touched the lower left corner of the barrier, Hu He suddenly revealed a happy expression.

This was because the energy fluctuation in this area was tens of thousands of times that of the nearby areas. It could be said that it had suddenly skyrocketed.

He immediately took out the realm piercing dagger and stabbed it into the area he had detected.

“Kacha!”

A crisp cracking sound was heard, and the area that was stabbed began to melt quickly, revealing an open area with a radius of about three meters.

[Game prompt: you have used the world Shatterer dagger to destroy the black light central node 1/5. Item durability consumed 100 points!]

When he saw the game notification, he couldn't help but laugh.

He knew that his method was correct, so breaking the last four barriers was not a problem at all.

Thinking of this, he got up and was about to look for other central points of the enchantment. At this time, he looked through the area without the enchantment and found that there was a tunnel inside.

The curious core Hu stepped over the barrier and entered, beginning to observe the tunnel.

It was pitch black inside, and he couldn't see anything clearly. He immediately took out the flashlight commonly used by grave robbers and began to search the interior.

This passage was very deep, and one couldn't see the end at a glance.

He didn't know why, but he suddenly felt an itch in his heart.

This had almost become an old habit of his in the game, and he simply couldn't restrain himself. After all, this thing was too attractive. Perhaps he could dig out a God when he entered, and then he would instantly rise up and become invincible ...

However, this tunnel was set up here and was so close to the center of the barrier, so it should be related to the barrier.

After some thought, he decided to go in and investigate. If possible, he wanted to cause some destruction.

Then, he waved his hand. The naked men behind him saw this and took out their flashlights, shovels, and other tools from the kit on their waists and began to arm themselves.

Although these 20 corpse spirits had only developed a basic level of intelligence and were still quite stupid, after being in contact with Hu He, he could still understand what he meant.

Just now, Hu He made a hand gesture, and a thought emerged in their minds like a conditioned reflex:

“Boss is going to dig up the tomb again!”

After the corpse spirits were all dressed, core Hu took the lead and walked into the tunnel. Seeing this, the other corpse spirits also followed.

This tunnel was very long, and even after walking for a few hours, Hu He still hadn't reached the end.

Looking at the map, Hu He realized that he had entered the strange Dragon tomb, which was also the area where evil king was.

This made him feel that Yuan Xu was up to something.

After another three hours of travel, Hu He was speechless.

This was too long. Could it be that it led to the central area of the strange Dragon tomb?

However, since he was already here, he wouldn't be willing to just leave like this, so he continued to walk forward patiently.

They walked for another half a day, leaving Hu He speechless. He almost thought that there was no end to this road.

Just as he was about to open the official forum and listen to music while walking, the view in front of him suddenly widened, and a corner appeared in the originally narrow passage.

Seeing this, he quickly gestured to the back and turned off the flashlight.

After the corpse spirits extinguished their lights, Hu He began to slowly walk forward.

When he reached the corner, he carefully stuck his head out and looked inside.

What appeared in front of them was a wide cave with a huge array inside. In the center of the array was a blue crystal that was shining with an icy blue light, illuminating the entire cave.

There were dozens of figures sitting cross-legged inside the formation.

Seeing this, Hu He was shocked and quickly retracted his head, thinking that Yuan Xu was in a meeting. However, he immediately felt that something was wrong.

As he sniffed, he smelled the scent of a corpse.

He was very familiar with this smell, it was also on his corpse spirit.

Puzzled, Hu He took out a body searching plate from his space.

Just as it had thought, the corpse Qi measuring needle on the body searching plate jumped to the red area, which was full.

“A corpse?” Puzzled, he stuck his head out again to observe.

Those figures were still sitting cross-legged on the ground, motionless.

Knowing that they hadn't discovered him, he immediately activated his analysis ability.

[Tuoba rulong (peak of ghost emperor, broken body)]:

“Corpse's information: the 154th official of the blue Void region. He spent his entire life in the military and once established the powerful Tuoba dynasty. His strength reached the peak of the ghost emperor realm. He was

so confident that he gave up the trial to become a God and chose to kill a God and seize the divine flame. In the end, he was killed by the Coiling Dragon immortal Lord of the heaven realm!”

When he saw this person’s information, he was first shocked, then ecstatic.

What a F * cking treasure!

As a corpse refiner, Hu He had a very low desire for equipment and life, but he was extremely eager for the corpses of experts.

After all, the stronger the corpse, the stronger he would be. Moreover, there was a high degree of freedom for all professions in the battle on call. As a corpse refiner, he was not limited by the number of corpse spirits he could bring. As long as he had a strong corpse as a Foundation, he could create an extremely large corpse spirit Army.

With excitement in his heart, he turned his gaze to the person beside Tuoba rulong.

[Xiao pojun (intermediate ghost emperor)]:

“Corpse’s information: the 87th official of the blue Void region. He was the clan leader of the ‘Army-breaking clan’ of the great domain of hell. After being defeated in the battle for resources in the great domain of hell, he fled with his remaining clansmen and came to the nine cauldron region (Blue Void region) at that time. He led his clansmen in a series of battles and roped in various forces, finally winning the position of official sovereign.” He was later used as a chess piece by the evil demon God and died in a game of chess against the northern Qi God.

When he saw this person’s information, Hu Zhongyuan only had one thought in his mind.

“I’m rich, I’m rich, I’m going to be rich!”

Chapter 371 - Yuanxu'S Father

They were all treasures!

After checking the information of more than ten corpses, he was extremely excited. He felt like he was about to faint from happiness. This was too exciting.

However, Hu He didn't make a move immediately. Instead, he observed again to make sure that there were no living people before carefully walking towards the array.

As he approached, the hazy blue light slowly scattered.

Hu He also curiously looked at the blue crystal in the center of the formation and activated the analysis ability.

[Evil demon formation (ancient God formation, energy loss)]:

[Formation information: a refining formation set up by the ancient evil demon God, buried deep under the strange Dragon tomb at the center of the vast void region. It intended to refine all living beings in the region as its own food. However, the evil demon God was defeated and died in the heaven and earth chess game. This formation has been buried underground for millions of years. It was accidentally discovered by Yuan Xu's subordinate, the ghost king, Meng mang, 23 days ago and was used.]

[Formation skills: spirit refining, demon refining (incomplete), blood refining, corpse refining, flame refining (incomplete)]

[Divine refining (incomplete): extract the consciousness of all living beings within the range of the formation and refine it into the spiritual medicine "Pearl of consciousness".]

[Demonic refinement (incomplete): all living beings within the range of the formation will be refined into demonic slaves that retain 80% of their

strength. They will also be branded with the demonic slave mark. They can not betray the demonic slave mark (only living beings above the ghost emperor realm can withstand the demonic refinement)]

[Blood refinement: turn all living beings within the range of the formation into blood food (requires the enhancement of the foundation stealing technique)]

[Corpse refining (in progress): refine the corpse of a dead expert into a corpse spirit for the array master to control. Retain 50% of the user's strength (corpse spirits have the ability to grow)]

[Curse refining (incomplete): can curse people, curse clan, and curse gods through the bloodline!]

Seeing the power of this formation, Hu He couldn't help but take a deep breath. He finally understood why Yuan Xu, that old bastard, had avoided the battle.

He wasn't just stirring up trouble, he was simply stirring up a world-shaking event!

Looking at the four energy lines connected to the formation and one of the already dim energy lines, he finally understood why there was a tunnel under the barrier. It was clear that the true purpose of the barrier was not to stop players from invading, but to absorb dark energy to replenish the energy consumed by the evil demon formation.

“He's simply a cunning old bastard, completely devoid of conscience!” After finding out the reason, he couldn't help but curse.

Although this “evil spirit array” only had the ability to refine blood and corpse, it was still extremely terrifying.

Hu He couldn't imagine what would happen if that old bastard Yuan Xu really turned these experts into corpse spirits.

At that time, even if the four major servers came together, they wouldn't be able to defeat void abyss, let alone the players 'expedition. By then, the players from the European server would probably have to move to Beiqi and squeeze with the players from Beiqi.

There were dozens of ghost emperors. No matter how strong the players 'heads were, they would not be able to defeat them even if they sacrificed their lives. It could be said that they had no chance of winning!

At this moment, nuclear Hu suddenly rejoiced that he had discovered it early. Otherwise, the European server would have collapsed.

Looking at the blue crystal, Hu He immediately picked up his shovel and hacked at it.

“Qiang!”

With a crisp sound, the crystal was unscathed, but the beard core was pushed away by a blue energy.

He got up from the ground and pointed at the blue crystal.

“Go, smash it!”

Hearing Hu He's order, the twenty or so men who had been standing at the back all picked up their shovels and ran towards the blue crystal.

The sound of metal clashing rang out continuously, and figures were sent flying by the formation's recoil.

After a series of strikes, the crystal was still unscathed. On the contrary, the shovels in their hands had chips, and their durability had dropped by a large amount.

Seeing this, he knew that breaking it by force wouldn't work.

So, he stepped into the evil demon array again and reached out to grab a corpse sitting cross-legged, trying to throw it into the space to see if he could cut off their connection with the evil demon array.

[Game prompt: this corpse is being refined and is connected to the evil demon formation. Please cut off the connection before trying to put it into the space!]

As expected, it didn't work!

This didn't work, that didn't work, what the hell was he supposed to do?

If he did not destroy this place, the European server would be doomed. He had to find a way.

Hu He scratched his head and fell into deep thought.

As he thought about it, an idea suddenly came to him. If Yuan Xu could control the formation to refine these corpses, why couldn't he?

Thinking of this, he suddenly felt a little excited. He quickly came to the crystal and reached out to touch it.

[Game prompt: this evil demon formation is now under the control of 'void abyss'. The mark of control can be erased if the user is of the same realm!]

When he saw this notification, Hu He instantly pulled a long face.

He was only a ghost Governor who had passed the trial of Ghost Governor. How could he have the power to erase Yuan Xu's Mark?

Nuclear Hu couldn't help but take a deep breath. He felt that the European server was really done for this time!

However, it was not his style to give up just like that, so he began to knock around the array, even trying to cut off the other four energy lines that provided dark energy.

However, since the nodes were not destroyed, the energy lines would automatically recover the moment they were cut off, which made Hu He a little crazy.

The refining formation set up by the evil demon God had left him helpless. It could be said that he had no way to deal with it.

The angry core Hu was about to try to destroy it again with brute force. At this moment, he suddenly saw a figure sitting cross-legged in the array from the corner of his eye. He couldn't help but be stunned.

This was because the figure looked very familiar!

Thinking of this, he activated his analysis ability.

[Demonic void (intermediate ghost emperor, incomplete)]:

[Corpse's information: once the official sovereign of the demon void great domain, Yuan Xu's father. Controlled the demon void great domain for 380000 years. Later, he was killed by Yuan Xu and his official sovereign position was taken away.]

Looking at the corpse's analysis panel, Hu He was stunned.

“What an unfilial son! He killed his father to prove his Dao, and now he wants to refine it? is he still human? he's just an animal!” Hu He couldn't help but ridicule.

When he saw the corpse's information, he was surprised, but when he thought about it carefully, he wasn't surprised.

He had interacted with Yuan Xu before and knew that this guy was ruthless. He didn't care about feelings at all. As long as there were benefits, he would do anything.

Looking at mo Xu, who was sitting cross-legged on the ground with half of his body missing, Hu He suddenly had a crazy idea.

Should I try?

Now, it was extremely difficult for him to refine a ghost king realm corpse spirit. It was almost impossible for him to refine a ghost emperor realm

corpse directly. Moreover, he had never succeeded in refining Hanba before.

However, at this moment, it seemed that there was no other way. This corpse was in the ghost emperor realm. After refining it, the mark on the crystal might be erased.

At the thought of this, Hu Zhong's heart was filled with determination. Let's do it!

He strode to mo Xu, took out a series of tools from the space, and started to set up the refining formation beside mo Xu.

Corpse refining powder, enslavement powder, spirit-summoning array, and so on. As he became more and more experienced, Hu He's tools had increased from only refining arrays to more than 20, filling up a circle around mo Xu.

This time, Hu He even asked the 23 corpse spirits to sit around the devil void realm, preparing to ask them to help him refine the devil void realm.

After the complicated steps were completed, he activated the corpse refining formation. Immediately, black mist rose from the corpse refining formation and entered mo Xu's body.

As he began to refine, he suddenly discovered to his surprise that the efficiency of the corpse refining array had increased.

At this time, the black fog in the corpse refining array was constantly emerging, and the efficiency was several times higher than that of Hu He's previous refining.

While he was surprised, he looked at the crystal.

Dark energy? My formation can also be strengthened?

This discovery was truly a pleasant surprise. Hu He, who originally didn't have much confidence, suddenly had confidence.

After that, he calmed down and started to refine the devil void realm.

While he was refining, he realized that mo Xu's body was already filled with a lot of refined black mist. This black mist was obviously provided by the evil spirit formation, and was completely different from his own.

Hu He started to try to drive the black mist out of Yuan Xu's body.

Since no one was in control of the evil spirit array, the unconscious black mist was easily driven out of mo Xu's body by Hu He.

Seeing that it was effective, he began to speed up the refining process. The 23 corpse spirits sitting around him also began to help him activate the "corpse refining formation," speeding up the emergence of the black mist.

An hour later, Hu He's forehead was covered in sweat and his hands were shaking. He realized that he couldn't control the black mist to merge into mo Xu's body.

This was because mo Xu's body was just like Hanba 's, too solid. It was not something that he could refine at his current stage.

After another attempt, he suddenly sighed and retracted his hands.

The attempt failed again!

This time, Hu He really couldn't think of a way. The formation couldn't be destroyed, and the corpse spirit transformation couldn't be done either. It was simply a flawless 360-degree defense with no blind spots.

Vexed, endless vexed.

At this moment, he was already thinking about whether he should post a post on the official forum to let the players from the European server escape in advance.

After all, once all the undead spirits were refined, Xu Yuan would be so powerful that even the players from the European server who could revive 10 times in a row would not be his match.

Right, the forums!

Nuclear Hu suddenly thought that he might as well ask the players for help. There were all kinds of players on the forum, so he might be able to find a way there.

Therefore, he decisively opened the forum panel and took a picture of the situation around him. Then, he posted a post on the Chinese and European servers.

[You guys might not believe it, but the European server is about to collapse. I'm asking all the players to come up with a good idea!]

[Building head: corpse driver]

[Content: (detailed explanation)(video attached)]

Such a gimmick-filled post would usually die down quickly, but it was different this time. The person who posted it was 'corpse transporter', or Hu He, a man with the aura of a natural disaster.

Soon, a large number of players flooded the post.

Crayon Shinchan: "you scared me. When I saw the title and the OP's name, I thought 'cancer' was going to do something big again."(Funny)

Cosmic stars (ou):"Oh my God, dozens of ghost emperors. You have to take care of them, Demon King. Otherwise, we're really done for."(Frightened.jpg)

McRae (ou):"Oh my God, is it that scary? Demon King, you must stay calm. It's all up to you. Everyone, help me think of a way."

Rolling Earth Dragon (ou):"it's over, it's over. If these ghost emperors are really refined by Yuan Xu, we can only go to Beiqi and fight for territory with the players from the central server."(Crying.jpg)

[The strongest Sidney replied to rolling Earth Dragon, you guys try it (blood dripping knife)]

.....

At this time, the players were wailing in the European Forum. After seeing Hu He's post, they almost broke down.

A few dozen ghost emperors!

They were having a headache dealing with one void abyss, so how could they fight dozens of ghost emperors? thus, the players quickly United and began to discuss what to do.

Looking at the players' discussion, nuclear Hu was also thinking if there was any other way.

At this moment, a player's suggestion made his eyes light up.

Yin Xiaoqi was a mature woman."Demon King, weren't you very weak when you stole Setsuna's head? and you successfully refined it. So, why don't you try to twist off Yuan Xu's father's head and piece it back together?"

Seeing this reply, core Hu's eyes lit up and he slapped his thigh:

"That's a good idea! Why didn't I think of that before?"

Chapter 372 - Syria Players

Seeing the players' various replies on the official forum, a smile appeared on Nuclear Hu's face.

At this time, a large number of players on the forum were asking for Nuclear Hu to turn on his livestream. They said that they wanted to discuss and come up with a plan for him to get this matter settled, but in reality, they all wanted to see the Demon King Nuclear Hu do something.

Nuclear Hu thought about it and decided to start the livestream. After all, the players' suggestions were indeed helpful to him.

The moment the live stream was opened, countless players flooded in. In just a few minutes, Nuclear Hu's live stream was pushed to the top of the official website's trending page.

At the same time, a large group of onlookers began to comment, [the devil is causing trouble!].

After taking a look at the live broadcast room, he once again focused his attention on the "evil spirit array."

In fact, it wasn't that Nuclear Hu didn't think about cutting off the other four central points of the enchantment and cutting off the energy supply here.

However, there were risks in doing so. After all, he did not know when the ghost emperors would be refined. If he did not make it in time, he would be done for in the European server.

However, Yin Xiaoqi's reply gave him an idea.

Previously, he had been too nervous and had forgotten that part of the refining process could increase the efficiency of refining.

Nuclear Hu immediately ordered his corpse spirits to pull Mo Xu's body.

However, mo Xu's corpse was the same as Hanba 's, both were extremely hard. Even though his subordinate corpse spirit had already reached the realm of half-step ghost king, it was still unable to pull mo Xu's head off its body even if it used all its strength.

Faced with this problem, Hu He took out his own corpse powder and smeared it on mo Xu's neck. Then, he began to command the corpse spirits to pull him up again.

“One, two ... Pull!”

“One, two ... Pull!”

“One, two ... Pull!”

The players in the livestream burst into laughter when they saw this.

Crayon Shinchuan,[big cancer, look behind you. Hollow abyss is watching you.]

Cosmic stars (ou):”all the best, Devil King. After this, our Guild will pay for all your expenses in breaking the seal.”

Jason (ou):”Great Demon King, it's all up to you now. I've sent you the 10000 soul coins sponsorship through email. Check it. Good luck!”

Big Green Dragon (ou):”hahaha, I'm so happy to see this after fighting with Yuan Xu for so long. Maybe I'm just too resentful of him.”(Funny)

[Roasting Chang 'e while holding a Jade Rabbit: pfft, haha, the European server is about to collapse. Is it really good for you to be so happy?]

[Goblin battleship: void abyss: F ** K, just you wait (funny)]

Suikua Taro: “shocking. More than 20 naked men are actually doing this. This is a large-scale dismemberment scene. I'm still a child. This is too scary. I'm going to call the police (funny).”

.....

While Hu He was working hard, the audience in the live broadcast room was extremely lively. The bullet comments were crazily flashing across the screen. If it wasn't for the bullet screen restriction, the screen wouldn't have been clear at all.

Under Hu He's command, his subordinate corpse spirits stood on two ends, one pulling on the shoulder, the other pulling on the head, the scene was inexplicably funny.

However, in Hu He's eyes, this was a very serious matter. After all, if he couldn't pull his head off, everything would be in vain.

As time passed, Hu He's expression became more and more serious.

The players who had been making a scene in the livestream room also realized that something was wrong. They all stopped refreshing the bullet screen and focused on the situation.

If the blue Void great domain was occupied by void abyss, the impact would definitely not be as simple as the European server players.

With dozens of ghost emperor corpse spirits in his hands, Yuan Xu's ambition would definitely be extremely inflated. Therefore, his next target was likely to be the Beiqi region. This was something that the players of both servers did not want to see.

After another attempt, core Hu stopped the "tug-of-war" of the undead spirits and opened the live broadcast Panel:

"Are there any alchemists in the livestream? Who would know how to refine corpse refining powder? It's best if it's corpse powder, either way, I need high-quality ones!"

As he spoke, he took out a bag of medicine, opened the analysis, and displayed it in the live broadcast room.

[Corpse powder (Grade 2 potion)]:

[Potion introduction: a special Tier 2 potion made by grinding and mixing bone-corroding worm powder, Hunyuan water, blue nightmare flower and seven other medicinal materials.]

[Potion effect: possesses a powerful corrosive property, can cause continuous damage, can also be used to refine corpses]

[Potion quality: 19]

Seeing the analysis panel of the drug in nuclear Hu's hand, the comments section became lively again.

Many players who had changed their profession to pharmacist in Beiqi immediately began to reply in the livestream room, saying that there was no problem and that they would start making it immediately.

“Thank you,” he said, then started waiting.

At this moment, a comment from someone in the live broadcast room caught the attention of Hu He.

Syria player: actually, you can try using the Tier 4 potion ‘corpse dissolving water’. I’ve seen this potion in the potion refining manual before, and it’s very effective. It’s originally used for assassination or throwing when facing an enemy, but you’re refining a ghost emperor. Although this potion can’t dissolve the corpse of the demonic void, I don’t think it’ll have a problem breaking its defense. And no matter how good the quality of the Tier 2 corpse dissolving powder is, it probably won’t be able to break its defense.

Core Hu’s heart stirred when he saw this comment.

In his opinion, using corpse powder to break through the demonic void’s defense was indeed too much. It was basically impossible. He had also considered using corpse dissolving water, which was of a higher tier, but the apothecary profession had just been released. It was already difficult to refine Tier 3 medicine. No one had ever refined Tier 4 medicine, so Hu He felt that it was unrealistic.

After some thought, he clicked on the comment and replied with anticipation,”

“Brother, do you know how to refine corpse dissolving water?”

“I ... I don't know how to, but I can guide others in their refinement!” The player quickly replied to Hu He's question.

Seeing this reply, Hu He was instantly stunned. He didn't know how to refine it, but he could still guide others to refine it. Was this a joke?

Syria's player: it's true. Believe me. Although I'm not good at refining potions, I've already studied the beginner Books for mid-apothecary. My basic knowledge is very solid. I dare to guarantee that there's no apothecary more proficient in apothecary knowledge than me.

Seeing this person's reply, core Hu thought for a moment before replying:

“Alright, I believe you. I'll help you find an Alchemist!”

Then, core Hu closed the reply panel and said to the players in the livestream,”

“Are there any more amazing apothecaries in the livestream? contact this Syria player and let's give it a try. Let's work hard together!”

After hearing Hu He's reply, a group of apothecary players immediately contacted this “Syria player.”

.....

At this moment, nie Feng, who was far away in Beiqi, received a call from dozens of alchemists.

He was very familiar with the names of these alchemists. They were all from the same batch of students who were taking alchemy lessons at Boulder's side.

He scanned through the list of names and chose a reliable Alchemist to add as a friend.

After adding him as a friend, nie Feng sent his coordinates to The Alchemist player. At the same time, he also received the coordinates from the player. Then, the two of them began to run toward each other's position.

.....

While waiting, time passed by bit by bit.

During this period, many players had already sent him the high-quality corpse powder that they had refined, and he had tried them one by one.

However, the result was just as the 'Syria player' had said. There was no effect at all, and they could not break through the demonic void's defense at all.

Under such circumstances, Hu He could only hope that the "Syria player" would bring him a surprise.

Another half an hour passed.

Just as he was about to try again with the corpse dissolving water, the game notification rang.

[Game prompt: received mail from player nie Feng, please check and accept!]

Seeing this, he quickly opened the email.

[Sender: nie Feng]

[Details: Hello Demon King, I'm a 'Syria player'. The corpse dissolving water you asked for has been completed. Fortunately, I did not fail you. However, I failed several times during the process. The 'quality' of the finished product this time is a little low. Let's hope it succeeds. Good luck (bronze equipment looks good on you.jpg)]

Looking at the bottle of purple potion in his mail inventory, core Hu's face revealed a happy expression.

Originally, he did not have much hope in refining the corpse dissolving water, but he did not expect this player to really bring him a huge surprise.

Hu He immediately took out the medicine in the mail.

[Corpse dissolving water (Tier 4 potion)]

[Potion introduction: mid-grade potion, made from more than 20 types of medicinal materials. Extremely corrosive, increases damage to undead creatures (depends on quality)]

[Special effect: strong corrosion (Level 4), corpse transformation (Level 4)]

[Potion quality: 13]

Potion creator: Lin Xiaodong

Looking at the tube of medicine, Hu He knew that there was really hope of taking down mo Xu this time.

He immediately walked in front of mo Xu, pulled out the stopper of the potion, and carefully poured the corpse dissolving water on mo Xu's neck.

This time, it was obviously effective. Dense bubbles started to appear on mo Xu's neck, and a pink line appeared.

"It's really effective!" Hu He couldn't help but clench his fists.

After that, Hu He poured the liquid evenly around mo Xu's neck. When the liquid reacted with mo Xu's skin, he began to command the corpse spirits to "tug of war" again.

Under the corrosion of the potion, the demonic void's neck was no longer as strong as before. Under the strong pulling of the undead spirits, it finally began to separate bit by bit.

“Pa!”

The crisp sound of bone and flesh being separated could be heard. Mo Xu’s head was finally separated from his body.

Seeing this, the players in the livestream room cheered.

Taking the head from the corpse spirit, Hu He couldn’t help but laugh.

With this head, this crisis might be resolved, and his strength would also be greatly improved. He was really overjoyed.

He tried to throw mo Xu’s head into the space.

Since mo Xu’s head had already been separated from his body, the game notification did not appear this time. It was easily kept into the medium by Hu He.

Looking at the remaining half of the corpse dissolving water, Hu He couldn’t help but look at the other body parts of mo Xu.

Knowing that he couldn’t take the body with this little amount of medicine, Hu He focused his eyes on mo Xu’s limbs.

Hu He had never had any ability to resist corpses, otherwise he wouldn’t have made so many mistakes.

Thus, he was prepared to make his move again.

However, just as Hu Zi was pouring the corpse dissolving water, a figure suddenly appeared from the right side of the tunnel.

When he saw someone appear, he was also shocked and immediately turned to look.

Void abyss!

He immediately recognized the man.

Yuan Xu was also stunned. He also recognized the pit of beard, but in his memory, the pit of beard was dead.

Also, the twenty naked men behind him looked familiar.

They were all resurrected!

Yuan Xu's eyes widened at the thought of this.

Then, he looked at the corpse under Hu He and his eyes widened.

Because the head of mo Xu's corpse, which was his father's head ...

It was F * cking gone!

Chapter 373 - Young Man, The Organization Needs You!

Yuan Xu's sudden appearance caught Hu He off guard, who was preparing to remove Mo Xu's arm.

The two of them just stared at each other.

As they looked at each other, Yuan Xu's expression gradually became ferocious, while Hu He's smile gradually froze.

The atmosphere became extremely awkward.

"It's you! You're actually resurrected!" Yuan Xu's face was dark as he walked towards Hu He.

"Unfilial son, your father is in my hands. Try touching me!" Hu He immediately raised Mo Xu's badly damaged body and threatened.

Although Hu He knew that Yuan Xu didn't care, he still wanted to threaten him and put up a last-ditch struggle.

What if this unfilial son of his suddenly became filial?

However, nothing unexpected happened. Mo Xu's expression didn't change as he continued to walk toward Hu He.

When he was not far from Hu He, Yuan Xu stopped and looked at the corpse spirits behind him.

"So you're the only one who resurrected. They've all turned into corpse spirits, and you're a corpse refiner?"

"I'm your father!" Knowing that he couldn't escape this calamity, Hu He didn't bother to waste any more time with Yuan Xu. He pointed at Yuan Xu,

and the undead spirits behind him immediately pounced toward mo Xu.

Seeing this, Yuan Xu's face turned cold. He waved his hand and sent a few corpse spirits flying. His body flashed and he quickly rushed toward Hu He.

The surrounding corpse spirits saw this and immediately blocked in front of Hu He.

However, the corpse spirits were no match for the powerful Yuan Xu, even if they were half-step ghost kings.

Under Yuan Xu's charge, they were all sent flying. At this moment, Yuan Xu arrived in front of Hu He, grabbed his neck, and slowly lifted him up.

"It's not a virtual body, it's a physical body. You're really resurrected!" Looking at Hu He, Yuan Xu couldn't believe it.

"I still want to revive your father and then teach you a lesson, you unfilial son!" Hu He continued to argue.

Hearing this, Yuan Xu revealed a ferocious smile."

"Speaking of which, you and I have a deep relationship. You rejected my invitation to surrender, so I'm giving you another chance now. Will you cherish it?"

"I regret it so much. Why did I let a scourge like you out!" Hearing Yuan Xu's words, Hu He thought back to his mistake of releasing Yuan Xu and felt regretful.

"Don't come to a conclusion so early. Think about it carefully. When I refine these Masters who once commanded the wind and clouds in this large domain, how powerful will I be? If you follow me, your future will be limitless. As long as I obtain the second domain or become a God, I can grant you the position of official sovereign!"

Even though he had a bad attitude, Yuan Xu didn't kill him. He had come into contact with him a few times and knew how valuable he was.

Back then, he had a huge advantage and could have easily taken over this region with the help of the powerful original Cangxu Army. However, Hu He's frequent release of natural disasters had muddled the situation, which led to the current situation.

Originally, he hated Hu He very much, but it was different now.

Now that he was in control of the "evil spirit array," Hu He's ability to easily find seals and the corpses of experts was too valuable to him.

Therefore, Yuan Xu wanted to try to make Hu He surrender.

He believed that as long as Hu He was loyal to him, then with his ability, he would be able to obtain a powerful and incomparably large undead army. At that time, he would be the uncrowned king under the gods.

"I know what you're thinking. It's a pity that I can't be at ease to be loyal to an unfilial son like you who even killed his own father!"

Hearing this, Yuan Xu's face darkened. He had already restrained his temper towards Hu He, but he didn't expect Hu He wouldn't give him any face at all.

"It seems that your choice this time is still the same as before!" Yuan Xu asked again.

"I don't negotiate with animals," Hu He continued.

"Then go to hell!"

Yuan Xu had already lost his patience. His right arm that was grabbing Hu He's neck expanded. Under the huge force, Hu He's neck was instantly broken, and he turned into black mist and disappeared.

Yuan Xu's expression turned serious as he saw Hu He turn into black mist and disappear.

After coming into contact with Yuan Xu, he was sure that Hu He's body was solid, and there was a soul in his body. However, both his soul and

body had disappeared into thin air.

And this time, not only did Hu He's corpse disappear, but even the 20 corpse spirits had disappeared as well. It was all very strange.

At this moment, Yuan Xu thought of the player clan, one of the evil King's subordinate forces, which had been fighting with his own Yuan Xu Army recently.

Could he be a player?

The confused Yuan Xu turned his gaze to mo Xu's body on the ground and started to scan the surroundings of the evil demon formation.

From Yuan Xu's point of view, the head should have been hidden by the beard core. After all, a spatial law-type tool was not something a weakling like him could have.

However, after searching around and even using his consciousness to search, Yuan Xu was surprised to find that his father's head had really disappeared.

At this moment, Yuan Xu was a little confused. He felt that Hu He was too strange ...

.....

After logging out of the game, Hu He didn't choose to go offline. Instead, he continued to lie in the gaming capsule and opened the official forum of the war.

Although he'd already known that Yuan Xu would come when he'd destroyed the 'evil spirit formation', he'd still been caught off guard when he'd actually appeared.

He knew that he was completely helpless against the powerful Yuan Xu. It was normal for him to die.

However, the three-hour cooldown for resurrection was still very uncomfortable for him.

Regarding this game, Hu He loved and hated it at the same time. He loved its realness, freedom, and fairness, but he hated its rigidity and the way it refused to compromise with the players.

For example, opening a channel for soul coins to top up, removing the three-hour cooldown of resurrection, increasing the frequency of game activities, and so on ...

The officials had always ignored the strong feedback from the players.

Moreover, the officials of war gave the players the impression that they were making the game seriously. As for whether the players wanted to play it or not, it was up to them. Such a scamming attitude.

If it was any other game, he believed that the players would have flipped the table and quit.

However, in the face of conquest online, the players realized that they could not bring out anything to threaten the official website after several collective protests.

This made the players very worried, and this naturally included nuclear beard.

The torturous three hours had just begun, so he decided to browse the official forums to pass the time.

At this time, a post on the Chinese server's forum caught his attention.

[You killed one person by name. Player "nie Feng," where have you gone? aren't you going to provide the explosive pills?] [Did he swallow our Guild's mystical materials and run away?]

[Op: werewolf splitter]

Content:

Today, a player named nie Feng was killed. The name of the player on the forum was unknown.

This was because during the war with the nine glory Army, the explosive pills made by this player named nie Feng were very effective and powerful. They were strategic materials that many guilds fought for.

In order to ensure that he could make potions better, our Guild decided to pay him a batch of mystical materials and store them in advance so that he could make them as much as he wanted. In the beginning, he did provide our Guild with two batches of explosive pills. However, this guy didn't provide them later on and kept saying that he was busy. Now, you've been busy for a month, right? brother, if you're really busy, can you return some of the mystical materials? The rest will be your reward for making the explosive pills!

Reply:

Soul Blade: "F * ck, brother. Are you in the same situation?" I'm the same!

Ye Xue 'er was the cutest,[pfft~I already know that three guilds' mystical materials are in his hands and he has not returned them yet. But I still gave him a chance to return them ...]

A mammoth: "I'm f * cking drunk too. The excuse he told me was that he had been failing in his production recently and had to take a break. It turns out that our Guild wasn't the only one who was cheated (instant disbelief face.jpg)."

[Slaying the heavens: 666, so you guys are in the same situation. Looks like I'm not alone. This trap is really big. So many people actually went in (funny)]

.....

This post was originally just a post for people to post, but it blew up a bunch of guilds that had been scammed and became a hot post in an instant.

While he was reading the post, he suddenly felt that the name “nie Feng” was very familiar. After thinking about it carefully, he suddenly remembered.

Wasn’t this the great apothecary who had given him the corpse dissolving water and could guide others in refining Tier 4 potions!

I didn’t expect him to be this kind of person!

Hu He originally had a good impression of nie Feng, but seeing so many powerful guilds condemning him at the same time, he couldn’t help but sigh.

At this moment, another post appeared on the Chinese forum. What caught nuclear Hu’s attention was that the person who posted it was the “Syria player,” nie Feng.

He immediately opened the post.

[Okay, I’ll be honest. I’ll really be honest. I can’t take it anymore. I’ll tell you the truth. I hope you can understand!] [Op: Syria player]

Content:

I know that everyone is looking for me. Many guilds have hoarded a large number of mystical materials with me. There are hundreds of thousands of soul coins in total. This is definitely not a small amount!

“Originally, I only wanted to provide some help to the people who were fighting against the nine glory Army by refining the explosive pills for free. I’m very grateful that you all trust me and give me so many valuable mystical materials!

But I promise you, I didn’t take these mystical materials for myself. I’m not that kind of person!

“Now, let’s talk about the cause of this incident. When the nine glory Army attacked, many lifestyle players and I were refining potions or forging tools in hell to act as your logistics support and contribute to the war.

However, who would have thought that Dayao would suddenly appear in Hades city with the nine glory Army's soldiers? the situation was extremely urgent at that time. Although many lifestyle players and NPCs tried their best to resist, they could not stop the Army led by sunlight.

"I was really sad when I saw them die one by one. Among them were my teachers and my friends ...

In the end, I was so hot-headed that I suddenly remembered that I could make explosive pills. Moreover, the stronger the medicinal effect, the more powerful the power. Under that situation, I really went to make it, and threw all the medicinal ingredients you gave into teacher Boulder's alchemy furnace ...

I don't know how I did it, but the medicine furnace that should have exploded at the beginning was controlled by me until the last moment, and the power was beyond my imagination ...

I admit it. I was the one who blew up hell (tears). Everyone, please forgive me. I did it for Beiqi, for our common home. Everything was unintentional. Please forgive me (tears).

(Attached was a picture of the refining process.)

Reply:

Crayon Shin-chan: "from the name of your forum, you seem to know your place very well (funny). However, you're not just a Syria player. You're basically a combination of Iraq players + Taliban players + Syrian players. It's a pity that you're not a terrorist (funny)."

Suika Tairo: "Oh my God~I was wondering why riyao was so seriously injured at that time. Now all the suspicious points make sense. You're really a F * cking nuclear weapon, terrifying!"

Roasting Chang 'e while holding a Jade Rabbit: "F * ck, big brother, your revenge is too cruel and brutal. You've blown up our house (bloody knife)"

The strongest Xue Li: “why didn’t you just admit it earlier? we all thought that you had stolen our mystical materials. However, when hell recovers, you better not refine any more potions in hell. My heart isn’t in a good condition. If you do this again, I’ll die on the spot (bloody knife).”

[Fearsome! Once the underworld is rebuilt, you’ll have to move to the next Ghost Mountain range to refine medicine. Don’t ever come to Beiqi, or I’ll issue a wanted order to hunt you down!]

Storm Warrior: how terrifying. When I first joined the Panshi training class with you, I already felt that you were a dangerous person. Every time you refined potions, you caused such a huge commotion. I didn’t expect you to be even more terrifying than I thought. Society, society. Big Boss nie Feng, you’re really an unsolvable explosive man (funny)

Crayon Shinchuan typed, “young man, the organization needs you!” (Emoji)!

.....

Seeing the content of the post, he finally understood what was going on.

At that time, the explosion in underworld had caused a huge commotion. Basically, all players had thought that sunlight was the culprit. After all, other than sunlight, no other player had the ability to destroy the world.

However, if it was really riyao who did it, there were many suspicious points.

For example, if sunlight wanted to occupy Beiqi, why did they destroy the most important underworld? or why did they die after destroying underworld?

This time, after nie Feng posted an explanation and attached a picture, all the suspicious points were cleared.

At this moment, even Hu He had to admit that these “Syria players” were really cruel. They were basically cancer!

At this moment, core Hu had taken on the role of a bystander, completely forgetting that he was the biggest cancer recognized by the Conqueror players!

As he replied to the post, he suddenly had an idea.

Didn't he know how to make nuclear bombs?

Could the demonic array under the strange Dragon tomb be blown up?

Chapter 374 - The Great Demon King And The Explosive Man

Thinking of this, he immediately opened his email on the forum and found the email sent by nie Feng. Then, he opened the profile picture of the “Syria player” and chose to add him as a friend.

Right now, he was truly at a loss as to how to destroy the evil spirit array.

Moreover, Yuan Xu should have discovered the broken point of the boundary by now and would definitely repair it to speed up the refining of the evil demon formation.

In fact, Yuan Xu might even become more vigilant and station soldiers at the center of each barrier to prevent the same thing from happening again.

Therefore, it was very difficult for core Hu to destroy the evil spirit array.

Even if he managed to escape from Yuan Xu’s troops and enter the evil demon formation, it was still uncertain if mo Xu’s head could destroy the evil demon formation.

However, things were different now. After finding out that there was such a “malignant tumor” like nie Feng, and searching for his apothecary achievements, Hu He felt that he could totally find him to cooperate with and blow up the entire evil demon array, eliminating any future trouble.

While he was waiting, nie Feng accepted his friend request.

With a heart full of anticipation, he immediately opened the dialog box.

“Brother nie Feng, I have a big deal here and I need your help!”

[Nie Feng: F * ck, the devil added me as a friend. Scary (scared eyes.jpg)]

[Core of beard: what's there to be afraid of?]

Nie Feng: “you're a Demon King with a malignant tumor. When you first entered the game, you were a demonic natural disaster. I, a newbie, was really miserable (wiping my tears). I really wanted to stab you with a knife or two at that time.”

[Core of beard: you're the cancer (exasperated). By the way, do you want to help me?]

Nie Feng said, “Demon King, I'm sorry. I'm really busy. I have to find a way to pay off my debt. Several big guilds said that they don't want to pay, but a few small guilds don't have any money. Their mystical materials are basically all in their inventory. Although they said that they don't need to pay, they can't live with their conscience. They're preparing to make explosive pills and sell them to save money to pay off their debt!”

“Well done!” But if you come with me and do this, you'll be rich immediately. I guarantee you'll be able to pay off your debts and even have a surplus!

Nie Feng, “what is it?” Are you going to harm something again? I'm very kind (fearful eyes)

Core hu: “am I that kind of person? I'm going to destroy the demon formation this time. You've seen it on the livestream. The demon formation is too strong. It's impossible to destroy it with brute force. But with you, it's definitely not a problem. By then, there will be many big guilds in the European server funding this!”

Nie Feng: “I seem to understand what you want me to do ... But I can't control the effects of the medicine. Last time, I already exceeded my usual performance. I definitely can't do it now.”

Core hu: “you won't know if you don't try. Young man, the organization needs you. Don't hesitate, you're going to save the entire European server!”

[Nie Feng: let me think about it. Please wait a moment, Great Demon King ...]

.....

After nie Feng said that he would consider it, Hu He began to wait anxiously.

Now, he was afraid that nie Feng would disagree. After all, nie Feng was the core of his plan. Without him, he would have to think of another way.

About half an hour later, he noticed a notification in the chat box. He immediately opened it and saw that it was nie Feng's reply.

“Great Demon King, I'll join your organization. Let's destroy the world together. No, let's save the world!”

Seeing this reply, Hu He couldn't help but laugh. He immediately replied to nie Feng, asking him to come to the blue Void domain from the ghost Mountain range and pick him up.

After getting a reply, he opened his friends list and found a group for European guilds.

Then, he told them about nie Feng's participation in the group. He also said that he needed mystical materials to destroy the evil demon array and needed the funding of the major guilds.

The Guild leaders in the group immediately agreed to Hu He's request and asked him how many mystical materials he needed.

Hu He wasn't sure about this either, so he went to look for nie Feng to ask about the amount of spirit ingredients needed to make a nuclear bomb.

Nie Feng's reply only consisted of four words.

“The more the better!”

Seeing this reply, core Hu was helpless, so he replied to the message in the European server guild group chat.

None of the Guild leaders refused Hu He's request. After all, this matter concerned the entire green void domain. If the entire green void domain was really occupied by Yuan Xu, their losses would be irreparable.

In fact, they might not even have anywhere to go.

After all, Beiqi was the territory of the players from the central server. Although everyone was a player, because of competition, conflicts were bound to exist. They would definitely become the target of expulsion by the players of Beiqi.

Therefore, the core of beard was their life-saving straw. It was not a problem for them to need a large number of mystical materials.

Many guilds immediately started to get busy. Even small guilds started to find guild members to gather mystical materials.

The prices of mystical materials in the entire European auction house started to soar.

In about half a day, the price of the mystical materials in the European server had increased by a third.

The prices of mystical materials were stable now. The increase in prices made many solo players who needed mystical materials feel scared. They almost had a mental breakdown. They thought that the prices of mystical materials in the European server were going to skyrocket and that poor players like them were going to die.

For more than half a day, while Hu He was waiting, nearly 50000 mystical materials were sent to his account by mail.

At this moment, he felt that he was really rich!

However, these mystical materials were not for him. They were for the "cancer Bomb Man" that he was preparing to receive.

At this moment, Hu He was at the border between the blue Void region and the ghost Mountain range, waiting for nie Feng's arrival.

During this period, nie Feng constantly sent his coordinates to him to report his position.

At this moment, the two of them were already less than a kilometer away.

At this moment, Hu He was filled with anticipation. What did this nie Feng look like? did he have three heads and six arms? otherwise, how could he have such terrifying destructive power and be such a "tumor"?

A moment later, nie Feng's figure appeared in his line of sight. To his disappointment, nie Feng didn't have three heads and six arms. He was just a gentle-looking young man.

This made Hu He couldn't help but curl his lips. He felt that nie Feng's appearance didn't match his title of "cancer Bomber Man" at all. He was so weak!

Seeing Hu He's wave, nie Feng immediately quickened his pace and jogged to his side,

"The Great Demon King?"

"Explosive man?"

Then, the two of them looked at each other and smiled. Everything was said without words.

"Is this the blue Void domain? I've never been here before, I've only seen it in videos." At this moment, nie Feng was a little curious.

"There's nothing much to see. The scenery and environment are different, but everything else is similar. After all, the vast void and the northern divergent are neighbors. In comparison, the difference between the hell server and the Asia server is bigger. I have to go and take a look when I have time in the future!"

“Then the players from those two servers will have a headache ...” Nie Feng suddenly stopped talking. He could clearly feel the killing intent from core Hu.

“Let’s go. We’ll head to Hidden Dragon Village first. There’s a teleportation array that leads directly to the demon territory. Then, we’ll head directly to the strange Dragon tomb. I’m afraid that something will happen if we delay!” Nuclear Hu said.

At this time, Hu He was still a little worried. After all, he couldn’t grasp the exact time needed for the “evil demon formation” to refine those ghost emperor level experts. In other words, danger could come at any time, so his heart was filled with urgency.

Nie Feng quickly nodded. He didn’t know why, or maybe it was because there were too many legends about the Great Demon King Hu He felt a faint fear when he faced him.

After that, Hu He brought nie Feng to Hidden Dragon Village.

Along the way, nie Feng’s eyes kept looking around. It was obvious that this was his first time coming to the blue Void domain and his heart was filled with curiosity.

After arriving at Hidden Dragon Village, the completely different style of buildings attracted nie Feng even more. It even made him have the impulse to stop and admire and research.

Of course, this was stopped by Hu He.

Along the way, nie Feng gave Hu He the feeling that he was curious about everything and wanted to study everything. He had always maintained a curious attitude. At this moment, Hu He finally understood why nie Feng was so good at alchemy. He was simply a scholar who was always thinking about how to absorb knowledge.

However, he had gone astray and walked the path of the explosive man!

The two of them chatted as they walked. After two teleportations and half a day of traveling, they finally arrived at the area where the “black light barrier” was.

At this time, Hu He waved his hand and summoned his corpse spirit, getting ready for battle.

After all, as long as Yuan Xu was cautious enough, he would not let the same thing happen twice. He would probably send troops to guard the place.

Nie Feng’s curiosity was piqued once more when he saw the 20 corpse spirits that Hu He had summoned. He walked towards one of the corpse spirits and began to examine it.

“So powerful! You’re actually a half-step ghost king. There aren’t many players with the strength of a ghost Governor, but you have more than 20 half-step ghost kings. You’re invincible!” Nie Feng was a little excited.

“These are my brothers, don’t touch them!” Hu He rolled his eyes.

Nie Feng nodded, then turned to look at Hu He with some anticipation,

“Great Demon King, can I learn to refine corpses?”

When he heard this, he was about to reply “no problem” when he suddenly realized something and coughed twice.

“Ahem, there’s nothing to learn about this. It’s very hard. If you don’t have a strong mind, you’ll be scared to death.”

“I think I’m pretty strong-willed!” Nie Feng blinked his eyes.

“Good, your Grandpa!” Hu Zhong cursed in his heart.

If it was someone else, he wouldn’t say anything. But for Nie Feng, he really didn’t want to teach him the corpse refining technique.

After learning about nie Feng's past, he knew that the word "unreliable" couldn't be used to describe this kid's refining. He had completely destroyed things.

He was afraid that if he taught nie Feng the corpse refining technique, he would be able to self-destruct his corpse spirit. At that time, the reputation of the corpse refiner would be destroyed in his hands.

Hence, the bearded man righteously rejected him. The reason was that it was for his own good. He was afraid that he would scare him to death!

Regarding this point, although nie Feng wanted to refute, he still had some idea in his heart. Thus, he could only withdraw his request with a bitter face.

Even though nie Feng still felt that refining medicine and refining corpses were different.

It doesn't mean it will explode ...

Chapter 375 - Waiting For The Rabbit

Once he returned to the area where the black light barrier was, he couldn't help but be on his guard.

This time, he didn't choose the central point of the barrier that he had destroyed before. Instead, he chose a different direction to prevent any accidents.

“Keep up!”

He looked at nie Feng, who was looking up at the black light barrier, and felt his head hurt. He still felt that this guy wasn't very reliable.

“Oh, oh.” Hearing Hu He's shout, nie Feng immediately followed.

The two of them strode to the barrier. Core Hu first took out his “realm shattering dagger” and began to explore the location of the next central point of the barrier. After confirming the location, he brought nie Feng and ran towards the central point.

Half an hour's journey, when they were about to reach the central point of the barrier, core Hu suddenly stopped and quickly pulled nie Feng down.

“What's wrong?” Nie Feng asked in a low voice after squatting down.

“There's a guard up ahead, right next to the barrier. It's just as I guessed!” Hu He said with a serious expression.

“Then what do we do?” Nie Feng was also a little nervous after hearing Hu He's words.

“Let's check their strength first. As long as they're not at the ghost king level, I can handle them!” As he spoke, Hu He pushed aside the withered

yellow weeds beside him and quietly stretched out his head, casting his gaze at the soldiers stationed in the distance.

He activated his analysis ability!

[Game prompt: the target is far away, unable to detect!]

Looking at the game notification, beard core was stunned.

In fact, the soldiers stationed in the distance were just a few black dots in his eyes, but he did not expect that he could not analyze the target's information at such a distance.

This couldn't help but make Hu He a little depressed.

“How is it? is the other side strong?” Nie Feng nervously asked.

“I can't see clearly, but why do you look a little scared?” Hu He looked at nie Feng and curled his lips.

“I'm a lifestyle player, I don't really fight!” Nie Feng immediately replied.

“A lifestyle player who's trying to blow up underworld? Syria lifestyle players?”

He suddenly felt that nie Feng's words were so shameless. He was clearly a malignant tumor player, but he still wanted to put on a kind “lifestyle player” disguise.

Is there still any law!

When nie Feng heard these words, his face immediately turned bitter and he no longer spoke. However, his heart was filled with grievances.

“Wait for me here,” Hu He said.”I'll go check out the situation. Wait for my news.”

Nie Feng nodded and continued to curl up.

Seeing this, core Hu first put all the corpse spirits behind him into the corpse spirit bag, then slowly moved forward like a cat.

The closer they got to the area where the soldiers were stationed, the more nervous Hu He became. After all, they didn't have much time left, and the consequences of missing this opportunity would be very serious.

As he approached the soldiers, he activated his analysis ability from time to time. He didn't know what the maximum range of his analysis ability was, so he could only try again and again.

After moving forward a little more, he opened the analysis function again.

This time, the information of the soldiers stationed in front appeared.

[Soul Reaper (late-stage ghost Governor)]:

[Character information: priest of the soulless race, a subordinate of the yuanxu Army. Has the special ability to steal souls.]

[Character Status: Normal]

[Ghost soldier guard (middle-stage ghost Governor)]

[Character information: elder of the soulless race under the yuanxu Army, an expert who specializes in physical and blood elementalists. Powerful in close combat!]

.....

With his analysis ability, Hu He quickly understood the strength of the soldiers stationed here.

Although there were dozens of people on the other side, the strongest among them was only a late-stage ghost Governor Soul Reaper, which was very easy for Hu He to deal with.

This time, he did not panic. He slowly stood up and walked towards the soldiers.

The moment he showed his head, the soldiers immediately looked at him, their faces revealing a vigilant look.

“Who is it?” The Soulstealer priest shouted at Hu He from afar.

Hu He didn't answer and continued to walk forward calmly.

Seeing Hu He's attitude, the guards were all on guard.

They weren't stupid. Since Yuan Xu had sent them here, it was obviously dangerous. Although Hu He was alone, if he didn't have the strength, how could he come so calmly?

“This is the territory of our King, the empty abyss. If you dare to come any closer, we won't be polite!” The leading priest shouted angrily.

At this moment, Hu He was very calm. His twenty or so underlings were all half-step ghost kings. It would be a piece of cake for them to beat up these ghost inspectors.

As a result, a heroic spirit rose in his heart, and he continued to walk forward.

This undoubtedly made the garrison soldiers even more nervous.

“Priestess, do you want to send a signal?” The ghost soldier guard said at this time.

For safety's sake, although every barrier point was guarded by a Ghost Inspector, every Guard Captain had a “psychic lamp” in their hands that conveyed a signal. As long as he extinguished the light, the void abyss and the ghost kings in the strange Dragon tomb would receive the news and quickly rush over to help.

Seeing Hu He getting closer and closer, the ghost soldier guard couldn't help but ask the priest nervously.

“There's no hurry. Let's test his strength!” The priest pointed his staff at Hu He and began to chant an incantation.

Circles of black light emerged from the tip of the staff and attacked Hu He.

Seeing them attack, Hu He didn't hesitate and summoned his twenty or so underlings.

The appearance of these undead spirits had truly frightened the soldiers stationed here.

As the black light wave approached, the corpse spirits immediately formed a line in front of him under Hu He's command.

However, what he didn't expect was that the black light wave would actually pass through the corpse spirits' bodies and hit him.

"Haha, my soul has returned!"

Seeing this, the priest gently shook the tip of the staff and began to absorb the core's soul.

Nuclear Hu was also shocked when he heard this. He didn't expect this person's attack to not be from the physics Department. He was finished.

However, to his surprise, nothing happened to him after a few seconds.

At this moment, the game prompt appeared.

[Game prompt: you have suffered a "Soul Catcher" attack. This attack is invalid. You have been exempted!]

Hu Zhongxin heaved a sigh of relief when he saw the game notification. Then, he waved his hand at the priest and the others who were standing in front of the black light barrier with a ferocious expression.

"Beat him up, beat him to death!"

More than 20 half-naked undead spirits heard Hu He's command and immediately ran towards the soldiers.

These corpse spirits were all ghost king level experts when they were alive, and even though they had been refined into corpse spirits, their physical bodies were still extremely strong. Their figures quickly arrived in front of the priests, ghost guards, and other soldiers.

The leading priest was shocked and immediately raised his staff to meet the attack.

“Bang!”

A muffled sound rang out as the priest’s staff and the instant corpse Spirit’s fist collided. The instant corpse spirit had already reached the strength of a half-step ghost king under the repeated refining of the pit of beard. In a contest of pure strength, the priest was instantly sent flying.

With twenty-four half-step ghost kings attacking together, whether it was strength or numbers, they completely overwhelmed the soldiers stationed here.

The moment they clashed, whether it was the priests, the ghost guards, or the other soldiers, they were all sent flying and crashed into the black light barrier.

At this moment, the old priest didn’t hesitate. He immediately took out the ‘psychic lamp’ and crushed it.

The lights were extinguished in an instant.

At the same time, in the central area of the strange Dragon tomb, Yuan Xu, who had his eyes closed to comprehend the formation knowledge he had learned from the evil demon formation, suddenly opened his eyes.

Knowing that something had happened to the barrier, he suddenly stood up and said to the ghost kings who were sitting around him and studying the knowledge of the array,”

“Something has happened to the boundary point. You guys go quickly. I’m going to the evil demon array to check the situation!”

“Yes, my King!” “Yes, Your Majesty,” the ghost kings replied respectfully. Then, they got up and rushed toward the boundary point that Yuan Xu had pointed at.

After Hu He broke through the barrier last time, Yuan Xu knew that the evil demon formation was no longer safe. However, he never thought that Hu He would be involved in this incident.

.....

At the same time, Hu He’s expression changed drastically.

He had seen this kind of ‘psychic lamp’ in ancient books before. It was specially used for communication and had many uses.

According to the records, this kind of lamp was also the nemesis of the corpse refiners. This was because some special “psychic lamps” were specially used to guard tombs. As long as a tomb robber entered the tomb room with a special “psychic lamp”, the light would automatically go out and send a message to the descendants of the tomb owner or the tomb keeper.

In the “corpse spirit sect secret technique” his grandfather had passed down to him, there was a page that described this lamp in detail.

At this moment, Hu He realized that things were not good. If Yuan Xu really came, the mission would definitely fail.

He immediately roared in the team voice chat,”

“Explosive man, hurry up and die! We have to hurry!”

After shouting this, core Hu pointed at the priest and the others.

“Don’t leave a single one, exterminate them all!”

When the undead spirits heard this, their attacks became even fiercer, causing the priests and the other soldiers to suffer unspeakable pain. They could only bitterly resist.

However, they did not dare to retreat. If they did, Yuan Xu would not let them go.

While the undead spirits were fighting the priest and the others, Hu He quickly walked up to the black barrier and began to use his “energy sensing” to measure the energy and determine the specific location of the barrier’s central point.

After about five minutes, he found the area where the energy fluctuations were the strongest and decisively stabbed his ‘world shattering dagger’ into it.

The barrier point immediately began to collapse, revealing a large circular hole with a diameter of three meters.

At this moment, Nie Feng had also jogged over to his side.

“Follow me in, we need to hurry!” As he spoke, he stepped into the barrier.

“What about them?” Nie Feng asked as he pointed at the undead spirits that were still fighting the priest and the others.

“Don’t worry about them. Hurry up and get to the evil demon formation. Otherwise, Yuan Xu might come!” Hu He said anxiously.

At this moment, Nie Feng also realized that something seemed to have gone wrong. He hurriedly followed Core Hu into the tunnel inside the barrier.

Then, the two of them began to walk quickly toward the ‘evil spirit array’ in the tunnel.

As they advanced, Nie Feng couldn’t help but ask,

“Great Demon King, if I were Yuan Xu, I would have gone to the evil demon formation to wait for you after I received the news that someone had broken the seal. I’m the strongest in the blue Void big domain and no one can defeat me. Why would I go to the barrier point to find you?”

Upon hearing this, core Hu stopped in his tracks. Nie Feng's head hit his back.

That's right! Yuan Xu was the most powerful in the blue Void big domain. Apart from the evil king, no one else could fight him. Why did he have to go through so much trouble to find him?

Nie Feng's words suddenly made Hu He realize that Yuan Xu was most likely already waiting for them in the evil demon formation.

"F * ck! Then what should we do? I'm afraid we'll fail again this time!" Thinking of this, he couldn't help but curse.

"I have an idea," Nie Feng chuckled.

"Quickly release it. What time is it? you damn cancer!" Looking at nie Feng's thoughtful appearance, Hu He really wanted to refine him into a corpse spirit and then whip his corpse.

Chapter 376 - Hahahaha (Thanks To Brother Lin Hao For The Alliance Master Reward~)

“It’s actually very simple. Think about it, who in the blue Void region can fight with Yuan Xu?”

“You mean the evil king? He’s only at the early stage of the ghost emperor realm and can only fight with Yuan Xu. There’s still a gap in strength. ” Hu He said in shock.

“We don’t need evil king to fight with void abyss. Instead, we’ll let him lead the players to attack the barrier and even the strange Dragon tomb. In this Blue Void region, who else do you think is a match for the evil king other than Yuan Xu? As long as he makes a move, Yuan Xu will definitely stop him and buy us enough time!”

“Good idea! You’re pretty smart, you cancer!” Understanding nie Feng’s meaning, nucleus Hu suddenly realized that this move was completely feasible.

“Hehe, I just read a lot.” Nie Feng scratched his head, revealing a shy look.

Seeing this, Hu He couldn’t help but give him the middle finger. He felt that this “poisonous tumor” was really good at acting.

Then, core Hu opened his live stream. As he walked towards the evil demon array with nie Feng, he began to contact the players through the live stream, asking them to find the evil king and prepare for a wave of feints.

At this time, most of the players in the European server were paying attention to nuclear Hu’s movements. When they saw that nuclear Hu had started his livestream, countless players immediately rushed in.

After hearing Hu He's request, a large number of players from the European server responded to the call and began to search for evil king.

At this moment, Xie Wang was in the ancient ruins, drinking the fine wine he had bought from the game's auction house. He had a satisfied expression as he experienced the feeling of having a physical body.

At this moment, a large number of players suddenly came to find him.

This left Xie Wang a little dumbfounded, but after understanding the players' request, he suddenly felt a little worried.

You want me to fight with Yuan Xu? Wasn't this bullying him? he wasn't even a match for me even if I used both hands!

However, the evil king was still very friendly to the players, so he gave this request back to Lu Wu.

After Lu Wu received the message from Xie Wang, he immediately replied.

[You're only allowed to use the strength of the initial stage of the ghost emperor realm. You're not allowed to use the newly obtained divine level strength!]

In Lu Wu's opinion, the evil King's strength had already reached the God level. If he was allowed to show his strength, the players' mentality would change in the future.

In the future, if they encountered any problems, they would go to the evil king for help. This was what Lu Wu didn't want to see. After all, the development of the players was the most important thing, and all the crises would also hone them.

After getting Lu Wu's reply, evil king immediately decided to take the players to the "black light barrier" and fight with Yuan Xu.

.....

Through the bullet comments in the live broadcast room, Hu He, who was on his way to the “evil demon formation”, knew that evil king had agreed. The two of them immediately sped up their pace to the “evil demon formation”.

With his previous experience, Hu He knew that it would take him and nie Feng at least half a day’s journey to reach the evil spirit array.

Therefore, he began to communicate with the players through the livestream room and obtain information from the outside world.

Half an hour later, nuclear Hu received the feedback from the players in the livestream room. They had gathered and were on their way to the black light barrier!

At this moment, core Hu was secretly excited. As long as Yuan Xu was gone, he would have a greater chance of blowing up the evil demon formation.

After another four hours of rushing, Hu He felt that he was about to reach the evil demon formation. He stopped and began to wait for the players ‘final feedback.

Meanwhile, in the outside world, a huge Army of players was approaching the black light barrier through the teleportation circle that led to the demon territory.

Just as he was about to reach the black light barrier, evil King’s body separated from the player Army and floated into the air. He then turned into a stone statue in the air and crashed into the black light barrier.

Of course, Xie Wang was only using his early stage ghost emperor strength and not his own divine power.

“BOOM!”

The black light barrier shook violently from the impact, forming energy ripples that spread out in all directions.

“BOOM!”

Xie Wang's second strike arrived, and energy ripples formed at the point of impact once again.

In the distance, the soldiers stationed there saw the energy ripples and immediately became nervous. Immediately, a group of people rushed in the direction of the ripples, wanting to see which audacious guy was breaking the barrier.

However, when they saw the situation, they were truly shocked. This was because the one destroying the barrier was the powerful Xie Wang.

Not far away, a dense Army of players was slowly advancing.

At this moment, the soldiers stationed here didn't hesitate at all. They immediately took out the psychic lamp they carried with them, then injected a wisp of their consciousness into the 'psychic lamp' and crushed it.

At that moment, Yuan Xu, who was in the evil demon formation, received the feedback from the soldiers stationed there.

However, it was different this time because the soldiers 'feedback was:

“Evil king's army is attacking. Strange Dragon tomb is in trouble!”

Seeing this message, Yuan Xu could not help but frown. The evil king's arrival at this moment was definitely not good news.

However, if he did not rush over to provide reinforcements, no one in the defensive forces would be a match for the evil king. When the barrier was broken, the strange Dragon tomb would be in trouble, and it might even be seized directly.

After thinking for a while, Yuan Xu gritted his teeth and left.

Yuan Xu's heart was filled with anger as he rushed to the strange Dragon tomb. Now that his injuries had fully recovered, he had to capture the evil king and seal him again!

After Yuan Xu left the evil demon formation, Hu He and Nie Feng, who were in another tunnel, still didn't move.

Because they had not received any feedback from the players, it was not safe to continue moving forward. It was very likely that they would encounter Yuan Xu.

While waiting anxiously, Hu He and Nie Feng didn't chat. They were both hoping that Yuan Xu would take the bait.

At this moment, a bullet screen floated across the live broadcast room.

“Great Demon King, it's done. Void abyss is really here. He's fighting with the evil king now, and we're fighting void abyss's subordinates. They have too many ghost kings, and we can't hold them back. All the best!”

Seeing this message, Hu He and Nie Feng's eyes brightened. They immediately rushed to the end of the passage.

In order to destroy this evil spirit array, he had gone through many twists and turns. This time, Hu Zhong was determined to destroy it.

After another half an hour of rushing, when they turned the corner, Hu He knew that they had entered the area where the evil spirit array was located.

After turning the corner, a cave shrouded in blue light appeared in front of them.

“Is this the evil spirit array?” Nie Feng asked curiously as he looked at the huge array that covered the entire cave.

“That's right, we're going to the central area. It's all up to you this time!” Core Hu replied immediately.

The two of them walked to the center of the evil spirit array. Then, Core Hu chose to trade with Nie Feng, and all the mystical materials in the space were traded.

“Explosive man, you better not make any mistakes. This time, there are so many brothers from the European server who are risking their lives for us!”

When nie Feng heard this, he solemnly nodded his head and took out a red gilded alchemy furnace from the space.

This medicine refining furnace was specially made by Lin Tie, the best forger among the players. It was a rare Tier 4 quality medicine refining furnace among the players and the key to refining the “nuclear bomb” this time.

After he turned on the switch, the inferno stone in the medicine furnace immediately began to glow and emit a turbulent flame.

After the flame stabilized, nie Feng took out mystical materials and threw them into the fire.

The interior of the medicine refining furnace had its own space, so it was not a problem to throw in a large number of medicinal herbs. Under the high temperature of the flame, the medicinal herbs began to melt gradually.

In fact, nie Feng didn't have any tricks to make a ‘nuclear bomb’. He only had one way, and that was to follow the normal steps. In short, he just had to make sure it exploded.

On the other hand, Hu He knew that he couldn't help much, so he turned his eyes to mo Xu's corpse again.

Since he still had half a bottle of ‘corpse dissolving water’, he wanted to see if he could remove another arm.

Time passed by slowly, and Hu He, who was removing mo Xu's arm, was suddenly startled by nie Feng's cry.

“What's wrong?”

“This place is very strange. It's too strange. When I refine medicine here, all the medicinal liquid quickly turned black. It's exactly the same as the medicinal liquid that formed during the explosion of the underworld!”

“Isn’t that normal? you’ve always been like this when you refine medicine.”

“It’s not the same. In the past, it was a gradual process. This time, it directly turned black after melting!” Nie Feng was extremely shocked.

“Is there a problem?” Hu He asked nervously. After all, it all depended on Nie Feng to blow up the evil spirit array this time. If he made a mistake, it would all be over.

“No, there are only benefits. The power of the explosion will probably be even greater!” Nie Feng said happily. It could be said that this was the first time that he was happy that the elixir was about to explode.

In truth, what Nie Feng didn’t know was that the brand on his body was a “law of darkness” brand. At this moment, the demonic array was the center of the black light barrier’s absorption of Darkness Energy. It just so happened that the energy that Nie Feng absorbed was the same as the energy that he absorbed when he was refining medicine.

At this moment, what Nie Feng couldn’t see was that the surrounding dark energy was madly surging into the medicine refining furnace, constantly blending into the medicinal liquid and changing the internal energy structure of the medicinal liquid. This was why Nie Feng felt that it was strange.

With the support of the dark energy, as more and more mystical materials were poured into the medicine stove, the medicine stove began to shake.

Seeing this, Nie Feng began to concentrate on controlling the medicine furnace, separating the medicinal liquid inside.

The final step of refining medicine was to merge the medicinal liquids together. However, this time, Nie Feng had to separate the medicinal liquids. Otherwise, he was worried that too much medicinal liquid would gather and explode.

As time passed, nie Feng's forehead began to sweat. Hu He, who was at the side, also stopped his destruction of the demonic void realm. He stood at the side with a nervous expression, not even daring to breathe loudly, waiting for the earth-shattering moment to come.

"It's almost done, almost done!" Nie Feng's face was deathly pale as he spoke with trembling lips.

At this time, the medicinal liquid in the medicine furnace was divided into 10000 portions. This kind of control could be said that other than nie Feng, other Alchemist players simply couldn't do it.

"Did you succeed?" He asked nervously.

"I ... I ... If I let go now, the medicinal liquids will fuse ... It's going to explode. I can't control it anymore!"

At this moment, the medicinal liquid had already begun to seep into the separate area nie Feng had created. It was slowly gathering towards the center, causing nie Feng to be extremely nervous.

At this moment, nie Feng suddenly turned his head to look at Hu He,

"Are you ready?"

"What ..."

Before he could finish his sentence, nie Feng's body trembled as he retreated.

At this moment, all the medicinal liquids gathered at the center. The medicine furnace instantly turned red and began to crack in less than three seconds. Countless black lights shot out through the cracks on the medicine furnace.

"It exploded!" Nie Feng roared at this moment.

However, at this moment, Hu He wasn't prepared at all. He was swallowed by the black light in a flash. If he could, he really wanted to give nie Feng

the middle finger. He felt that this guy was doing this on purpose. He was extremely Black-bellied.

“BOOM!” The medicine furnace exploded.

The black light filled the entire cave in an instant, and the raging storm of dark energy continued to absorb the dense dark energy in the surroundings, becoming more and more violent.

The entire cave began to collapse, and the blue crystal in the center of the evil spirit array below was also corroded by the dark energy, dyeing it black.

At this moment, several game notifications suddenly popped up in the minds of Hu He and nie Feng.

[Game prompt: you have been eroded by dark energy. You are losing 80000 HP per second!]

[Game prompt: you have been engulfed by a dark storm, losing 100000 HP per second!]

[Game prompt: dark element explosion is brewing ...]

[Game prompt: you have received the blessing of the evil God's remaining power. Dark damage has been isolated!]

[Game prompt: you have received the protection of the evil crystal. Dark damage has been isolated!]

Under Hu He and nie Feng's dumbfounded expressions, the evil spirit array on the ground suddenly began to tremble. Then, it actually broke off from the ground and formed a semi-circular protective layer. Then, it floated up little by little, carrying them up into the sky.

What nie Feng and Hu He didn't know was that the formation of such a violent energy had already activated the defensive array that the evil demon God had set up in the evil demon array.

This was the escape route he had left for himself, but he didn't expect that it would help Hu He and nie Feng.

The evil spirit array rose higher and higher, gradually coming into contact with the top of the cave. Bit by bit, it pushed through the rock layer and began to float up.

“BOOM!”

At this moment, the dark storm that was brewing finally exploded.

The power of the explosion formed by the violent power of the laws of nature was even more terrifying than that of a nuclear bomb. In an instant, the evil demon formation trembled violently, and the evil demon formation that was rising to the surface broke through the rock layers like a rocket and began to rise.

At this moment, nie Feng and Hu He felt like they were about to die. Under this kind of recoil, they felt like their bodies were about to fall apart.

The amount of blood in their bodies was rapidly decreasing, but the defensive array had started to protect their bodies at this moment, isolating them from the shock. Only then did the two of them survive.

.....

Outside, the evil king, who had already reached the strange Dragon tomb, was fighting with Yuan Xu.

The evil king felt a little helpless when he fought Yuan Xu again. He felt like he was a King, but he had to pretend to be a bronze and fight Yuan Xu head-on. He even had to pretend that he was no match for him. It was simply too helpless.

At this moment, the ground shook violently and began to collapse. A blue formation broke out of the ground, and the players and Warriors of the yuanxu Army in that area were instantly torn apart by the violent power.

It was also at this moment that the demonic array protecting Hu He and nie Feng finally exhausted its last bit of energy. The protective layer dissipated, and the blue crystal turned white. Finally, a force was produced and threw Hu He and nie Feng out.

At this time, the corpses of the experts who were also protected by the array were also thrown out the moment the evil demon array fell apart.

As evil king, void abyss, the players, and the others looked on in surprise, Hu He's maniacal laughter suddenly came from above.

“Hahahaha! Yuan Xu, look, your father was blown away!”

“Hahahaha!”

At this moment, Yuan Xu was dumbfounded and could not react.

“Hahaha, Yuan Xu, your father was blown away!” At this moment, evil king, who was fighting with Yuan Xu, could not help but laugh.

“F * ck, Yuan Xu, your dad flew the furthest. He's awesome, hahahaha!” At this moment, Hu He's maniacal laughter could be heard again.

Hearing this, Yuan Xu's face gradually turned red.

Chapter 377 - Corpses Falling From The Sky

After the evil spirit array fell apart.

Hu He, nie Feng, and dozens of “expert remains” were thrown out by the last push, flying freely in the air.

Compared to nie Feng’s calmness, Hu He was a little arrogant. He pointed at the body that flew the furthest away and kept provoking Yuan Xu’s nerves.

At this moment, Hu He felt extremely carefree. He had died in Yuan Xu’s hands several times before, and this time, he finally saw him suffer a loss. He felt extremely relieved, and his laughter became more and more unrestrained.

Seeing this, Yuan Xu’s anger surged.

“Roar! All of you, die!” As he roared, Yuan Xu’s figure flashed and he was about to sweep toward Hu He.

At this moment, Xie Wang blocked their path.

“Yuan Xu, don’t worry. Let your father fly a little longer!”

Yuan Xu’s face turned green when he heard that. He immediately threw a punch at Xie Wang, and a black hexagram formation appeared on the back of his hand.

The punch was accompanied by a gust of wind, and a ferocious Black Dragon emerged from the wind, swallowing Xie Wang into its stomach.

“Die!”

Then, Yuan Xu clenched his fist, and the Black Dragon roared at the sky. Its body collapsed and kept squeezing, binding evil king tightly and pressing down on his physical body.

At this moment, Yuan Xu's injuries had completely recovered, and he was more than a level stronger than before. The battle prowess he displayed in his anger had truly shocked Xie Wang.

However, Xie Wang, who was being squeezed into the black Dragon's body, was also a little depressed.

Although this force couldn't hurt him at all, he couldn't resist at all now because Lu Wu had told him not to use any power above the early stage of the ghost emperor realm.

However, he was not strong enough to resist the pressure at all, so Xie Wang could only helplessly shrink into the black Dragon's body as he felt the pressure from all directions.

After taking control of evil king, Yuan Xu's expression became even more vicious. Anger burned in his chest, as if it was about to burst out.

This time, he could have relied on the ancient evil demonic God's great formation to obtain an invincible corpse spirit Army, but he did not expect the outcome to be like this.

Originally, he thought that the "corpse spirit Legion plan" would definitely succeed, and even if there were twists and turns along the way, it would be impossible for it to go wrong.

This was not because Yuan Xu was conceited, but because he had really considered all the possible risks.

The first was the guarantee of the psychic lamp that he could receive urgent news after the enchantment was destroyed. Even if there was a mistake, with him in the evil demon formation, all the foreign enemies would not be his match, including the evil king.

Even when he had received the news that the evil king had come to attack the strange Dragon tomb, he had considered whether anyone would sneak into the evil demon formation to destroy it before he left.

However, Yuan Xu quickly denied this speculation.

First of all, the evil demon array's array eye crystal was already under his control and could not be taken away by anyone without the same strength as him. In the blue Void domain, there was no one with the same strength as him, including the evil king in his eyes.

Secondly, when he was looking for the demonic array, he had studied and studied this great array. He had discovered that even with his strength, he could not destroy the demonic array.

With these two almost unbreakable guarantees, Yuan Xu left without worry in order to prevent the strange Dragon tomb from being captured.

However, the result was something he had never expected.

The Furious Yuan Xu still couldn't figure out how the formation was destroyed. After all, this was a divine formation cast by the evil demon God.

At this time, he cast his gaze toward the crack in the ground that had been broken by the 'evil spirit formation'.

At this moment, the crack was still spewing out thick black light. The law of Darkness Energy was gradually spreading and diluting in the air.

“The law of darkness!”

Yuan Xu's expression turned serious. How did he do it?

Thinking of this, he immediately looked at the fallen Hu He. He gave up on controlling Xie Wang and rushed toward him.

Yuan Xu felt like he was going to be driven crazy by the resurrected Hu He.

When Hu He released him from the seal of the dungeon, he thought that Hu He was his Lucky Star and didn't kill him before he left.

However, he didn't expect that Hu He would return the favor with several big gifts.

The first time was when the natural disaster ran rampant in the blue Void region, causing the blue Void region, which could have been taken over quickly, to fall into a protracted war.

The second time was in the battle with twenty-three prisoners in the infernal domain, where he had been injured.

The third time, which was now, he had even destroyed the demonic formation, which was the opportunity for him to become a God.

At this moment, Yuan Xu's hatred for Hu He had reached a point of no return, just like how Hu He hated him.

“Die!”

As he waved his arms, two black pythons extended out from his palms. They drew two black trails in the air and bit at the freefall Hu He was in.

Seeing Yuan Xu's attack, Hu He wasn't afraid at all. In fact, he was very calm. After all, the mission was completed. Three hours was fine. So be it. He started to mock Yuan Xu again.

“Yuanxu, you unfilial son. Look, your father has already flown far away and you didn't even come to welcome him. You even came to welcome me. I'm your ...”

“Die!”

Before he could finish his sentence, a black python swallowed him, and another black python swallowed the one before it. A violent power burst out of the black Python's body, and Hu He was torn apart in less than two seconds, turning into black mist and dissipating.

Yuan Xu's face turned gloomy when he saw that Hu He had died, but his soul and body had disappeared again.

In Yuan Xu's eyes, if Hu He didn't die the last few times, he wouldn't die this time either.

At this moment, Yuan Xu suddenly regretted killing Hu He.

In fact, it wasn't like he didn't have a way to deal with this kind of guy who could be resurrected. For example, the "endless darkness" was a sealing cage that could trap Hu He in, making him suffer a fate worse than death as time passed.

Thinking of this, Yuan Xu made a decision. After this battle, he would build a special barrier similar to the endless darkness for Hu He. He would personally guard it. He didn't believe that Hu He could continue to be so arrogant.

He glanced at evil king, who was still bound in the air by the Black Dragon, and quickly descended toward the area where the evil demon formation's formation eye crystal had fallen.

After landing on the ground, Yuan Xu picked up the formation eye crystal that had turned white and started to observe if the crystal had cracked.

He had studied the evil demon array before and knew that the core of the evil demon array was this crystal. The array patterns were also extended from this crystal. So, as long as the crystal was not broken, it would not be a problem to restore the evil demon array. It was just that it would cost a huge price.

After careful observation, Yuan Xu finally heaved a sigh of relief.

He couldn't help but admit that the ancient God's evil demon array was indeed powerful. The core of the array was actually intact even under the ravages of the power of law. The only regret was that the energy inside had been exhausted.

After knowing that there was hope for the formation to be restored, Yuan Xu's heart skipped a beat. He then turned his gaze to the experts' remains that were scattered across the various areas of the strange Dragon tomb.

Since the formation could be restored, then after the formation was restored, the refining could naturally continue!

Just as Yuan Xu thought of this, Hu He, who had already logged out of the game, also had a flash of inspiration. He quickly logged into the forum and contacted Nie Feng, sending him messages like crazy.

After receiving the message and understanding what core Hu meant, Nie Feng immediately opened his mouth and shouted in the regional channel,

“Stop fighting. Let's go and grab the corpses. We're only halfway there. We're only missing these experts' corpses. By the way, the Great Demon King said that Mo Xu's corpse is his priority. He wants to refine it and use it to beat Yuan Xu, that unfilial son. He'll buy it at a high price!”

Nie Feng's roar instantly silenced the noisy regional channel.

Then, the European players decisively gave up on the battle with the Yuan Xu Army and began to run towards the area where the corpses of the powerhouses had fallen.

After knowing that the crisis had not been resolved, the players felt a sense of urgency.

The scene instantly became chaotic.

“Hurry up and grab the corpses. Sell them to the Great Demon King at a high price!”

“I heard that the corpses of powerhouses can be used to forge equipment. It's good stuff, let's get it!”

“We can't let Void Abyss get another corpse. Otherwise, we won't be so lucky next time. Leader, you can run faster with a Mount. There's a corpse in the 12 o'clock direction. Let's go!”

.....

The region voice channel, Army voice channel, Guild voice channel, and party voice channel were all filled with the players 'shouts.

At this moment, the corpses of the powerhouses that had fallen to the ground had become the key to their plan to completely destroy Yuan Xu's corpse spirit Army.

The players each chose a direction and began to run towards the remains of the powerhouses.

Void abyss was stunned when he saw this scene. He immediately realized what the players were going to do, and he hurriedly roared,"

"Stop them from snatching the remains of the experts and bring them back!"

Void abyss's roar reverberated throughout the world, shocking the void abyss Army soldiers that were chasing players.

Unlike the soldiers, the ghost kings under Yuan Xu naturally knew how important these experts 'corpses were. They immediately scattered and also flew toward the "experts' corpses."

As the entire battlefield was very wide, the players 'advantage was immediately revealed at this moment.

First of all, it was convenient to communicate through the voice channel. Secondly, the storage space could store corpses.

Compared to the soldiers of the yuanxu Army, the soldiers of the yuanxu Army were having a harder time. As long as a soldier managed to snatch a champion's corpse, they would become the target of the players. They would pounce on the soldier with "ferocious faces" and attack him in groups, snatching the champion's corpse from the soldier's hands and throwing it into the realm.

Naturally, it was impossible for the Warriors of the yuanxu Army to snatch the corpses of the powerhouses from the players. At this moment, the storage space became a cheat in snatching the corpses.

However, the players were still unable to defend against the arrival of a Spirit King, and a few corpses were taken away by the spirit King.

At this moment, someone exclaimed in the regional channel,”

“Wahahaha, I got the demonic void corpse! The one that the Great Demon King wanted! I’m going to be rich!”

“Brother, anyone who sees it will get a share. Quickly send a soul coin red packet in the Guild!”

” 666, the Demon King’s goal of using it to beat up his unfilial son is about to be realized!”

“F * ck, what kind of hand speed do you guys have? I just grabbed the remains of an expert, but then a few pairs of hands suddenly appeared beside me. I didn’t even have time to put it into the space before it disappeared. Which bastard took it? return it to me, I’ll F * ck you!”

“This is a scene of a large-scale corpse robbery. If these experts know that they will be played like this after death, they might as well directly burn themselves to ashes. Hehehe!”

“Stop quarreling. Their ghost king has already made a move. Hurry up and grab a few more corpses. It’s more than enough to exchange a corpse for a sea-view House. Damn, corpses fell from the sky. Bah, it’s a windfall. Hurry up and grab them!”

“I’m squeezing you, don’t block the way. I just changed my class to undead knight, and I want to try to refine corpses into undead mounts. Please don’t block the way!”

.....

The voice channel was in a mess.

At this moment, the players were no longer in the mood to fight with the yuaxu Army soldiers. They all ran to the corpses of the powerhouses scattered around the battlefield with red eyes.

In the end, there were a total of 38 master remains, 23 of which were in the hands of the players. Void abyss and his subordinates only managed to get 15, and these 15 remains were basically obtained by void abyss and the ghost kings. Even if their subordinates managed to get their hands on the remains, they would not be able to keep them.

Although they did not get all the remains of the Champions this time, the players knew that they did not lose out!

The battle had officially come to an end, and the players were being massacred.

However, since the mission was completed, death was nothing to the players. They were all smiling as they welcomed death.

Chapter 378 - Beichen'S Blade

Japan, Hokkaido.

It was drizzling under the gloomy sky. At this time, in a prison in a small town on the northeast part of the island, a man slowly walked out of the darkness. With the congratulations of the prison guards, the iron bars of the prison were opened, and he was sent out of the prison.

The moment he walked out of the prison, the man hesitated for a moment, but in the end, he still walked out.

There was no one outside to welcome him, nor did anyone come to congratulate him. There was only the cold rain patting on his body.

He was released from prison?

He could not help but look at his empty right arm and laughed at himself.

He slowly raised his head to look at the sky. The fine raindrops fell on his face, and he could not help but close his eyes.

At this moment, his memory returned to ten years ago.

.....

His name was Hokushin Itto, and he was the direct descendant of the ancient Japan sword style, the one blade school.

He had been extremely talented in sword arts since he was young. It could be said that no one in his father's sword arts Club could compare to him. Even his fellow disciples in the sword arts Club felt inferior in front of his sword arts talent.

They were not even on the same level.

At that time, there were many schools of swordsmanship in Japan, but most of them were modern swordsmanship and did not have any actual combat lethality. Many swordsmanships were just for show and only used gorgeous moves to earn gimmicks.

However, there was no lack of truly powerful ancient sword styles among them, such as the Shinto-style, Niten-I-style, dark-style, IAI-style, and so on.

These Orthodox successors of ancient sword arts disdained to associate themselves with the modern “magnificence” sword arts. However, they had exchanges with the same ancient sword arts schools and would hold two sword arts Exchange competitions every year.

This kind of competition was also divided into the junior and adult grades.

At that time, Northstar Yidao was extremely talented. The first time he stepped into the junior Division, he defeated his peers, and even those who were older than him, and won the junior Division Championship with a crushing attitude.

His father, Hokushin Hideo, was extremely proud of his outstanding talent. He felt that Hokushin Itto had the ability to revitalize the ‘one blade school’ and carry forward the sword Art passed down by his ancestors.

At that time, Northstar Yidao also thought so. He felt that if he had the ability to win first place in the junior Division, then he would also have the ability to win first place in the adult division in the future. He would push one blade school to the top of the ancient sword arts school and become the peak that all sword arts practitioners looked up to.

However, what he did not know was that it was his excellence that had caused his father, Hokushin Hideo, to feel the pressure.

This pressure did not come from Bei Chen’s blade, but from the outside world.

In the ancient swordsmanship competition that was held twice a year, the first place of the junior Division was always easily won by Hokushin. However, the last place of the official division was also always won by Hokushin Hideo, his father.

This contrast would only make Kitagawa Hideo feel proud of Kitagawa Izawa, thinking that he could reach a height that he had never reached before.

But gradually, more and more voices were heard from the outside world.

At that time, Beichen Hideo gradually felt the pressure because he was always compared to his son, Beichen Yidao, in the communication between his peers. He even accidentally heard others say it.

If the Beichen one blade was born in another school, it would be perfect. It was a waste of talent to be born in the Beichen family.

To a successor of traditional swordsmanship like him, this kind of humiliation was unbearable.

After that, he would often recall the words of his peers and feel that he was a coward and a weakling.

This thought lingered in Beichen Hideo's mind and could not be dispelled. It was like a demon in his heart that kept torturing him.

It was also at that moment that Beichen Yidao made his choice. He decided to cultivate the ancient sword technique passed down from his ancestors, [one blade stream-Taiyuan].

At that time, in the ancient sword arts school, the practice of the 'sword will-shaped Sword Art' was explicitly forbidden. It couldn't even be said to be forbidden, it should be said to be feared.

This was because this sword technique was too harmful to the body. They did not know how their ancestors had created this sword technique, nor how they could bear the injuries caused by the cultivation.

However, they definitely did not have the ability to cultivate. This was a lesson that countless people had used their blood to teach them.

Those swordsmen who practiced the ancient sword style were all either physically or mentally disabled. In short, without exception, none of them had a good ending.

After many attempts by their predecessors, the descendants of these ancient sword arts schools no longer dared to touch those ancient sword intents and sword techniques. They sealed them up and only chose to cultivate the simplest sword moves and sword forms, continuing to pass down these most basic things as a tradition.

Beichen Hideo knew all of this, but he had made up his mind at that time. He decided to prove himself and let his son see that his father was not a coward and not a loser. He could be the real number one.

Beichen Yidao naturally didn't know what his father had done. He only sensed that his father had suddenly become more cheerful, no longer as gloomy and stern as before. This was a good thing for Beichen Yidao.

However, the bad news came very quickly. One day, when Beichen Yidao returned from school, he saw a room full of blood the moment he entered the door.

At that time, Beichen Yidao's head was buzzing as he rushed into the room.

Then, he saw his mother holding his father, who was covered in blood, in a daze. Her face was full of despair. Beichen Yidao looked at her in disbelief. She grabbed the love sword, heartless pill, from Beichen Hideo's hand and slit his neck.

At that time, Beichen Yidao was only 14 years old. When he saw this scene, he knelt on the ground, feeling helpless and desperate. He wished that everything in front of him was fake and that he was in a dream.

He didn't even know what had happened. The family had been eating in harmony in the morning. Why did it become like this at night?

At that time, Beichen Yidao's heart was already in a mess. He suddenly thought of what his father had said in the morning.

“Today, I'm going to find IAI and have another sword technique competition. This time, I'll definitely beat him!”

At that time, Beichen Yidao had said “all the best” before going to school. However, he clearly remembered his father's words.

This made Beichen subconsciously think that his opponent, IAI Tezuka, had killed his father in the swordsmanship competition.

His mother, who loved his father, could not bear the pain of his death and chose to follow him.

Although it wasn't a common occurrence in the ancient sword arts Circle for people to be accidentally injured and die in a competition, it would still happen occasionally.

This was because ancient sword arts were true killing sword arts, not just fancy moves.

Hence, there was an unspoken rule in the ancient sword arts Circle that his father often told Beichen Yidao. The opponent would not be held responsible for any accidental injuries during the competition, and the family was not allowed to seek compensation. Otherwise, it would be considered as permanent withdrawal from the ancient sword arts Circle, and it would also bring shame to the ancestors.

Since he had joined this circle, he naturally had to follow the rules of this circle. These rules did not protect anyone, but the fundamental meaning of the existence of ancient sword arts. It was an actual combat sword Art. If this rule disappeared, then there would be no difference between ancient sword arts and modern sword arts. They would just be some moves and routines.

Therefore, this rule had always been branded in the hearts of every practitioner of ancient sword techniques, including Beichen Yidao, who had

been learning sword techniques from his father since he was young.

Therefore, Beichen Yidao followed his father's instructions. He did not call the police. Instead, he cried and buried his father and mother's bodies in his yard. Then, he took his father's heartless pill and went to find IAI Tezuka for revenge.

Although Beichen Yidao's father had trained his willpower since he was young, the only 14-year-old Beichen Yidao had felt the coldness and despair when he faced his father's death and his mother's suicide in front of him.

However, he still mustered up his courage because his father had said that he was the heir to the Northstar one blade school. He had to have the courage to face everything.

Although he knew that he might not be a match for IAI Tezuka, he still wanted revenge. He wanted to use his swordsmanship to have a fair and square duel again to avenge his father!

Chapter 379 - The Cruel Truth

He would use his swordsmanship to avenge his father.

This was the first thought that came to the 14-year-old Northstar Yidao's mind after seeing his parents' death.

Under his father's education since he was young, he clearly knew that if he died in a competition, the opponent would not be responsible. And he didn't want to disgrace the Beichen family's one blade school name, so he didn't call the police.

Since his father had died in a swordsmanship battle, he would take over the swordsmanship inheritance and use it to avenge his father.

And he had indeed done so.

Holding the heartless pill that his father had left behind, he walked toward the IAI Kendo gym.

When he stepped into the IAI Kendo gym, he immediately aroused the curiosity of many of the apprentices in the Kendo gym. That was because Beichen Yidao's eyes were cold, and his clothes were stained with blood. Although he was thin, he stood there like a god of death.

“The heir of the Beichen family's one blade stream sword technique, Beichen Yidao, is here to challenge the master of the IAI school of sword techniques, IAI shouzhong!”

“What's wrong?” Northstar Yidao asked coldly as he looked at the surprised Kendo students.

“Beichen's blade?”

Hearing this name, the students were all very surprised.

It was because this name was too famous in the ancient sword arts world. It could be said that he was a publicly acknowledged sword genius in the circle. He also had the potential to become the number one sword Master in the official group in the future. Basically, everyone knew about him.

“Beichen-Jun, don’t mess around. You haven’t reached the age to participate in the official group. The dojo Master isn’t someone you can challenge!” A middle-aged man wearing a white IAI kendo uniform couldn’t help but step forward and ask with a frown.

“I want to challenge IAI shatsuka. If you don’t agree, then I’ll take it as the IAI school of swordsmanship surrendering to my one blade school, and from then on, my status in the world of swordsmanship will be lower than my Northstar one blade school!”

The middle-aged man’s expression changed.

In his eyes, this was undoubtedly a provocation. It should be known that Hokushin Itto-ryu was ranked last among all the ancient sword arts. Hokushin Hideo had always been last in the official ranking competition every year. He had never advanced. Therefore, to ask the IAI school to surrender to the Hokushin Itto-ryu was an insult to the middle-aged man.

“Beichen Yidao, Are you sure?” The middle-aged man’s expression became serious. Although Northstar one blade was only a child, his words were already directed at the IAI school.

“I’m sure, let IAI Shou Zhong fight me!”

The middle-aged man’s eyes were filled with anger, but he still nodded and turned to leave.

And Hokushin Itsuki just stood there quietly, ignoring the curious gazes around him as he waited for iakushizaka to arrive.

His words were too decisive, bringing up the competition between the different schools of swordsmanship. Even if he was a child, he still came to IAI shouzhong.

Beichen Yidao didn't say much to his father's murderer, nor did he cry and shout like a child. He was so calm that it didn't match his age.

Under the lead of the middle-aged swordsman from the IAI Kendo gym, Hokushin Itsuka and IAI Tezuka arrived at a courtyard behind the Kendo gym.

IAI Tezuka was a 47-year-old middle-aged man. He was wearing a loose white swordsmanship uniform, with the famous IAI slash hanging on his waist and clogs at his feet. He had a steady aura, which was a little thin compared to Ichido. They did not seem to be on the same level at all.

"Beichen-Jun, are you challenging me on behalf of your father? I'm very disappointed!" Looking at Hokushin Itsuka, IAI Shou Zuka said with regret.

At this time, iahizuzu was also very surprised by the arrival of Northstar izuto.

This was because the one who had agreed to fight him was his father, Beichen Hideo, but the one who had come was Beichen Yi Dao. This made him think that Beichen Hideo had avoided the battle he had agreed to. He was a coward.

The disappointment he was referring to was Beichen Hideo.

However, this sentence had a different meaning to Beichen Yidao.

Bei Chen Yi Dao's face was cold. He didn't answer. Instead, he pulled out the heartless pill and made a gesture of drawing his sword.

Seeing this, IAI Tezuka also pulled out the IAI slash in his hand and raised his sword horizontally, assuming the upper stance of a sword attack.

"Beichen-Jun, I won't hold back in this competition. Think carefully!"

Bei Chen still didn't answer. His anger didn't get to his head, and his mind was unusually clear.

The heartless pill was slowly pulled out of the scabbard. When the sword was half-pulled out, his body suddenly moved forward, and he pulled out the heartless pill, stabbing it toward IAI shouzuka's throat.

“Ha!”

Iahizuzu immediately raised his long sword and slashed down.

At this time, Bei Chen's body was low and he slid to the left. However, iazuzu's attack also changed direction in his downward slash. It was obvious that he had already seen through Bei Chen's attack. He only used 30% of his strength as a feint, and then quickly changed his attack.

Fortunately, Bei Chen reacted in time and raised his knife to meet the attack. Otherwise, his head would have been cut off.

However, in terms of strength, Bei Chen was obviously not a match for iazuzu. With the sound of metal colliding, Bei Chen was smashed to the ground.

“Beichen-Jun, you've lost!”

After Iaido finished speaking, he pulled back his sword and stood in front of Hokushin Itsuki.

“Again!”

Hokushin Itsuki got up from the ground with a cold expression. After taking a few steps back, he once again stood in front of iakushizaka and made a sword-drawing posture.

Seeing this, IAI Tezuka frowned, but still pulled out his IAI slash.

This time, it was still Beichen who attacked first. His sword was still aimed at his throat.

Although Ishida Hokushin was extremely talented in swordsmanship, he had only cultivated for a short period of time and could not be compared with iazuru, who had been immersed in swordsmanship for many years. He

immediately saw the flaw in Bei Chen's attack and slashed down with IAI slash, aiming for Bei Chen's head.

However, to his surprise, Beichen did not withdraw his sword this time. The sword still went straight for his neck.

Bei Chen's strike was filled with the determination to die. He was going to take revenge with his life.

Blood splattered everywhere!

Bei Chen's blade pierced through Iazuzu's neck as he wished, but Iazuzu's sword stopped at the last moment.

"Ahem ..." The IAI slash in IAI shouzuka's hand fell, and he held his neck and breathed with difficulty.

At that moment, Beichen Yidao was stunned. He did not know why IAI Tezuka would stop at the last moment.

"Why?"

"Shut up!" Hokushin Itsuka shouted angrily at the sobbing Iaki Tezuka.

However, Iahizuzu was no longer able to answer his question. He knelt on the ground with an extremely painful expression.

The Kendo gym's disciples who were watching from all directions immediately started to dial the emergency number. They went forward to help IAI up and started to carry him out.

At that moment, Beichen's blade did not feel any pleasure from taking revenge.

IAI Tezuka could have killed him, but he had retracted his sword, which was an insult to Kitagawa.

If it was possible, why didn't you put away the blade for my father!

With complicated feelings, Beichen Yidao walked out step by step under the angry gazes of all the IAI Kendo gym's disciples.

When he returned to his house, he saw numerous police cars and a crowd of neighbors.

Beichen Yidao was neither happy nor sad when he saw this. He walked straight in.

However, as soon as he entered the courtyard, he was stopped by the police.”

“This is a serious crime scene, outsiders are not allowed in!”

“I'm Beichen Yidao, the son of the deceased!”

As soon as he finished speaking, all the police officers around him turned to look at him.

After that, he was brought back to the police station for investigation.

In the face of the police's questioning, Beichen Yidao told the truth. He told the police that his father died in a swordsmanship competition, and his mother followed him because she couldn't stand the pain.

However, he made it clear that he would give up on pursuing responsibility!

The non-responsibility treaty of the ancient sword arts competition was protected by the law at that time because it was a historical heritage. Just like the death in the boxing match hundreds of years ago, it was an accidental injury in a competition and would be exempted from responsibility.

In other words, as long as Beichen Yidao agreed not to pursue the matter, this matter would be closed.

However, the police would not be so perfunctory.

He recorded every single word that Northstar Yidao had said and began to investigate the matter.

Three days later, Northstar Yidao received a message.

[IAI swordsman IAI Tezuka has died ...]

That day, he was brought back to the police station again.

This time, the police gave him two pieces of information.

First, Iaido's family had given up on holding him responsible for killing Iaido!

Bei Chen was neither happy nor sad when he heard the news. He had already guessed this outcome.

However, the second piece of news was like a bolt of lightning that struck Bei Chen's head.

According to the police's description, according to the nearby surveillance cameras, his father did not go to the Iaido tomb to compete with him that day, nor did he leave the house. According to the investigation of the scene, the final conclusion was:

His father had been killed by her mother.

As for the reason, the investigation had not yet come to a conclusion. The police asked him if he could provide any clues, or if he had found any abnormal reactions from his parents, or if there was any disharmony in the family, etc.

However, at that time, Beichen Yidao did not hear what the police had to say.

He didn't believe, he didn't believe that his mother would kill his father. She loved his father so much, and every time she looked at him, her eyes were so gentle and full of love. What reason did she have to kill her beloved?

Beichen Yidao couldn't accept the police's explanation and didn't want to hear anything more. He ignored the police's questions and ran home alone.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao felt that the police were lying. Everything was fake. In his opinion, anyone could kill his father, but his mother wouldn't.

When he got home, he ran back to his mother's room and began to search for any possible clues. He urgently needed a reason, a reason that could prove that his parents were in love.

The wedding ring, the paper umbrella she got on Valentine's Day, the photo in front of the cherry blossom tree ...

Just as Beichen Yidao had thought, his mother had kept countless memories of her father. All of this was proof that his mother loved his father deeply, and all of this was proof that his mother could not kill his father.

At this moment, a pink diary entered Northstar one blade's field of vision.

When he opened the diary, he found that it was full of his mother's thoughts.

The first half recorded her and her father's love story, while the second half recorded his birth and growth in addition to her father, Beichen Hideo.

The words in the diary were graceful and revealed a deep sense of happiness. As he read, tears welled up in Beichen Yidao's eyes.

However, the latter part of the diary stunned one blade. His eyes gradually revealed his disbelief.

In the end, there was only fear in his eyes, because everything his mother had recorded proved that what the police had said was true.

.....

Monday, X month x x day, 2309, sunny.

Today, Hideo drank for a long time and seemed to be in a bad mood. I helped him to his room to rest, but he cried. This was the first time I saw Hideo cry. I didn't know what had happened, so I started to ask him.

Hideo told me that he had embarrassed Yidao. With such a weak father, Yidao must be feeling terrible.

I began to comfort him and persuade him, but Hideo was already drunk at that time and didn't listen to what I said. He just kept crying about his incompetence.

At this moment, my heart ached, and I blamed myself for not being able to help Hideo when he was weak.

Year 2309, Wednesday, X month x day, drizzling.

Hideo's condition was getting worse and worse. I could feel that he was under a lot of pressure, but he didn't say anything to me except that one time when he was drunk.

I know he's afraid that I'll worry and bear the pressure alone, but Hideo is really pitiful, so I've decided to go to the 'shrine' tomorrow to pray for Hideo, hoping that he can survive.

Good luck! Hideo, you're the best!

Year 2309, X month X day, Sunday, clear.

"Today is the day of the junior division's swordsmanship competition. Yidao is still as outstanding and outstanding as ever. He won first place in the junior Division again. Yidao really looks like Hideo when he was young. He's so handsome and I'm proud of him!"

Year 2309, X month X day, Tuesday, sunny.

I could feel that Hideo's condition had gotten worse after one blade got first place again. Although he was also proud of one blade, he was also a swordsman. He probably felt that he had embarrassed one blade again. How could I comfort him?

I suddenly felt that Yidao shouldn't have been so outstanding. He used to be so good, but he was really too outstanding. He gave his father too much pressure.

Year 2309, X month X day, Tuesday, heavy rain.

Today, Hideo came to me and told me his thoughts. I was very happy, really happy that Hideo no longer hid it from me and was willing to share the bitterness in my heart with me.

However, the words he said to me made me feel a little afraid. He said that he wanted to cultivate the ancient sword intent and that he wanted to make Yidao feel proud of him.

I didn't agree, but Hideo begged me to respect his choice. He really couldn't stand being called a weakling anymore.

Looking at Hideo's helplessness and hope, I couldn't help but cry. In the end, I agreed because I could see the desire in Hideo's eyes. This might be the only way for him to get back on his feet.

Year 2309, X month X day, Thursday, fog.

Recently, the confident and cheerful Hideo had returned. He had really changed. His previous dejection had been swept away, and he was so confident now. He told me that he had become stronger and stronger, and that the ancient sword intent was indeed very effective.

But I was worried because I knew that the ancient sword intent was a forbidden technique that my body couldn't handle. I was afraid that something would happen to Hideo. What would I do then? what would Yi Dao do?

However, I didn't stop Hideo from continuing his cultivation, because that was his hope. I didn't have the heart to destroy it, and I didn't want to see him as dispirited as before.

Friday X month X day 2309, sunny.

Hideo told me that he has already sent a letter of challenge to IAI tezasha and that he is very confident that he will win this sword technique competition.

I'm happy for him, please bless him and let Hideo win this once. After that, I can persuade Hideo to give up on his ancient sword intent.

Wednesday, X month X day 2309, sunny.

Hideo's body suddenly became very bad before the competition. I went to the hospital for a check and found that his internal organs were slightly damaged. This made me very scared. What was going to come will come.

I hope that he can temporarily give up on the battle with IAI shouzuka and recuperate. However, Hideo refused. He told me that he would definitely win this battle and that he couldn't give up. Otherwise, he would really be called a coward.

Year 2309, X month X day, Saturday, sunny.

"The day before the battle, Hideo's physical condition became worse and worse. He seemed to have mental problems and would hallucinate from time to time. However, he endured the pain in front of Yidao and told me not to tell Yidao about this. He was a good father, but he really shouldn't suffer this kind of pain anymore. What should I do?"

I suddenly felt so weak that I couldn't provide any help to Hideo. I felt so guilty.

May 19th, 2039, Sunday.

"Tomorrow is the day Hideo and IAI Tezuka will fight, but Hideo's current condition is not good. He's even trembling when he walks, so how can he hold his sword and fight? I shouldn't go to the battle this time, or else I'm afraid something will really happen to Hideo.

I tried to persuade Hideo, but he rejected me once more. He told me that he wanted to try to break through the ancient sword intent's restrictions and

break through the restrictions of his body.

He told me that if he succeeded, the sword Qi in his body would condense into a sword pill and wouldn't run around in his body. In other words, he would return to normal. But if he failed, he would become a devil and completely lose his mind.

I was very scared and asked him how he had really failed and what to do.

He knelt down and begged me to kill him when the time came, because he didn't want to tarnish the reputation of the one blade school anymore ...

May 20,2039, Monday. Sunny.

'Today is the day of Hideo's battle, and the day Hideo tries to break through the taboo of sword intent. I'm so scared, really scared ...'

.....

Reading his mother's diary, Beichen Yidao's heart trembled.

From the beginning of happiness and warmth to the end of sorrow, the change in his mother's mentality came from his father, but in the end, it came from himself.

He had always thought that he was very outstanding and was the pride of his mother and father. However, he never knew that he had brought such heavy pressure to his father.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao finally understood that the police didn't lie to him. It was his mother who killed his father.

Although her mother still loved her father deeply, it was because of this deep love that she made the painful choice to end her father's life.

In the end, his mother could not bear the grief in her heart and chose to follow him.

So, it was never iahizuzu's fault, but his own. It was his own excellence that killed his father.

The truth was so bloody that Beichen Yidao couldn't help but cry. He couldn't accept this fact.

At this moment, he hated his own excellence. If he had not put pressure on his father, none of this would have happened.

His helplessness was the most realistic portrayal of this moment.

It was as if the world had turned gray. He lay on the ground, holding his mother's notebook and crying. At this moment, he really looked like a child

...

Chapter 380 - Chinese Bellflower

After knowing the truth, the days that followed were dark for Northstar blade.

Kendo, school, life, none of these piqued the interest of Beichen Yidao. He continued to live in a daze.

Regret and self-blame filled every corner of his life.

After two years, the ancient sword arts Circle had basically forgotten about this genius swordsman who had streaked across the sky like a shooting star. He had become a thing of the past.

In the past two years, Beichen Yidao had also fallen in love with drinking and smoking. He had used all sorts of methods to numb himself.

His family's Kendo gym also quickly closed down because no one took care of it. He left his home that made him feel despair and began to wander around like a homeless man.

No one could believe that this unkempt man with an unkempt beard was a teenager who was not even 17.

The heavens were his blanket, and the earth was his bed. In the days to come, he would be driven away and despised by others. He would live like a piece of trash thrown by the roadside, with no value and no sympathy.

Even in Beichen Yidao's own opinion, he had brought this upon himself.

Therefore, he had no complaints about living like this. After knowing the truth, he only felt guilty.

On this day, Beichen Yidao, who was still wandering aimlessly, staggered along with his eyes dazed. Even he didn't know why he had come to the beach.

The sea breeze blew, and the sound of waves came one after another. The red sunset dyed Half the Sky red.

Beichen Yidao, who saw this scene, was stunned. This was because he was very familiar with this scene. It was a scene in his memory.

It was a seaside dinner organized by his mother when his father and mother were still alive.

At that time, Beichen Yidao was only nine years old, and it was also when he had just come into contact with the way of the sword. He could still clearly remember his father's sword practice for him at the seaside. It was also from that moment that he fell in love with sword arts.

His mother pointed at the sea and gently rubbed his head as she told him,"

"Yidao, your heart must be as broad as the sea. Become a man because you will inherit the Beichen family's legacy. You can't lose face for your ancestors!"

Beichen could still clearly remember how he nodded with a red face.

At this moment, Beichen's eyes reddened. He missed his parents so much.

He poured sake into his mouth and listened to the sound of the waves hitting the beach. He was drunk and his eyes were hazy. The sound in his ears became more and more unclear, and his vision became more and more blurry.

In the dream, he once again relived the moment when his family gathered by the sea. A rare smile appeared on his face with his eyes closed.

.....

After an unknown amount of time, Beichen Yidao felt an itch at the tip of his nose and woke up from his sleep.

When he opened his eyes, he saw a woman with a sweet smile touching his nose mischievously.

When she saw Beichen Yidao open his eyes, the woman stuck out her tongue and took a few steps back.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao saw the man's face clearly.

What surprised him was that the woman was a shrine's witch.

She was wearing white clothes, red straw sandals, and white sandalwood paper to tie her hair up. She also had the "qianzao" coat, which was the standard outfit for witches.

Although it was already modern times, in Japan, the status of witches was still very noble, because Japanese witches existed for the gods. The difference was that the witches in the Dragon Kingdom existed for people.

At the peak of power, the witches of the shrine were regarded as the spokesmen of God in the human world. They were also known as the sons of God and were the Supreme existences respected by the people.

Even in the modern era, although the status of a witch was no longer as glorious as it used to be, it was still a symbol. She was a different kind of "noble" in a society of equal status.

"Why are you sleeping here?" The witch asked curiously.

Beichen Yidao didn't answer. Instead, he slowly stood up, picked up the bottle under the witch's surprised gaze, and walked unsteadily towards the town.

The witch was very surprised to see one blade Beichen's attitude. The people around her were usually very respectful to her. This was the first time she had met someone who directly ignored her.

She pouted and jogged to catch up with Bei Chen Yi Dao, blocking his way."

"I'm talking to you!"

“Oh? What’s the matter?” “What’s wrong?” Northstar one blade asked after looking at her indifferently.

“Um ... I might be lost. Can You Take Me Back to the shrine?” She seemed to be very embarrassed, and as she spoke, her face turned red.

“That’s right, I didn’t sneak out!” In the end, the girl added another sentence, as if she was trying to defend herself.

“I’m not interested!” Under the girl’s surprised expression, Northstar blade took a step to the right and continued forward. At the same time, he picked up a bottle of wine and took a big gulp. Then, he shook the empty bottle with a regretful expression and threw it on the beach.

However, before Beichen Yidao could take more than a few steps, the girl once again blocked his path with a bottle of wine in her hands. She said angrily,”

“You’re littering. This is yours. Please take care of the environment!”

The girl then shoved the bottle into Beichen Yidao’s hand and said,”

“Maybe I spoke in the wrong way. Let’s do it again. Hello, my name is Zhong Jie, I’m the witch of the Yin Yang shrine. Can you please take me back to the shrine?” With that said, kangyou bowed slightly.

Northstar one blade was speechless. Why was this witch so clingy?

Beichen Yidao looked at the bent-over Zhong Jie, who was still waiting for her to recover, and pointed to the right.”

“Go there and you’ll meet people. Let them take you back. I think they’ll be happy to do so!”

When she heard this, the smile on her face suddenly froze. Then, she raised her head in anger,”

“I want you to bring it!”

“No time! I’m going to buy some wine!”

As he spoke, Beichen Yidao took a step to the right and walked forward.

However, he had only taken a few steps when little witch stopped him again,

“How can you not respect me at all!”

Bei Chen ignored her and continued to walk past the witch, not even bothering to talk to her.

After blocking him a few times, little witch was thoroughly enraged. She no longer tried to stop him, and simply followed behind Beichen Yidao, waving her little fist at his figure, looking very angry.

After following them for a while and entering the town, the flow of people around them increased. When Northstar one blade turned his head to look, he saw that little witch was still following him, not asking for help from the people around her.

However, as there were people around, the anger on little witch’s face had dissipated, replaced by a sweet smile. She even nodded to the passersby who greeted her from time to time.

Although he did not know why little witch followed him instead of asking for help from the passers-by, Beichen one blade could not be bothered with it. He continued walking forward and arrived at the supermarket in the town.

After choosing his cigarettes and wine, Beichen Yidao went to the cashier. However, when he took out his wallet, he realized that he didn’t have enough money on him to pay.

Just as he was about to put the cigarette back, little witch, who had been following him, suddenly jumped out. Her right hand was holding a note, waving it proudly at Bei Chen.

Beichen was stunned by her child-like behavior. He felt that this witch was really boring.

However, at this moment, little witch suddenly appeared beside him. She handed the money to the cashier with both hands,

“Sister, this is to make up for the lack of money.”

The cashier was stunned by the sweet smile on her face, and she couldn't help but smile.

After paying for the change and leaving the supermarket, Bellflower seemed to be very happy. She quickly ran to Beichen Yidao's side and smiled.

“Now that we know each other, Can You Take Me Back to the shrine?”

“There are so many people here, why me?” Beichen Yidao asked in confusion.

“That's because you smile very beautifully when you're asleep. Mother ... The Lord Divine priest once said that people who smile beautifully are definitely not bad people!”

When he heard this, Beichen Yidao stopped in his tracks and turned to look at her. However, all he saw was the sincerity in her eyes, without a trace of pretense.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao felt his heart clench. All this time, he had been despised by everyone, but he had never expected that he would be treated as a good person by the noble witch.

“You're wrong. I'm a bad person. ” After opening the cigarette and lighting one, Beichen one blade turned around and continued to walk forward aimlessly.

As they walked, the two of them began to chat.

Although he felt helpless, it had to be said that the Chinese bellflowers were really warm. This was the first time in many years that Beichen Yidao had said so much.

In the end, Beichen Yidao chose to compromise with Bellflower's persistent pestering. He brought little witch to the train and arrived at the Yin Yang shrine.

The moment before she left, she bowed respectfully to Beichen Yidao once again and revealed a victorious smile.

At this moment, for some reason, Beichen Yi Dao suddenly felt that this smile was really beautiful.

A crack appeared in his frozen heart.

It had nothing to do with love or friendship. She just felt very warm. Very warm.

After that, Beichen Yidao returned to his old vagrant life. However, he would still often return to the beach, enjoy the sea breeze, listen to the chirping of seagulls, and recall the past.

Because there was a beautiful past there, and at home, he could only think of the bloody scene. He could even wake up from his dreams. It was a sad place, a memory that he did not want to recall.

These days went on for a long time.

When he was once again awoken from his sleep by the sea, Beichen Yidao saw the little witch, Bellflower, again.

When he saw her again, Beichen Yidao no longer resisted. He only asked,"

"You sneaked out again?"

"No, I'm still lost this time!" Little witch Bellflower explained with a red face.

.....

From then on, Beichen one blade would occasionally see little witch, Bellflower, who had “lost” her way.

The flame of friendship was ignited in their hearts. As they became familiar with each other, they became very good friends, and it was pure friendship.

To Zhong Jie, everyone around her was extremely respectful to her, and she had to put on her noble mask to face everyone.

However, she didn't need to do that with Beichen Yidao. She could be angry, she could be willful, she could be unscrupulous, and she could even laugh without any attitude. This kind of relaxation was something she had never experienced before.

Meanwhile, Beichen Yidao received a ‘warmth’ from Bellflower that he had never felt since his family left. He really enjoyed it. His originally frozen heart also gradually melted, slowly walking out of the darkness that surrounded him, and welcomed the light of Bellflower.

This continued for half a year, but after that, Yuan dan never came to look for him again.

At that time, Beichen Yidao was very disappointed, but he knew his identity.

He was just a homeless man. Compared to the noble witch, he was like an insignificant weed on the side of the road. He was not worthy of being a friend.

However, a month later, Bellflower appeared once again, and this undoubtedly made Beichen Yidao pleasantly surprised.

However, this time, she looked completely different. She had changed into an extremely gorgeous witch's costume. Her hair was tied up, and she looked extremely beautiful. However, her eyes were red.

This time, Bellflower came to bid farewell to Beichen Yidao.

Although the farewell disappointed Beichen Yidao, he did not force anything.

Their friendship could break at any moment, and he was prepared for it. However, Beichen Yidao wanted to know what happened to her and why she looked like she had cried.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao had already regarded balloon as his family and friend. He wanted to know the reason for its grievance.

Under Beichen Yidao's persistent questioning, the innocent Bellflower told him everything that had happened to her.

It turned out that bei dan was not only a witch, but also a priestess of the Yin-Yang School. Although her status was extremely noble, she was almost an adult. When she came of age, she would step down from her position as a witch and enter the underground palace of the Yin-Yang School. In the future, she would forever guard the ancestral hall of the Yin-Yang School and would not be able to leave.

Although Northstar one blade had heard of the witch's retirement when she came of age, this was the first time he had heard of protecting the ancestral shrine. He could not help but be stunned.

To Ji dan, all of these were the rules of the Yin-Yang School, and she could not go against them. From the moment she became a witch, her fate was already decided.

However, to Beichen Yidao, all of this was bullsh * t. What era was this? how could such an old-fashioned way of thinking still exist? he told her to bravely pursue her own life, but she shook her head.

Bei Chen asked her why, but she said that she couldn't help it. The world wasn't as simple as he thought.

Beichen Yidao could feel the helplessness in her heart. Since she didn't want to tell him, he didn't ask further. He only asked before she left,"

“You don’t want to?”

Bei Chen Yi Dao’s heart ached when he saw the helplessness and disappointment in her eyes.

However, he naturally wouldn’t just watch Zhong Geng being imprisoned in the depths of the Yin-Yang School’s underground Palace. He personally went to the yin-yang shrine and told the priest that Zhong Geng needed freedom.

Although the priests were kind on the surface, they didn’t take his ridiculous behavior seriously. In the face of Bei Chen’s attack several times, they finally decided to expel him.

After all, in their eyes, Beichen Yidao was just a homeless man, a dispensable character.

Beichen Yidao didn’t give up even after his failed attempt to communicate with her. He chose to call the police and even wanted to use the power of public opinion to help Bellflower get out of the underground palace.

Just like what Zhong Jie had said, the world was not as simple as he had imagined. After calling the police, the police’s reply was that Zhong Jie had volunteered and they had no right to interfere.

However, Beichen Yidao still clearly remembered that at that time, Bellflower had clearly said that she was unwilling, so how could she be willing?

His last hope was the media, but they did not give him any answer.

Although they had promised to report this matter, the truth was that they didn’t take Beichen one blade seriously at all. When they came looking for him again, other than not mentioning what they had promised, they even showed him disgust and impatience.

This was the reality that Zhong Jie had mentioned.

Even so, Beichen Yidao didn't give up. Since he couldn't rely on external forces, he had to rely on himself. He wanted to personally bring Zhong Dong out of the YinYang school's underground Palace.

After that, Beichen Yidao, who had been wandering around for a long time, returned home and took out his father's heartless pill.

When he touched this famous sword again, he didn't feel any unfamiliarity. It was as if the weapon was an extension of his arm. The moment the blade was unsheathed, it was still cold and sharp.

Chapter 381 - One Blade Stream, Taiyuan

A man and a sword. Hokushin itsudon, who had returned to the Yin Yang shrine, was completely different from before.

He had changed his dirty clothes, cut his messy hair short, and his unshaven beard had long disappeared. His dejection had been swept away, and he was like a sharp sword in his hand, shining with a sharp cold light.

The people in the shrine were very familiar with ikage Kitagawa. Although he had changed his appearance, they still recognized him. They wanted to chase him away, but when they saw the sharp sword in his hand, they were afraid.

This time, they didn't dare to step forward. Even the Grand priest was cowering in a corner, shouting "warning" words.

However, Beichen Yidao turned a blind eye to it. He walked into the shrine step by step and headed toward the underground palace of the Yin-Yang School.

Beichen Yidao had thought that everything would go smoothly, but when he arrived at the YinYang school's underground Palace, he met a person. It was an old woman wearing a black priest's robe.

As for Beichen Yidao's arrival, she only said one sentence,"

"Let's go back. It's impossible for Zhong Jie to leave. "

Bei Chen did not say anything. He unsheathed the heartless pill and pointed it at the black-clothed priest.

However, this time, the black-robed priest did not Dodge like the priest did. Instead, he let Beichen Yidao see something that he could not believe. This

was an ability that was beyond Beichen Yidao's knowledge.

Yin Yang art!

A ferocious-looking Shikigami in armor appeared as she mumbled. This strange scene shocked Bei Chen's blade to the extreme.

After that, the priestess didn't attack. She only asked Bei Chen Yi Dao if he still wanted to fight.

Although Beichen was shocked, he did not choose to retreat.

Back then, the little witch had pulled him out of the darkness. This time, it was his turn!

However, the power of a spirit-branded retainer was clearly not something Bei Chen could withstand with a single strike. Even if he was extremely talented in swordsmanship and even if he was once a genius, he was just a mortal in the face of transcendent power.

Without any suspense, Bei Chen was defeated with a single strike. He couldn't fight back at all.

In the end, he was carried out and thrown outside the shrine like garbage.

After that, one blade Northstar disappeared and did not return to the shrine for several weeks. However, just when everyone in the Yin Yang shrine thought that one blade Northstar had finally given up, he came again.

However, what met Bei Chen's blade was still an unrivaled force. He was thrown out again.

After all, it was too much for a mortal to fight against the power of the ghost God. This was not a gap that could be made up by relying on his strong talent in swordsmanship.

However, even though he failed again and again, Bei Chen did not give up. Every time he wanted to give up, he would think of Zhong Dong, and think of her waiting for him in the dark underground Palace.

He could let her down, but he would not let her down. After half a year of friendship, he had already treated her as family.

In the end, before she left, he didn't just ask her about it. He also asked about himself. This was his promise to her, and also to himself.

Every few weeks after that, Bei Chen would come to fight the priestess. His swordsmanship was getting stronger and stronger day by day, and he was making rapid progress.

Even the old priest found this kind of growth potential inconceivable. At the beginning, he was suppressed by the 'spirit-branded retainer', but now, he was barely able to resist it. Now, he was even able to barely match it.

She was shocked by Bei Chen's attack when he fought against the ghost God with his mortal body.

What she didn't know was that every time Beichen Yidao left, he would go and practice his swordsmanship diligently, looking for the seniors of the ancient sword arts world to learn sword moves.

His sincerity moved many people. The swordsman seniors could not bear to let Bei Chen's talent go to waste, so they began to teach him swordsmanship and killing moves.

Just like that, Beichen Yidao became stronger day by day, and he reached a new realm every day. This was his talent, a sword genius that only appeared once in ten thousand years.

During this time, Bei Chen had defeated many of the seniors of the ancient sword arts world with his blade and sword. In the eyes of the descendants of the ancient sword arts sects, this returning genius was the well-deserved "uncrowned King" of the future official sword arts competition. He would dominate the ancient sword arts world for decades and no one would be able to defeat him.

However, Beichen Yidao's heart wasn't there. He held the sword again to give her freedom and didn't ask for anything else.

As a result, to the astonishment of all the seniors of the ancient sword arts, the 18-year-old Northstar one blade gave up the right to represent the one blade school in the official group.

However, he didn't give up on the sword in his hand. This sword was the key to breaking The Dark World that Bellflower was in.

Training hard, challenging.

Practice hard before challenging ...

He was defeated again and again, and more and more wounds appeared on his body. Bei Chen never gave up, and he became stronger and stronger with each defeat.

Until one day, in another battle, the heartless pill in his hand pierced through the evil spirit-branded retainer and cut it into black mist that filled the sky.

He had succeeded. He had won against the priestess 'disbelief. He had used the power of the mortal sword Dao to pierce through the divine Power's obstruction.

At that moment, Beichen Yidao felt satisfied from the bottom of his heart, because he had held his sword again for this moment.

However, what Beichen Yidao couldn't believe was that the priestess told him at that moment,"

"Bellflower died a long time ago!"

This sentence was like a bucket of cold water that was poured on Beichen Yidao's heart. The joy in his heart was instantly washed away.

Bei Chen, who couldn't believe it, ignored the priestess's obstruction and barged into the YinYang school's underground Palace. He began to search like a madman.

Finally, he came to a room.

The room was empty, but there were many pieces of paper stuck on the wall. They were full of drawings of two little people holding hands and watching sunrise and sunset by the beach. There were also many stories about the two.

“I like being with him. It’s safe, peaceful, and happy ...”

“I can’t sneak out to see him anymore, I really miss him ...”

“What is he doing now? Could he be thinking about me too? no, he should forget about me ...”

“Actually, I’m starting to like him a little ...”

“Wow, I actually gave birth to a child for him in my dream today. It’s so embarrassing ...”

“Perhaps I’m going to die soon. After all, I’m a sacrifice for a spirit-branded retainer. It’s good that he doesn’t know any of this. After all, the time when I was eaten should be very ugly. It’s a good thing he didn’t see it ...”

.....

The paintings and the lines of text touched the nerves of Northstar one blade.

A sacrifice!

At this moment, Beichen Yidao finally understood why the priestess had said that the orange was blocked. It was because she had been used as an offering to the ‘spirit-branded retainer’.

Heartache, endless heartache, and endless anger surged in his chest.

The arrival of Bei Chen’s blade had already alarmed the Onmyoji cultivating in the underground palace. They quickly gathered around.

The Furious Beichen Yidao only wanted to kill at this moment.

However, he was only one person. Although he was very strong and his swordsmanship was superb, he was still no match for so many spirit-branded retainers summoned by the Onmyoji, even if he kept swinging his sword.

It was a power he couldn't match, and he was seriously injured again. Originally, Bei Chen would have been killed with one strike.

However, the priestess suddenly came and saved him. She told Beichen Yidao not to come back again, or he would not be able to get out of here alive.

Beichen Yidao, who was severely injured, was on the verge of death. He asked the priestess why she had saved him.

However, the female priest said that "Bellflower was her daughter."

At that moment, Beichen Yidao angrily asked the priestess why she could bear to see Bellflower being sacrificed to the Shikigami.

"All of this is fate. I can't resist it, she can't resist it, and you can't resist it either!" After saying this, the priestess's face revealed a sad expression.

Before she left, she told Beichen Yidao to never think about revenge. The YinYang school's strength was far beyond this. They were as powerful as gods. No matter how strong his swordsmanship was, could he fight a God?

After saying this, the priestess left, leaving behind Bei Chen, who was on his last breath.

Despair was like a demon that had been watching Beichen's attack. It came again and whispered in his ear, "I'll always be by your side."

After that, Beichen Yidao was saved by a passerby and sent to the hospital.

However, after he was discharged from the hospital, Beichen Yidao's original sharpness disappeared again.

The priestess' warning before she left still echoed in his ears.

How could a mortal fight against a God?

Even though the priestess was so powerful, there were many more powerful Onmyoji in the underground palace. There were even existences as powerful as the gods that the priestess had mentioned.

He didn't know what to do next.

No matter how hard he trained in swordsmanship, he wouldn't be able to match the Yin-Yang School's power, and he wouldn't be able to take revenge for Zhong Geng.

When he returned home, Beichen Yidao was in the same pain as before.

What's the use of learning this sword!

It was because of this that my father left, and my mother followed him. Now, I see this as my only hope, but it can't give me the power to take revenge.

Then what's the point of me learning it!

'Powerlessness' did not bring helplessness to Bei Chen, but pain.

He came to his father's room and knelt down in front of his father's memorial tablet. He held up the heartless pill in his hands and placed it in front of his father's memorial tablet, intending to abandon the sword.

However, at this time, he found a book on the table beside his father's memorial tablet.

[One blade stream, Taiyuan]

He opened the book and a piece of paper fell out.

Beichen Hideo:

Yidao, I knew you would read this book, even though I Never Told You about its existence.

This is my one blade school's most essential sword intent cultivation method. But father is warning you here, you must not learn it!

My body is getting worse and I don't know how long I can last.

Cultivating this devil sword technique brought me a short period of joy, but it also brought me endless pain.

It's strong, but it's a demon that can corrode your body and spirit!

Although it once brought our one blade school a glorious history, that was only in the past. It doesn't belong to this era, and my wrong choice is your best warning. It's a spiritual inheritance, but it's not a taboo that we should touch.

“If you see my message, perhaps I'm no longer here, but Yidao, you must promise father that you will never cultivate this demonic sword!

Chapter 382 - Invitation To Battle

Looking at the letter left by his father, Beichen Hideo, Beichen Yidao fell silent.

Was this the sword essence cultivation method that caused his father to go berserk?

At this moment, Northstar one blade had the urge to tear it to pieces. Although his father had said that this ancient book had created glory for the Northstar one blade school and was an inheritance, it was still an ancient book. However, it was because of it that his father's cultivation went berserk, which led to the tragedy.

However, for some reason, Beichen Yidao, who was holding the book, felt that the book seemed to have a magical power that made him want to read it.

This was because he now desired power. He desired the kind of power that could allow him to transcend the mortal world and possess the power to rival a 'God'.

His father's advice and the thought of reading the Taiyuan sword manual intertwined in his mind, squeezing it and causing Beichen Yidao's mind to be in chaos.

At this moment, Zhong Jie's smile appeared in his mind.

He thought of the woman in the witch's costume who laughed heartlessly at the beach. He also remembered the promise he made in his heart before she left.

At that time, it was Bei Dou who brought him out of the dark World, but he was unable to help her when she was the most helpless.

He could imagine the scene of Zhong Geng crying in the dark underground Palace, looking forward to the future when they would meet again. However, he could only place all his yearning for the beautiful future in the paintings and words.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao put down his father's letter and began to read the Taiyuan sword manual.

With his last life, he vowed to fight with the so-called God to calm down the evil Qi in his heart and take revenge for Zhong Jie!

At this moment, Beichen Yidao had completely let go of his worries and began to read this book that had been passed down by his ancestors and was called the demonic book by his father.

At this moment, he was still on the path that his father had once taken, the path of sword will cultivation that he could not turn back on.

What Beichen Yidao didn't know was that this Taiyuan sword technique was a cultivation method, the most extreme sword way cultivation manual in the Reiki era. However, in this Dharma ending age, the human body could not be tempered by spiritual energy, so how could it withstand the torture of the sword Qi flowing in the body?

Cultivating sword intent would not only destroy the physical body, but also cause irreparable damage to the spirit before the powerful sword Qi condensed into a sword ball. This was also why the ancient sword arts Circle had explicitly forbidden the cultivation of "sword intent."

Without spirit Qi, the body would not be able to withstand the ultimate sword way cultivation method. This was the truth.

However, Beichen Yidao had already given up on life and death, so why would he be afraid of this? he began to practice his swordsmanship according to the Taiyuan sword code.

Day after day, he continued to use the sword moves and sword forms in the Taiyuan sword manual to condense sword Qi in his body.

One strike of the North Star finally felt how powerful the sword Qi was.

The sword Qi was like a dragon, and the heart of the sword comprehended the power of heaven and earth. When the sword was drawn, it was death, and when the sword was drawn back, it was life. It contained the invisible power of heaven and earth and was a true swordsman's code of law, not a demonic code like what his father had said.

But what Beichen Yidao didn't know was that although he had learned sword intent and sword moves, he couldn't absorb the spiritual Qi of heaven and earth into his body during his cultivation. As his sword intent became stronger and stronger, his body gradually couldn't bear the powerful destructive sword Qi wandering in his body.

During his cultivation, he started to vomit blood and even fainted for a short time.

This was the demon that Beichen Hideo was talking about. It was not the sword manual that could help people comprehend the power of heaven and earth, but the cultivator himself.

However, Beichen Yi Dao did not give up. Although the sword Qi was gradually corroding his body and mind, even if he spent hours in a daze every day, he would practice the sword as long as he was awake.

Many of his memories had become blurry during his cultivation, but there was one thing that he remembered clearly, and that was to take revenge for Bellflower!

After practicing hard, Beichen's saber move had reached a stage that his father had been unable to break through, which was to form a 'sword sphere'.

This step was extremely important in the records of "Taiyuan sword code." As long as he succeeded, the sword Qi in his body would be condensed into a sword pill, and he would no longer have to endure the torture of sword Qi.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao was already very weak. Just like his father, even his steps were trembling, as if he was about to rot.

At the most critical moment, Beichen Yidao didn't choose to break through, because he knew no one had ever succeeded. Although he was a genius, it had nothing to do with talent. It was just that his body couldn't bear it.

In the end, he only had a mortal body and was no different from all the seniors who cultivated sword intent.

Therefore, at the last moment, he gave up on condensing the 'sword sphere'.

On the day he made his decision, Beichen Yidao wrote a will and transferred all his property, including the house and the ruined martial arts school, to the kiai family.

Although so many years had passed, the battle with IAI shouzuzu was still a thorn in Beichen Itsuki's heart. Although it couldn't make up for the guilt in his heart, it was the last thing he could do.

Then, he took the heartless pill to the beach and watched the tide rise and fall one last time. He staggered to the Yin Yang shrine in the tide of memories.

Once again, a man and a sword came. Beichen's blade no longer had the sharpness it had in the past. It gave people the feeling that he was a hunched old man who was staggering as if he would fall at any time.

His arrival would always scare the priests and servants in the shrine, but they did not stop him because they knew someone would take care of Bei Chen, just like the previous times.

This time, Beichen's blade arrived at the entrance of the underground palace without any obstacles.

Seeing Bei Chen's blade appear once more, the priestess 'eyes were filled with helplessness and pity.

“You want to stop me?”

“Have you made your decision? you’ll definitely die this time.”

“It doesn’t matter. Even if I didn’t come, I’m not far from death.”

Looking at Beichen Yidao’s pale face and weak appearance, the priestess couldn’t imagine what he had experienced. Although she couldn’t bear it, she still made way for him.

Bei Chen nodded slightly and walked past the priestess. He walked down the stairs into the darkness ...

This moment had finally arrived. Beichen Yidao had already given up and had never planned to leave this place alive.

In this battle, the heartless pill in Beichen Yidao’s hand seemed to be assisted by the gods with the sword Qi. The so-called powerful spirit-branded retainers were nothing more than fragile puppets as the sword Qi swept across.

Even though he was extremely weak, he was still extremely terrifying. He became the nightmare of these Onmyoji. They were horrified to find out that this man had changed and become unimaginably powerful.

The Shikigami that they worshipped was so vulnerable at this moment. In the face of the sharp sword Qi, they all fell into a pool of blood with frightened expressions.

At this moment, they were terrified. They didn’t dare to fight with Bei Chen. They started to rush out of the underground palace.

However, the gate of the underground palace was closed.

No matter how hard he hit the door, there was still no response.

Bei Chen’s killing continued. Every wisp of sword Qi was as painful as being cut by a knife, but he felt very happy.

It was a great killing!

The several hundred Onmyoji that he had once thought to be invincible were nothing in the eyes of Northstar one blade.

In the end, the entrance of the underground palace was still broken by the crazy attacks of the Onmyoji. They escaped from the underground palace and started to run out.

Bei Chen's blade was chasing them closely. Every time the sword Qi left their bodies, one of them would be killed.

They chased all the way to the outside of the shrine. The ground was covered in blood, and countless Onmyoji were lying in pools of blood.

At this time, the sun was setting outside, and the afterglow of the sun dyed Half the Sky red.

Beichen Yidao couldn't help but laugh when he saw this scene because it was so similar to his current self. At the end of his life, he would dye the "sky" even redder!

Every strike of his sword was accompanied by death and the dissipation of life. At that moment, Bei Chen's blade was like a sword demon, and fear spread in the hearts of all the Onmyoji.

They were afraid, and they didn't dare to fight him again.

At this moment, a huge Crow appeared in front of the shrine and turned into an old man after landing.

His appearance instantly caused the initially frightened Onmyoji to stop running and all of them knelt down.

"Sword intent? He's very strong!" The moment he appeared, the old man could immediately tell that Bei Chen had used sword essence.

"You're their God?" "What's wrong?" Beichen Yidao looked at the old man coldly.

“Yes!”

“Then I’ll kill you!”

A soaring sword intent appeared. Bei Chen’s blade didn’t waste any words. He knew his body’s condition. It was like a candle that had burned out. The flame was barely dancing, but it had also reached its end.

This sword attack was the explosion of all the sword Qi in Beichen Yidao’s body.

With the guilt he felt for his parents, for Bellflower, and for himself, this strike contained all of Beichen Yidao’s thoughts.

As he swung his sword, the violent sword Qi instantly tore apart Beichen Yidao’s right arm. A huge sword Qi broke through the blood mist and swept toward the old man.

Even the old man did not expect Bei Chen to suddenly attack. Even he felt that he could not block the violent sword Qi that came at him.

There was no way to avoid this sword, so he chose to transform into a Black Crow and resist it.

However, the sword still pierced through his body, splitting his Black Crow body in two. The violent sword Qi did not stop at all and soared into the sky.

The power of this sword was beyond imagination, and even the priestess who was hiding in the dark to observe revealed a look of disbelief.

The man in the black crow was the head elder of the Yin-Yang School, but he had not expected to be killed by Bei Chen with a single strike.

The black crow landed on the ground and turned into an old man who was broken in two.

Bei Chen’s blade could no longer bear the burden on his body. Blood flowed out of his seven orifices and he fell to the ground.

But Beichen laughed.

What God? he was nothing more than this!

Even though Bei Chen was lying in a pool of blood, no one dared to step forward.

At this moment, Bei Chen's strike gave them a shock they had never experienced before. Fear spread from the bottom of everyone's hearts, and they didn't even have the courage to go forward and end Bei Chen's strike.

Bei Chen Yi Dao's eyes slowly closed as his life faded away.

It was time to go ...

However, at this moment, many figures appeared at the entrance of the shrine. Amidst the loud sirens, countless figures squeezed through the crowd and came to the side of Hokushin Itsuki.

The priestess, who was observing in the dark, revealed a smile.

The arrival of the police took away Bei Chen and saved his last life.

However, he had killed many people, and his sin could not be exonerated.

However, what Beichen Yidao didn't expect was that the entire ancient sword arts Circle would start to mobilize.

Even the IAI family, who had a grudge against him, chose to help him at this moment.

They began to make connections for Bei Chen, hired the best lawyer, and spent a lot of manpower and resources to slow down his crimes.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao was very confused. Why would they help him?

However, one day, the son of iahizuki tsuka, iahizuki, came to him, who was receiving treatment, and told him.

“Father died in a competition. Although I hate you, you are a genius of the ancient sword arts world. You shouldn’t have died like this ...”

At that moment, Beichen Yidao’s feelings were extremely complicated.

Before his sentence, Northstar Itsuki met Iaki again and told him,”

“Be good in there. We’ll wait for you to come out. We’ll wait for your legend to continue. All the ancient sword arts will be your home!”

These words were better than thousands of flowery words, giving Beichen Yidao hope to continue living.

However, Northstar one blade knew that he would no longer be a legend.

Because after the last strike, he didn’t even have his right hand to hold the sword, so how could he continue the legend?

From now on, he was just a cripple.

Later on, Beichen Yidao began his ten-year sentence.

During this period, he was one-armed and was laughed at and insulted by the crowd. He often became a punching bag for some people to vent their anger.

But so what? Beichen Yidao felt that these days were very peaceful.

No one knew that he was once an incomparably fierce beast and treated him as the weakest weakling to be bullied. The sharpness in Beichen Yidao’s heart had long disappeared.

After experiencing so many twists and turns, he was resigned to everything and faced it indifferently.

In the past ten years, people from the ancient sword arts Circle had come to visit him, but gradually, everyone seemed to have forgotten about him.

After all, everyone had realized that he only had one arm.

The ancient sword arts Circle was an alternative society that respected the strong, and he was only a former strong person.

In the prison, it was precisely because he was one-armed and unconventional that he was unable to integrate into any “group” for ten years and was always alone.

In the next few years, Beichen Yidao was very lonely ...

Ten years passed by in the blink of an eye, and on this day, he was released from prison.

It seemed that even the heavens did not like his arrival. It was drizzling outside, and the dark clouds were pressing down. The world outside was filled with darkness and decadence.

He stepped into the outside world, and everything around him was filled with unfamiliarity and coldness.

At that moment, Beichen Yidao did not know where to go. He walked in a daze, and walked ...

In the past ten years, he felt that he was out of place with everything around him, as if he should not have been here in the first place.

Just like before, he was still wandering aimlessly.

He didn't choose to go home, nor did he go to the familiar seaside, because these two places would remind him of his past.

Although these two memories were beautiful at the beginning, the ending was something he could not accept.

As he walked, he came to a pedestrian street, and the flow of people around him gradually increased.

At this moment, a girl suddenly blocked in front of Bei Chen Yi Dao.

The little girl looked sweet, and Beichen Yidao couldn't help but be dazed. At this moment, he thought of her.

“Hello, I'm IAI. Our club for the Asia server is recruiting. Do you want to join?” The little girl asked expectantly.

“IAMI? Who are you?”

When the girl heard this, she was also very surprised.”

“That's my deceased father. I'm her youngest daughter. Do you know her?”

Looking at the girl, Northstar one blade shook his head slightly.””I've heard of him before, but I don't know him!”

“Then, do you want to join our club? recently, an India force has appeared in the Asia server and is very domineering in snatching our resources in the game. We are gathering people to fight back!” The little girl asked again.

Seeing that one blade had fallen silent again, the little girl continued,”

“Look, you're one-armed, so it shouldn't be easy for you to find a job. Join our club. We can play games together and earn money. Just take it as helping out. Our club is really short of people!” The girl pleaded.

As he looked at Iaki, Hokushin itsudon recalled the mistakes he had made in the past, and the girl's pleading look also reminded him of the first time he met Bellflower.

He could not help but nod.

“Alright!”

At this moment, the rain suddenly stopped, and a rainbow appeared on the horizon.

(I've read everyone's words in this chapter. Everyone thinks that Northstar one blade is too long. After this chapter ends, we'll write about the game. Actually, I've carefully thought about the meaning of each character's

existence and how the plot should progress. But the most important thing is that this character needs to be full and not a character that suddenly appears. I hope everyone can understand this.)

(In fact, this novel is not easy to write. I've changed the outline several times. A story with a key tone is the easiest to write. The most difficult is to open up the brain and describe every plot in detail. This is a story-based novel, and it is also a complete world driven by many small stories and small plots. The quality of the writing is judged by the readers, and I will write it with my heart. Thank you, genuine readers, for giving me motivation.)

Chapter 383 - Sword

The sky was filled with stars, and the town was brightly lit at night.

Under the lead of IAMI, they arrived at a villa in the suburbs of the town.

At this time, two men and two women were sitting on the sofa in the living room of the villa. They were chatting. When they saw the door open, their faces revealed an expectant look.

However, when he saw that there was only one person behind Iaki, and that person had only one arm, disappointment was written all over his face.

“Xiaomei, didn’t I ask you to go and get some of the experts from your sword Pavilion? He’s an expert from the Kendo gym?” A woman walked up to Xiaomei and pointed at her head.

Hearing this, Iaki pouted her mouth.”

“Sister atom, the seniors in the Kendo gym don’t like to play games. They’re very old-fashioned, and I couldn’t persuade them at all, so I went to the streets to look for them. Although I met a few people who play war online, they were not willing to join our small club. Only he was willing!”

As she spoke, Iaki pointed at Bei Chen’s blade.

“What we want is an expert, an expert who can punish the India team who stole our resources!” Atom said helplessly.

“Hehe, there’s strength in numbers. Although he only has one arm now, he can recover it in the game. That’s why he’s the number one player in our human wave tactic!”

Looking at the smug IAI, the other people in the room also showed helpless expressions. They felt that it was indeed unreliable to let her do the work.

The four of them didn't look down on the one-armed Beichen Yidao, but they still felt uncomfortable deep down.

This was human nature. Towards an unfamiliar and incomplete person, there would still be a distance in the depths of one's heart.

“Hello, my name is Inoue A.I. Nice to meet you. The moonlight Club welcomes you!”

As if he realized something, atom Inoue quickly retracted his right hand and then extended his left hand with an apologetic look.

Hokushin itsudao smiled nonchalantly and extended his left hand to shake with atom Inoue 's.

Then, with atom Inoue's introduction, kitashene izidao shook hands with the other three people in the room.

“It's your turn, new member. Introduce yourself!” After introducing all the members of the moonlight team, Inoue said with a smile,”

When Beichen Yidao heard this, he was stunned. He couldn't help but look at IAMI and said,”

“You can call me Yidao.”

“Yidao, what a strange name. Do you know how to play games?” At this moment, Xiaomei jumped out and asked.

“No, I've never played games before.” Northstar one blade shook his head honestly.

Upon hearing this, an awkward smile appeared on everyone's face, and then they all turned their eyes to Izumi.

Seeing this, Iaki guiltily said,”

“It's a human wave tactic. He doesn't need to be very strong. Let him choose a meat shield. Yes, that's it. ”

As for Iaki, who could find another excuse, atom Inoue and the others had nothing to say.

However, since Northstar one blade was already here, they still brought him upstairs despite feeling helpless. They chose a room for him and a dedicated gaming chamber.

Then, they brought him to the living room upstairs.

Then, under Northstar one blade's surprised gaze, the five of them began to seriously discuss their battle tactics.

It was as if they were discussing the crisis of their country. When the debate reached its climax, all of them were red in the face, leaving one blade Beichen dumbfounded.

Wasn't it just a game?

"Yidao, what do you think?" At this time, atom Inoue suddenly turned his head and looked at Ishida.

Bei Chen was stunned. He thought for a moment and said, "I don't have any objections."

Upon hearing this, atom Inoue turned to the other four and slammed the table."

"Then let's level up with one blade first. We won't fight with the Hindustani cultivators for now. We'll accumulate our strength."

This time, the other four all raised their hands in agreement.

The people in the room were all gaming fanatics, and they were all from very rich families, including IAMI, who had a sword Pavilion. It could be said that they were all rich second generations, and they were usually very good friends.

After conquering online opened the Asia server, they naturally did not miss it and downloaded the game as soon as possible.

The gaming experience was undoubtedly extremely satisfying. However, as the Asia server was a mixed zone of many countries, there were bound to be conflicts between them.

It was also because of this environment that the players in the Asia server had formed several camps. Each camp was a collective formed by players from their own countries. Because of the resources in the Asia server, the conflicts between each other continued to intensify.

At this stage, the most powerful force in the Asia server was undoubtedly the India players 'camp.

As a country with a large population, they were able to fully utilize their human wave tactics in the game. During this period, they suppressed other forces in various ways and seized resources in an overbearing manner.

They had even blocked the entrance to the withered bones forest and forced other players to pay a fee to enter.

This caused many players to be dissatisfied, and they had to work together several times to resist. Only then did they suppress the India players.

However, even though there was no more collective overbearing behavior, the small group's provocative behavior still continued. Among them, the moonlight party, which was led by Yumi, was the victim. They had been chased out of the skeleton forest several times by the India players, so it could be said that they were quite resentful.

As a result, these five people had the idea of forming a big Guild. In the end, after some discussion, they found that they all had the same idea.

After that, atom Inoue provided his villa in the suburbs and bought a batch of gaming capsules with Iaki and the others, planning to use it as the first base for the development of the Guild.

After that, they began to try to expand their Guild.

However, they didn't know anything about Guild operations. During this period, many players joined moonlight, but they didn't stay for long before leaving.

Therefore, they thought of recruiting core players in the real world first, and then recruiting a large number of players when the core team was strong.

When it came to core players, the first person they thought of was IAMI.

After all, one's awareness and control in the game were directly linked to the real world. Moreover, the IAI family owned a Kendo gym and had many experts. Hence, they sent out the IAI family, hoping to get a few Kendo gym experts to join their team.

At that time, Iaki had patted her chest and promised that there would be no problem, but the fact was that she had screwed up.

None of the seniors were willing to join the core Moonlight Society.

However, it was embarrassing for her to go back just like that, so she tried to recruit people on the pedestrian street. However, no one agreed to her invitation, although they were curious.

It was at this moment that he encountered Beichen Yidao.

In fact, if she wasn't IAMI, Ishida would have rejected her as well.

However, he felt guilty towards the Izumi family, so he still agreed to Izumi's request.

By chance, he had entered the New World of the war online.

.....

After the discussion, atom and the others decided to take Northstar one blade to level up.

However, what made them feel helpless was that Northstar one blade did not know how to use the gaming chamber. They had no choice but to teach

him step by step.

After a series of explanations, Northstar blade finally understood how to use the gaming chamber. Then, he entered the gaming chamber according to what atom and the others had told him.

After the machine was activated, the nutrient solution rose in the chamber. One blade's vision also began to blur as he switched to the virtual panel.

Following the method that atom had explained, he clicked on the war online icon.

The moment he entered the game, the vast demon Phoenix continent appeared before his eyes.

All of this shocked one blade Bei Chen.

He couldn't believe that technology had advanced so rapidly in the past ten years. Ten years ago, although he had never played games before, he knew about the existence of the virtual helmet. He just didn't expect that the current technology had already reached the point where he could experience it in person.

Beichen Yidao looked at the scene and listened to the old voice recounting the history of demon Phoenix continent. He slowly let down his guard and immersed himself in it.

When the screen disappeared and the character selection panel appeared, Northstar one blade began to understand the introduction of each starter character.

In truth, one blade didn't know much about characters. After some research, he followed atom's recommendation and chose the physically strong Paragon.

After officially entering the game, he found himself in a huge square. The clothes of the passersby were completely different from those of the modern era, and the atmosphere was very ancient.

“One blade!” At this moment, a girl in leather armor waved at him excitedly.

He recognized the person at a glance and immediately stepped forward.”

“Xiaomei!”

“One blade, wait a moment. Sister atom and the others have gone to uncle Gu to get their newly forged weapons. I’ll take you to level up in a moment.”

“Who is uncle Gu?” Northstar Yidao couldn’t help but ask curiously. He didn’t remember such a member in the moonlight squad.

“Uncle Gu is a native of this place, which is an NPC. He’s an intermediate blacksmith and is very powerful. He can help us reforge and enhance the weapons we bought from the mall.”

Beichen Yidao nodded and started to look around curiously.

The game’s realism shocked him, who had never touched a game before. It was as if he had really traveled to another world and was not just playing a game.

“Hehe, it’s shocking, isn’t it? I was just like you when I first played it. This game is epoch-making. In order to let this game open in the Asia server ahead of time, I even went to the official forum to protest. So, I might have some credit for opening it so early!” Once again, Iaki started showing off.

Beichen Yidao listened silently and did not say anything.

At this moment, Iaki suddenly reached out and poked his right hand.”

“What do you feel?”

“What ...?” Just as Northstar Yidao was about to ask, he was suddenly stunned.

His body trembled as he slowly raised his right hand.

He had lost it for ten years, so even when he entered the game, he didn't pay attention to his right hand. However, when yuzumi touched it just now, he actually felt the feedback from his right arm again.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao was shocked again. He tried to raise his right arm and clenched his fist. This feeling was strange yet familiar, but it was so real.

“Hmph, are you shocked? this is one of the black technology of punitive expedition online. All of your flaws in real life can be restored in the game. My great punitive expedition is really invincible!” Iaki continued to show off at the side, as if the game was owned by her family, her expression full of pride.

“Oh right, one blade, what weapon are you used to using? our Asia server does not have any weapon restrictions. Walking the evolutionary path is a major feature of our server. You can use whatever you want.”

Hearing this, Beichen Yidao's expression froze.

The first thing he thought of was the sword, but during the ten years in prison, he felt that he would never touch the sword again.

Cultivating “sword intent” placed an enormous burden and damage on his body. Even if he didn't lose his right hand, according to the doctor, he only had 15 or 16 years to live. He had already spent these 10 years in prison, and there wasn't much time left. How could he use a sword again with his broken body?

Therefore, during his ten years in prison, he had thought it through and even cut off his thoughts about the sword.

But at this moment, he suddenly thought of what iakumi had told him:

“We'll wait for your legend to continue!”

Beichen Yidao's expression gradually became firm as he said,”

“Sword!”

Chapter 384 - Using Emotions To Wield A Sword

Hearing the word “sword” from Ishida, yuhemi couldn't help but chuckle.

“You know how to use a sword? Do you want me to teach you? I'm very good with the sword. ”

When Beichen Yidao heard this, he shook his head.”

“I will!”

“Hmph, it's fine if you don't want to learn. Don't blame me for not reminding you. You've already missed the opportunity to receive guidance from a Kendo master. You should know that if others want to learn from me, they won't have the chance even if they spend money.”

In reality, the level of Iaki's swordsmanship was barely passable. However, facing Bei Chen Yi Dao, she couldn't help but feel a sense of superiority. Although she couldn't compare to her senior brothers, she felt that in front of Bei Chen Yi Dao, she was definitely at the master level.

However, Beichen Yidao's rejection disappointed her. She felt like she had lost another chance to show off.

“Oh right, I'll transfer 50 soul coins to you. Go to the merchant shop and buy a sword that you like!”

As she spoke, Iaki opened the trading panel and gave 50 soul coins to Ishida.

Although Iaki looked very heroic at this moment, kitashene Izumi could still see the heartache that was deeply hidden on her face.

After opening the game store Panel, Hokushin Itsuki began to learn how to purchase equipment under the guidance of yukazumi.

[Main page],[equipment classification],[weapon classification],[sword classification]...

After entering the sword weapon category, a dazzling array of sword-type weapons appeared before his eyes. There was a wide variety of swords, and even Northstar Yidao, who was a sword cultivator, was extremely surprised.

However, not all of these weapons were available to him. Many of them were extremely expensive, and with the level restrictions, he could not use them at all.

Hence, under the guidance of yukazumi, Hokushin kouten narrowed down the range of weapons he could choose, reducing the range of ‘sword’ type weapons to within 50 soul coins and the level limit to 0-5.

However, there was still a large number of sword-type weapons in the shop.

After scanning through the weapons, Northstar one blade began to pick his first weapon in the game.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao was particularly serious.

He had always remembered his father’s teachings when he was teaching him sword skills.

“The sword is your name and your dignity. A swordsman might not leave anything behind after his death, but the ‘sword’ is different. It will brand your past glory. Whenever the later generations think of or mention this sword, the first thing they will think of is you!”

For Northstar one blade, who had received this kind of education since he was young, choosing a weapon at this moment was undoubtedly the same as choosing a “partner” who would always be by his side.

Looking at the hesitating Northstar Izumi, Kazumi was speechless.

In her opinion, wasn't it just a weapon that had been used in the early stages? was there a need to be so conflicted?

“Are there any weapons that can grow as I level up?” Hokushin Itsuki asked Iaki as he looked at the various weapons displayed on the shop's interface.

“Ha?” A dazed and adorable expression appeared on Iaki's face.

“I don't like to change my weapon. I need a weapon that can grow with my level.” Beichen Yidao said seriously.

“How is that possible? this is a game. It's impossible not to change your equipment. Low-level equipment will definitely be eliminated.” “Yes!” Iaki immediately replied.

“No, I said 'sword', not other equipment.”

“That's not it either. Unless it's a hidden weapon or a specially made special weapon, it's basically impossible. We haven't had such a weapon in the Asia server until now.”

At this moment, IAMI was a little speechless. She felt that even though Bei Chen Yi Dao was clearly a noob, why was he so ambitious? he was almost on par with her.

“You really don't?” Northstar one blade seemed a little disappointed.

“It's not that there's no one. There's a super player in the mid server called 'aojian'. It's said that all nine of his swords are growth-type weapons, so you have to work hard and get his weapon in the cross-server battle.” Iaki stood on her tiptoes and patted Hokushin Itsuki on the shoulder as she consoled him.

In reality, Iaki did not think that Hokushin Itsuki could do it at all, because she had browsed the forums of the Chinese server and seen the battle videos of aojian. Ao Jian's sword technique could be described as “extraordinary”. She believed that even the senior brother of her Kendo Association would

not be a match for that super player. As for a noob player like Northstar one blade, he had no hope.

“There are Kendo experts in the game?” Beichen was stunned.

“Yes, he’s super strong. He’s known as a cheater in the mid-server area. I think he can come to our Asia server and fight a Guild by himself without any problems.” At this point, an envious look appeared on yuzumi’s face.

“Okay, I got it.” Northstar Yidao nodded, but his eyes flashed with anticipation.

He had already defeated all the Masters of ancient Kendo before the age of 20. These Masters represented the highest level of Kendo in Japan. It could be said that at that time, Hokushin Itto had already reached the peak, so he was now curious about the Kendo Masters in the central server.

“Hurry up and choose, you’re so slow.” “What’s wrong?” Iaki asked in dissatisfaction.

When Northstar one blade heard this, he smiled apologetically and was about to continue looking at the weapons in the store.

At this time, the figures of atom Inoue and the others appeared in the distance, and they quickly walked toward Northstar Izumi and the others.”

“We’ve changed our weapons. We can set off now!” The leader, atom Inoue, led the other three members of the moonlight team to Kitagawa’s side.

“We’re not done yet. One blade seems to have difficulty choosing. He’s waiting for him to pick a weapon.” “I’m sorry,” Iaki said helplessly.

“Weapon? It’s fine if you don’t choose. In any case, you can level up very quickly in the early stages. You can just follow us and get some experience. When your level is high, you can just change directly. It’s also saving money.” Atom Inoue said indifferently.

“No, he wants a weapon that can level up along with his level, like the ‘aojian’ in the Chinese server.” Iaki continued.

Upon hearing this, Atom well and the others were all stunned.

“Are you serious?” Atom Inoue turned to look at Ishida and asked.

“It’s fine if you don’t have it. It’s just a game. I’m sorry for the trouble.” Beichen Yidao said apologetically.

“Why do you want this weapon?” Atom Inoue asked curiously.

“I have an obsession with swords. Changing weapons frequently makes me very uncomfortable.” Beichen Yidao said honestly.

“It’s not like you’re changing wives. You’re so pretentious. You’re very similar to my brother. He said the same thing before.” At this time, Iaki pouted her mouth, appearing very dissatisfied.

When Northstar one blade heard this, he laughed awkwardly again. He felt that there was no need to be so calculative in the game.

“Hey, Yidao, are you also a swordsman? otherwise, why would you have such an idea?” At this moment, Iaki suddenly spoke.

“Yes.”

“Eh? Which Kendo gym are you from? is it a modern Kendo gym from the ‘Hua Li style’?” As she said that, a look of disdain suddenly appeared on yuzumi’s face.

As a member of the ancient sword arts Circle, Iaki had been influenced by the others and also looked down on the grandiose style sword technique.

“I’m just casually practicing by myself. I don’t belong to any school of thought.” Beichen Yidao didn’t reveal his identity.

“Could it be a left-handed sword technique?” Iaki continued to ask like a curious baby.

“More or less.”

“Xiaomei, don’t mess around. Don’t mention anything about your left hand to Yidao.” At this time, Inoue atom suddenly walked to IAI’s side and pressed her head down to prevent her from continuing to be presumptuous.

“It’s okay. Let’s go level up first. We won’t choose weapons for the time being.” At this moment, Northstar one blade spoke.

“Don’t worry. Why don’t you come with us to find uncle Gu? he can modify and forge weapons there. There should be something suitable for you. Although it can’t be upgraded along with your level, a custom weapon will definitely suit you better than the template weapons in the mall.”

When Northstar one blade heard this, he did not refuse. He also desired a new weapon in his heart. Then, he followed atom well and the others to the East of the starting point.

Walking on the streets of Brahma City, he saw a large number of players walking back and forth. Their clothes were very suitable for the environment at this time, and it was impossible to tell who was a player and who was a native NPC.

With atom Inoue leading the way, the moonlight team turned into an alley next to a busy street and kept walking.

The further they went, the higher the temperature in the air. The sound of metal hitting metal could be heard from the end of the alley from time to time.

At the end of the corner, a forging room with an area of about 100 square meters appeared in front of them. A huge forging furnace was burning inside, and rolling heat waves radiated in all directions. In front of the furnace stood a topless man with a large iron hammer and a pipe in his mouth.

At this moment, he was hammering the iron block. The muscles on his right arm trembled with every collision between the iron hammer and the metal,

shaking out bits of crystal.

“Uncle Gu!” Atom Inoue greeted the man with respect.

“Eh? Why are you here again? are you not satisfied with the weapon?” The man called uncle Gu turned around, and at this moment, Northstar Yidao was surprised to find that this man had one eye. His right eye had been replaced by a silver-white metal ball.

“Hehe, uncle Gu, we would like to ask you to forge a weapon for my companion.” Iaki said with a mischievous expression.

“No problem. Once the soul coins are in place, I’ll forge all the divine weapons for you.” After taking two puffs of his cigarette, uncle Gu readily agreed.

“Uncle Gu, you’re only an intermediate blacksmith, stop bragging!” Iaki made a face at him.

“So what if it’s intermediate level? as long as the soul coins are in place and the inspiration explodes, maybe he can forge a divine weapon.” Even though his acting tough was exposed, uncle Gu’s face didn’t turn red, and his heart didn’t beat fast.

“Alright, speak. What weapon do you want to forge this time? what style do you want?” Uncle Gu asked after exhaling a thick smoke.

Upon hearing this, mika and the others all turned their eyes to Kitagawa heiya.

“Can you forge a weapon that will increase in level?” Although he felt a little embarrassed to ask this, Northstar one blade felt that he couldn’t be casual about his weapon.

“Brother, you’re here to cause trouble, right?” Uncle Gu’s eyes widened.

At this moment, he suddenly wanted to say, “I’m only an intermediate blacksmith, and you really want me to make a divine weapon!”

“It’s fine if you don’t.” Beichen Yidao immediately answered awkwardly.

“What do you mean forget it? why do I feel like you’re becoming more and more like a troublemaker? give me a target first, and if you can’t do it, then forget it. Aren’t you insulting me?” Uncle Gu’s eyes were wide open, and the veins on his right arm, which was holding the hammer, were throbbing. He looked like he was ready to attack at any moment.

This made atom well and the others scared. They had seen uncle Gu’s Details panel. He was a powerful existence in the level 80 realm, and no one in their team could withstand a hammer strike.

After playing the war online for so long, they knew that the NPCs in the war were not simple artificial intelligence. They had their own thoughts.

Recently, there was a player from the Asian server who kept harassing a female native. As a result, he was chased and did not dare to return to the safe zone. This made them know that some NPCs were Masters that they could not afford to offend.

“Uncle Gu, I’m really sorry. He’s a newbie, please don’t be angry.” Iaki immediately said.

“I’m sorry, I was rude.” Beichen Yidao also quickly apologized.

As if he could tell that Bei Chen’s attack was unintentional, uncle Gu put down his hammer and snorted,

“The growth-type weapon that you want must be at least epic or even legendary. Even if I have the ability to forge it, you can’t afford the materials needed to forge it. You have to be down-to-earth and not bite off more than you can chew.”

Hearing this, Beichen Yidao couldn’t help but feel a little disappointed. However, at this moment, uncle Gu’s tone changed.

“However, don’t look down on me. Although I’m only an intermediate forger, I do have the ability to forge a basic growth-type weapon. It’s just

that the materials I use to forge the weapon are extremely special. I'm afraid you don't have the guts to try."

"Uncle, we're players. We're not afraid of death, so this can't scare us. Can you really forge it? give each of us one." "What's wrong?" Iaki asked curiously.

When uncle Gu heard this, he revealed a helpless expression.

"It's not as simple as you think. This kind of forging requires you to use your own body as a material to forge a weapon. Do you dare to do it? moreover, as long as your body is successfully forged into a weapon, that part of your body can not be regenerated even in the game. It will always be your weapon."

As if he was afraid that they wouldn't believe him, uncle Gu put down the hammer, turned around, and walked into the room. A moment later, he came out with a sheepskin scroll in his arms, then spread the scroll on the ground.

Beichen Yidao and the others were curious, and they all looked at the scroll.

[Cast with blood-incomplete manual (special)]:

[Item description: a godly weapon Atlas created by demon nightmare continent's Demon God "blood wave." Due to the ancient War of the Gods, this Atlas is incomplete, and only the chapter "forging with flesh and blood" is left.] The forging in this chapter uses one's own flesh and soul as the core forging material to create a special growth-type weapon that is one with one's soul and body.

[Game hint: please use this forging blueprint with caution. The body part that is used as the forging material will disappear from the game forever!]

"So, do you dare?" Uncle Gu said after taking two puffs of his cigarette.

"Is hair okay?" Iaki couldn't help but ask softly.

“Cough, cough ...” Uncle Gu coughed uncontrollably after hearing this, then glared at Izumi.

“If I want to forge a sword, what do I have to pay?” At this moment, Northstar one blade spoke.

“You really dare to?” Uncle Gu’s eyes widened when he heard what Beichen Yidao said.

Beichen Yidao nodded lightly.

“You’re not joking, are you? This is not a joke.” Uncle Gu continued to ask in disbelief.

However, Beichen Yidao still nodded his head. He didn’t seem to be joking at all.

After sizing up Bei Chen’s blade again, uncle Gu said,”

“Forging with flesh and blood. Since the weapon you want is a sword, then your left arm, right arm, left leg, or right leg can all be used.”

After hearing uncle Gu’s words, Beichen Yidao was silent for a moment, then said,”

“How’s the right arm?”

This time, atom Inoue and the others widened their eyes. They felt that Northstar Izumi had gone crazy. This was no joke. This part of his body had really disappeared forever in the game. This loss could not be described as huge.

“Yidao, don’t be rash. You finally have a right arm!” “Izumi!” Iaki immediately hugged kitashiki’s right arm and said anxiously.

“I’ve lost it for too long. I’m not used to it. I’m used to using my left hand. Besides, I can use my left hand to wield the sword from scratch. I can comprehend the sword Art again. Who knows, I might be able to reach a higher level.” Beichen Yidao smiled indifferently.

“You just don’t understand the sword. A swordsman’s right arm is the key. How can the left arm be as flexible as the right arm?” As a professional, juhemi immediately criticized.

Looking at Iaki’s reproachful expression, Northstar izuto felt a warm feeling in his heart, but he didn’t refute her.

How could he not know the importance of his right arm to a swordsman?

However, it had been ten years, and he had long gotten used to not having a right arm. In Bei Chen’s heart, his right arm had long been cut through the sky along with the sword Qi that soared to the sky.

Although recovering what he had lost was a pleasant surprise, it was still an illusion. He still had one arm in reality. He was willing to use this illusory right arm to exchange for a peerless sword that had grown with him in the game.

“You want to use your left hand?” Uncle Gu was also a little surprised.

“Why not? if you can forge it, I’ll give up my right arm.” Beichen Yidao smiled indifferently.

Upon hearing this, a drop of sweat trickled down uncle Gu’s forehead. He wanted to use this [forging of flesh and blood] to scare them off, but he didn’t expect that there were really people who weren’t afraid of death.

In reality, as an intermediate forger, he was not confident that he could forge such a growth-type weapon. Even if Northstar had the courage to do so, he would not have the courage to do so.

The consequence of failure was that the right arm would disappear, and the weapon would not form.

“Wait a moment, let me think about it.” With that, uncle Gu turned around and entered the small house, closing the door behind him.

After that, he quickly opened the NPC friend panel and found han Yuanwu’s profile picture. He opened the chat box and reported what

happened to him.

Although he knew that they were players, uncle Gu knew that this was no joke.

He really needed to forge that part of his flesh and soul into a weapon. It was not as simple as losing his right arm in the game. His right arm would also lose feeling in reality because the soul in his right arm had disappeared during the forging process.

As the person in charge of the Asian server, Han Yuanwu immediately sent the message to Lu Wu after receiving the message from uncle Gu and asked for his advice.

Although the players were willing, they were going to use their real right arm to forge after all. He couldn't decide whether to agree to this risky decision or not. After all, he couldn't control the soul at all, and the authority was on Lu Wu's side.

Han Yuanwu's feedback soon came to Lu Wu.

For such an absurd request, Lu Wu originally wanted to reject it decisively. After all, if he made a weapon in the game and lost his body in real life, how could this still be a game? it would be too cruel. Lu Wu, who had a very positive outlook on life, firmly opposed it.

However, out of curiosity, he pulled up the information on Northstar one blade.

After checking the information of Beichen Yidao, Lu Wu was surprised to find that this guy was a Super Kendo genius and had just lost his right arm in reality.

In other words, even if the soul in his right arm disappeared, it would not affect him in the real world.

Moreover, from the detailed understanding, Lu Wu realized that Beichen Yidao's talent in Kendo could no longer be described as strong. He and ao

Jian could be said to be two extremes.

Ao Jian was obsessed with the sword and comprehended it. He didn't care about anything else in the world and was an extreme sword fanatic. This state of mind and talent made him extremely compatible with the way of the sword. With the sword in his hand, he could destroy anything.

On the other hand, Bei Chen's blade was the other extreme. His sword had emotions, and he used the sword for his emotions.

At first, he had started to use swords because of his parents' expectations. This was the "family sword."

However, after the death of his parents, his sword of kinship became the sword of revenge.

When he met her again and she left, he swore that he would save her from the underground palace and this sword would become the sword of oath.

After the death of Zhong Jie, in order to vent the anger in his heart, this sword became the "killing sword."

And now, the guilt he once felt made him want to pick up his sword again. This time, it was the Sword of Protection.

"A Sword's Edge is forged from grinding, and the fragrance of plum blossoms comes from the bitter cold."

This sentence was very suitable for Beichen Yidao. He was a person who used his emotions to hold his sword. Under his extremely strong talent in sword Dao, his rough life had made his sword heart more and more solid.

At this moment, his sword heart was not any weaker than proud Sword 's, and he was a true super-talented player.

Naturally, Lu Wu welcomed the addition of such a super talented player.

Thus, he silently took out his little notebook and wrote down the words "Beichen's blade. "

After that, he dragged Tong Yan, who was playing fight the landlord with rock and the others in the divine artifact space, over and gave him a new task. He disguised Tong Yan's reluctant expression and sent him to Brahma City.

Chapter 385 - The Arrival Of The Copper Pendant

After receiving Lu Wu's response, Han Yuanwu started to wait.

A moment later, a space tunnel appeared in front of him, and a figure emerged from it.

However, what surprised Han Yuanwu was that this person looked very similar to the blacksmith "Gu Dashu," except that he had an indescribable ruffian aura. He didn't look like a good person.

"My Wang bomb!" Tong Yan, who had just appeared in The Burning Sky City, gritted his teeth and said.

Han Yuanwu was stunned, clearly not understanding what the copper pendant was saying.

"I'm just a blacksmith in his eyes. Where are my human rights? where are the laws?" Tong Yan continued to complain.

"That one? You're the master blacksmith sent by the higher-ups?" Han Yuanwu asked carefully.

Although the copper pendant looked ordinary, Han Yuanwu was very respectful. After all, the ordinary-looking God that was sent here last time was a God. Han Yuanwu was very careful now.

"That's right. What's the matter?" Tong Gua raised an eyebrow, and his arrogance was revealed once more.

Han Yuanwu felt embarrassed. "Do you need me to take you to the big tree's blacksmith shop?"

“No need, I have a map. I can go there myself.” Tong Yan immediately refused. Then, he walked out of Han Yuanwu’s room in a familiar manner and headed to the mission location that Lu Wuwu had marked.

After walking out of the room, the arrogance on Tong Yan’s face faded. He chuckled and quickly ran towards the tavern marked on the map.

At this moment, he only had one thought. Since he had come to the demon Phoenix great region once, he must bring back some special wine.

“If you dare to buy wine, I’ll confiscate all the soul coins you have!”

At this time, Lu Wu’s voice suddenly sounded in Tong Gao’s mind, causing the smile on Tong Gao’s face to instantly freeze.

“You’re so inhumane. I want human rights. Even if you’re the boss, you can’t exploit me like this.” Tong Chui immediately said in exasperation.

“Hurry up and complete the mission, and I’ll give you time to buy the wine. Otherwise, no more talking!”

“Oh, then can boss borrow some soul coins to spend after completing the mission? I’ve almost lost all my soul coins in cards recently.” Seeing that Lu Wu agreed, Tong Hang couldn’t help but start to push his luck.

“Get lost and complete the mission!”

“You only know how to be fierce.” Tong Yan mumbled, feeling wronged.

However, this time, he didn’t let his guard down and went straight to the blacksmith shop that Lu Wu had marked.

.....

At that moment, in the blacksmith shop, Gu Dashu knew that someone would come to support him after receiving the feedback from his superiors. He heaved a sigh of relief and knew that this wave of acting tough would be successful.

Thinking of this, he pushed open the door and coughed as he looked at Beichen Yidao.”

“I’ve just contacted my big brother through a secret method. He’ll come and help me with the growth-type weapon later. But I’ll ask you again. Are you sure you want to make it and won’t regret it?”

Beichen Yidao nodded his head solemnly.

“Very good, this young man has some courage. You look a bit like me when I was young. Not bad.” Gu Dashu nodded with a look of admiration.

“Uncle Gu, when did you have a big brother? It seems that you’re the only blacksmith in Brahma City with the surname Gu. ” “What’s wrong?” Iaki asked curiously.

“Cough, cough. My big brother lives in seclusion in the city. He doesn’t show his face under normal circumstances.” Gu Dashu replied immediately.

Hidden character!

Other than Ishinomori, this thought suddenly appeared in the minds of everyone else, and they suddenly became a little excited.

There were many NPCs in Brahma City now, and there were indeed hidden NPCs. Some hidden NPCs would even take players to level up after their intimacy with players increased.

That was why after knowing that uncle Gu’s big brother might be a hidden NPC, they all had the idea of befriending him.

“Who is Gu Dashu!” At this moment, a figure appeared at the entrance of the blacksmith shop.

Beichen Yidao and the others immediately turned around and saw a middle-aged man who looked very similar to uncle Gu.

“Big brother, you’re here!” At this moment, Gu Dashu hurriedly walked forward and shouted at the bronze pendant.

“Oh, right. I’m your big brother.” Tong Yan nodded in realization.

...”” Yuhemi and the others were speechless.

Gu Dashu felt embarrassed and immediately said,”

“Big brother, your memory doesn’t seem to be very good.”

“Don’t talk nonsense and start forging. Don’t waste time. I earn a few dozen soul coins per minute. ” Tong Yan continued to speak arrogantly.

Knowing that this person was a master blacksmith, uncle Gu didn’t dare to be presumptuous. He quickly nodded and pointed at Bei Chen,

“Big brother, this is the person who wants to forge the flesh and blood weapon!”

When Tong gua heard this, he looked at Beichen Yidao. After sizing him up, he nodded and said,”

“No problem. Let’s start. You go start the fire.”

Then, under Beichen Yidao and the others ‘surprised gazes, the bronze staff picked up the [cast of blood and flesh] sheepskin scroll on the ground and began to examine it with a critical gaze.

“Not bad! Not bad!”

“Tsk tsk, that’s amazing. Why didn’t I think of that?”

“Aiyo, this part is a little creative. The demonic god who created this thing is quite capable.”

.....

Although his gaze was critical, the forging method in the blood and flesh Forging Guide really shocked the copper pendant.

“Is this the first time you’ve seen this diagram? Is there really no problem?”
“What’s wrong?” Iaki asked worriedly.

“Of course, it’s not a problem. It’s just made of flesh and blood, what can’t I make?” Tong Yan said arrogantly.

“Is hair okay?” Iaki asked in a low voice.

Copper pendant was speechless.

Tong Hang silently rolled up his sleeves. At this moment, he really wanted to beat someone up.

“I was wrong, I’m sorry!” Seeing that the situation wasn’t right, Iaki immediately bowed and apologized.

Looking at Iaki, who had instantly given up, Tong Yan suddenly felt that this attitude was very familiar, as if he had seen it somewhere before ...

On the side, Dashu Gu was constantly stimulating the flames in the furnace. The originally orange flames gradually turned black, and waves of heat radiated in all directions, causing Iaki and the others to take a few steps back.

“Big brother, that’s enough.” At this moment, Gu Dashu shouted at the bronze pendant.

“Okay, let’s start then!” With that, Tong Yan took out the materials he brought from the medium and placed them on the forging table. Then, he picked up Gu Dashu’s hammer.

However, after weighing it in his hand, Tong Yan could not help but purse his lips and throw it to the side. He then took out his legendary-quality forging hammer from the medium.

“Legendary forging hammer!” Gu Dashu was shocked to see the hammer in Tong Yan’s hand.

“What are you standing there for? throw the Obsidian, associate stonemother, and Demon Heart manao into the casting furnace and melt them!” Tong Chui looked at Gu Dashu with dissatisfaction.

“Yes!” Dashu nodded quickly. He picked out three types of ores from the casting table and threw them into the casting furnace. Then, he continued to operate the furnace to speed up the melting of the ores.

Meanwhile, the copper pendant also began to pick out the materials. After taking out the mystical materials that needed to be hammered, it began to hammer them.

With every strike of the hammer, the impurities in the mystical materials would turn into black dust and fly out.

When Gu Dashu saw this, he stared at the copper pendant while smelting the ore. He wanted to learn something from it.

“That’s right, didn’t uncle Gu ask for big brother’s help in forging? Why do I feel like he’s just an assistant now?” At this time, Iaki asked in a low voice.

Upon hearing this, Aimi Inoue and the others couldn’t help but glare at IAI, afraid that she would speak again and make a mistake.

“You over there, come here!”

At this moment, Tong Yan suddenly said to Bei Chen Yi Dao.

When Beichen Yidao heard this, he immediately walked to the side of the copper pendant.

“Hehe, put your right arm up.”

Bei Chen Yi Dao did not hesitate and immediately placed his right arm on the forging table.

“It’s going to hurt. Are you ready?” Tong Hang continued to speak with a smile.

This was the first time even the copper pendant had tried to cast something like this with blood and flesh. At this moment, he felt an inexplicable excitement in his heart.

As Beiqi's best blacksmith, besides his own talent in forging, he was also very passionate about this trip. It was just that the repeated forging had already made him uninterested. However, the forging of the flesh and blood weapon had once again aroused the enthusiasm in Tong gua's heart.

"Come on!" Beichen Yidao nodded.

"Wait, one blade, lower your pain level first!" At this moment, Iaki couldn't help but ask.

"It's no use. It's specially forged, so the pain can't be blocked. If you want to continue, you have to endure it." Hanging copper looked at Iaki with a serious expression.

"Come on, I'm not afraid of pain!" Beichen Yidao said solemnly.

"How about this? you should lie down first. It'll be better if I help you stabilize it."

"No need, I can handle it."

"Don't, it's better to fix it." Tong Yan immediately shook his head and refused.

Beichen Yidao felt helpless. He was very confident in his ability to withstand pain. After all, he did not cry out in pain when his right arm exploded.

However, since the copper pendant had requested it, he had no choice but to do as it said. He lay on the casting table and let the copper pendant tie him up with a black rope.

"Can you really hold on?" Tong Yan asked again.

"No problem!"

“You said it yourself.”

With that, tonghang picked up his hammer, and the gem embedded in the hammer began to shine. Then, he swung it down and hit Beichen Yidao’s right arm.

“Bang!”

The moment the hammer came into contact with Beichen’s right arm, black light seeped out of the pores on his right arm.

“Ah!” The veins on Beichen Yidao’s forehead popped out, and he looked like he was in extreme pain.

Then, his body began to tremble involuntarily from the extreme pain.

This pain made Bei Chen think that his soul had left his body, and the feeling of his physical body was minimal. It was a deeper level of extreme pain that he did not know where it came from.

Looking at Beichen’s saber, which was already on the verge of collapsing, Tong gua felt helpless.

He knew very well that the pain from the soul was unbearable, which was why he had warned him many times. However, it was obvious that Bei Chen’s blade was not prepared.

Moreover, this kind of forging could not be done in one go. It required both the body and the soul to be forged at the same time. Even if Bei Chen’s right arm was cut off, it would not be able to be forged alone.

“Can you continue?” Tong Yan could not help asking.

“No... No problem. Come on.” Bei Chen’s blade seemed to be exhausted, and he stuttered as he spoke.

Hearing those words, Tong Yan nodded and raised his legendary forging hammer again.

One ... Two ...

Beichen Yidao's throat became hoarse from the beating of the copper pendant. In the end, he was gagged by the copper pendant, making him unable to make a sound.

In Bei Chen's eyes, this pain was far more unbearable than death, but he still gritted his teeth and persevered ...

Atom Inoue and the others who were watching could not help but shiver at this moment.

“As expected, I'm only suited to using hair to make weapons.” Looking at Kitagawa uzumami, she whispered.

Chapter 386 - The Legendary Bellflower

The process of forging the weapon with the copper pendant scared yuzumi and the others so much that they shivered.

Seeing Beichen Yidao's miserable state, they all felt pain. At this moment, they were very glad that they did not choose to do something like 'casting with flesh and blood', so they had escaped this disaster.

However, what they didn't know was that even if they wanted to, Lu Wu would definitely not agree.

This time, Lu Wu agreed to the flesh casting only because of the special nature of Bei Chen's blade. Since he had lost his right arm in reality, losing this part of his soul would not affect him. That was why Lu Wu made an exception and gave him this opportunity.

And because he was worried about the ability of "Gu Dashu," an intermediate blacksmith, Lu Wu specially sent the master blacksmith's copper pendant over.

The forging was still going on.

Although Tong Yan was usually very frivolous, he was very serious when he was in the right state. Under his hammering, Beichen Yidao's right arm had become transparent, and the blood vessels inside could be clearly seen.

Bei Chen Yi Dao had also passed out several times during this time. However, every time the copper hammer fell, he would still be woken up by the unbearable pain.

This repeated over and over again, and Iaki, who was at the side, felt that she was almost scared to death. At this moment, her face was deathly pale.

“Hey, you there, are you done with the smelting?” Tong Chui wiped his sweat and shouted at Gu Dashu.

“Oh, big brother, the three types of metals have been smelted.”

“Bring it over!”

“Let’s go!” Gu Dashu shouted and took out the spirit ore that had been refined into liquid metal from the furnace. He placed them into three different containers and walked over to the copper pendant.

He looked at Beichen Yidao’s right arm, which had become transparent. The way he looked at the bronze pendant was different. His eyes were filled with admiration.

Then, under everyone’s curious gazes, the pendant made a cut on Beichen Yidao’s right arm and poured the liquid of the three different metals into it.

At this moment, IAMI and the others grimaced in pain, unable to bear to look at it.

Bei Chen’s blade did not disappoint Tong gua. His eyes widened and he began to sob, but there was a hysterical stubbornness in his eyes.

Since he had already started, the brass pendant would not stop halfway, even if Bei Chen’s attack was extremely painful. He immediately took out a portion of ice-attributed mystical materials, crushed them, and covered Beichen Yidao’s right arm, which was still steaming.

The two temperatures clashed, and cracks began to appear on Bei Chen’s transparent right arm.

Seeing this, Tong Gaoyou furrowed his brows and picked up his hammer again.

With every strike, the legendary forging hammer would overflow with a stream of light, continuously repairing the crack in Northstar’s right arm, allowing the internal fusion to continue.

The pain was driving Bei Chen crazy, but he still gritted his teeth and persevered.

Then, the pendant began to repeat the process.

Hammer ... Pour in the new liquid metal ... Hammer ... Pour in ...

Half an hour later, a black light flickered on the surface of Beichen Yidao's right arm, revealing a heavy metallic aura.

After that, it was the most critical moment.

Copper pendant raised his legendary forging hammer high, and a seven-colored light flickered on the surface of the hammer. Following copper pendant's shout, the hammer fell.

“Bang!”

This attack had broken Bei Chen's right arm, but no blood flowed out of the wound.

“Ya!”

At this moment, a high-pitched scream rang out, causing the copper pendant, which was about to pick up the right arm, to shiver in fear.

Immediately, everyone's eyes were focused on Iaki.

“I'm ... I'm sorry, I was too engrossed and thought my hand was ...” Iaki's face was red, and she seemed to be at a loss.

Everyone was speechless.

“Please continue. I'm sorry for disturbing you.” Iaki hurriedly bowed.

Tong Yan naturally wouldn't stoop to the little girl's level. He bent down and picked up Bei Chen's severed arm.

At that moment, the right arm in Beichen Yidao's soul had been torn apart and completely fused with it. This was the most important material needed to cast it with blood and flesh.

“You, go start a fire.” Tong Yan pinched his right arm, which had become extremely hard, and nodded in satisfaction. Then, he turned to Gu Dashu and ordered him to do something.

When Gu Dashu heard this, he didn't have any complaints. At this moment, he just wanted to learn from this master blacksmith, so he ran to start a fire and be an assistant.

After that, it was the individual show of the copper pendant. The various hammer techniques and material combinations dazzled the eyes of the audience.

Soon, a long sword-shaped embryo was formed.

At this moment, Tong Yan turned his gaze to Bei Chen Yi Dao.”

“Kid, do you have any other requirements for the weapon?”

Beichen Yidao immediately nodded and began to describe the appearance of the heartless pill.

(Author's note: Hokushin Itsuki's weapon is actually a sword to us, but there's no such thing as a sword Japan. Whether it's a sword or a sword, they're both called “swords.” The concept of swords and swords is very vague. For example, Sauron from one piece uses a sword, and it's even a three-blade style, but his goal is the world's number one sword Master. Hokushin Itsuki's weapon is the same. It's also a sword to us, closer to the tachi we understand.)

Following which, the copper pendant continued forging according to Northstar one blade's instructions. During this period, it continuously showed the weapon to Northstar one blade and asked him for areas that needed improvement.

This time, copper pendant was particularly serious. When most players asked him to forge a custom weapon, he would just do it half-heartedly and not put in any effort if possible.

However, it was different this time. Tong gua was impressed by one blade Beichen's patience. He was also very interested in the new forging method of 'flesh and blood'. He wanted to see what kind of weapon he could forge.

As Northstar blade described it, the weapon gradually took shape.

At this moment, be it Northstar izako or IAMI and the others, they all had looks of anticipation on their faces.

After the last step of quenching was completed, the copper gavel picked up the tachi from the specially-made cooling water.

In an instant, a black stream of light streaked from the hilt to the tip of the sword, and the sharp edge disappeared in a flash.

"Good sword!" Beichen Yidao's eyes flashed with a hint of eagerness as he looked at the sword.

"Don't worry, it's not done yet." Under Northstar Yidao's surprised gaze, the pendant took out a new tool, the 'carving knife', from the medium and began to carve runes on the weapon.

Originally, this process was not necessary, but casting with flesh and blood was different. The runes engraved on the copper pendant this time were the "soul reconstruction" he had learned from the "flesh casting guide."

As long as this process was completed, the weapon would be able to transform into Bei Chen's right arm at any time. When facing an enemy, it could transform into a weapon again and connect perfectly with his soul.

After half an hour of waiting, Tong Chui observed the <<flesh and blood Forging Guide>> several times and continuously engraved the symbols on the sword. Soon, the sword was filled with all kinds of runes.

At this moment, Tong Yan suddenly turned to Beichen Yidao."

“By the way, what’s the name of your weapon?”

Beichen Yidao was stunned for a moment before falling silent.

After a while, he raised his head and said in a serious tone,”

“Bellflower!”

Tong Yan nodded and made a final stroke on the sword with the inscribing saber in his hand, imprinting the two words into it.

In an instant, the Bellflower glowed with a black light. The sword trembled slightly as if it was humming. Then, it suddenly left the bronze Hook’s hand and flew towards Bei Chen’s blade.

Beichen Yidao stood up and reached out his left hand to take the Chinese bellflower.

“Bzzzzzz!” The sword trembled.

As he held onto the Bellflower, Beichen Yi Dao felt as if he was connected to the sword.

This feeling was very wondrous. There was no awkwardness or discomfort. It was as if this sword was the derivation of his flesh and consciousness.

Seeing this, yuzumi and the others also gathered around curiously and began to analyze the Bellflower sword in Kitagawa Yidao’s hand.

[Bellflower (level 0)]

[Weapon description: a soul-growing weapon forged using the ancient “flesh casting” method. It has the ability to grow with the player.]

[Weapon quality: legendary Level 1]

[Weapon characteristics: indestructible at level 10 (below divine rank), can not be dropped, can not be traded, can grow]

[Weapon starting point: soul lust (passive), Transfiguration (active), inborn ability (special passive)]

[Soul lust (passive)]

[Skill description: this skill comes with the weapon. After killing a monster, Bellflower can devour part of the target monster's soul and convert it into weapon growth experience.]

[Skill Note: This skill is ineffective against players. Instead, it strips them of their experience. After killing a player, a small amount of experience will be rewarded (the target will lose the amount of experience that they have gained)]

[Transformation (active)]:

[Skill description: after using this skill, you can freely switch Bellflower to your right arm or sword form.]

[Inborn ability (special)]:

[Skill introduction: the sword follows the heart of the user. As the user's sword heart condenses and grows, the weapon will also derive sword moves and special skills that are compatible with the user's sword intent (this skill is related to the player's own talent)]

[Weapon bound: Northstar one blade (unique)]

The weapon forger was speechless. (Already covered by the blacksmith)

.....

“Hiss!”

“Hiss!”

“Hiss!”

Looking at the attributes of this weapon, yuzumi and the others were in disbelief.

This was because the weapon's ability was too heaven-defying in their eyes.

Not to mention the growth from killing monsters, it was the first time they had heard of such an attribute in the game that could deprive other players of a small amount of experience.

The transformation ability also meant that Northstar sword still had his right arm, but it needed to be removed in battle.

As for the last special ability, it was practically invincible in their eyes. It could actually learn new abilities as the player grew, as if it had a life of its own.

"I can't imagine if this weapon can learn dozens of skills at level 1000 ... Wouldn't it become a skill launcher ..." Looking at the Chinese bellflower, kazufuru muttered to herself.

Upon hearing this, atom Inoue and the others also looked envious.

It was because this weapon was too powerful, and it was a legendary quality weapon that had never appeared in the entire Asia server.

If this weapon were to be sold, they couldn't imagine what kind of sky-high price it would fetch.

"What do you think? my skills are not bad, right?" Tong Yan smiled smugly.

Beichen Yidao, who was looking at the Bellflower in his hand, immediately stood up and landed on the forging table. He then bowed to the bronze pendant and said,"

"Thank you for the weapon, master!"

"Don't give me that. I hate this the most,"Tong Wei waved his hand nonchalantly.

“That’s right, Grandmaster, how many spirit coins does this weapon cost?” Suddenly, yuzumi asked nervously.

Upon hearing this, atom Inoue and the others were also nervous. Obviously, they knew that the price of such weapons was extremely terrifying.

Bronze pendant was stunned when he heard this. Then, a smile appeared on his face. Although the materials for this weapon were provided by Lu Wu, he could make a fortune. Why not?

But just as he was about to ask for an exorbitant price, Lu Wu’s voice sounded in his mind,”

“Free!”

At that moment, the smile on Tong gua’s face froze.

Looking at Iaki and the others who were waiting for a reply, Tong Yan could only say,”

“Ahem ... I’ve never valued money when forging weapons. Money is nothing to me. It’s not easy for him to endure such extreme pain. I admire his perseverance, so I’ll waive the forging fee this time!”

Upon hearing this, the nervous Iaki and the others were all stunned.

“Wow, master, you’re really an expert!” Iaki couldn’t help but feel happy.

“It’s just soul coins. I’m very pleased to see a kid with such perseverance. ” Tonghang smiled indifferently, but his heart was bleeding. He didn’t even have to pay for his hard work.

“Then, master, can my hair be forged into a legendary weapon?” “What’s wrong?” Iaki asked while the iron was hot. She was envious at the moment and seemed to be very happy to see the copper pendant.

“Get lost!”

.....

After a round of thanks, Beichen Yidao and the others left.

At this moment, Gu Dashu was still looking at the bronze pendant in admiration. He could not believe that he had actually participated in the forging of a “legendary” weapon. He was full of admiration for the bronze pendant.

Besides, he was very clear about the price of the mystical materials used to make the weapons.

This time, the master didn't even accept a single cent after painstakingly forging it. This kind of strength and character simply made Gu Dashu prostrate himself in admiration.

At this moment, the image of copper hanging in his heart was incomparably tall, like a god shining brightly.

At this time, the master forger in his eyes suddenly came to his side and put his arm around his shoulder.”

“Brother, do you have any soul coins? I can borrow some!”

Chapter 387 - Encounter

After coming out of the smithing room, everyone's eyes were fixed on the right arm of Ishida.

Who would have thought that this level 0 player's right arm would be the rarest legendary weapon in the conquests?

A weapon of this grade was naturally something that Iaki and the others desired.

However, even though they were tempted, they did not have the courage to try it out, because the forging process was too frightening.

“One blade, I'll take you to level up!” At this time, the captain, atom Inoue, said with a smile.

“Alright,” he said. Beichen Yidao immediately nodded.

Looking at the taciturn Hokushin Itsuki, atom Inoue felt that he was more and more pleasing to the eye.

She originally thought that IAMI had found a burden, but she didn't expect that Hokushin kouten would have such great perseverance.

Now that he had a legendary weapon that could grow with him, it could be said that he had unlimited potential in the eyes of Inoue aomon.

He had picked up a treasure!

Other than the silly IAMI, the rest of the moonlight team had the same thought.

Led by atom Inoue, the team of six began to head toward the West Gate of The Burning Sky City.

Although the players in the Asia server had already explored a total of three areas that could be used to level up, including the skeleton forest.

However, aside from the skeleton forest, the other two areas were too difficult to challenge. The monsters there were generally level 50 and above. Aside from a few large guilds, no players would go to these high-level areas to grind.

As for the weak aomon Inoue and the others, their daily grinding spot was still skeleton forest.

Originally, they had wanted to go directly to the teleportation formation at the West Gate to get to the skeleton forest. After all, it would take a lot of time to walk.

However, Iaki suggested that they go on foot this time, so that the newbie Northstar izidao could get in touch with the environment of this game world.

Regarding this, atom Inoue and the others did not object.

After walking out of the West Gate, the few of them headed straight towards the forest of bones.

Since the teleportation fee was extremely expensive for most players, there were many players on the way to the skeleton forest. Everyone was wearing different clothes, which perfectly blended in with the surrounding scenery. It really made Northstar one blade feel like he had come to a different world.

They walked for several hours. During this time, they even bought some homemade food from the auction house and had a picnic.

Without any danger, the natural scenery of the demon Phoenix continent made them forget to return.

Just like that, Northstar one blade and the others finally arrived at the outskirts of skeleton forest.

As far as the eye could see, players could be seen everywhere outside the skeleton forest. Some were in small groups, some were in small teams, and there were also quite a few independent players.

When they saw the arrival of Northstar one blade and the others, countless players immediately rushed forward.

“Which camp are you guys from? do you want to form a party?”

“Is the team still short of people? I’m a newbie, please guide me. If no one guides me, I’m really going to be autistic. ”

“Horizon squad is recruiting, only those from the same camp. Which camp are you guys from?”

.....

In the face of their questions, atom Inoue stepped forward.”

“Japan camp, our team doesn’t lack people!”

After hearing that, many players left, but many players from the Japan camp stayed.

In the Asian server, every country was divided into a camp. The division was very clear, and each camp was relatively United. Basically, they were formed between the same camp.

“You guys should come with us. There are many Hindustani players clearing out the people inside. It’s safer to move together.” At this time, a man with a big shield said to atom Inoue.

Normally, he would have agreed to such a request.

However, it was different this time. She was going to help Northstar level up. Letting a level 0 player mix in with the team would obviously cause dissatisfaction, so she spoke again and rejected the goodwill of the surrounding players.

After the crowd dispersed, atom Inoue waved his hand and led Northstar Yidao and the others into the skeleton forest.

However, before they entered, many kind-hearted players around them warned them that there were many small teams of Hindustani players clearing out people inside.

Regarding the Hindustani players, atom Inoue and the others also hated them to the core.

In the year 2319, India's population was the highest in the world. With the development of technology, virtual equipment had become more and more common in this country, and the number of players was naturally the highest.

In the early stages of the game, the strength of the players from the Asian server was relatively weak. The Hindustani players' human wave tactics were really unsolvable, leaving many players from other camps helpless.

Although the players from the Asia server had once joined forces to resist, they had suppressed the arrogance of the Hindustan players. However, this kind of Alliance was extremely fragile. After all, there were more or less contradictions between them. After a short time, the Alliance was dissolved.

Although the Hindustani players no longer went overboard in collecting "entrance tickets" outside of the skeleton forest, they often killed people and snatched monsters in order to occupy the wild monster resources in the skeleton forest, which made many players gnash their teeth in hatred.

Although he was helpless, he still had to continue farming monsters. After all, this was the only way to level up and obtain resources such as soul coins in the early stages. Unless he spent a lot of money, no one could avoid it.

Under the lead of atom Inoue, Northstar Yidao and the others went deeper into the skeleton forest.

Compared to the entrance of the skeleton forest, the players grinding inside the forest were more scattered, and it was no longer as crowded.

However, the silence of The Lonely Forest easily made people feel nervous, and any movement of the wind and grass was particularly clear.

However, atom Inoue and the others had already adapted to the environment here, and Bei Chen had even killed a “Shikigami” with one strike, so he was naturally unafraid of creatures like ghosts and monsters. The few of them appeared very calm.

As they advanced, Northstar one blade and the others encountered many small parties that were grinding monsters. The grinding spots on the outskirts of skeleton forest were basically all occupied. Other than the occasional low-level monsters, the group did not encounter any powerful monsters, so they could only continue forward.

However, the deeper they went, the greater the risk. Apart from the higher-leveled monsters inside, the Hindustani players ‘small teams were the biggest threat.

“Yidao, do you want to try it out later?” “What’s going on?” Ikami suddenly turned around and asked Kitagawa yashido while they were deep into the forest.

“Sure.” Beichen Yidao immediately nodded.

“Hehe, let me see your fighting talent first. If I’m satisfied, I might teach you a few sword moves!” Iaki said with a proud expression.

Regarding this point, it was rare that atom well and the others did not refute it.

Although Iaki was publicly acknowledged as the “dumbest” member of the moonlight team, she had been learning sword skills since she was young, so her strength was also the strongest in the moonlight team. There was no doubt about that.

When Beichen Yidao heard this, he smiled and nodded,”

“Alright.”

“Alright, you can go first for the next monster. I’ll protect you.” Iaki waved the long sword in her hand and said proudly.

However, as soon as she finished speaking, a low growl came from not far away. A pool of blood slowly condensed and turned into a blood demon, roaring at them from afar.

[Blood devil (level 49)]

[Monster description: a mid-tier monster formed from the scattered blood of the ancient Yin God “bone monk” after his death. Not easy to kill. Blood has a corrosive effect.]

Looking at the analysis of this monster, IAMI and the others could not help but feel nervous, knowing that they had encountered a difficult monster.

However, at this moment, Beichen Yidao began to walk toward blood demon. At the same time, he reached out and tore off his right arm, turning it into a Chinese bellflower tachi.

“Hey, hey, hey, this one won’t do!” “Hiroshi!” Iaki quickly stepped forward, grabbed Bei Chen’s knife, and dragged him back.

“Aren’t I supposed to go first at the next head?” Beichen was stunned.

“You have to get used to using your analysis ability. This monster is different from the previous ones. You’re definitely no match for it!” “I’m sorry,” Iaki said helplessly.

Beichen’s knife was stunned, but he was pulled back a few steps by yuhemi.

“Next time, I’ll find a low-level monster for you to practice on. Leave this one to us. Pay attention to our fighting style!” As she spoke, she held her sword with one hand and ran towards the blood demon.

After getting close to the blood devil, he used a sword draw and slashed at the blood Devil's right shoulder. He dodged to the side when the blood devil attacked.

Seeing this, atom Inoue and the others also followed, surrounded the blood devil, and began to attack.

Beichen Yidao looked at the Chinese bellflower in his hand, then at blood demon. He thought for a while and decided to watch from the side.

In fact, Bei Chen Yi's heart was also itching. After all, he hadn't tried out the power of the Chinese bellflower after getting it. This feeling was very difficult to bear.

Besides, in the eyes of Ishida, other than the agile IAI, the other members of the moonlight team, including atom Inoue, were simply unsightly. Many of their attacks were unnecessary.

'But it's just a game,' Northstar one blade thought.

With the cooperation of the five people, the blood demon's HP began to decrease. Among them, Iaki played the most role. Basically, every attack was launched by her at the right time. The rest of them, except for atom Inoue who chose the 'fate' to restrict the blood demon's movement with telekinesis, could be said to be of little use. They even retreated from time to time and drank blood potions.

However, just as the blood demon was about to die, many figures suddenly appeared on his right.

They seemed to have noticed atom Inoue and the others who were in the middle of a battle, and they rushed toward them.

"Not good, a 'san's team is here!" Seeing the crowd running toward them, atom Inoue immediately shouted.

"What should we do? the blood devil is almost out of HP. Are we just going to give in?" Iaki said angrily.

“I’ll let him go. I can’t see the exact amount of blood demon’s HP. It’s too risky to persist any longer. Otherwise, I’ll have to wait for another three hours for his resurrection!” Atom Inoue immediately shouted at Iaki.

Looking at the extremely weak blood demon, Iaki’s heart was filled with hatred. She gritted her teeth and raised her sword to stab at the blood demon’s head.

“Swish!”

The sword pierced through the blood demon’s head, and the blood demon’s body suddenly began to shrink, turning into a pool of blood. However, it left a glittering Ruby on the ground.

Seeing this, a hint of joy flashed in Iaki’s beautiful eyes. She immediately picked up the gemstone and kept it in her space.

Looking at the ‘clean people team’ that was approaching, Yukumi immediately said to Kitagawa Yidao, who was standing not far away,”

“Follow them, they’re retreating!”

As she spoke, she turned around and followed Aimi and the others, beginning a strategic retreat.

When Northstar blade heard this, he could not help but be stunned. He could also tell that the group of players running towards them did not seem friendly.

But why did he run?

This wasn’t because Beichen was conceited, but because he had been taught by his father since he was young that “a man should move forward bravely, never give up, and never be afraid!” This was also one of his sword spirit, which was why Bei Chen never took half a step back when he faced his enemies with one strike.

Although this was just a game, Beichen Yidao’s mentality was still the same. On the contrary, he was a little excited. He couldn’t help but hold

onto his Bellflower tightly as he looked at the incoming crowd.

Chapter 388 - Sword God

At this moment, IAMI was feeling extremely happy. After killing the blood devil, she actually obtained a “blood essence,” which was a pleasant surprise.

Since she had already obtained the benefits, she naturally did not want to fight with the Hindustani cultivators and retreated decisively.

As she ran, she suddenly thought of Ishida. She turned around and was stunned to find Ishida standing there stupidly without any intention of leaving.

“One blade, run!” “What’s wrong?” Iaki anxiously shouted in the team voice chat.

“Don’t worry, I can do it!” “Yes!” Northstar Yidao immediately replied.

As soon as he finished speaking, Bei Chen slowly raised the Chinese bellflower and moved his left foot forward, assuming a knife-wielding posture.

At this moment, a ‘san’s team came over and surrounded one blade Bei Chen.

Seeing this, Beichen Yidao slowly closed his eyes.

Seeing this scene from a distance, Iaki was furious and immediately turned back. Aimi and the others were also helpless, but they still followed Iaki and ran toward Hokushin kouten.

A ‘san’s small team had come to the skeleton forest to pillage and kill people, so they naturally did not waste any time. After surrounding one blade Bei Chen and making sure that he could not escape, they immediately launched an attack.

“Ha!”

At that moment, Beichen Yidao’s eyes suddenly opened, and his aura changed.

The originally silent sword heart was awakened at this moment. At this moment, Beichen Yidao was like a bloodthirsty beast, and his eyes revealed absolute oppression and killing intent.

He didn’t retreat when faced with the incoming attack. Instead, he took a step forward and dodged the attack. Following that, the Chinese bellflower suddenly streaked forward. A black light flashed, and three bloody lines appeared on the necks of the three people in front of him.

Although the attack did not kill the three of them instantly, it was a critical hit, which put them in a weakened state at the same time.

Before they could react, Bei Chen’s Chinese bellflower flipped and was held in his hand. He charged forward again and swung his blade. The three of them turned into black mist and disappeared.

This set of movements was extremely skillful. It was so fast that a ‘san’s team could not react at all. By the time they realized it, Bei Chen had already killed three people with one strike and broken out of the encirclement.

This scene shocked them, but they still attacked Bei Chen again.

In the distance, Iaki’s eyes suddenly widened when she saw this scene.

“Ancient sword technique!”

However, what shocked her even more was what happened next. How could Bei Chen’s one blade’s strength only be this much? as the number one ancient sword technique, even if he used his left hand, he was still at the peak.

Even though he was once heavily injured and could fight a spirit-branded retainer with his mortal body, these players, who only relied on their

attributes without any combat skills, were like beasts that had lost their claws and teeth, waiting for the Hunter to kill them.

At this moment, Beichen Yi Dao entered the state, and he could not help but smile.

“Ha!” As he shouted, he flipped the Chinese bellflower in his hand and quickly struck out.

Flaws, there were flaws everywhere!

In Northstar blade’s eyes, the players ‘defenses were all weak points.

Moreover, to the Hindustani players ‘disbelief, not only was Bei Chen’s attack extremely sharp, but even his movement technique was domineering. They had the advantage of numbers, but they were being used by the other party to restrict each other.

“Spread out! Disperse!” At this moment, the leading player began to order the players to spread out, knowing that they would not be a match for this person if they continued fighting.

When Bei Chen one blade heard this, the corners of his mouth curled up, and he charged forward again.

The one blade stream that he had learned only had one purpose, which was to attack, and then attack again. This was because the most violent attack was the best defense.

Bei Chen Yidao was like a Reaper’s Scythe in his hand. Every strike was fierce and destructive.

In the distance, Iaki’s eyes widened as she saw this scene, and she was stunned on the spot.

“Shady flow!”

“No, it’s two heavens and one element!”

“That’s not right either. Why does he know IAI swordsmanship?”

“No, no, it’s the divine Dao-type!”

“Impossible! Why does his sword technique have the shadow of all the ancient sword arts?”

Looking at Beichen Yidao, who had become one with the Bellflower in her hand, Iaki muttered to herself in disbelief.

Bei Chen’s strike at this moment was a miracle in itself.

Back then, in order to obtain greater strength, he had gone around seeking advice. The sword techniques he had learned were a combination of the strengths of hundreds of schools, and at the same time, it also brought along his own ultimate understanding of the sword.

He used his emotions to control his sword, and his swordsmanship was nothing more than a form to deal with his opponent. The sword intent was the key to his heart, and this was his unique swordsmanship.

As his enemies fell one by one, a light suddenly flashed across Northstar Yidao’s body. He had leveled up!

Although the EXP gained from killing players was very little, Northstar, who was still level 0, did not need much exp to level up. After killing so many players, he still leveled up.

With the increase in his attributes, one blade Beichen was surprised to find that his body had become lighter, and his perception of his surroundings had become sharper.

Bei Chen, who was already excited, dragged his sword with one hand and took two steps forward. He swung his sword diagonally at the man leading a ‘san’s team.

Bei Chenyi’s attack was just a feint. He wanted to find an opening in his opponent’s defense after he attacked, but bei Chenyi didn’t expect the

Chinese bellflower to start shaking. A black half-moon sword Qi broke free from it and hit the leader's shield, sending him flying.

“Sword Qi?” Northstar Yidao's expression froze when he saw this.

Although he had already understood how to release sword Qi and was familiar with the Taiyuan sword code, this was a game!

Beichen Yidao, who couldn't believe it, clenched his Bellflower and ran toward the leader. Then, he swung his sword according to the sword technique in the Taiyuan sword manual.

This attack did not disappoint Bei Chen Yi Dao. Sword Qi appeared and formed a Black Cross, suddenly passing through the leading man.

[Game prompt: sword aura penetration damage, 80% defense penetration, you have killed player Sharu Khagan!]

[Game prompt: you have used the hidden ability “sword aura” in the game. Please figure out the subsequent growth on your own. When you reach a certain level of proficiency, you can create your own ability!]

The game notification stunned Bei Chen. This was clearly beyond his understanding. He didn't understand how the forbidden sword intent could be successfully used here.

However, he didn't have time to think too much at this moment. He turned around and charged into the enemy's crowd again, beginning his extreme killing.

In this kind of slaughter, his level began to increase little by little, and soon he reached Level 3 ... Level 4 ... Level 5.

As the golden light of leveling up flickered, a 'san's small team was killed until their hearts trembled. They could not believe that this person was still leveling up while fighting against them, and they could not believe that his strength was so terrifying. Even if they fought him hysterically, they could not stop the black' death god 'in his hand.

After knowing that he could use sword intent here, Beichen Yidao's eyes were filled with endless battle intent, and he would occasionally wave out sword Qi.

The game was completely different from the real world. As he leveled up, his physical fitness continued to improve, and the erosion caused by the sword Qi would weaken a little with each level up. At this moment, one blade Beichen was completely immersed in the killing.

His sword intent was also becoming more and more concentrated in the battle, and his sword heart was awakened bit by bit and elevated as a result.

In the distance, Iaki, atom Inoue, and the others were dumbfounded.

This was a noob player?

They were speechless as they watched Bei Chen's smooth movements. They even felt like they had found someone to rely on.

Among them, the one who was the most shocked was undoubtedly Iaki.

The layman watched the show, while the expert watched the tricks. As one of the direct descendants of the ancient swordsmanship school, the IAI family, the hand that held the sword was trembling.

This was because she had sensed the sword essence of the Beichen one blade. It was a boundless and peerless sword essence with a destructive aura. This was something that none of her senior brothers in the sword Pavilion, or even any swordsman she had ever seen, had.

“Who the hell are you ...” Iaki mumbled as she looked at Hokushin Itsuki, who was walking through the crowd as if no one was there.

It was a combination of the strengths of the ancient sword techniques of hundreds of schools, but the sword technique still had a unique personal style, and it even condensed the peerless sword intent. Izumi couldn't believe that this kind of sword intent could be possessed by a man with a broken right arm.

At this moment, her mind was in a mess. Who exactly was he? why had she never heard of him before?

“Beichen?!”

These two words suddenly appeared in yuzumi’s mind like a thunderclap, and her face instantly turned pale.

When she was analyzing the Chinese bellflower sword, she saw that the name of the bound person was Hokushin itsudo. However, she didn’t think much of it at the time because Japan didn’t have the Hokushin family name only because of the one blade school. However, after seeing Hokushin itsudo’s swordsmanship, she was certain that Hokushin itsudo was the successor of the Hokushin family’s one blade school.

At this moment, yukazumi’s face turned pale.

She was only 7 years old at that time, but she had heard of the Beichen blade, but her memory was very vague.

However, there was one thing she remembered very clearly. Her father, IAI shossuka, had died at the hands of Hokushin Itsuka. Although he was killed in a sword technique competition, this was still a shadow in IAI’s heart.

“Is he the legend?” Looking at Bei Chen’s blade, the expression in Iaki’s eyes was extremely complicated.

Being in the ancient sword arts Circle, she had heard too many legends about Northstar one blade. However, these legends were all positive. They all said that this person was a legend, a sword God that could not be surpassed.

This was because this was a circle that respected the strong. As long as you were strong enough, you could win the worship and respect of others.

However, she was different. She hated Beichen’s blade and hated him for killing her father!

Although more than ten years had passed, her hatred for Beichen Yidao had long faded, and she had almost forgotten about it.

However, at this moment, Iaki once again remembered the scene of her hiding in her room and shouting “dad” when she was young, but she could never wait for that stalwart figure to come.

“Beichen’s blade, legendary!” Iaki bit her lips tightly as she gripped the sword in her hand.

“Retreat, retreat!” At this moment, the members of a ‘san’s small team, who had been killed in the distance, finally gave up on the battle and scattered.

Bei Chen Yi Dao didn’t chase after them. After they left, his sword flickered and he retracted it in the traditional way of the one blade school. Then, he put the Bellflower back into his right arm.

“Wow, Yidao, you’re actually pretending to be a pig to eat a Tiger!” “Oh my God!” Atom Inoue exclaimed and ran toward Ishida with a smile.

When Northstar izidao heard this, he also smiled. Just as he was about to speak, he suddenly noticed that Iaki was looking at him with a complicated expression. There was hatred in her eyes, but there was also an unwillingness to “compromise.”

Chapter 389 - This Is From Falling

He could hear the exclamations of atom Inoue and the others, but Ikioi ito ignored them. His eyes were still focused on the confused expression on IAI's face.

At this moment, Hokushin Itsuki realized that IAMI had probably guessed his identity.

He strode past the excited Inoue and the others and walked to the front of Mizuki.

He looked at Iaki and spoke softly,”

“I'm sorry!”

At this moment, Hokushin Itsuki suddenly felt a little afraid. Even when he was facing a strong enemy, he could still endure the pain and torture, but now he felt an inexplicable sense of panic. He was afraid that IAMI would not forgive him.

The death of IAI shossuka had always been a knot in Beichen one blade's heart. Even though more than ten years had passed, the guilt in his heart had not faded at all.

“You're that Beichen Yidao!” Iaki raised her head, her eyes filled with tears.

Beichen Yidao didn't hide it anymore and nodded.”

“I'm out of prison. ”

“Why did you get close to me? why!” “What's wrong?” Iaki suddenly asked angrily.

She suddenly remembered that when they first met, Hokushin Itsuki had asked her, "who is Iaido to her?" at this moment, Iaki felt that she had been deceived, and she had been deceived by the enemy who killed her father.

"I want to make it up to you ..."

Before Northstar Yidao could finish his sentence, he was interrupted by IAMI,

"That's enough, Northstar one blade. You're a legend, you're very strong, and you're the idol of many people, but I, IAMI, don't need your pity. Even if I know that my father died in a sword technique competition, I still hate you!"

At this moment, tears involuntarily flowed out of yukazumi's eyes, and her feelings were extremely complicated.

From their interactions, she had already treated Beichen Yidao as her friend and partner, but she did not expect him to be the person she hated the most since she was young. She couldn't accept this difference.

Looking at Iaki, Beichen Yidao opened his mouth, but he didn't know what to say.

From their interactions, he realized that yuzumi was a very innocent and optimistic girl. She seemed to be happy all the time, but at this moment, because of him ...

"What's wrong?" At this time, Aimi and the others arrived and looked at Iaki in confusion.

Iaki didn't answer. Under the surprised gazes of atom Inoue and the others, she suddenly chose to go offline.

Seeing this, Northstar blade's heart tightened, and he also chose to log off.

Only atom Inoue and the others were left in shock. They obviously couldn't understand how the victory that should have been celebrated suddenly became like this.

After going offline, Iaki opened her gaming capsule and ran downstairs.

Her mind was in a mess because she didn't know how to face Bei Chen's attack.

It had been more than ten years, and this "hate" had become very vague. Rather than hate, it was more like a desire to hate in Iaki's heart. At this moment, she really wished that she didn't know the truth.

At this time, Hokushin Itsuki also exited the gaming chamber. He turned to look at the gaming chamber belonging to Yumi beside him and found that the door had been opened, and Yumi was gone. He immediately got up and ran downstairs.

At this moment, Beichen Yidao was panicking.

He knew that it was all because of him, and he even felt that he should not have approached IAMI to make up for the guilt in his heart. At this moment, what IAMI needed the most was to calm down, not to see him appear.

However, he was also afraid that Iaki, who had lost control of her emotions, would be in danger. With mixed feelings, he still chose to chase after her.

It was raining heavily outside, and Izumi was running wildly, using this method to vent her emotions that had nowhere to vent.

And behind her, Beichen Yidao followed closely.

Izumi seemed to have noticed Ishida behind her. She suddenly stopped and turned around. Her red eyes stared at Ishida and her fists gradually clenched.

Then, he ran toward Beichen Yidao and punched him in the face, knocking him to the ground."

"Why did you still follow me?"

Beichen Yidao didn't say anything. He just quietly got up from the ground.

“Bang!”

Iaki’s right foot moved forward, and as she hooked Bei Chen’s blade, she punched him in the face again, causing him to fall to the ground and splash water.

“I’m asking you why!”

Beichen Yidao still did not say anything. He stood up quietly and looked at Iaki, his eyes filled with heartache and guilt.

This kind of gaze caused Iaki to panic. She gritted her teeth and raised her fist again, sending another strike at Bei Chen, knocking him to the ground.

However, Bei Chen’s blade still did not resist. His body trembled as he staggered to his feet.

Because of the aftereffects of cultivating the sword essence of Taiyuan, his body was very weak. These few punches made him feel like he couldn’t support himself, but he still chose to face them.

He didn’t ask for ju Hemei’s forgiveness, but he hoped that she would feel better. As a result, he could also feel better.

He was knocked down again and again, and he stood up again and again. The bruises on his face burst open and blood flowed out, but Beichen Yidao once again stood up, trembling.

“Beichen Yidao, what do you mean by this!” Iaki looked at the miserable-looking kitashiki in the rain and could no longer bear to attack.

“Don’t you want revenge?” Hiroshi Ichido steadied his body and spoke to Iaki.

When Iaki heard this, she couldn’t help but freeze.

“I can give you a chance!”

“Are you pitying me?” “Shut up!” Iaki said angrily.

“I don’t have many years left to live, but I’ve been filled with regret and guilt that I can’t make up for. Father, mother, uncle IAI Totsuka, and Bellflower, I’ve let them down, but I don’t have the chance to make it up to them anymore. But the moment I saw you, I seemed to have found the motivation to live again ...”

At this moment, Beichen Yidao shared his experience and his pain.

He had been depressed for too long. Since he was young, everything had gone wrong. Even Beichen Yidao felt like he was a Lone Star, bringing only pain to the people around him, and leaving only pain for himself.

Therefore, he had never asked for anything, but only wanted to make up for his mistakes.

Hearing Ishida’s story, Iaki was stunned. Although she had heard many legends about Ishida, she had never really understood him, let alone all the things he had experienced.

In the description of Kitagawa uzumami, she seemed to see a lonely figure holding a sword with one hand, walking alone on a barren road, surrounded by only darkness and cold.

He could only rely on the sword in his hand, but even so, the sword still did not bring him any hope ...

“I don’t have any purpose. I just want to protect you. I’ll use the remaining years to protect the innocent and kind you. I’m not pitying you, but I’m pitying myself. I just want to make myself feel better ... Cough, cough ...” Bei Chen coughed up a mouthful of blood as he spoke, and his body swayed.

“I don’t expect your forgiveness. If you still hate me, you can take my life at any time. I’m willing to do so.” As he spoke, Northstar one blade stood up straight again.

“I ... I don’t want to kill you. I’m afraid of dirtying my hands!” Looking at Bei Chen’s blade, Iaki suddenly took a step back and said.

After learning about Bei Chen's experience, she suddenly became a deflated ball. The anger in her heart instantly disappeared. Even if she wanted to hate him, the hatred was too vague. It was so vague that it was not enough for her to muster the courage to attack.

Looking at Iaki, Northstar izudon couldn't help but start coughing again, and blood dripped from the corner of his mouth.

“Get lost!” Looking at Bei Chen's blade, Iaki couldn't bear it, but she still gritted her teeth and spoke.

This time, Ishida did not insist. He could feel that the anger in Iaki's heart had subsided, and he was relieved.

He turned around silently and walked forward with staggering steps.

At this moment, he once again lost his purpose. He didn't even know where the road ahead was, just like in the past ...

It seems like I should have been alone ... Beichen Yidao laughed at himself.

Looking at the lonely figure of Northstar one blade leaving, Iaki stood in place and looked at him, suddenly at a loss.

She didn't know why, but she suddenly wanted to stop him. However, she restrained this impulse and clenched her fists again.

He shouldn't be sympathized with, yuzumi tried her best to comfort herself in her mind.

“Pa da!”

At this moment, Bei Chen's blade suddenly fell to the ground.

When Iaki saw this, she wanted to step forward, but just as her right foot stepped out, she stopped and watched as Kitagawa uzuhara climbed up from the ground with difficulty and moved forward.

“Cough cough!” Beichen Yidao knew that his body was in a bad condition, but he didn’t expect it to be this bad.

Just a few punches actually made it so difficult for him to walk. As expected, he was a cripple.

He gritted his teeth and persevered, trying to get himself out of yuzumi’s sight so that she would no longer be angry and sad because of him. However, at this moment, his legs were extremely heavy, and as he staggered forward, he could not help but cough up blood.

His internal organs had already been damaged during the cultivation of sword essence. It was already a miracle that he had survived, but his body could not bear the burden. His vision gradually blurred at this moment. He continued to take steps, but his body still lost its balance involuntarily and fell to the ground again.

Just as he was struggling to stand up again, he felt someone helping him up.

He turned around and discovered that this person was none other than IAMI.

“I don’t want to save you. Don’t look at me like that!” Looking at Hokushin Itsuki, Iaki glared at him.

Hiroshi Yidao didn’t say anything and just looked at Iaki.

“Don’t think too highly of yourself. I’ve thought it through. I want to learn swordsmanship from you and then defeat you with my own hands, just like how you defeated my father!”

“Don’t you hate me?”

“Hate! I hate him very much!”

“Then why did you ...”

“A one-armed cripple like you has a peerless swordsmanship. It’s a waste to just take it with you. Why don’t you teach me?” “Shut up!” Iaki said

viciously.

Hearing this, Beichen Yidao was stunned.

“Are you going to teach me or not?” Once again, Iaki’s eyes widened.

“Teach!” At this moment, a smile suddenly appeared on Beichen Yidao’s face.

At this moment, IAMI was like the rainbow after the rain, silently seeping into his heart and giving him hope and motivation again.

.....

At this time, atom Inoue and the others were waiting anxiously in the living room.

They didn’t know what had happened. Why did Northstar izudon and Iaki suddenly leave without any news? they couldn’t help but worry.

At this moment, two figures appeared at the door.

With the help of Yasumi, Beichen Yidao walked in step by step.

“What’s wrong? how did one strike turn him into this?” “What’s going on?” atom Inoue asked as he stood up and helped Iaki help Hiroshi Izumi to the sofa.

“Oh, he fell down when he was outside just now.” Hearing this, Iaki’s eyes started to look around, and she seemed to be very guilty.

“Really?” Looking at the bruised and swollen face of Kitagawa Izumi, atom Inoue did not believe a single word of what IAI said.

“It’s true. ” At this moment, Beichen Yidao also said insincerely.

“Right? it was raining heavily outside just now, so I went out to take a walk. In the end, I don’t know why, but Yidao followed me. Then, maybe because he has one arm, his balance is hard to control. The rainy road is also quite

slippery, so Yidao kept falling ... Thanks to me, he was able to come back.” Iaki blushed as she made up a story that was full of loopholes.

“He should be face-first every time he falls.” Atom Inoue glanced at Ishida and squinted his eyes as he spoke to Yukazumi.

“Well ... Almost. There’s nothing I can do about my poor sense of balance!” The more Iaki spoke, the more guilty she felt.

“Then can you tell me why you suddenly ran out on a rainy day without an umbrella?” Atom Inoue continued to squint his eyes and asked.

“I just saw the gaming capsule’s notification that it was raining outside, and then ... And then I don’t know why, but I wanted to go out and get wet ...”

Upon hearing this, Atom Inoue and the others showed a disdainful expression.”

“Xiaomei, with your intelligence, you really can’t make up a reliable story. I seriously suspect that you beat up Yi Dao!”

“I ... I didn’t. I’m such a lady. How could I hit ... Hit people?”

Iaki’s guilty conscience made Atom Inoue and the others realize that Kitashene was really hit by Iaki.

At this moment, their minds automatically filled with scenes of many young couples quarreling.

Moreover, they finally understood why Iaki had brought the one-armed Northstar izuto them. It was because the two of them were very close. Furthermore, Ishida also knew a very powerful sword technique. It was obvious that this person was an expert from the IAI Kendo gym, and he had an unclear relationship with IAI.

In front of Fukumi’s surprised expression, Atom Inoue’s face showed an expression of sudden realization, and then he winked at her mischievously.

IAMI: “???”

“In the future, we can discuss things properly. Don’t throw a childish tantrum. Look at how badly you’ve beaten Yi Dao up. Since we’ve already decided to be together, we should learn to understand each other.” Atom Inoue said with a serious face.

IAMI: “???”

Beichen Yi Dao: “???”

.....

At this time, Lu Wu, who was behind the scenes, was also observing Bei Chen’s attack.

Seeing this scene, he suddenly had a headache. He didn’t want to eat this wave of dog food.

Originally, when Lu Wu saw the notice of “super talented player in danger” from the divine weapon, he thought that something had happened. He immediately used the divine weapon to observe Bei Chen.

However, he didn’t expect it to be a wave of dog food. At this moment, Lu Wu felt very uncomfortable.

I didn’t expect you to be this kind of Beichen blade. You actually managed to get such a cute girl with just a few words. It’s really disappointing.

As he thought of this, Lu Wu turned his eyes to Bei Li, who was sitting on the sofa and eating snacks happily.

He then let out a dispirited sigh and continued to cast his gaze into the divine artifact with a bored expression.

Chapter 390 - The Boundless Ocean Of Learning

Out of the four major servers in punitive expedition, the Asian server was very special.

To the players from the central, European, and hell servers, the Asian server had nothing good other than the huge advantage in the number of players. The sense of superiority in strength was common in the other three servers.

Although it was publicly acknowledged that the mid-tier server was the strongest among the major servers, the hell server and the European server had their own pride.

For example, the hell server. To them, the region they were in was the most difficult to survive in. To be able to gain a foothold in such a map was enough to prove their strength. In addition to the rapid growth of technology in the early stages, and the addition of Aiur, they felt that the cross-server war would be the world of the hell server's players in the later stages.

In the eyes of the players from the European server, the top players in their server were only second to the mid-tier players. Their potential for development in the future was also extremely great. Moreover, they were the only faction that had ghost emperor-level NPCs. If the evil king was added, the other servers would not be a match for them.

Every server had its own pride and ambition, but only the Asia server had nothing special other than the advantage in numbers.

Furthermore, there were constant internal Wars in the early stages of the Asia server, and the friction between the two factions continued to escalate. The advantage in numbers could not be shown at all. Moreover, the Asia server was the server with the shortest opening time, so the overall

development was also the slowest, and there was no advantage compared to other servers.

Therefore, in the eyes of the players from the other three servers, if the cross-server war was going to start soon, the Asia server would be a dead end. There was no chance of winning at all. The champion would still be from the Chinese server, the European server, and the hell server.

However, on this day, the Asia server forum was very lively because someone had posted a video.

In the eyes of many sub-server players, this video symbolized their rise, and also represented that they had finally welcomed the first top player among the top players, which was also known as “super-player” in other servers.

[Moonlight is recruiting skilled players. Although the Guild doesn't have many members, they are all elites. Watch the video for more details.]

[Op: Miss Atom]

(Video attached)

The video was of one blade Northstar single-handedly defeating the entire team of Hindustani. One blade Northstar's superb skills in battle had caused a huge sensation in the Asia server forum.

The video was quickly pinned to the official website's homepage and caused a heated discussion among players on other servers.

[Jin Hengyi (ya): so strong. Look at his appearance. He must be a Korea player.]

Park Haotian (Asia):”hehe. In the future, our brothers in the Asia server will be more righteous. This means that the Asia server has started to rise. He will not be the last person.” Happy

Chen Zhong (ya):”actually, he might also be on our Singapore side. Yeah, I'm just guessing. I'm not sure.”

Shimada Hanzo: “he’s too strong. He looks like a Japan Kendo player, but he doesn’t look like one. Since he’s an Asian server player, he’s one of us. He should contribute to the future cross-server battle.”

[This ... This is level 0???] I seriously suspect that he’s cheating. Otherwise, how can he level up by killing players? this is too fake, right?

[The strongest Xue Li: his skills are unparalleled, but the only thing I’m curious about is how he can level up in the middle of a battle.]

Cosmic stars (hell):”that’s right. Can someone explain? how can you level up by killing players?” A special skill from the Asia server? (Heretic King’s dumbfounded face)

.....

While the players were discussing, the original poster, atom Inoue, edited his post again and added a picture of a weapon.

(Bellflower.jpg)

This time, the spectating players couldn’t remain calm.

Crayon Shin-chan: “a level 0 legendary weapon. It can grow. Are you kidding me? I’m reporting you with my real name!”

A big wolfdog replied Crayon Shinchan: I’m begging you, just give me your real name once. I’m waiting for your real name to come out. Don’t say such harsh words every time.

Crayon Shinchan replied to a big Wolfhound: Smiling dog head (smoking calmly.jpg)

Immortal Daoist: “actually, you’re all focusing on the wrong point. This legendary weapon is only one of the reasons. What’s really amazing about it is its own ability. I can feel its powerful sword intent through the screen. Other than its own level, its realm is definitely not inferior to ao Jian’s (smile).”

Mechanical T-Rex (Europe) replied to immortal cultivator: That can't be, the proud sword boss of the central server should be one of the strongest in my heart, how can he compare? (Puzzled)

Daoist immortal replied to the Tyrannosaurus, 'I don't know much about sword intent, but in my opinion, his sword intent seems to be stronger than ao Jian's. The only flaw is that it's not as pure as ao Jian's. It seems to have a lot of complicated things.'

[Ao family's sword technique-Beichen strike?] I'll remember it. I'm looking forward to fighting you, really looking forward to it. I'm sure you won't let me down. Your talent in the Tao of the sword reminds me of a former opponent, or rather, your sword intent is stronger than his!

Replying to the AO family sword technique in 'moving bricks to become stronger': Big Boss proud sword, can you add me as a friend? can you help me level up? I also like to use swords!

Crayon Shin-chan: "the battle for the sword God is so terrifying. Why don't we take this opportunity to suppress the Asian server and let them know that the central server is the boss?"(funny)

.....

The entire forum became extremely lively after the video of Northstar one blade's battle was released.

In the beginning, everyone was discussing the fact that this level 0 player actually had a legendary weapon. They felt that it was unbelievable. After all, the number of players with legendary weapons in all the servers added up to only a single digit. However, the Asia server, which had just opened, had a growth-grade legendary weapon, and it was even in the hands of a level 0 player. This made the other players very surprised.

However, with the appearance of seven, proud sword, and the other top players, the entire Forum's direction of discussion changed. They began to discuss the personal skills that one blade Northstar had displayed in the battle.

Many players might not be able to understand the technique, but as Jian and the others gave a very good explanation.

Although Northstar one blade's level was too low and he didn't have any fancy skills, his swordsmanship was extremely strong in the eyes of those who knew the game. This made a group of high-level players exclaim in admiration.

Seeing that the top players all acknowledged this player, the onlookers immediately started to repeatedly watch the video of Northstar's battle with a learning attitude. Although they were still very confused, they all had the same thought at this moment.

If so many high-level players said it was powerful, then it must be very powerful, regardless of whether they could understand it or not!

Furthermore, due to the video of Northstar one blade's battle, it had created a wave of swordsmanship craze in the Asia server. Many players in the Asia server were fighting to imitate it.

After all, the Asia server had no restrictions on the use of weapons.

This was different from the Chinese server, European server, and hell server. Basically, players of each class in these three servers had their own class weapon.

It wasn't that he couldn't use other weapons, but other types of weapons simply couldn't match his class, so he naturally couldn't get the bonus from his equipment.

This was similar to the runic strongmen in the central server. They could also use greatswords and giant axes, but their combat skills were all fist techniques. Using greatswords would limit the use of their own abilities.

It was the same for the European and hell servers. Letting the Knight use a staff and the beam saber mech use a sniper rifle was obviously not a good idea.

However, the Asian server was different. The unique feature of the Asian server was evolution. They focused on themselves and their equipment was secondary. Moreover, they did not have any ability to specialize in weapons, which caused all kinds of weapons to bloom in the Asian server.

Even the unpopular shield-type weapon had become popular in the Asia server. Many of the Asia server's apocalypse players basically had one shield in each hand in the early stages.

However, due to the appearance of Northstar one blade, many players in the Asia server began to favor the use of swords. This even led to the booming business of many offline Kendo gyms.

The influence of war online had once again risen to another level with the opening of the Asia server.

All aspects of the game could indeed affect reality.

This was proven in many ways.

For example, the official announcement that the individual competition would start had caused many offline dojos and combat halls to recruit a large number of new students from the recruitment game.

Another example was when the new information on the sea was released. At that time, many players knew that real sea knowledge could be applied to the game. Many players who wanted to focus on sea development began to study the sea in real life. As a result, several offline sea knowledge training classes appeared, and the number of applicants was not low.

Also, when The Alchemist lifestyle class was first launched, many players heard that the pharmaceutical knowledge in real life could be applied to the game. During that period of time, not only did many medical knowledge books sold well well, but the number of new students recruited by the medical school also increased compared to previous years.

Wait ...

As the popularity of punitive expedition online continued to rise, its impact on the real world was also increasing. It even played a certain role in the development of science and Technology.

The biggest impact of this was the change in education.

Due to the rapid development of modern technology, the internet had reached the point of complete popularization. Many students would come into contact with the world of the internet, which was full of information.

In the eyes of parents, a large number of fun and time-killing games were harmful to their children's learning progress. However, in the eyes of many students, they were irresistible temptations. They were also topics of conversation between them and their classmates, and even a kind of comparison.

In modern times, students were not interested in comparing results. However, comparing levels, equipment, and achievements in the game was a hot topic among students after school.

This was a huge headache for the teachers and parents, but they could do nothing about it. If they tried to stop the students, they would make the students seem antisocial.

However, if he did not suppress it, the child would become addicted to the game, and the impact would still be great.

In the year 2319, although professional gamers had become a profession recognized by society, it was a relatively high-end and high-income profession.

However, after the regulation, it brought about a continuous increase in requirements.

In this era, it was very difficult to become a professional player because there were too many people who were better than you. Therefore, many parents did not agree to let their children take this path.

Therefore, the game could only be a pastime, not the only one.

However, this problem was finally solved as the popularity of punitive expedition online increased.

In the beginning, it was because many big names in the gaming world and live streamers started to promote 'punitive expedition online', so many students started to get in touch with it.

This spread extremely quickly, and coupled with the excellent quality of the game, Conqueror online quickly became a popular game among students. It even developed to the point that if you didn't play Conqueror online, you would have nothing in common with your classmates, and it even gave birth to a group of "Conqueror" players.

Most of these players were students or children.

These players also played a certain role in advertising 'punitive expedition online', because their daily goal was to promote the game. It was as if they looked down on other types of games. In their words, other games were trash, and if you didn't play war, you had no taste.

In the beginning, this group of players was indeed very repulsive, but after they really came into contact with them, most of the players admitted this fact.

As a result, more and more students flooded into the conquest online, and the topic of discussion during class was the contents of the conquest game.

This made the parents depressed because this kind of addiction was even worse than before, and it really affected the students 'studies.

However, many students 'excuse was,'our classmates are all playing. If I don't play, I'll be different and have no friends.'

Some students even used the excuse of "you're all playing, why can't I?"

Most of the parents were helpless when it came to such excuses.

However, while the students were still immersed in the joy of the game, punitive expedition online launched a new function.

An “anti-addiction system” that would make most students break down mentally.

In the beginning, the students protested collectively and even formed groups to post on the top of the official forum to express their dissatisfaction.

However, the official website’s attitude had always been so willful, so this kind of protest was obviously useless.

The students had no choice but to give in and begin their daily routine of only being able to play games after finishing their questions.

The introduction of the anti-addiction system made all the parents and teachers clap their hands in joy. It could be said that a big hidden danger in their hearts was instantly resolved.

After the emergence of the anti-addiction system, the conversation between parents and children had gradually developed into this trend:

“Son, come online quickly. I’ll take you out to sea to fish later, but you have to pass anti-addiction for me first!”

“Daughter, look, it’s not that I don’t want to take you to level up, but I can’t do anything if you can’t get over it. How can this damn war online release such a thing?”

“Son, I heard that the kid from the Wang family next door played games for eight hours yesterday. Look at you, you’re not motivated at all. Can’t you just play games properly? you don’t pass the anti-addiction Test every time. If this goes on, what will your classmates think of you? how are you going to show off to your classmates in the future?”

“Son, I’ve made a new weapon for you today. Take it and try it out. But you have to pass anti-addiction first, or you won’t be able to bring it out. Good

luck.”

Because of the appearance of the anti-addiction system, the parents ‘attitude changed instantly.

Not only that, but even the students ‘attitude had also changed.

In the past, the students had bragged about their levels, equipment, achievements, and so on. But now, there was an additional “game time”!

The Daily Show-off was as follows:

“Hahaha, I played battle online for 12 hours on Sunday (proud face)”

“I’m telling you, I passed all three anti-addiction tests yesterday (proud face)”

“Haha, xxxxx, why haven’t you crossed the anti-addiction level? I can pass it three times a day. I’m not bragging, the game is really fun, but you just can’t play it.

.....

With the emergence of the anti-addiction system, the results of students across the country had generally improved, and even the teachers ‘views on the online war had changed.

Because this kind of improvement was voluntary and not forced, it was extremely efficient.

Many schools were now considering whether to use the test score and the number of times a student passed to judge a student’s grades.

Lu Wu was also preparing to promote the anti-addiction system in this game to all servers, not just the mid-server.

The primary school students “boundless ocean of learning” information film was about to arrive.

Chapter 391 - Empress Kui Long

Recently, as the northern divergent's players 'advantage in the confrontation with the nine glory Army grew, the Starlight Prefecture Lord finally couldn't sit still anymore. He began to personally search for traces of players in the two large regions and eliminate them.

Although the players had the ability to resurrect, their days were still not good. They had to hide here and there every day, and could only occasionally wait for the Starlight to stop before going out to kill a few nine glory Army soldiers to vent their anger. Their days were very bitter, but they were also very stable. After taking down two large regions, they could wait for a few days. Thus, the players of Northern divergent were very happy.

Not only were the players aware of this, but the nine brilliance Palace Lord was also aware of this.

The subsequent clean-up became even more thorough. The remaining nine radiance brothers personally took action and began a 24-hour non-stop clean-up.

The players couldn't take it anymore.

Many players were killed and sent offline as soon as they came online. Although they could be resurrected, the three-hour wait was particularly long. Moreover, even if the resurrection cooldown ended, it was still unknown whether it was safe to come online again.

Under such circumstances, the players decided to make a strategic retreat.

The best place to ensure their safety was the yellow spring sea.

As such, a large number of players began to head towards the colored glass Coast. They planned to retreat selectively and return when the nine radiance brothers were done with their madness.

At the same time, the yellow spring sea was also a very suitable area for players to develop.

It had been too long since they had gone out to sea, and many players were starting to miss the Sea King.

I don't know if he misses us!

Of course, regardless of whether the Sea King wanted to or not, the players just wanted to see him. They wanted to see how he was doing recently, whether his appetite was good, and whether he had beaten the crap out of Langya Island ...

As such, wave after wave of players fled to the lapis lazuli Coast, set sail, and headed towards the sea King.

.....

Kuilong territorial waters.

Recently, the situation in the kui long sea area had become more and more complicated. A new force had risen rapidly and formed a third-party force that was on par with the new mutt Sea Country (Sea King) and Langya Island.

However, the originally weak Kingdom of the new mutt sea was able to catch its breath in such a situation, and the sea King also accelerated the pace of gathering the army of death, ready to fight at any time.

However, the ocean King and lang ya had not expected the appearance of this third party.

Moreover, the ocean King and lang ya were not familiar with the owner of this third Sea region. However, they were very familiar with the ocean King's subordinate. It was Tian Lan, the daughter of Tian Ji, one of the former Kings of the seven nations. She was also the woman saved by Wang Da mang.

The way she rose to power was beyond everyone's expectations in the kui Dragon Sea area.

Because she had opened the ruins of the netherworld sea kingdom and obtained the treasures inside, as well as a huge Army of stone statues.

As the predecessor of the eight seas, the netherworld sea kingdom had once controlled Three Seas and had the power to control the seas. Even though it had fallen, the value of its legacy was still enormous.

There was also a stone statue Army of 100000 in the ruins of the dark sea kingdom. Even the Sea King and lang ya dared not underestimate this force.

The workmanship of these stone statues was the same as The Guardian statues of the eight Great Ocean nations. In addition to the huge number, it allowed tianlan to rise instantly and become the Empress of the kui Dragon Sea. Her position as the third Overlord was unshakeable for a while.

After learning the reason for tianlan's rise, the Sea King was extremely vexed.

Because this power should have belonged to him.

The ruins of the netherworld sea kingdom was the island of Kankun that he had risked his life to go to. At that time, he was betrayed by his subordinate, Tian Huan, and was ambushed here. In the end, he had to rely on the players to escape.

He didn't know how tianlan had managed to open the ruins with only the power of a ghost Governor, but now that the ruins had been opened, there was no turning back. He couldn't take the stone statue Army from tianlan's hands.

Moreover, although her existence was a big threat to the sea King and lang ya, no one dared to take the lead.

As a result, the quilong sea became the current tripartite situation.

However, there was one thing that made the Sea King very nervous recently. He had just received news that Tian Huan had been sent by Langya to Kankun Island to recruit Tian Lan.

How could the Sea King not be angry at this traitor who almost killed him? However, Tiangang had long surrendered to Langya Island, so it was difficult for him to catch this traitor. He could only give up for the time being.

However, what made the Sea King uneasy was that Langya Island had actually sent Tian Huan to recruit Tian Lan. This was extremely bad news for the Sea King. They were father and daughter to begin with. The king of the sea could basically prepare a backup plan for how to recruit Tian Lan successfully.

They were already at a disadvantage in the fight against the Joint Forces of Langya Island. With the addition of Tian Lan's stone statue Army, they had no chance of winning.

When it received this news, the Sea King naturally couldn't remain calm. It even planned to personally stop them.

However, Hei Sui and his subordinates tried their best to stop them, afraid that this was another ambush. In the end, the Sea King could only give up. Now, he could only hope that Tian Lan had her own ambitions and would not agree to Tian Gang's request to surrender.

However, the development of the situation had clearly exceeded the Sea King's imagination.

.....

At this moment, outside Kankun Island.

A huge octopus emerged from the bottom of the water and slowly climbed up to the shore. Tianshuo, who had been ordered to come, also jumped off his Mount and walked toward the island.

At this time, the ground trembled, and countless huge stone statues broke out of the ground and surrounded Tian Gang.

Seeing this, Tian Gang's heart tightened and he quickly said,

“Tianlan, I'm your father. I'm Tian Gang!”

However, no one paid any attention to Tian Gang. The Guardian statues began to attack Tian Gang.

Each of these stone statues had the strength of a ghost Governor or above, and the tallest one had even reached the strength of a ghost king. This made Tian Gang anxious, and he couldn't help but call out “tianlan” again.

However, there was still no response.

Facing the attacks of the stone statues, Tian Huan was forced to retreat. Just as he could not hold on any longer and was about to return to the sea, all the stone statues suddenly stopped their attacks.

Then, to Tian Gang's surprise, a woman holding a golden scepter floated out of the island.

Her long flowing black hair, the elegant silver hairpin, and her face without a trace of Rouge. It was a face that Tian Ji was familiar with, but there was only indifference in her eyes. She did not have the respect she had when they first met.

“Why are you looking for me?” Tian Lan asked as she hovered in the air, coldly looking down at Tian Gang.

“LAN 'er, long time no see. Aren't you going to invite me in to sit?” Tian Gang immediately smiled and began to get close to him.

However, his eyes would occasionally glance at the Golden scepter in tianlan's hand.

He had heard about this scepter from the old priest before. It was one of the highest authorities in the dark sea kingdom, the “dark sea King scepter.”

Not only did it have many mysterious abilities, but the person holding the scepter could also control all the stone statues, which naturally included the eight giant stone statues that guarded the eight sea kingdoms.

However, he had always thought that this scepter had been destroyed along with the netherworld sea kingdom. He did not expect that it had been hidden in the ruins of the netherworld sea kingdom.

“What’s the matter? just say it!” Tianlan’s expression remained unchanged as she continued to ask.

This made Tian Gang a little embarrassed. He couldn’t help but ask again,”

“LAN ‘er, don’t you need to be at the ghost emperor level to open this relic? although you have the bloodline of the netherworld sea Kingdom’s descendant, you are only at the ghost Governor level. How did you do it?”

“What is it? if there’s nothing else, you can leave now!” Facing Tian Gang, tianlan didn’t give him any face at all.

Although Tianji was his biological father, tianlan knew his personality all too well. For the sake of the right of inheritance, he had caused the two of them to kill each other. In the end, he had even given her away to be a concubine. All these actions had long made tianlan feel completely disappointed. She did not have a single trace of nostalgia for a father like this.

So when she faced Tian Gang, she only felt disgust.

“LAN ‘er, to tell you the truth, I’m here to ask you to surrender. Although you have the stone statue Army of the dark sea kingdom, you must know that your power is still the weakest among the three forces. But if you join the joint force of Langya Island ...”

However, before Tian Gang could finish his sentence, he was interrupted by tianlan.”

“This is really you. When you surrendered to the sea King, I didn’t think it was your style, but I didn’t expect you to betray me so quickly. This is the real you!” A golden light flashed in tianlan’s beautiful eyes as she looked at Tian Gang and said coldly.

“LAN ‘er, is this how you speak to your father?” Hearing this, Tian Gang’s expression became serious.

“Father? Do you have any sense of responsibility as a father? If I didn’t obtain the stone statue Army of the dark sea kingdom, you wouldn’t even care where I am or whether I’m dead!” Tianlan couldn’t help but laugh.

Hearing this, Tian Gang’s expression became extremely ugly. He looked at the ‘dark sea King staff’ in tianlan’s hand again, and a hint of greed flashed through his eyes. However, it quickly disappeared. He then said,

“LAN ‘er, I was in the wrong back then. But now, I’m putting aside my pride and trying to persuade you to surrender. Are you not going to give me any face?”

“I’m no longer the little girl who reveres you, Tiangang!” This time, tianlan directly called him by his name.

“LAN ‘er, listen to me. This time, I’m not just trying to persuade you to surrender to the Langya Union. There’s something more important that I want to discuss with you!” Tian Gang’s tone became warm again, as if he had realized that he could not move tianlan.

Tianlan didn’t answer this time. She just stared at Tian Gang coldly.

“Think about it. Although you’re a third party in the kuilong sea, you’re still the weakest. Your chances of winning in the battle for sea power are too slim. “However, as long as you join the Langya joint Army, the ocean King’s Kingdom of muat sea will inevitably suffer a crushing defeat. At that time, the ocean King will have no other choice but to destroy his Kingdom or withdraw from the kui Dragon Sea area. However, with the destruction of the muat Empire, the joint Army of Langya Island will also be

disbanded. At that time, you will become the largest force in the kui Dragon Sea area, far surpassing the Langya Island.”

“What do you mean by that?”

“Langya Island is just the leader of the Alliance. Without the Alliance, how can he fight you? as long as you take down Langya island after the ocean King is destroyed and the Alliance disbands, the entire kui Dragon Sea area will become your territory. You’ll truly become the kui Dragon Empress!”

Hearing this, tianlan suddenly laughed.”

“It’s really you. You’ve always planned the next step, and your eyes are always focused on benefits. You’ve just betrayed the Sea King, and now you’re already planning to betray Langya Island. Lang ya asked you to persuade him to surrender, but you wanted to kill him instead. You really have no humanity. ”

Hearing tianlan’s words, Tian Gang felt embarrassed, but he still said,”

“Since you’re already in charge of the stone statue Army, don’t you have any ideas?”

“What about you? what’s your purpose? Or rather, if I were to obtain the rights to the kuilong sea, what would you gain from it?”

“You’re my daughter. It’s the Tianyu Kingdom’s greatest honor that you can become the Overlord of the kui Dragon Sea area ...”

As Tian Gang was speaking, the Golden scepter in Tian Lan’s hand began to flash with golden light. Her eyes were covered by a layer of golden mist.

“So you’re planning to take the dark sea King staff from me. What a pity. You didn’t know that I, who has the staff, can see through all your thoughts.”

“What?” Hearing this, Tian Gang, who was still talking about a beautiful future, suddenly revealed a shocked expression.

Then, he saw a huge Golden Arm rising from the island and slapping toward him.

Chapter 392 - The Past Of The Netherworld Sea

This time, lang ya had sent Tian Huan to Kankun Island, which was exactly what he wanted.

After finding out that his daughter, tianlan, was in control of the stone statue Army left behind by the Minghai Kingdom, his first thought was to take control of the stone statue Army from tianlan.

At that moment, his heart was filled with jealousy.

Although tianlan was his daughter, family ties had never been as important as power in his eyes. He only valued benefits. Thus, he was filled with desire for the stone statue Army in tianlan's hands.

From the very beginning, his goal had never been to make them surrender.

However, in order to better obtain tianlan's power, he had come up with two plans for himself.

The first was to get close to tianlan. As long as tianlan cared about family, it would be easy to take the inheritance of the dark sea kingdom from her.

However, he was well aware of what he had done in the past. If tianlan refused to acknowledge him as her father, he would throw out a carefully planned profit route. He believed that as long as tianlan had this ambition, she would definitely fall for it. After all, as long as the Joint Forces of Langya Island were dissolved, it was entirely possible for tianlan to become the sole Overlord of the kui Dragon Sea area.

What he needed to do was to assist tianlan and at the same time, find an opportunity to take the inheritance of the dark sea kingdom from her.

The premise of both plans was to get close to tianlan. Tian Gang was very confident in this. Although he didn't pay much attention to tianlan, since tianlan had been able to survive until now in the fight for the inheritance of her brothers and sisters, he didn't believe that tianlan didn't have any ambitions.

In fact, tianlan was indeed tempted.

At first, her only goal was to obtain the inheritance of the Tianyu Kingdom. However, now that she had obtained the stone statue Army left by the Minghai Kingdom, the inheritance of the Tianyu Kingdom Emperor was no longer in her eyes.

However, the position of the ruler of the kuilong Sea region was completely different. This kind of supreme power was too great a temptation for tianlan. What Tian Gang had said previously had actually attracted her. Otherwise, she would not have listened to Tian Gang.

However, there was one thing that tianlan was very clear about. Tian Huan would definitely not give up in vain. She also did not believe that Tian Huan would be so kind as to help her become the king of the kui Dragon Sea area.

Therefore, while Tian Gang was explaining, she used the dark sea King staff's ability, "dark thoughts."

This was another ability of the dark sea King staff besides controlling the stone statue Army. It was a special ability that could detect the "desire" hidden deep in the heart of the target through the emotional fluctuations.

Just now, she had used this ability to sense the desire and desire in Tian Gang's heart. The target of this desire was the dark sea King staff in her hand.

Just as tianlan had thought, Tian Gang had never harbored any good intentions.

Tianlan was not even disappointed by her father's thoughts. She knew Tian Huan all too well, and the result was exactly what he had expected. Tian Huan was only trying to take the inheritance of the Minghai Kingdom from her.

Right now, in Tian Gang's vision, a giant Golden Arm rose from Kankun Island and slapped at him.

"LAN 'er, what are you doing?" Feeling the vast and mighty pressure from the giant Golden Arm, Tian Gang's heart was filled with fear. He hurriedly turned to tianlan and roared.

"Tian Gang, your ambition has nothing to do with me, but you shouldn't have set your sights on me. You don't deserve to have this golden scepter!"

"LAN 'er, I'm your father!" He said. Seeing the giant Golden Arm getting closer and closer, Tian Gang wanted to escape. However, at this moment, the scepter in Tian Lan's hand overflowed with a golden light, firmly locking him in place. No matter how he struck, he could not break this golden barrier.

"Actually, your idea is not bad. However, you are still an unstable factor, so please die!"

As tianlan's voice fell, the giant Golden Arm ruthlessly smacked Tian Ji's body, who had been restrained in place.

The entire Island was shaking violently at this moment. The violent wind pressure blew the water around Kankun Island back several meters.

When the giant golden hand was raised, it left a huge palm print on the spot. Tian Gang was smashed into powder by this blow, leaving no trace of its existence.

Tianlan's lips curled up as she looked at the palm print. She then turned her gaze in the direction of the sea, her eyes filled with anticipation.

At this moment, the dark sea King staff glowed with a golden light and a Golden Shadow appeared from the staff.

It was a man in a long golden robe with an unusually stern face. He first glanced at the palm print below, then turned his gaze to tianlan,”

“He’s your father!”

“So what?”

“Yes, so what?” The man smiled and said,”

“What’s your next plan?”

“Restore the netherworld sea. Starting from the kui Dragon Sea area, rebuild the netherworld sea kingdom that spans Three Seas and become a true Empress, just like the former netherworld Sea Empress!” At this moment, tianlan turned to look at the Golden figure.

“You can’t do it if you only rely on the stone statue Army.” The man made of golden light shook his head.””It’s good to have ambition. It can help you improve and become stronger. But if you have too much ambition, it won’t match your strength. It will destroy you.”

“As long as I accept the inheritance of the netherworld Sea Empress, I believe I have the ability to do so!” Tianlan said with a solemn expression.

“Ambition is something that will expand with your strength. When you obtain greater strength, you will pursue things of a higher level. The Empress was like this back then. Her dream was only to become the Lord of a sea, but this goal was soon realized. However, as her strength grew, she was no longer satisfied with being a Lord. Later, she started a war. After gaining control of the sea of vanity, she chose to attack the kui Dragon Sea area. Later, she seized the Jade spring Sea area and became the master of the three major sea areas, establishing the extremely powerful netherworld sea kingdom. “However, even though she had obtained everything that she had once desired, her ambition was no longer satisfied with this. It was this infinitely inflated ambition that killed her ...”

“How did she die?!” Tianlan asked as she looked at the Golden, imposing man.

Hearing this, the Golden Man’s eyes flashed with grief.”

“In a war of unlimited expansion, we will always offend an unrivaled enemy. No matter how smooth the road ahead is, everything will be for naught at this point!”

“Who is it? Is it the Overlord of the sea?” Hearing the Golden Man mention an unparalleled enemy, Tianlan immediately thought of the spirit of the sea hidden in every sea, which was the strongest Overlord of the sea.

“The Empress’s strength has already reached the demigod level. She’s not afraid of the spirit of the sea!” The man’s eyes flashed with pride.

While he was recounting the story to Tianlan, the image of the Empress holding the Golden scepter and ruling the three Seas appeared in his mind.

“If it’s not a spirit of the sea, could it be a God?”

The Golden Man sighed as he looked at Tianlan.”

“When the Empress was at the peak of her power, she was no longer satisfied with the expansion of the sea area. She planned to extend the territory of the netherworld sea kingdom to the land. The first power she came into contact with was the Beiqi region, which was West of the sea of vanity!”

“Northern divergent!” When she heard the words ‘Beiqi’, Wang Damang’s face appeared in Tianlan’s mind.

The Golden Man continued,

“At that time, the Empress was too ambitious and overconfident in her power and strength. She didn’t understand the specific situation of Beiqi land at that time before sending troops. This step was the beginning of the crisis of the destruction of the netherworld sea kingdom!”

“In the first battle with Beiqi, the second Army of the netherworld sea kingdom, the ‘tide Army,’ was completely annihilated. At that time, the Empress, who was the monarch of the netherworld sea kingdom, received the news and went to the battle Point in person. However, when she approached Beiqi, the Empress was surprised to find that the entire sea area was frozen and all the Warriors of the tide Army were turned into ice sculptures. Such a powerful tide Army that had created countless brilliant achievements was actually annihilated just like that ...”

“In order to find out the reason, the Empress began to search the sea. She wanted to know who exactly froze her ‘tide Army’. However, while she was searching, she met a child. When the Empress questioned him, he nonchalantly said that he was the one who did it. ”

“At that time, the Furious Empress naturally did not hesitate to attack. Although the child was very powerful and had the strength of a ghost emperor, which surprised the Empress, he was still unable to resist the Empress. In the end, he was captured alive by the Empress!”

At this moment, the Golden Man suddenly turned to look at tianlan with a hint of helplessness in his eyes.”

“Do you know? at that time, the Empress thought that he was the strongest creature in the Beiqi great land and hoped that he would submit to her. But do you know his true identity?”

“Oh?” tianlan’s brows furrowed slightly upon hearing this.”The Beiqi Prefecture Lord?”

“At that time, the Empress also thought so. However, the young man said that his name was Bing Feng, and he was a descendant of the Beiqi God race. He was the leader of the ice and snow race, a subordinate of the Beiqi King!”

“What? A ghost emperor is only a clan leader?” Tianlan was very surprised.

The Golden Man couldn’t help but nod, the key to Beiqi’s war with the dark sea kingdom was to be frozen and captured! “After that, Beiqi declared war

on the Minghai Kingdom. Only then did we know how powerful Beiqi was at that time. Its official sovereign was a lunatic who could break through to the immortal state at any time. Besides the ice seal, the other three clan patriarchs were not weaker than the ice seal. And this was only the top power of Beiqi. The four clans under the Lord of Beiqi had countless ghost kings and ghost supervisors. In the face of their fierce attack, our Minghai Kingdom had no power to resist!”

At this point, the Golden Man let out a long sigh. His heart was filled with regret. How he wished that time could pass and he could go back to the past and persuade the Empress.

“So the netherworld sea kingdom was destroyed by Beiqi?” Tianlan asked after a moment of silence.

“Otherwise, it’s fortunate that Beiqi didn’t have any thoughts of expansion. In the end, our dark sea kingdom chose to compromise and handed over the ice seal. The forces of Beiqi also retreated, and this battle is over. But at that time, the netherworld sea kingdom had already suffered a great loss. As a huge power that spanned across the three Seas, the netherworld sea kingdom was full of weaknesses. Many powers could no longer hold back ...”

“The destruction of the dark sea kingdom in Beiqi was just an opportunity.”

“What about you? how did you die?” Tianlan asked again.

“He was slapped to death by the Beiqi Prefecture Lord of the time, a madman known as darknorth ...”

Tianlan was speechless.

As the Supreme commander of the army of the dark sea kingdom, you can’t even take one slap?” Tianlan was in disbelief.

“The world is bigger than you think, and there are countless experts. Even at its peak, the netherworld sea kingdom only occupied a small corner of the netherworld world. As the highest commander of the netherworld sea

Kingdom's military force, I can't even withstand a blow from a real expert even if I have the strength of a ghost emperor!"

"It was fortunate that the Empress had absorbed my soul into the king's staff. Otherwise, my soul would have been destroyed!" As he spoke, the Golden Man couldn't help but sigh again.

"Where's the water Empress? The Empress was also heavily injured by that Beiqi Prefecture Lord?"

When the Golden Man heard this, he couldn't help but shake his head.

"That madman is decisive and ruthless, but he has a principle. He doesn't hit women. He didn't even use his full strength when he fought with the Empress. In the end, the Empress felt that she was no match for him and thus ended the battle!"

"How did the Empress get injured? as long as the Empress is still alive, the dark sea kingdom shouldn't be destroyed!" Tianlan was puzzled.

"It's still because of that ice seal. Even the North divergent official had already stopped, but this bastard still didn't let it go. He told the North divergent God clan behind him about this matter. Although the North divergent official doesn't hit women, the North divergent God clan behind the ice seal didn't care about this. At that time, a woman came to the North divergent God clan. She called herself the 'Northern spiritual realm' and was the direct ancestor of the ice seal. After she found the Empress, she only said one thing. She asked the Empress to receive a palm strike from her. She would accept it, but she wouldn't accept it and would die!"

Thinking of the white-haired boy 'ice seal' who Tattletale even after the war was over, even after so many years, every time he thought of it, he would be so angry that his teeth would itch. Then he spoke again,"

"That Northern spiritual realm expert of the northern divergent God clan was a God, while the Empress was only a demigod. Although she received this attack, she was seriously injured. Her injuries continued to worsen, and even the Empress couldn't hold on. Before she died, the Empress

announced that the netherworld sea kingdom had a change of successor. After that, she passed away in meditation on Kan Kun Island.”

“I’m sure you’ve guessed it. Without the Empress, the dark sea kingdom no longer has the strength to control the three Seas. First, the crystal Spring Sea area was directly captured and lost. After that, the netherworld sea kingdom, which only had two seas left, was still the target of attacks by the nearby sea forces. ”

“In that case, the king of the netherworld sea kingdom was unable to save the Empire that was on the verge of decline. He could only announce the dissolution of the netherworld sea kingdom and establish the new eight ocean kingdoms. He also gave the Eight Kingdoms The Guardian statue that represented the netherworld sea kingdom, hoping that they would not forget that the Eight Kingdoms were once a whole. At the same time, he hoped that they would secretly accumulate strength and wait for the day of restoration.”

“After that, the king of the netherworld sea left the netherworld Sea King staff and the stone statue Army on Kan Kun Island to protect the Empress who had passed away. At the same time, he left behind his most trusted priest to continue supervising the development of the eight great countries. However, he himself went missing and never appeared again.”

After listening to the Golden man’s story, Tianlan sighed in her heart. She had not expected that the once-prosperous netherworld sea kingdom would decline in such a way.

It was the Empress who brought the netherworld sea kingdom to its glorious position as the Overlord of the three Seas. But in the end, it was also because of the Empress that the netherworld sea kingdom was destroyed.

Tianlan knew what had happened after that.

How could the eight great countries, who had left the netherworld sea, return so easily? The old priest, who was already like a lamp on the verge of death, was even more powerless to redeem anything. From then on, the

Eight Kingdoms would be the Eight Kingdoms. They would recall the pride and glory of the dark sea kingdom.

However, no one would agree to rebuild the netherworld sea.

This was the reality!

Chapter 393 - You Might Not Believe Me (2 In 1)

Seeing that tianlan seemed to have comprehended something, the Golden Man asked again,”

“Have you changed your mind?”

However, to his surprise, tianlan continued to shake her head.”

“My thoughts will not change. I was born in the Tianyu Kingdom and I have been taught that power is Supreme. You may not understand the Empress’s thoughts at that time, but I do. This is a challenge and a form of self-improvement. You may have never experienced the feeling of climbing up step by step from a low position. It is an indescribable enjoyment. The key is in the process and there will never be an end!”

As she spoke, the corners of tianlan’s mouth curled up, and she made no effort to hide the desire and ambition in her eyes.

She was born in the Tianyu country. Although she was the daughter of the Emperor of the Tianyu country, she was never special because she had too many brothers and sisters.

And the main theme of her childhood was the competition for power!

At that time, she had no choice. If she wanted to live, the only way was to become stronger and kill her own brothers and sisters. She would grow up step by step and obtain the position of the future emperor of Tianyu Kingdom. The only way to back out was to die.

She was forced to grow up step by step. From a young age, she was instilled with the idea of obtaining the position of the Emperor of Tianyu Kingdom. During this period, she could use unscrupulous means, assassinate, form gangs, poison, and all despicable means were legal in the fight for power.

This was the purgatory that every generation of the Tianyu Kingdom's inheritors had to go through. However, one had to admit that growing up in such an environment, tianlan's desire for power was extremely strong.

Ever since she could remember, the desire for power had run through her entire life. Thus, she understood why the netherworld Sea Empress chose to embark on the path of endless conquest.

Just like her now.

Back then, what she desired the most was the position of the Emperor of Tianyu Kingdom. But now, after taking control of the stone statue Army in the ruins of the netherworld sea, she changed her mind.

Since I'm so powerful, why don't I build an even more glorious force?

In tianlan's eyes, the so-called ambition was nothing more than The Evolution of Desire. She was willing to fall into it and continue to build her own peak, until one day, she became a thing of the past in the midst of expansion, just like the Empress.

What she enjoyed was the process. No matter how bad the ending was, it was just death.

The Golden Man couldn't help but freeze in place as he looked at tianlan's evil smile.

At this moment, tianlan, who was holding the Golden scepter in her hand, almost made him think that he had seen her again, the Empress He had followed for his entire life!

It seemed! It really looked like it!

As he looked at tianlan, his gaze gradually became determined. He then said, ""Do you want to know how to obtain the great Empress' inheritance?"

"Didn't you say that you'll only tell me when the time is right?" Tianlan was a little surprised.

“I feel that the time is ripe. Do you know that I have always regretted not stopping the Empress from expanding her territory? but now, I feel that I was wrong. After hearing what you said, I understand that the Empress is just like you. She only enjoys the process of conquering. Perhaps, she had already guessed that she would be destroyed in this crazy expansion sooner or later. However, she still had the obligation to do it.”

Tianlan shook her head gently.”

“You don’t understand, because you don’t have that kind of ambition.”

“Yes, I don’t understand. That’s why I feel that the time is right. I feel that you are the best successor to the Empress!” The Golden Man immediately replied.

“What do you mean?”

“Back then, I helped you obtain the dark sea King staff because I wanted to make use of you and help the dark sea kingdom find an opportunity to restore its Kingdom. That’s why I said I would tell you when the time was right when you asked me about the great Empress ‘inheritance. In fact, I never thought of giving the great Empress’ inheritance to a little girl like you who is only at the ghost Governor realm. But this time, I have changed my mind. I think you are more suitable than anyone to inherit the great Empress ‘inheritance!’”

“Aren’t you afraid that you’ve misjudged?”

“I have followed the Empress for my entire life. I can see her shadow in you.”

Tianlan couldn’t help but smile when she heard this. It was as if an Ice Mountain had melted at this moment, and the Golden Man was momentarily dazed.

“Tell me, how can I obtain the great Empress” inheritance!”

“In fact, all of the great Empress” inheritance is in her body. There is only one way to obtain the inheritance, and that is to use a special spiritual array to open a few fixed acupuncture points in her body and draw out the inheritance hidden in her body!”

“This special spiritual array is currently hidden under the body of the Empress. However, due to its age, the spiritual energy inside has been exhausted. It can only be awakened with the help of a large number of spiritual materials.”

Tianlan frowned.”

“What happens if I forcefully break through the Empress’s body?”

When he heard that tianlan wanted to destroy the Empress’s body by force, the Golden man’s face was filled with anger. In her eyes, the Empress had always been his Emperor, and her dignity could not be blasphemed.

However, as he looked at tianlan, his anger suddenly subsided. He had thought about what decision the Empress would have made if she had been here.

“You are indeed very similar to the Empress. However, I can tell you that the Empress has already left behind a taboo. You will not get anything if you destroy it by force!”

“How many mystical materials do you need to awaken the spiritual array?”

“The more the better. It’s better to prepare more in case the process of inheritance is interrupted because of insufficient mystical materials. You only have one chance!”

“Could this be a trap?” At this moment, tianlan suddenly asked as she stared at the Golden Man.

When the Golden Man heard this, he was stunned. He immediately realized what tianlan was referring to. She was clearly asking if he could be trusted.

“Based on my understanding of the great Empress, if this is a trap and she is you, she would not hesitate to use her rotten life to bet on the inheritance of a demigod. So what if she dies?” The Golden Man suddenly laughed as well.

Hearing this, tianlan smiled sweetly, because this was exactly what she was thinking at the moment.

She waved her hand and kept the Golden Man into her scepter. Then, she began to think about where she could go to obtain a large number of mystical materials.

In fact, she had only obtained the dark sea King staff and the stone statue Army in the dark sea ruins. The other mystical materials and treasures had been divided by the Eight Kingdoms when the dark sea kingdom was destroyed. She had nothing left.

Therefore, in order to obtain the great Empress ‘inheritance as soon as possible, where to find mystical materials became the key.

While she was thinking, an idea came to her mind.

Plunder!

Now that the resources of the kui Dragon Sea area were basically controlled by the members of the Joint Forces such as the Sea King and lang ya, plundering was the fastest way for her to obtain resources.

At this time, tianlan also thought of the members of the ocean Chamber of Commerce who often visited the kui Dragon Sea area. These ocean merchants would bring a large number of resources each time they came. They could obtain a large number of mystical materials and treasures by plundering any one of them.

Tianlan couldn’t help but smile at this thought.

He then raised the Golden scepter in his hand high. Immediately, the entire Kankun Island began to tremble, and stone statues rose from the ground.

At this moment, she had the idea of forming the biggest pirate group in the kui Dragon Sea. Their target was all the forces in the kui Dragon Sea area, including the ocean King, the Langya Alliance, and the sea merchants. They were going to harvest all the treasures regardless of the consequences!

Although it was crazy, tianlan knew that as long as she obtained the great Empress 'inheritance, all the trouble would not be trouble.

Just as tianlan was thinking about this, her expression suddenly froze as she turned her head to look into the distance.

Her line of sight continued to extend under the blessing of the golden light of the scepter. At this time, she discovered a huge fleet emerging from the sea.

Seeing this, tianlan couldn't help but smile, her beautiful eyes full of anticipation.

She didn't expect her target to appear before she even left the house. Since she had already made up her mind to plunder, she naturally wouldn't let go of prey that had delivered itself to her door.

She waved the scepter in her hand, and the island immediately trembled even more violently. Countless stone statues of different sizes broke out of the ground under tianlan's call.

In the end, an incomparably large Golden God statue that was several hundred meters tall appeared on the island. The earth trembled with every step it took. Its enormous body was like a god, and it was filled with an incomparably great power.

It slowly lowered its head after reaching tianlan's side. Tianlan's body floated up and stood on the Golden statue's left shoulder.

"Roar!" The Golden statue stood up, raised its head, and roared. Then, this extremely powerful Army of stone statues began to walk toward the sea, in the direction of the fleet of battleships.

.....

In the sea outside Kankun Island.

The fleet formed by the players was sailing forward.

Recently, the players felt that they couldn't survive in Beiqi anymore.

The Starlight Prefecture Lord and his brothers had gone crazy recently. They had wiped out the players in a frenzy. This madness made the players have the idea of hiding for the time being, so they were ready to find the Sea King to reminisce about the past.

After entering the kui long sea area, the players were all chatting in the regional channel or the Guild channel. The content of their chat was basically analyzing the battle situation between the Sea King and the Joint Forces of Langya Island.

At this time, on the myth's warship, the core members of the big dragon Guild and the myth were gathered on the deck and chatting.

At this time, Xue Li suddenly looked at the dog who was trying to walk on two legs not far away, and said helplessly,

“Gou ‘Zi, don't be like this. It's really uncomfortable to see you like this.”

When Gou ‘Zi heard that, he instantly put down his forelimbs and bared his teeth,”

“Xue Li, what do you mean?”

“Why can't you just accept the truth? I actually think Bai Mei is quite good-looking.” Xue Li couldn't help but smile.

“I think so too. Just bear with it for a while. Sooner or later, you'll evolve into the handsome ultimate form of the White charm!” At this time, Wang Da mang, who was beside Xue Li, also grinned and said.

When he heard that, Gou ‘Zi subconsciously touched the two horns on his head and instantly felt his heart hurt.

He had once thought that he would be incomparably handsome after his evolution. No matter what, he would still be in the form of a divine beast. However, he was still a dog. This feeling of his dream being shattered made him dispirited for a long time.

Therefore, before the ultimate evolution arrived, he wanted to try to walk on two legs and try to make himself more impressive.

Regarding this, the dog’s friends were naturally strongly against it. After all, they had already treated the dog as a mascot, but they just didn’t say it out loud.

As for the dog’s evolution, basically, all of his friends were hoping that the evolution would fail.

Of course, the young paparazzo did not know this because all he saw was his friends encouraging him to evolve. He was also gradually immersed in these white lies ...

“No, even if I can’t achieve the ultimate evolution, I must find a way to transform.” Gou ‘Zi who was filled with grief and anger said.

“Don’t even think about it. There’s no such thing as a human form in this game.” Xue Li, who was standing at the side, said calmly.

“I don’t believe it. There are so many hidden opportunities in the game. I’m sure there’s one for me to transform!” The young paparazzo immediately pointed at Xue Li with one hand on his waist and said.

“You don’t even know how lucky you are. Obtaining the White Charm’s inheritance is like reaching the heavens in a single step. Look at me, as the first player in the war, I’m still a curse disciple. I haven’t obtained any inheritance, and my skills are just so-so, mediocre!” As he spoke, Wang Damang let out a long sigh.

“Great Python, don’t be discouraged. Don’t forget your dream!” At this time, Xue Li gave Wang Da mang an encouraging look.

“What dream? my dream now is to find a rich woman to provide for me, then have an endless amount of soul coins and resources to spend. I’ll become stronger while lying down like a salted fish!” The blind King Python sighed again.

“Haha, what a pity. Python, you’re too ugly. Rich women definitely won’t like you. With me around, I reckon you have no hope.” Chen Ziyu, who was at the side, suddenly interrupted.

“Get lost, get lost ...”

Just as everyone was making fun of each other, the surface of the sea suddenly churned. A group of huge stone statues broke through the water surface and appeared in front of the players’ fleet.

While the players were still in shock, a cold voice came from the front.

“Plunder! Those who leave behind mystical materials, treasures, and other materials can live. Otherwise, die!”

Then, the players saw a huge golden statue rise from the sea. All the ships were pushed back by the huge waves. The players also noticed tianlan, who was standing on the left shoulder of the Golden statue and holding a golden scepter.

“I’ll say it again. Plunder. Those who leave behind mystical materials, treasures, and other items can live. Otherwise, die!” Looking at the huge fleet below, tianlan spoke again with an expressionless face.

When the players heard this, they were dumbfounded. This was because they had always been the ones robbing others, but this time, they had actually been robbed.

Pirates?

The players looked at tianlan with strange expressions.

When she realized that none of the players were responding, tianlan could not help but frown. She then waved her golden scepter, and the stone statue Army immediately moved, launching an attack on the players 'fleet of battleships.

The weakest of these stone statues was at the level of a ghost Governor. The destructive power caused by their simultaneous attacks was extremely shocking. The warships in the front row had no power to resist. They were destroyed in an instant and began to sink into the sea.

Seeing this scene, the players were dumbfounded. Who the hell was this? was he so ruthless that he started fighting?

This was the first time that the players had encountered such a devastating force. Before this, whether it was Boulder, Starlight, Ocean King, or Langya, they would always discuss with them before starting a war. This was the first time they had seen such a direct force.

However, the players would not surrender. They immediately activated the ghost warship and began to fight back.

Tianlan smirked when she saw the players resisting. She waved her scepter, and The Guardian statue beneath her let out a deafening roar. It swung its right arm forward, and a long row of warships was instantly destroyed. The entire sea was instantly filled with scattered ship parts.

“Damn, so fierce!” The players couldn't help but curse at the sight.

Looking at the Golden statue, the players subconsciously activated their analysis abilities.

[Golden Supreme (early stage ghost emperor)]:

[Item information: the vessel of the ancient netherworld sea Kingdom's National aura, the Supreme of the stone statue, personally forged by the netherworld Sea Empress.] Venerable Jin was the Emperor of the netherworld sea and one of the symbols of power in the ancient netherworld sea kingdom. He had the combat power of an early-stage ghost emperor and

the defense power of a late-stage ghost emperor. He was the netherworld sea's National divine weapon.

[Item note: a golden exalt is the divine weapon of the netherworld sea kingdom. The stronger the kingdom, the stronger it is. Due to the destruction of the netherworld sea kingdom, the strength of a golden exalt has fallen to the initial early stage of the ghost emperor realm!]

Seeing the analysis panel of the Golden stone statue, the players were suddenly unable to remain calm.

Initially, they had wanted to retaliate against the robbery, but now they realized that they were no match for this opponent!

“It's over. It wasn't easy for me to escape from Beiqi. Now, I'm going to be sent back to Beiqi for free.” Looking at Supreme golden, Xue Li sighed helplessly.

At this moment, she suddenly realized that Wang Damang, who was beside her, was staring at Supreme Gold with a face full of joy.

“Great Python, why are you staring at the stone statue with such a fangirl-like expression?”

“Don't make a fuss. Don't you see the woman on Supreme Jin's shoulder? you might not believe it, but she's my concubine!” Wang Da mang replied with a serious expression.

“Hahaha!”

At this moment, Xue Li, Gou 'Zi, Gu Yu, Chen Ziyu and the others couldn't help but laugh.

“Great Python, you've gone crazy thinking about rich women.” Xue Li patted Wang Da mang's shoulder, her face showing a distressed expression.

“That's right. We have to accept reality. Take me for example. Although I've turned into a beast, the cruel reality has never defeated me!” Gou 'Zi immediately jumped out and said.

“Get lost! I’m serious! She almost became my concubine!” Wang Damang shouted with a red face in the face of everyone’s ridicule.

“That’s right, that’s right, that’s right. That’s why, great Python, quickly tell your concubine to stop. If this continues, we’ll all be wiped out.” Chen Ziyu grinned.

“Hahaha!” The crowd burst into laughter.

Faced with everyone’s distrust, Wang Damang felt aggrieved. After thinking for a while, he mustered his courage and walked to the bow of the warship. He took a deep breath, then shouted at Supreme Gold,”

“Tianlan, it’s Wang Damang. Stop!”

What happened next stunned Xue Li and the other players. All the stone statues really stopped attacking.

Chapter 394 - The Difficulty Of The Hell Mode Raid

Was she really Wang Da mang's concubine?

The same thought appeared in the players' minds at the same time.

However, they didn't think so after that, because the stone statue Army's attack became even more violent, and the surrounding ships were quickly destroyed.

Many players were stunned as they were turned into clouds of black mist by the stone statue Army.

"Tianlan, I'm Wang Damang!" Wang Da mang, who saw this scene, roared again, unwilling to accept this.

As soon as he said that, his attacks became even more ferocious.

Seeing this, Xue Li and the others immediately stepped forward and stopped Wang Damang, who was about to continue shouting.

"Brother Python, don't be rash. I know that she's a rich woman, but we have to be principled. We won't force things that don't belong to us." Xue Li pressed on Wang Da mang's head and urged him anxiously.

"I ... I really do know her." At this moment, Wang Damang wanted to cry, but no tears came out. He didn't understand what was going on. Why did Tianlan not acknowledge him?

"Yes, I know him. In my dreams." Xue Li continued.

At this moment, Wang Da mang felt wronged. Why didn't anyone believe her when she told the truth? They really knew each other, and she had almost become his concubine.

Just when the players thought that they couldn't escape this calamity, the stone statue Army suddenly stopped attacking. The Golden giant lowered its head slowly and came to a spot not far from the mythological ship.

Tianlan, who was standing on Supreme Gold's shoulder, turned to look at Wang Damang, who was being controlled by the crowd."

"What are you doing here?"

"Yes, it's me, it's me." Wang Da mang quickly pried away the hands of Xue Li and the others. He grinned as he walked to the edge of the ship and looked at tianlan excitedly.

"By the way, you probably didn't hear my shout just now, right?" As he spoke, Wang Damang glanced at the dumbfounded crowd around him, his vanity satisfied.

Staring at Wang Damang, tianlan's feelings were complicated.

Ever since she was young, the only time she felt warmth was not from her family, but from this man she had never met. At this moment, she could still clearly remember how Wang Da mang had treated her when she was heavily injured and brought her out of the island.

Looking at the silent tianlan, Wang Damang was secretly happy. He felt that since tianlan still remembered him, then the rest of the matter would be easy to deal with. He was going to show off.

"I heard it!" Tianlan suddenly said.

"Ahem ... Then why are you still attacking?" Wang Damang suddenly looked a little embarrassed.

"There's no why, I want to!"

"We're all acquaintances. Don't be like this. How about you let us live this time?" Wang Damang continued to ask awkwardly in the face of tianlan, who did not give him any face at all.

A charming smile appeared on tianlan's face when she heard this. Wang Damang's heart trembled as he thought that there was a chance.

“We're even. I've already given you the child of the ocean. What right do you have to ask me to do anything? He really thinks too highly of himself!”

At that moment, the smile on Wang Damang's face froze.

The surrounding crowd seemed to have heard the sound of Wang Damang's heart breaking at this moment.

“Pfft ... Pfft ... Hahaha.” Xue Li's face suddenly turned red, and then she couldn't help but laugh.

At this moment, Wang Da mang was extremely embarrassed. He had thought that he could act tough in front of everyone, but he had not expected tianlan to not give him any face at all.

“If you don't want to die, have your people hand over all their resources!” Tianlan said with an indifferent expression.

“Hey! Are you really that arrogant? Do you know who we are?” Hearing this, Gou 'Zi immediately jumped out and bared his teeth at tianlan.

“Does it matter who it is? What's important is that you're not my match. ” Tianlan replied with a smile.

At this moment, the young paparazzo was speechless. He then slapped the deck angrily because he really had nothing to say.

“To tell you the truth, you won't get anything even if you kill all of us. But if you let us go, you'll have one less opponent in the future!” Gu Yu also stood up at this moment and spoke to tianlan with a solemn expression.

“You think I care?”

“I'll say it one last time, hand over all your supplies, or the ship will be destroyed and all of you will die!”

This time, the players were completely helpless. In the face of such a powerful tianlan, it seemed that there was no other way than to fight.

“Come, come, come. Who’s afraid of who? tianlan, right? if I don’t teach you a lesson, you won’t know what the fourth natural disaster is!” Gou ‘Zi, who knew that there was no way to negotiate, started to shout again.

This time, tianlan didn’t say anything more. The Golden giant stood up straight and immediately launched an attack.

Under the stunned expressions of Gou ‘Zi and the others, a huge golden hand descended from the sky and slapped the mythical ship ruthlessly. The ship’s hull collapsed immediately, and all the players on the ship were unable to resist under the pressure of this huge force. All of them entered the cooldown period of death.

However, there was one exception, and that was Wang Da mang.

Wang Da mang, who originally thought that he would also be smacked to death by the giant hand, was surprised to find that he was actually not dead. Moreover, a layer of light film made of golden light had inexplicably appeared on the surface of his body. It was also this light film that had protected him earlier.

He subconsciously raised his head and immediately discovered that the Golden scepter in tianlan’s hand was shining with a dazzling golden light.

She saved me?

While Wang Da mang was stunned, the players around him were not so lucky. Their ships were constantly being destroyed by the stone statue Army, and only ten minutes had passed.

This huge fleet of thousands of warships was destroyed.

Then, the stone statue Army on the sea all sank into the water, leaving only the incomparably majestic golden statue.

“Tianlan! Tianlan!” At this moment, Wang Da mang once again began to call out tianlan’s name. However, tianlan completely ignored him and continued to stand on the Golden giant statue, waiting for something.

A moment later, all the stone statues emerged from the sea. The Golden giant statue lowered its head again and came before Wang Da mang. The light film on Wang Da mang’s body also disappeared at this moment.

“Wang Da mang, why isn’t there any material on your ship? also, why did all the wreckage of the ship disappear after sinking to the bottom of the sea?!”

When Wang Damang heard this, he sighed.”

“I’ve told you before, you won’t get anything!”

“I’m asking you, where did you go?” Tianlan’s face was cold as she asked sternly.

“I don’t know!” Facing tianlan’s attitude, Wang Da mang’s heart was filled with anger.

“Do you really think I don’t dare to kill you?” Tianlan’s face darkened.

“Kill! Do you think I’m afraid?!” This time, Wang Da mang did not give in at all.

Although he still had some admiration and anticipation for tianlan, Wang Da mang’s temper flared up in the face of such an unreasonable woman.

As she looked at Wang Da mang, the dark sea King staff in tianlan’s hand flickered with a golden light. Her eyes were even more uncertain.

The two of them remained in a stalemate for a while. Then, tianlan suddenly waved her scepter. The Golden giant statue turned around and led tianlan and the stone statue Army into the distance.

Looking at tianlan’s departing figure, Wang Damang felt a little upset.

If tianlan killed him now, he would feel better. At the very least, he would be able to cut off all his thoughts. However, this feeling of being stuck between life and death was the most unbearable.

Bah!

As expected, I should be single for life!

At this moment, Wang Da mang had given up on himself. As an otaku, he had never been in a relationship in his life. It was not easy for him to have the idea of falling in love, but he did not expect the other party to be so difficult that he could not win!

Damn game development, who made the character template, ah pui!

PAH! Bah! Bah!

Chapter 395 - Super Evil?

This damned love!

Looking around at the vast ocean, Wang Damang was extremely depressed.

Thinking of this, he opened his mouth again and was about to spit when a figure suddenly emerged from the bottom of the water and appeared beside him.

“Young man, are you done? can't you have some manners? Are you trying to dilute the salt in the sea?”

The one who spoke was a hunchbacked old man with a turtle shell on his back. At this moment, he was looking at Wang Da mang with a helpless expression, as if he had had enough of him.

“Who are you?” The sudden appearance of the little old man gave Wang Da mang a fright, and he immediately spoke up.

“This old man is hai Dafu, pleased to meet you!” The little old man suddenly cupped his fists and said to Wang Damang.

“I'm Wei Xiaobao!”

Looking at the mysterious little old man, Wang Damang subconsciously opened the analysis panel.

[Doctor hai (late-stage ghost emperor)]:

[Character information: the last king of the ancient netherworld sea kingdom. After the dissolution of the netherworld sea kingdom, he voluntarily gave up his rights and wandered around the major seas of the yellow spring sea in search of the Supreme treasure that could revive the netherworld Sea Empress.]

[Character status: virtuous Yin Golden Wheel Protection (level 8)]

Looking at doctor Hai's panel details, Wang Da mang was shocked. He didn't think that this ordinary looking old man was actually a hidden super expert.

He couldn't help but be on guard.

"You seem to be a little nervous." Doctor hai narrowed his eyes.

"No, I didn't!" Wang Damang denied it.

"You seem to be a little afraid of me. Do you know me?" Doctor hai narrowed his eyes and asked.

"I don't know you. I just feel that you don't look like a good person!"

"Haha, you're right. I'm not a good person. I'm an evil person." Doctor hai seemed to be very happy when he heard this.

"I say, what's the matter?" Even though the other party was a ghost emperor, Wang Da mang was starting to get impatient.

When doctor hai heard this, he revealed a dazed expression.

"Did you really like that woman just now, and then gave her your true love, but you didn't get anything in return, so you felt very heartbroken?"

"No, you're talking nonsense!" Wang Da mang, whose wound had been poked, immediately denied it.

"Little brother, I've been through this before. I was just like you back then, falling in love with an ambitious woman. I f*cking gave my whole life for her, but do you know what she said?"

"What?" Wang Damang's interest was piqued.

"She said that I'm a good person and she's an evil person, so we can't be together." Doctor Hai's eyes widened at the mention of the past.

“So you want to be a bad person?”

“That’s right. I want to be a bad person, a great villain. I want to let her know that she’s wrong!” As he spoke, doctor Hai’s face was filled with confidence.

At this time, a sea turtle wrapped in seaweed swam past him, and he subconsciously took the seaweed off the sea turtle’s body. He gently pushed the little sea turtle with a kind smile on his face.

Wang Da mang was speechless.

Recalling how he had been stopped from spitting, Wang Da mang suddenly wanted to say, you’re really a good person!

But he didn’t dare to, he was afraid of being beaten up.

“Young man, I think your experience is very similar to mine. At this point, I think you only have one path to take, and this path will change the trajectory of your life.” At this moment, doctor hai spoke to Wang Da mang with a serious expression.

“What path?” Wang Da mang asked curiously.

“You’ve been corrupted!” Doctor hai said seriously.

“Are you serious?” Wang Da mang was a little stunned.

“Of course I’m serious. Ever since she called me a ‘good person’, I’ve been trying my best to become a bad person. For hundreds of thousands of years, I’ve been wandering around the yellow spring sea and can be considered a somewhat famous villain. I’m no longer the same person as before. As long as she’s resurrected, I’ll let her see what a villain is!” As he spoke, doctor Hai’s body was filled with pride.

“Wait, tell me first, what evil things have you done in these hundreds of thousands of years!” Wang Da mang immediately asked.

“That’s a lot. It’s simply a heinous crime!”

“Specific details!”

“Back then, in order to commit evil, I caused a huge tsunami in the shattered Sea area. That scene ...” Doctor hai said proudly.

However, before he could finish, he was interrupted by Wang Damang,”

“I want to hear the results!”

The smile on doctor Hai’s face instantly froze when he heard this. He then said dejectedly,

“The tsunami somehow swept into the resource-deficient withered soul Island, bringing the many tribes the seawater and resources they needed. In the end, they were actually thanked ...” Doctor Hai’s voice grew softer and softer as he spoke, his face filled with frustration.

“What else?”

“That’s amazing. Back then, in order to do evil, I detonated an underwater volcano. At that time, Crimson lava spewed out. That scene ...”

“I want to hear the results. You just have to tell me the results.” Wang Damang already had a premonition in his heart.

Hearing this, doctor hai suddenly sighed with a sorrowful expression.

“I don’t know why, but this underwater volcano eruption actually swept out a lot of creatures. Later, I found out that they were the lava race sealed in the underwater volcano. I detonated the volcano and broke the seal, saving them. This is really unexpected!”

Doctor hai appeared to be very depressed.

“You’re considered a bad person?” Wang Damang was stunned.

“Don’t look down on me. Back then, my hands were also stained with blood. That was hundreds of thousands of lives. My body was covered in

blood and sin!” Looking at the suspicious Wang Da mang, doctor hai spoke with a face of unwillingness.

“The result, the result!” Wang Damang started to remind doctor hai to get to the main point.

At this moment, doctor hai looked much older. A trace of helplessness appeared on his face.

“I ... I only found out after I killed them that they were all illusory Warriors projected by the heaven fiend clan who were preparing to invade the broken sea realm. In the end, I received the gratitude of all the forces in the broken sea realm ...”

Wang Da mang was speechless.

“The detestable broken sea. I’ve never been to this land of sorrow again.” Doctor hai said angrily.

“So, have you ever successfully done any evil things?” Wang Da mang asked expressionlessly.

“Yes, there must be!” Doctor hai replied with a serious expression.

“Speak!”

Doctor hai fell into deep thought.

Time ticked by, and just as Wang Damang was about to run out of patience, doctor hai suddenly raised his head with a look of pleasant surprise.

“I remember now. I once committed an extremely evil crime!”

“When I disbanded the dark sea kingdom and was ready to go to the other seas to do evil, I left an opportunity for disaster in the sea of vanity. As long as this opportunity is ripe, that sea will be mercilessly destroyed by the disaster! Hahaha, don’t you think this is a great sin?”

Hearing this, Wang Da mang instantly thought of the death clan that was wreaking havoc in the sea of vanity. His expression froze.

“What’s the opportunity of disaster you’re talking about?”

“An ancient tree that represents the source of evil and a branch of evil clans. As long as the time is right, they will sweep across the sea of vanity, bringing endless destruction and disaster. They are the greatest sins!” Doctor hai said with a smile.

When he heard doctor hai say that it was an evil race and an ancient tree, Wang Da mang knew that it was definitely not the Death Race. After all, the Death Race did not have any ancient trees.

However, he was also very familiar with the empty sea domain. He didn’t find any evil race or evil ancient tree in this sea domain.

However, speaking of ancient trees, Wang Da mang’s mind instantly thought of his sister, “Feng Ling,” and the Fengye song clan that she was from. And that peace-loving clan had an ancient tree of “tranquility” that was breaking through to the ghost emperor realm.

“Could it be that the ancient tree’s name is tranquility?” Wang Da mang asked with a strange expression.

“That’s right. It seems that you’ve heard of its notoriety. How is it? it’s very brutal, right?” Doctor hai was very pleased with himself.

“Yes, very brutal!”

Thinking about the ancient tree that had a health recovery BUFF and the Fengye singers who couldn’t eat meat, Wang Da mang was speechless.

“It must be brutal. After all, I planted it myself. I’ve been looking forward to it growing for a long time.” Doctor hai clearly didn’t notice the strange expression on Wang Da mang’s face as he continued to speak.

“By the way, why do you think that this ancient tree will become very evil after it grows up?” Wang Da mang asked curiously.

“I bought it from the Black Dragon ocean Chamber of Commerce personally. I wanted the vilest seed, and they recommended the vilest seed of the ‘tranquility’ ancient tree to me. I spent a lot of resources to get it.”

At this moment, Wang Da mang felt sad for doctor hai from the bottom of his heart.

He was such a good person. Every time he did evil, he was filled with positive energy and kindness. He even met a profiteer when he spent money to buy “calamity” and bought the ancient tree of “tranquility” that would protect the sunset Island from now on. It was simply ...

Wang Da mang looked at doctor Hai’s analysis panel again and saw the “golden light of Yin de protection” on his status bar. He finally understood.

He even felt that if doctor hai continued to “commit evil” like this, he would probably become a saint.

“Boy, let me tell you, after meeting such an ambitious woman, the only path you can take is to become an evil person. Only by becoming a great evil person will the two of you become a good match, and she will fall in love with you.” Doctor hai said with a serious expression.

Looking at doctor hai, Wang Da mang suddenly felt a trace of comfort in his heart.

He was not the most miserable one!

Chapter 396 - Please Be A Good Person

Looking at the smug doctor hai, Wang Da mang could not bear to tell him the truth about the ancient disaster tree.

He was afraid that doctor Hai's weak heart would not be able to withstand such a blow.

"Then, what do you want to do by returning to the kuilong Sea area this time?" Wang Da mang changed the topic and asked curiously.

"Have you heard of the abominable Alliance?" Doctor hai asked with a smile.

"What extreme evil Alliance?" Wang Da mang was dumbfounded, because he had never heard of it before.

"An organization that spans multiple seas. It's made up of many evil people, and every one of them is extremely vicious!" A hint of pride appeared on doctor Hai's face when he mentioned the organization.

"What does that have to do with your return to the kuilong sea?" Wang Da mang could not help but ask.

"Of course it's related. I'm one of them. Recently, some members of the abominable organization came to the kui Dragon Sea. It's said that they want to cause great destruction in these waters, so I came!"

"After all, how could I miss out on such a great destruction?" In the end, doctor hai added.

"Doctor hai!"

When Wang Da mang heard this, he was about to say something when an angry roar came from the distance. A figure then galloped over from the distance.

This person's entire body was covered in black armor and black mist. He didn't look like someone to be trifled with.

The man arrived in front of doctor hai in an instant. His blood-red eyes were fixed on doctor hai through his helmet.

"Yo, let me introduce you. This is one of the members of the extreme evil organization of the Jade spring Sea area, e 'hou!" Doctor hai chuckled as he introduced the man to Wang Da mang.

"Doctor hai, why did you appear at the kui Dragon Sea area?" E 'Chu glared at doctor hai and asked, not paying any attention to Wang Da mang beside him.

"I heard that you guys are going to organize a great destruction. I felt that you couldn't leave me out, so I came." Doctor hai replied matter-of-factly.

At this moment, Wang Da mang could clearly see e chu's body tremble.

"I'm begging you, doctor hai. Please be a good person. Because of your joining, our abominable organization is really about to collapse!" E 'Chu's voice trembled as he looked at doctor hai.

He had completely given up on doctor hai.

He had once thought that with the addition of doctor hai, who had the strength of a late-stage ghost emperor, the abominable organization in the Jade spring Sea area would become even more powerful.

However, the truth was the exact opposite of what they had thought.

After doctor hai had officially joined them, they had fallen from being the number one force in the Jade spring Sea area to the point where they could barely hold on any longer. He believed that if this continued, the organization would be completely finished.

Every time he thought of his experience during this period, he felt sad.

Therefore, after a final discussion, they decided to move the organization out of the Jade spring Sea area without doctor Hai's knowledge and take root in the kui Dragon Sea area.

Since they couldn't afford to offend the powerful doctor hai, they could only hide!

However, they had never expected that doctor hai would follow them the moment they arrived at the quilong territorial waters and had yet to set up a camp ...

The moment e 'Chu sensed doctor hai, he almost collapsed mentally. He rushed over with a trace of hope. When he saw that the person was doctor hai, he almost fainted on the spot.

It's like a ghost that won't leave, it won't leave!

"Doctor hai, I beg you to be a good person!" At this moment, e 'Chu's tone was almost pleading.

"E 'Chu, I'm such a sinful person, and you want me to be a good person? that's too much!" When doctor hai heard this, he was extremely angry.

Looking at e 'Chu's trembling body, Wang Da mang mourned for him for half a second. He could roughly guess the process.

It was already a miracle that the evil organization didn't collapse after they had dragged a "great philanthropist" like Doctor hai into it.

"Doctor hai, I'm begging you, can you leave the organization? there's an evil organization in the neighboring sea, can't you join them?" E 'Chu continued to plead.

"No, I don't give up halfway. Besides, I'm very familiar with the kuilong Sea area. Why don't you tell me about the plan for this great destruction and I'll help you come up with a plan?" Doctor hai said in all seriousness.

E 'Chu's heart ached when he heard this. If it wasn't for the fact that he couldn't defeat doctor hai, he would have fought him to the death. This was too much!

In the past, when the evil organizations of the Jade spring Sea area were at their peak, they launched a war against foreign forces. At that time, doctor hai had just joined the organization.

In that battle, they originally had the absolute advantage. It could be said that they had crushed several of their opponent's forces as if they were rotten wood.

But at this moment, doctor hai joined the battle.

At that time, his "Thunder summoning" had actually summoned a mass of Thunder tribulation clouds, and tens of thousands of lightning bolts had poured down. However, not only did they not kill a single person from the opposing force, but many dark element creatures on their side had been shocked to death. In the end, the heavenly lightning had even gone out of control and madly struck down, almost destroying their evil organization that had hundreds of thousands of years of history.

The most outrageous thing was that even when the lightning tribulation was at its most violent, it didn't kill a single enemy, but all of its own people ...

Another time, the organization found an underground ruin. At that time, the organization's strength had been severely weakened, and they thought that the exploration of the ruin would be an opportunity for the organization to rise again.

In the end, due to doctor Hai's arrival, the remains somehow exploded.

E 'Chu could still clearly remember the scene of the treasures that should have belonged to them flying all over the sky. In the end, not only did they not obtain anything, but many of their members had also died.

The most outrageous thing was that these treasures were all picked up by a few hostile forces of the sea Race.

After doctor hai joined them, there were countless of such incidents. Step by step, the once top force of the Jade spring Sea area, the organization of villains of Jade spring, declined step by step, and now it had become a low-level force.

Along the way, e ‘Chu even felt lucky that doctor hai had not killed him.

It was simply not easy.

This time, he thought that he could start over again in a new environment.

In the end, doctor hai had followed them again. At this moment, e ‘Chu’s mind was on the verge of collapse.

“By the way, e ‘gun, let me introduce you. This is an evil person I just met. I’m going to recommend him to join our evil People’s Organization!” At this moment, doctor hai chuckled as he pointed at Wang Da mang.

Hearing this, e ‘Chu subconsciously took a step back.

Back then, doctor hai had also recommended a newcomer to join the team, but that person had been sent by an enemy force. After that ...

Er ‘Chu felt an inexplicable sense of panic at any of doctor Hai’s decisions.

Even the way he looked at Wang Da mang was a little panicked. He felt that this kid was definitely not simple. He was definitely a super scourge, and it was an organization that specialized in harming others.

“E ‘Chu, I’m talking to you!” Doctor hai said with some dissatisfaction.

“Doctor hai, our organization has just made a decision. The destructive operation at the kui long sea this time has been canceled!” E ‘Chu took a deep breath and immediately made a decision. He believed that once the president knew that doctor hai was following him, he would definitely understand.

“What? It’s canceled!” Doctor Hai’s expression changed.

Looking at doctor Hai's uncomfortable face, Wang Da mang was completely convinced.

The great destruction that was about to erupt at the kuilong sea was resolved by doctor hai so easily and imperceptibly.

Yin de +1

Wang Da mang thought to himself.

Doctor hai still seemed to be in a daze as he asked gloomily,"

"It's really canceled? Are you really not going to try again?"

"No, no, it's canceled. The organization is preparing to go into seclusion for 100 years. During this time, we won't do any evil!" E 'Chu quickly shook his head.

"That's a pity. " Doctor hai could not help but sigh.

'Unfortunately, your Grandpa!' Don't you know who caused it? E 'Chu gritted its teeth and cursed doctor hai in its heart.

"Where is our organization planning to hide?" Doctor hai asked subconsciously.

E 'Chu was speechless.

Wang Da mang was speechless.

Was he trying to kill them all? Wang Da mang no longer had the energy to curse. This was too evil, he was simply a great devil in the eyes of all evil people.

E 'Chu's body trembled even more violently upon hearing this.

"Oh right, doctor hai, before the organization goes into seclusion, we want to give you a special mission!" At this moment, e 'Chu could only change the topic.

“What kind of mission is it? is it the kind that’s particularly fierce?” Doctor hai asked with a happy expression.

“Yes, yes, yes, he’s especially fierce!” E ‘Chu quickly nodded.

“Tell me, I like to do bad things!” Doctor hai was very happy.

“This time, the organization has decided to leave you to wreak havoc in the kui long sea alone. It’s also a test of your ability. I heard that the president will recommend you to join the wicked Alliance if you do well!”

“What? The wicked Alliance!” Doctor Hai’s face revealed a trace of surprise.

This was because this was one of his goals. Those who could join the “wicked Alliance” were all top-tier wicked people. This was also the best proof of their identity as wicked people.

“That’s right, so you have to do a good job and try to cause some big destruction. The organization has high hopes for you!” E ‘mo answered seriously.

“Are there any requirements?” Doctor hai asked subconsciously.

“There are no requirements. The greater the damage, the better. You’ll do it alone. Any problems?”

“No problem, isn’t it just great destruction? I’m the best at it!” Doctor hai proudly patted his chest.

“Very well, doctor hai. As the core member of the organization, I’ll leave the destruction to you. The organization will retreat first!” E ‘Chu immediately turned around and flew away at an extremely fast speed.

He had to return immediately and inform the president of doctor Hai’s arrival. He had to leave as soon as possible, or he would be finished!

“Hey hey hey, e ‘Chu, where is the organization planning to hide?” doctor hai shouted as he watched e’ Chu leave.

Hearing doctor Hai's shout, er 'AI flew even faster and disappeared from their sight in the blink of an eye.

"Hey, why are you in such a hurry? I still don't know where the organization is." Doctor hai said unhappily. Then, he turned to look at Wang Da mang,

"Kid, now that the wicked organization has gone into hiding, you can only rely on me. I'm about to cause great destruction in this Sea area. Do you want to join me? this is a once-in-a-thousand-years opportunity to become a wicked person!"

Wang Da mang was speechless.

I feel like this is a once-in-a-thousand-years opportunity to accumulate good karma ...

Wang Damang complained in his heart. However, he didn't say this out loud because he was afraid of being beaten.

Furthermore, Wang Da mang was a little flustered at this moment. This doctor hai was too terrifying. All the evil people around him would suffer. Would he be implicated as well?

He thought of how he had used his school fees to go online when he was young, how he had stolen pears from old Wang's family next door, and how he had cheated in exams.

At this moment, Wang Da mang felt an inexplicable panic. Was he considered a bad person?

Chapter 397 - Doctor Hai'S Karma Technique

“What’s wrong with you? do you want to join or not?” Doctor hai asked in confusion as he looked at the flustered Wang Da mang.

“You won’t harm me, will you ...” Wang Da mang said faintly.

“Why would I harm you? Although I’m a great villain, I will never lay my hands on my friends in the same camp. I still have this principle. ” Doctor hai said with a serious expression.

Wang Da mang did not believe a single word of doctor Hai’s words.

If it didn’t harm its companions, then why was e ‘Chu so afraid?

They didn’t even ask you to move the organization, and you still dare to say you won’t harm your companions?

As a great philanthropist who was protected by Yin virtue, he lied through his teeth like this. Didn’t he feel any guilt and self-awareness?

“Actually ... Actually, I’m a good person.” After thinking for a while, Wang Da mang grinned awkwardly.

After knowing that doctor hai, who was protected by the Golden Wheel of virtue, was the natural enemy of evil people, Wang Da mang only wanted to be a good person at this moment.

“Don’t you want to change? don’t you want to take down that woman who is countless times more powerful than you?” Seeing this, doctor hai began to encourage Wang Da mang to do evil.

Looking at the serious-looking doctor hai, if it wasn’t for the fact that he couldn’t beat him, Wang Damang really wanted to give him a punch. Was

he trying to make him the bad guy and then use the karma technique of “the bad guy must die” to kill him?

Did I f*cking offend you?

“No, no, I just want to be a good person!” This time, Wang Da mang’s attitude was firm.

“Sigh, you can’t be taught. You didn’t want to be a good person, but instead wanted to be a good person. You must have been kicked in the head by Qianqian!” Doctor hai sighed at Wang Damang as if he was looking at an idiot.

Wang Da mang was speechless.

At this moment, he really wanted to beat this great philanthropist to death. It would be a very cruel and infuriating kind of beating!

“By the way, I just found out that the little girl you like has already received the inheritance of the dark sea kingdom!”

“What do you mean?” Wang Da mang was stunned.

“Hundreds of thousands of years ago, it was the inheritance of the ‘dark ocean Kingdom’, a huge ocean Empire that spanned the three Seas. In other words, this little girl has unlimited potential. If you continue to be stubborn, you won’t even be able to see her back in the future.” Doctor hai said with a serious expression.

“Then what do we do?” Wang Da mang could not help but ask.

“Become an evil person, burn, kill, pillage, do all kinds of evil, and rely on doing evil to quickly accumulate the capital to become strong, and then surpass her!” Doctor hai guided patiently.

“Get lost, I’m a good person!” Wang Da mang immediately refused.

“Believe me. Back then, the Empress of the netherworld sea did the same thing. She committed all sorts of evil during her expansion. It took her a

very short time to rise in the sea of vanity and establish the huge netherworld sea kingdom!” Seeing that da mang Wang still did not believe him, doctor hai immediately spoke up.

“I’ve heard of the netherworld sea kingdom, but what’s the Empress? Also, how did such a powerful kingdom of the sea of darkness fall?” Wang Da mang couldn’t help but ask after hearing doctor hai mention the netherworld sea kingdom a few times.

“It’s a long story. The so-called Empress is the publicly acknowledged Emperor of the three Seas. She was also the one who established the extremely powerful dark sea kingdom. When I first met the Empress, she was at the peak of her power. I can still clearly remember her charm at that time. She was really charming. So, at that moment, I decided that I would be loyal to her for the rest of my life!” Doctor hai sighed as he thought about the past.

Wang Da mang was stunned when he heard this.

You were loyal to the dark sea kingdom at its peak?”

“Yeah! What’s wrong?” Doctor hai doubtfully replied.

At this moment, Wang Da mang suddenly thought of the ‘Jade spring evil organization’, and a possibility appeared in his mind. He quickly asked,”

“Then do you know how the dark sea kingdom was destroyed?”

“If it’s destroyed, then it’s destroyed. What else could it be? however, I still feel that the biggest problem should be the Empress!” Doctor hai said after some thought.

“Why?” Wang Da mang immediately asked.

“When I was discussing with the Empress how to speed up the expansion of the dark sea kingdom, I put forward a great suggestion, but he didn’t listen. You see, he’s done for!” Doctor hai sighed as he spoke.

“What did you suggest?”

“I suggest that we directly send troops to attack Beiqi region, which is the closest to the empty Sea region. In a spurt of energy, we should attack with all our troops and settle Beiqi in one wave. Then, we can make Beiqi our first land territory and develop further!”

“And then?”

“Then, the Empress said that the strength of the forces in Northern Qi was unclear and that it was better to investigate before taking action. “At that time, I felt that this indecisive character was simply too much for the Empress. I was so angry that I directly used the Empress’s decree to order fool Jin to deploy a” tidal Army “to attack Beiqi. After all, it’s just a mere Beiqi. What’s there to be afraid of? we’ll settle it in one wave!” As doctor hai spoke, he seemed to be very proud.

“The result, tell me the result!” Wang Da mang had a faint premonition.

“In the end, this fool Jin is really unreliable. His entire Army was annihilated. He’s really a waste!”

Looking at doctor hai, who had a look of disappointment on his face, Wang Damang really wanted to smash his head. To start a war with a large region without knowing anything, and directly attack it, were you a pig?!

“Sigh, the tidal Army’s mishandling of matters eventually alerted the Empress. At that time, I thought that the angry Empress would personally lead her troops to slaughter Beiqi. In the end, she went to investigate alone and even captured a silly boy named ‘ice seal’!”

“And then?”

“After that, I don’t know why, but a great battle broke out between us and Beiqi. However, I didn’t go. The Empress said that only I could contend against the strength of the ice seal. She told me to keep an eye on this kid and said that he was very important.”

“But since he’s my enemy, I’ve made him suffer quite a bit. I beat him up every day when I have nothing to do. I beat him until he cries. It annoys me

just by watching!” The thought of being frozen made doctor Hai’s face show a hint of disgust.

“We lost that war, right?” Wang Da mang asked carefully.

“We didn’t lose. How can we lose? the netherworld sea Empire is so strong. We can only call it a draw!” Doctor hai said with some dissatisfaction.

“What happened after that?” At this moment, Wang Da mang was a little curious. He wanted to know how such a powerful dark sea kingdom was destroyed.

“Didn’t we make peace back then? the Empress asked me to release Bing Feng, so I released him. But later, I accidentally heard the soldiers say that the reason why we were able to make peace in this battle had a lot to do with this frozen kid. When I heard this news, I was very angry. I didn’t expect that it was all this kid’s fault that our Minghai Kingdom didn’t win and only made a peace. So I sneaked to Beiqi, found and caught that frozen kid, and gave him a hard beating again. His face was swollen. It was really satisfying, hahaha!” As he spoke, doctor Hai’s face revealed a hint of satisfaction.

Wang Da mang was dumbfounded when he heard that.

You’re a F * cking scourge!

Didn’t this mean that the netherworld sea kingdom couldn’t defeat Beiqi at that time? ‘That’s why I handed over the hostage to seek peace, and you’re still F * cking stirring up trouble? you’re afraid that you can’t destroy the Ming hai Kingdom!’

“So, who do you think destroyed the dark sea kingdom?” Wang Da mang asked faintly.

“Eh, How do I put this? although I don’t want to deny it, I have to say that the Empress should bear the greatest responsibility for the destruction of the netherworld sea kingdom. I feel that he is not evil enough. He was too indecisive in that battle. He is simply not the Empress.”

How can you be so shameless! Wang Da mang was completely convinced.

He finally understood.

The destruction of the netherworld ocean Kingdom was definitely related to doctor hai. It was estimated that 99% of the reasons for the destruction were doctor hai 's' evil must die 'and' evil forces must be destroyed 'karma skills.

Chapter 398 - The June 1st Special Event

It had been more than a year since the start of the war, and players were extremely sensitive to the date.

This was because every Festival meant that they could earn a wave of extra event earnings in the game. They might even get special rewards in the event, such as hidden classes and special items. Therefore, players were always full of anticipation for the festival events.

It was Children's Day, June 1st. Many players had already started to "slam the table" on the forum, urging the official game company to start the June 1st event as soon as possible.

For this, Lu Wu was naturally prepared for it.

At 8 O' clock in the morning, Lu Wu officially started the June 1st event.

[Server announcement, the children's day event has begun!]

[Activity: spring radiance inch grass]

[Event details: this event will officially start at 8:00 a.m. On June 1st. After the event starts, all players can receive the special mission item "child" from the event panel and start the happy trip of the June 1st holiday.]

[Activity requirements: the special item "child" is a conscious four-year-old child. When receiving it, there is a 50% chance of both gender being randomly selected. After receiving it, the player can take care of it and increase its happiness points (happiness points can be increased by eating, playing, and telling stories). After the end of this activity, the player will be rewarded according to the happiness points of the child received.]

Mission reward:

[1st place: special item “child” retained]

Second to fifth place: one chance to draw a special item.

Ranks 6 – 10: receive an [epic weapon forging qualification letter](pay for the materials, tradable)

[Rank 11 – 50: receive a level 100 purple equipment for your class (random)]

[Rank 51 – 100: receive a random level 100 class purple equipment]

[Rank 101-rank 1000: one level 110 blue equipment (random)]

1001 – 10000:[You have received one level 100 blue equipment (random)]

.....

[Special reward: in this event, players ‘interaction with children will have a chance to obtain special items. For more details, please explore it yourself in the event!]

[Event hint: this event will be held at the same time in all four servers. Each server’s ranking will be independent and will not interfere with each other ‘s.]

[Event tip 2: if the child’s happiness is negative after the event ends, the player will be punished (random negative BUFF, duration is random for 1-30 days. Please do not bully or abuse the child!)]

[Official hint: please take good care of the adopted child and bring him or her to have fun!]

.....

After the event details were officially released, the players were in an uproar, both on the official forum and in the game.

Even though they knew that every event in war online was different, this event had really shocked them.

The June 1st event was actually a nanny!

Are we celebrating June 1st or are we celebrating June 1st for the children? The players were stunned.

However, in the face of the alluring event rewards, the players had no resistance and joined in decisively.

In the beginning, many players were a little reluctant. After all, raising children and so on felt very tiring.

However, when they came into contact with the ‘children’ that Bei Li had personally created, the players ‘behavior could only be described as’ fragrant ‘.

An hour after the event started, children were running around in every server, and the event chat channel in every server was noisy.

“Wow, I got the little cutie in a dudou. I’m going to be a father, hahaha!”

“Damn, why did my son bite me the moment he came out? but he’s really cute!”

“Before I draw the ‘baby’, I’ll make a wish in the regional channel. Please bless my baby to be particularly good-looking. Draw for me!”

“Come out, my baby. I’ve decided to choose you, SSR!”

“欸？ Why is my kid naked when he comes out? why do you all have clothes ...”

“What should I do, what should I do? my baby is hungry, and his happiness points have dropped. Who knows what to eat for my baby? I’ll go to the auction house to buy it. I don’t have any F * cking experience in raising a baby. I’m dying, I’m dying!”

.....

At this moment, all the players in the server had turned into healers and healers, and they were chasing after their children everywhere.

In Beili's settings, these children were all very cute. Many players who were prepared to skip the mission couldn't help but show "motherly love" to them. They took care of them very carefully, afraid that their children would be unhappy.

In order to increase the children's happiness, the forums of the four servers were filled with posts asking how to take care of children.

This was especially true for the event voice channel. Every time a player's "baby" happiness dropped, they would scream for help in the voice channel. The scene was even more intense than a war.

Under such circumstances, the "raising a baby" strategy released by the enthusiastic players became the life-saving straw for many noob players.

In just half a day, the players from the four servers had listed 374 ways to make their children happy, 2145 foods that could increase their happiness points, and 1334 actions that they didn't like.

There were even players who posted the entire collection of fairy tales on the forum.

At this moment, the style of the official battle website changed. Visitors who did not understand the situation would definitely be shocked when they entered. They would definitely think that they had come to the "child-raising parent communication network" and not the very famous battle online game.

On this day, the originally cruel fourth calamity players became very "kind". They put all the fighting and killing aside and just wanted to make their children happy.

At around eight o' clock in the evening, the players even played some tricks on the June 1st event. There was a large-scale show of dolls, and the scene was out of control.

Comparing whose children could run faster, whose children could eat more, whose children could dress cutely, and so on.

The special item "children" for these missions became the strongest "weapon" for the players to slap each other in the face.

Today, no one was showing off their equipment, levels, or opportunities. They were only focused on the game.

How to make their own children overpower the other players 'children had become a problem that many players had been thinking about.

On this day, while the players were busy, they were in an unusually happy mood.

Under the players 'training, the children's personalities were different. Some were obedient and sensible, some were rebellious, some were clingy, and some were jealous. This wave of events made the players go crazy.

As the main theme of war conquest online, it became a game that players developed on this day.

Happiness, incomparable happiness!

The joy of raising a child was beyond the players 'imagination. They had completely fallen in love with their own children.

The day passed very quickly to the players. In the blink of an eye, it was 12 o' clock at night.

At this moment, a scene that made the players collapse happened.

All the children suddenly knelt on the ground and kowtowed to their parents, saying,"

“Parents ‘kindness is worth ten thousand gold, the spring sunshine is an inch of grass, pushing and sending warmth to the child is deeply in love, Goodbye Father (mother)!”

Kowtowing, he waved his hand and all the dolls turned into a white light and disappeared in front of the players.

Seeing this scene, all the players were dumbfounded. Many players could not accept this kind of farewell at all.

At this moment, all the players were in a frenzy. The entire forum was in an uproar. All the players were hoping that the official war campaign would extend the June 1st event. Some even hoped that the event would not end.

Pikachu: “wuwuwu~stupid officials, give me back my Tutu. I can’t live without her. I promised to make her a beautiful floral dress. Please give it back to me!”

The strongest Xue Li: “Oh my God, my baby is gone. Gone ... I really want to send a blade to the battle team now. Kill!” Kill! Kill! (Bloody knife)

Crayon Shinchuan: My little Xin flew away after kowtowing to me. The officials have one minute to return it, or I’m going to start scolding!

[Shooting star: I’m under pressure that I shouldn’t be at this age. I’m 15 years old and I’m raising a baby. But I still treat him like a little brother. He’s so cute. I’m strongly requesting my mother to have another child, but you have to return my little brother to me first (bloody knife)]

Pulling the mountain: “I was initially very resistant to this activity, but now I just want to say, F * cking official, hurry up and return my Xiaoshan. I promised to take him to climb the mountain. F * cking official, don’t make me go back on my word (bronze face-smacking picture)”

Master baokemeng: “I’m drunk too. The stupid official. I’m telling a story to a child. I’m only halfway through and the child left. Damn you, stupid official. Go to hell. I give you one minute to return it.”

[Bamboo Moon night: my bamboo is gone ... Just like that?] I felt as if my young soul had been severely injured. I only had one child in my life, and I was about to go crazy. If you don't return the child to me, I'll ... I'll ... In any case, hurry up and return it to me (bronze face-slapping picture).

Milk candy: "as the mother of a child, this event has filled me with motherly love. I've even raised my Xiao Guo as my second child, but she's gone just like that. I feel a sharp pain in my heart. I'm going to fall sick. The kind of illness that won't be cured until the government returns my child."

Son of the ocean: "I was just fishing with my baby. I just caught a big fish. My baby was holding it and laughing happily. I was going to take a photo as a memento, but my baby suddenly disappeared. At this moment, I want to say, the stupid officials really died a terrible death!"

A big wolfdog: "I've been letting my child ride me all day. Although it's very tiring, I'm also very happy. Damn official dog, return my baby (bare teeth)"

.....

At this moment, the official forum was in a frenzy. All the players 'nostalgia for this event was beyond normal.

Although it was only a day, the children's character had been developed after the adoption. Many players were sincere about it. Although they knew that the event was over, they couldn't accept the sudden disappearance of the children.

The protests became more and more intense, and all the players gathered together to strongly resist the inhumane actions of the officials.

In the face of the players 'protests, Lu Wu was also very helpless.

The June 1st event was originally a fun time for the players after the battle, but they never expected that the players would develop feelings for their children.

What a headache!

After thinking for a while, Lu Wu finally decided to find Bei Li to discuss countermeasures.

After some discussion, Lu Wuxin made a decision and posted a post on the official forum.

[Official announcement: follow-up notice of the June 1st event]:

Content:

First of all, I would like to thank the players for their support for the June 1st event.

Secondly, the official team attached great importance to the feedback and suggestions given by the players during the June 1st event. After some discussion, the battle campaign planning team finally decided that the data of all the children in this event would not be deleted. At the same time, in view of the players' love for children, the official game company was seriously considering the launch of child-raising functions!

Please stay tuned, players!

Official planning team

Chapter 399 - Reviving The Great Empress?

(The June 1 event is a special chapter, the following official plot links)

Kuilong territorial waters.

The afterglow of the setting sun dyed the clear sea water red. As the blue waves rippled, a few fish would occasionally jump out of the water, stirring up a little crystal.

At this moment, Wang Da mang, who had originally planned to return to Beiqi, was still talking about the past with doctor hai.

After listening to doctor Hai's description, Wang Da mang finally understood how the netherworld sea kingdom had been destroyed.

First, he killed the Empress. Then, he was ordered to take over the netherworld sea kingdom because he was the strongest.

According to doctor Hai's description, he had carried out a series of reforms in order to revitalize the netherworld sea. However, in Wang Da mang's eyes, these were all coquettish operations that were courting death. He had completely dragged the netherworld sea kingdom, which could still struggle, into an endless abyss.

With that, the netherworld sea's evil forces were destroyed!

Now that he thought about it, Wang Da mang felt that doctor Hai's initial proposal to establish the eight Great Ocean countries was perhaps also a link of karma. The outcome might have already been determined. The eight countries would never choose to merge again, and restoring their country would be a joke.

Everything was predestined. Terrifying, terrifying!

To be able to destroy a force established by a demigod, it was not as simple as Yin virtue +1!

Wang Damang once again glanced at doctor Hai's Golden Wheel of Yin Virtue's body protection BUFF on his stats window. He felt embarrassed. Just how many evil forces were behind this Level-8 Golden Wheel of Yin virtue?

After listening to doctor Hai's story, Wang Da mang opened his mouth,

“Alright, I've finished listening to your story. I should go home now!”

“After hearing so many stories, don't you have the urge to join?” Doctor hai was stunned.

I'll join your Grandpa! I've done a lot of bad things since I was young, and I'm afraid I'll be killed by you!

Of course, Wang Da mang naturally would not say that. He only shook his head indifferently.

“Forget it. I prefer a peaceful life. Your life is too exciting for me.”

“Are you sure?”

“I'm sure!”

“Sigh, what a pity. What I was going to do next has something to do with you, but since you don't want to join, I'll go by myself.” Doctor hai shook his head with a look of pity.

Hearing this, Wang Da mang, who was about to leave, suddenly turned around.”

“Wait, what do you mean by something related to me?”

“I thought you didn't want to join?”

“I just want to know what you’re going to do next!” Wang Da mang felt an inexplicable sense of panic.

He even seriously suspected that he had been judged as an evil person by doctor Hai’s “karma,” and was now officially involved in doctor Hai’s karma punishment. Whether or not doctor Hai’s subsequent actions were intentional or not, he would be affected.

“Actually, it’s not a big deal to tell you. Don’t you know that I’m going to cause great destruction in the kuilong Sea area?!”

“What does that have to do with me?” Wang Damang was stunned.

“I just thought about it. If we’re talking about great destruction, a tsunami or something is still too weak. But now I’ve thought of a way to cause earth-shattering destruction!” Doctor hai said smugly.

“Finish your words!” Wang Da mang couldn’t help but stare.

“My method is to resurrect the great Empress! As an ancient evil, once she’s resurrected, this part of the kui Dragon Sea will be in trouble. This disaster might even affect the other seas. Do you think the damage will be great?” Doctor hai was very pleased with himself.

“What does your wish to resurrect the great Empress have to do with me?” Wang Da mang quickly asked. He was really afraid that he would be punished by doctor Hai’s “karma.”

This was just like the “butterfly effect.” Doctor Hai’s karmic skill was this terrifying. Every time he unintentionally did something, after many twists and turns, he would always be able to get rid of the evil people around him.

“Isn’t that girl the one you like? she obtained the netherworld sea’s inheritance, and I’m going to resurrect the great Empress. Do you think it’s related?”

“What will happen to the Empress after she is resurrected?” Wang Da mang could not help but ask.

“I don’t know. The Empress is short of subordinates now, so I guess she’ll take her in.” Doctor hai replied after a moment of thought.

“What does that have to do with me?” Wang Da mang was dumbfounded.

“Think about it. When the water Empress revives and your daughter is loyal to her, if you join the netherworld sea’s evil forces, you’ll be a family. You’ll see each other every day. What a great opportunity!” Doctor hai analyzed with a serious expression.

Duping, continue duping!

Looking at doctor hai, Wang Da mang felt that he was being duped.

But for some reason, he was a little tempted ...

.....

Three days later, Kankun Island.

In the deepest part of the palace in the ruins of the netherworld sea, a beautiful woman in a Black Royal robe was sitting on the throne of the netherworld sea with her eyes closed. Even though a long time had passed, her body was still clean and her skin was still crystal clear.

Tianlan’s eyes flashed with excitement as she looked at the Empress.

In these three days, she had been plundering everywhere. Just yesterday, she had been very lucky to abduct a group of sea merchants and obtained a large number of heavenly treasures. According to what Jin Guang said, these spiritual materials were enough to support the consumption of the great Empress ‘inheritance.

And now, it was the most important moment for her-to receive the great Empress ‘inheritance.

As long as the inheritance was successfully completed, she would be the new Empress!

“Is that enough?” At this moment, tianlan’s gaze turned to the golden light, who was placing the mystical materials on the table.

“It’s done. The mystical materials have been placed. As long as the array is activated, the mystical materials will turn into spiritual Qi and flow into the array. The inheritance can be activated now!”

Tianlan nodded her head excitedly and strode toward the Empress. Following the golden light’s instructions, she raised the dark sea scepter in her hand and touched the Empress’s forehead.

Suddenly, the Empress’s long hair fluttered in the wind, and the mystical materials in the surroundings also emitted a strong medicinal fragrance.

An array covered with blue patterns slowly appeared on the ground and began to absorb the energy contained in these mystical materials.

Tianlan was filled with anticipation when she saw this.

However, behind her, golden light’s face revealed a trace of ridicule.

Just as he had said, how could a woman at the level of a ghost Governor be worthy of the great Empress ‘inheritance’?

To tianlan, this was a gamble on her rise to prominence. Although it was very risky, the temptation of success was simply too great. She was willing to take the risk, but to the golden light, everything was already set in stone.

This had all been part of his plan from the very beginning. Since the ruins of the netherworld sea could only be opened by descendants of the netherworld sea at the level of ghost emperors, why did he find tianlan and give her this ruin?

This was because after meeting tianlan, he realized that tianlan really looked too much like the great Empress. After interacting with her, he also realized that this person’s personality was also very similar to the great Empress ‘. It was as if this was the will of heaven, and the opportunity to resurrect the great Empress had delivered itself to his door.

That was why he had decided to give her an “opportunity” to expand her ambition.

Sure enough, with tianlan’s character, her desire for power and strength grew infinitely, and she walked step by step into the trap set by the golden light.

This array wasn’t an inheritance, but a backup plan that the Empress had left for herself.

The golden light had been searching for descendants with a similar soul to the Empress’s in the years after her death. It wanted to use their bodies and souls to awaken the Empress’s sleeping soul.

At this moment, the time was ripe, and the golden light could not hide his excitement.

Looking at the Empress sitting on the throne, Jin Guang was looking forward to seeing her holding the scepter and commanding the three Seas again. He was also waiting for the glory of the netherworld sea kingdom ...

At this thought, his body flashed and turned into a golden light that entered the dark sea King staff.

Although the dark sea King staff was in tianlan’s hands, he had become the scepter’s weapon spirit after the golden light’s soul had been absorbed into the scepter. His master was only the Empress, and he was the one who controlled and operated the scepter as long as it had not acknowledged a master!

At this moment, a barrier suddenly rose from the edge of the array. All the mystical materials inside were crushed instantly. A strong medicinal fragrance began to drift in the array.

It was also at this moment that the Empress, who had been sleeping for hundreds of thousands of years, suddenly opened her eyes. Blue light swirled in her eyes.

Looking at the Empress, who had suddenly opened her eyes, tianlan was shocked. The terrifying pressure of a demigod came head-on, making her want to retreat involuntarily. However, tianlan was shocked to find that she couldn't move her body.

As she looked into the Empress's lifeless eyes, tianlan felt an inexplicable sense of panic.

“Goldlight, come out! What's going on?”

“It's simple. You lost the bet, and I lied to you!” The voice of the golden light came from the scepter.

Tianlan wanted to ask again, but she realized that she could no longer make a sound. The hand that was holding the scepter began to dry up at a speed that was visible to the naked eye. The life force in her body was mixed with the energy of a large number of spiritual materials and rushed into the Empress's body. At this moment, her vision became bright and dark.

A sense of weakness filled his body.

Everything was out of her control, and she knew that she was finished ...

At this time, two figures had appeared outside the spiritual array of the palace ruins.

The newcomers were doctor hai, who was preparing to resurrect the Empress, and Wang Da mang, who had followed him.

“What are they doing?” Wang Damang asked doctor hai curiously as he looked at tianlan, who was currently looking at the Empress.

“I'm not sure. It seems to be a possession.” Doctor hai shook his head in confusion.

“What? Possession!” Wang Damang was shocked when he heard this.

“What are you panicking for? I will help you protect the woman you like. I have a better way to resurrect the Empress.” Doctor hai smiled smugly.

In doctor Hai's opinion, this method of resurrection was too crude. After all, tianlan was only at the level of a ghost Governor. Although she was supported by a large number of mystical materials, the Empress's strength would definitely not be restored to its former state if she was resurrected in this way.

Then how could he cause such great destruction!

Thinking of this, he took out a five-colored stone from his sleeve and threw it into the array.

The moment the stone came into contact with the formation, it seeped in and immediately shone with a myriad of rays of light. The colorful light filled the entire formation, and the multicolored stone began to shrink at a speed visible to the naked eye.

Looking at the multicolored stone, Wang Damang was curious. He immediately activated his analysis ability.

[Five-colored fragment (true treasure)]:

[Item information: during the war between the ancient Immortals and the netherworld, the Supreme of the heaven realm, immortal wither, fought with the great emperor, Fengdu, in the netherworld world with the Supreme treasure, the five-colored stone. In this battle, the five-colored stone was shattered, and its fragments were scattered in various areas of the netherworld.]

[Item effect: as this true treasure is incomplete, its specific functions are incomplete. The fragment contains a huge amount of vitality that can reverse life and death.]

“Holy shit, this is good stuff!” This was Wang Da mang's first time seeing a true treasure, and he couldn't help but widen his eyes.

“Hehe, this is the benefit of being an evil person. You can pick up a precious treasure while walking.” Doctor hai was very pleased with himself.

Looking at doctor Hai's hidden BUFF again, Wang Da mang could not agree with his words.

.....

At this moment, inside the array, the golden light was looking at the Empress with anticipation, waiting for her to come back to life.

As more and more energy and life force gushed into the Empress's body, the golden light became excited. He knew that the time was finally ripe for the Empress's resurrection.

However, at this moment, an inexplicable energy rushed into the Empress's body and constantly washed away her body that had fallen into a state of deathly stillness.

This scene stunned golden light, and then his face showed surprise.

He thought that this power was arranged by the Empress before she passed away. With the help of this power, the Empress's strength would definitely be stronger after she was resurrected.

However, the golden light gradually lost its excitement.

This was because the amount of energy was increasing, to the point that the Empress's body could no longer take it ...

Chapter 400 - Acting So Righteous

A tremendous amount of life force and energy reverberated within the Empress's body. At this moment, the golden light panicked.

Initially, he thought that with the help of this mysterious energy, the Empress would be able to be reborn and regain her original combat strength. However, this energy was too powerful. It was so powerful that even the Empress's demigod-level body couldn't withstand it.

At this moment, the Empress's body began to swell up at a visible rate.

An infinite amount of life force filled the spell formation, allowing tianlan, who had been on the verge of death, to regain consciousness. Her body was gradually recovering under the cleansing of the life force.

When tianlan came back to her senses, she couldn't help but reveal a stunned expression. She didn't know how she, who was being sacrificed, had recovered. However, there seemed to be something wrong with the Empress in front of her. Why ... Did she become so "inflated"?

At the sight of this, Wang Da mang, who was standing at the side, also felt that something was not quite right.

That's right, the Empress was a great villain. How could she be resurrected by doctor hai? he was the nemesis of all evil people!

Looking at the Empress, who was becoming more and more inflated like a balloon, Wang Da mang couldn't help but cover his face. This Empress was too F * cking miserable.

Back then, doctor hai had secretly manipulated the situation. Not only did he die unjustly, but now, after waiting for hundreds of thousands of years for the opportunity to be resurrected, this bastard doctor hai had actually come again.

He didn't even let go of the dead body!

It was really too brutal and too evil!

Just as Wang Da mang had thought, even though the "five-colored stone" had the ability to reverse life and death, it had become the greatest danger to the resurrection of the Empress.

The array that the great Empress had set up before she passed away was a "spirit-absorbing array." As long as the array was activated, all the energy in the array would not be able to escape. Instead, it would all flow into the great Empress's body at the eye of the array and be used for her resurrection and digestion.

It was precisely this array that prevented the life-force energy released by the five-colored stone from dissipating. It could only continuously surge into the Empress's body, causing her body to gradually be unable to withstand the scouring of this massive energy.

In fact, before the Empress passed away, she didn't expect that her follow-up plan would be completely destroyed by doctor hai.

Back when doctor hai took over the throne of the netherworld sea, the batch of spiritual materials left behind by the Empress in the ruins of the netherworld sea, which were originally intended to be used for resurrection, had been given to the eight newly-established Kings by doctor hai.

And now, the amount of mystical materials used for the sacrifice and resurrection was not even one percent of the original amount.

However, golden light couldn't care less about that. He couldn't guarantee how long tianlan would be able to last in such an unscrupulous plundering. The price of plundering the sea merchants was extremely unbearable. After all, the sea merchants were extremely powerful.

Therefore, he activated the revival of the great Empress in advance. Although this batch of mystical materials could only restore a portion of the

great Empress ‘strength, he believed that as long as the great Empress was revived, all the problems would not be a problem.

For the sake of the Empress’s resurrection, golden light had carefully considered all of its plans. This was to ensure that the Empress’s resurrection was foolproof.

He had indeed managed to do it, but he had missed doctor Hai’s existence ...

At this moment, under everyone’s astonished gazes, cracks gradually appeared on the surface of the Empress’s body.

“BOOM!”

The Empress’s body finally couldn’t take it anymore and exploded, turning into blue powder that scattered down.

The water Empress exploded!

“F * ck, what’s going on!” Doctor Hai’s eyes widened at the sight.

“What do you think happened?” Wang Da mang gave doctor hai a sidelong glance and cursed in his heart.

“How the F * ck would I know?” Doctor hai spoke in a trembling voice, his face filled with despair.

Wang Da mang didn’t want to speak anymore. At this moment, he seemed to be able to see the numbers jumping above doctor Hai’s head.

Yin de +1

Yin de +1

Yin de +1

.....

Even a demigod expert like the Empress couldn't avoid becoming a stepping stone for doctor hai to accumulate virtue? Wang Da mang couldn't help but shiver.

“Why? why did it turn out like this?” Doctor hai looked at the Empress's body that had exploded and appeared to be in great grief.

He had tried his best to be an evil person in his life just to prove to the Empress that he wasn't a good person. He even wanted to confess to the Empress righteously again after becoming an evil person.

However, at this moment, the Empress actually exploded. The target in his heart was shattered ...

At this moment, doctor Hai's face was filled with self-dejection.

“Why?” At this moment, a ray of golden light emerged from the scepter and roared in grief as it looked at the empty throne.

“What are you shouting for? what the hell are you doing, you trash!” When doctor hai saw the golden light, he immediately rebuked him with grief and indignation.

When Jin Guang heard this, his heart was filled with anger. He suddenly turned to look at the two people outside the formation, but when he saw Doctor hai, he could not help but be stunned.

“Doctor hai, why are you here?”

“Fool Jin, you're a good-for-nothing! Look at what you've done! If you don't have the ability, then don't even think about resurrecting the Empress. Bastard, I'm only a step late, and you've already caused the Empress's death. If it weren't for you, I would have been able to resurrect the Empress!” Doctor hai rebuked.

At this moment, Jin Guang's expression was extremely ugly, but he could not say anything to refute.

Previously, he was hiding in the scepter and did not see Doctor hai throw the “five-colored stone.” He thought that it was his fault that the Empress “exploded.”

Doctor hai naturally ignored his own actions. In his opinion, the resurrection should have been flawless, but something must have gone wrong on the golden light’s side, which caused the resurrection to fail.

“Doctor hai, why are you here?” The golden light’s heart was filled with grief, but he still gritted his teeth and asked.

“Don’t change the topic. The Empress is dead because of you. She is dead because of you!” Doctor hai continued to wail.

At the sight of this scene, Wang Da mang could not help but widen his eyes. This face of his was F * cking invincible. The culprit could actually scold others so righteously. Who gave him the courage? Liang jingru?

“Doctor hai, you’ve left the dark ocean Kingdom a long time ago. This is an internal matter of the dark ocean Kingdom. It’s not your place to meddle in it!” At this moment, the golden light, who felt an inexplicable sense of guilt, still forced himself to speak.

“You F * cking B * stard! You F * cking killed the Empress! F * ck your ancestors!” Doctor hai scolded with an indescribable sorrow on his face.

“Doctor hai! Where were you when the dark ocean Kingdom was at its most critical time? Where were you when the Eight Kingdoms were unwilling to restore the kingdom? although the death of the Empress was my fault, it is not up to you, an outsider who has left the dark ocean Kingdom, to criticize me!” At this moment, the golden light could no longer hold it in and shouted.

“You bastard, you bastard, you’re going to die a horrible death! You’ve caused the death of the Empress!” Doctor hai didn’t listen to Jin Guang’s words and continued to Jabber on and on.

Wang Da mang was speechless.

Tianlan was speechless.

“Enough!” The golden light roared again.

“Bastard! You’re the bastard who killed my master! I can’t believe how the Empress treated you in the past. You’re repaying kindness with ingratitude! Empress, you’ve died a terrible death! Why did you put such a heartless bastard in such an important position ...”

What kind of shameless old bastard was this? even Wang Da mang, who was standing at the side, couldn’t stand it anymore. At this moment, he really wanted to help the dead Empress hammer this bastard to death. To think that he would actually make a bogus accusation at this moment. How shameless was he!

At this moment, a ray of blue light suddenly appeared on the throne.

Seeing this, doctor hai suddenly shut his mouth, and Jin Guang’s eyes widened.

Then, the two of them pounced on the Empress’s soul at the same time.

As the golden light was the closest to the throne, it immediately grabbed the Empress’s soul and dodged to the side, causing doctor hai to miss.

As a demigod, the Empress’s soul had already been concretized. It was a wavering blue light that was being held tightly in the golden light’s hand.

Doctor Hai’s eyes immediately widened as he turned around and stretched out his hand towards the golden light. “Give it to me!”

“The Empress is the Empress of my dark sea kingdom. What does it have to do with you, an outsider?” The golden light snorted.

“I was the king of the netherworld sea kingdom!”

“That’s because I’m dead. I’m the Supreme Commander of the netherworld ocean Kingdom’s Army. It’s not your turn, you idiot!” The golden light did not compromise.

“B * stard, do you still want to cause the death of the Empress? I’m not at ease leaving the Empress with you. Give it to me, I will resurrect her!”

Upon hearing this, Jin Guang could not help but frown.

He had only managed to snatch the Empress’s soul away before doctor hai because he was too anxious. However, after thinking about it carefully, he realized that he was only a weapon spirit. Now that the formation had been broken, it was clearly impossible for him to resurrect the Empress with his current strength.

However, doctor hai was different. He was extremely powerful, and it was possible that he could resurrect the Empress.

Looking at the hesitant golden light, Wang Da mang really wanted to shout, “don’t give it to her! If you give it to her, she will definitely die!” After all, Wang Da mang knew what would happen to an evil person like the Empress if she fell into doctor Hai’s hands.

The Empress’s soul would definitely become an ‘experience point’ for doctor hai to farm the Golden Wheel of Yin de. Death would be the only outcome for her.

“Doctor hai, can I trust you?” The golden light spoke to doctor hai with a grave expression.

“I’m loyal to the Empress with all my heart. She’ll be safe with me!” Doctor hai replied with a serious expression.

“Doctor hai, first tell me where you have been all these years.” Still worried, Goldlight decided to first investigate.

In his opinion, time could change a person. Even though doctor hai had been very loyal to the Empress back then, everything would change after hundreds of thousands of years.

“I’ve been searching for a way to resurrect the great Empress, and I’m getting closer and closer to my dream of being a great villain!” Doctor hai

looked at the Empress's soul in the golden light with a look of longing.

Hearing that doctor hai was looking for a way to resurrect the great Empress, golden light was relieved. However, it was immediately stunned.

“What great villain?”

“The Empress said that I was a good person. Damn it, she said that I was a good person? F * ck!” Doctor Hai's face showed a sorrowful expression.

“So, from that day on, I secretly vowed to be a great villain and to make the Empress acknowledge me. Now, I'm already a villain with a well-known reputation, but the Empress ... Boohoo.” Doctor Hai's voice started to sob as he spoke.

Jin Guang was speechless.

Wang Da mang was speechless.

Tianlan was speechless.

Seeing this, Jin Guang sighed. Doctor Hai's current appearance made him feel that he was still the old doctor hai. He had not changed in the slightest.

He was still very emotional, but he had absolute strength.

With his guard down, Jin Guang no longer suspected doctor hai. He spoke with a complicated expression,

“Doctor hai, the death of the great Empress is my fault. I will not shirk this responsibility. However, I am only the artifact Spirit of the king's staff. I can not revive the great Empress, so I have decided to give you the great Empress's soul. I hope that you will not let down the great Empress's cultivation. As for me, after the great Empress is revived, I will be at her disposal!”

“Don't worry, I, doctor hai, will never betray the Empress!” Doctor hai promised.

When he saw the golden light hand over the great Empress 'soul, his face revealed a look of surprise and he also reached out to grab it.

At this moment, a scene that left everyone dumbfounded happened.

“Kacha!” With a crisp sound, the great Empress's soul, which had just been placed in doctor Hai's hand, suddenly shattered.

On the side, Wang Damang revealed an expression of 'I knew it'.

The Boss

Behind The Game

by Slashing Blade

W E B N O V E L

